





*Library of the Theological Seminary,*  
PRINCETON, N. J.

DG 468 .F157  
Fairall, H. H.  
Italy struggling into light

*Shelf.....*

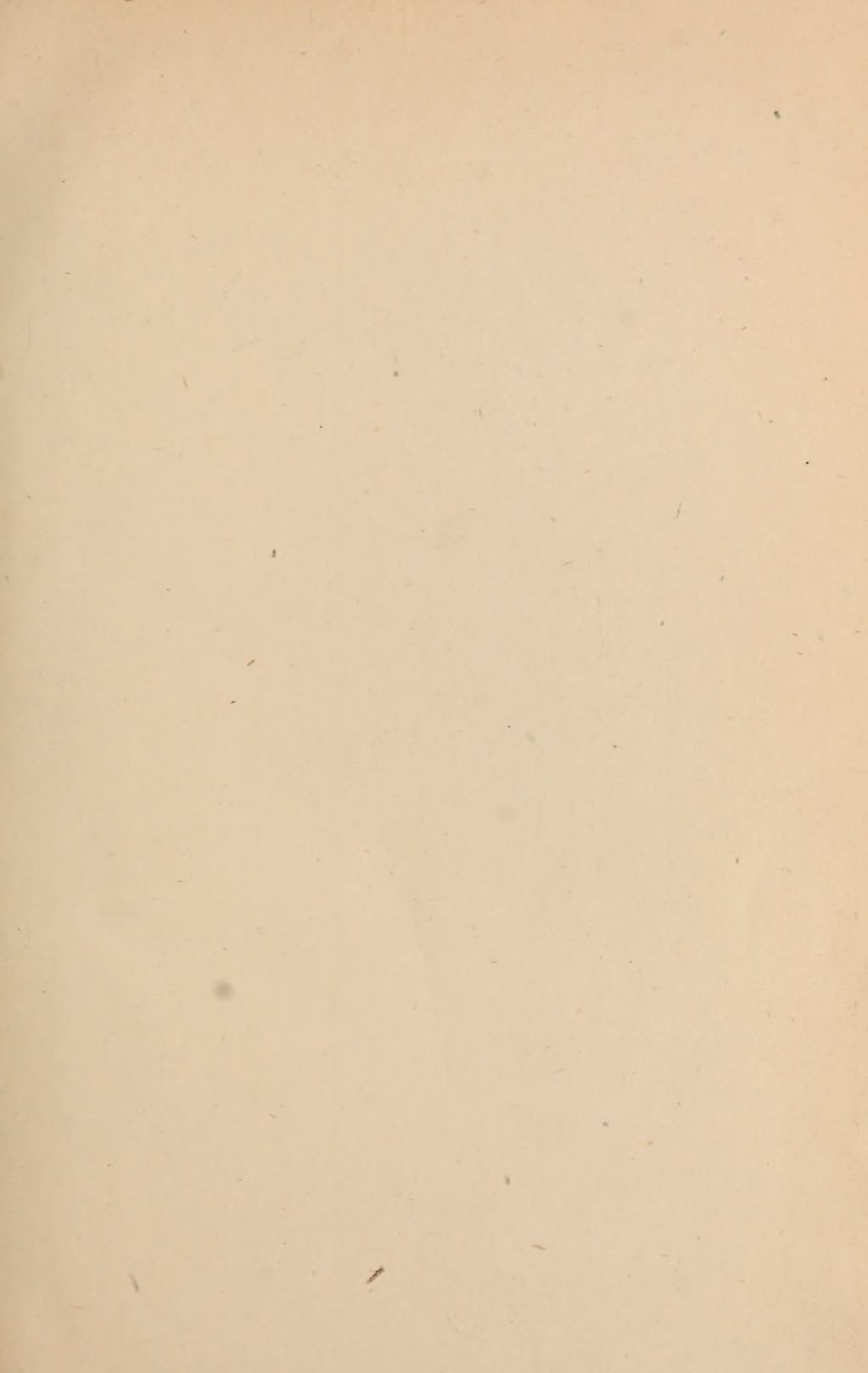




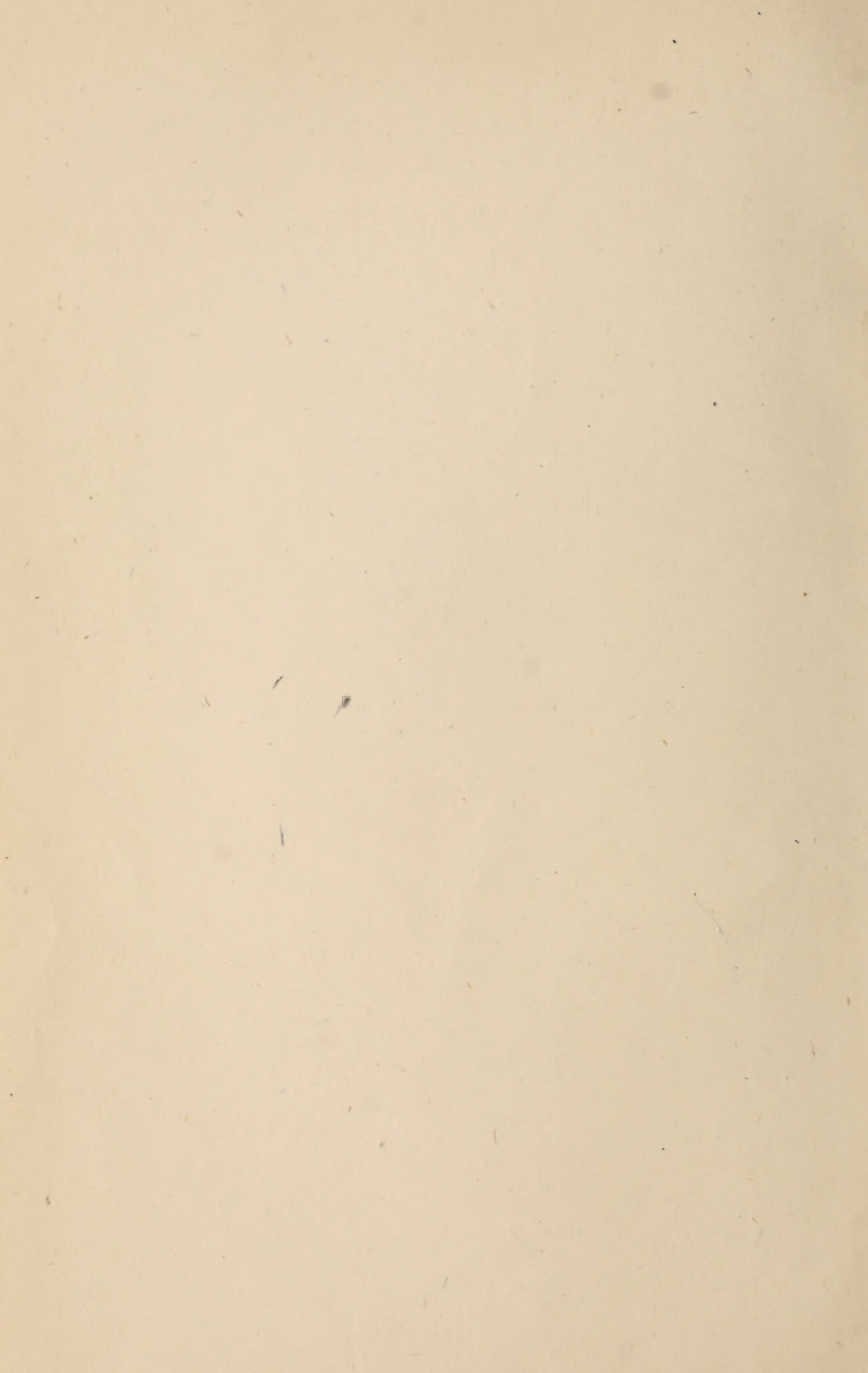

















Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2015



COUNT CAMILLO CAVOUR.



# ITALY

## STRUGGLING INTO LIGHT:

OR,

A Record of Prominent Events

IN ITS

CIVIL, RELIGIOUS, AND LITERARY HISTORY,

From the Commencement of the Christian Era to the Present Day.

---

ILLUSTRATED.

---

By REV. H. H. FAIRALL, D. D.

---

CINCINNATI:  
HITCHCOCK AND WALDEN.  
1880.

Entered, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1879,

BY H. H. FAIRALL,

In the Office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington.



## CONTENTS.

### Part I.

## PAGAN DARKNESS DISPELLED.

### CENTURY I—VI.

#### CHAPTER I

##### THE DAWN IN ITALY.

	PAGE.
Early Tribes—Various Titles—Pagan Worship—Its Degrading Influence—The Christian Church in Rome—Paul in the Eternal City—The Cruel Reign of Nero—The Martyrdom of Paul—The Prosperity of Italy under the Administrations of Vespasian and Titus—The Christians persecuted in the Reign of Domitian—The Benevolent and Tolerant Nerva, . . . . .	9

#### CHAPTER II.

##### PAGAN DARKNESS DISAPPEARING.

Italy Peaceful and Prosperous during the Administrations of Trajan, Hadrian, and Antoninus—The Persecution of Christians permitted by Marcus Aurelius—The Emperor impressed by a Remarkable Circumstance—The Corrupt Reign of Commodus—Pertinax deposed and murdered—Septimius Severus on the Throne—The Rapid Progress of Christianity in Italy—Paganism declining—The Testimony of the Martyrs, . . . . .	16
---	----

#### CHAPTER III.

##### THE LIGHT SHINING IN ITALY.

The Short Reign of Heliogabalus—The Benevolent Alexander Severus—The Condition of Italy under Maximinus, Gordian, Philip, and Decius—Paganism endeavoring to exterminate the Italian Christians—The Unimportant Administrations of Gallus, Æmilianus, Valerian, and Claudius—The Brilliant Reign of Aurelian—Tacitus assumes the Imperial Purple—He is followed by Probus, Carus, Carinus, and Numerianus—The Reign of Diocletian inaugurates a New Period—The Authority of the Government strengthened—Christianity rapidly advancing in Italy—The Church in the Catacombs, . . . . .	23
--	----

#### CHAPTER IV.

##### PAGANISM OVERTHROWN IN ITALY.

Diocletian issues a Persecuting Edict against the Christians—He and Maximian abdicate—Galerius and Constantius rule Italy—Constantine defeats Maxentius,	
--	--



and becomes Emperor—The Luminous Cross and the Conversion of Constantine—Christianity becomes the National Religion—The Religious Devotion of Constantine—The Bishop of Rome—Disgraceful Contentions—The Italian Church gradually becoming Formal, Superstitious, and Corrupt—The Practice of Monkery—Ecclesiastical Councils—The Doctrines of the Church—Translation of Relics—The Power and Wealth of the Clergy, . . . . . 29

## CHAPTER V.

### AMBROSE—THE WALDENSES.

The Independence of the Diocese of Milan—The Birth of Ambrose—His Education and Promotion—Elected Bishop of Milan—The Conversion of Augustine—The Evangelical Views of Ambrose—His Writings and Musical Compositions—The Origin of the Waldenses—Various Theories—The Testimony of Jerome—The Waldenses in the Fourth Century—The Testimony of their Enemies, . . . . 36

## CHAPTER VI.

### THE GOTHS IN ITALY.

Alaric invades Italy—His Forces induced to retire—The Martyr Telemachus—The Vandal Invasion—Alaric returns to Italy and pillages Rome—His Death and Burial—Attila, King of the Huns, invades Northern Italy and destroys Several Cities—Rome plundered by Genseric, the Vandal King of Africa—The Emperor Maximus slain—Eight Sovereigns reign in Twenty Years—Odoacer proclaimed King of Italy, . . . . . 41

## Part II.

## PAPAL DARKNESS PREVALENT.

### CENTURY VI—XIV.

## CHAPTER I.

### THE REIGN OF THE LOMBARDS.

Italy Tranquil and Flourishing—The Administration of Theodoric—Boethius slain—Amalsuntha—Theodatus—Viteges—The Great General Belisarius—Totila captures Rome—The Gothic Power destroyed in Italy—The Lombard King, Audoin—His Conquests and Death—Clepho—Chilperic, the Frankish King, enters Italy—Authauris—Childebert—Gregory the Great—Benedict—Origin of the Benedictines, . . . . . 45

## CHAPTER II.

### ITALY IN PAPAL DARKNESS.

The Deplorable Condition of Italy—The Industrious Benedictines—Boniface IV—Religious Disputes—Monophysites and Monothelites—Pope Martin I persecuted—The Sixth General Council—The Claim of Agatho to Supremacy—Superstitious Views of the Sacraments and Pilgrimages—Festivals in Honor of the Virgin Mary—The Pantheon, . . . . . 51

# CHAPTER III.

## ITALY UNDER FRANKISH RULE.

	PAGE.
Leo III and Pope Gregory II—The Iconoclastic War—Eutychius—Luitprand—Charles Martel—Pepin enters Italy and defeats Astolph—The Pope of Rome becomes a Temporal Ruler—Desiderius conquered by Charlemagne—The Latter crowned King of Italy—The Flight of Pope Leo III, . . . . .	54

# CHAPTER IV.

## THE PROTEST OF CLAUDIUS.

Claudius of Turin—He denounces the Errors of the Papacy—The Prevalence of Image-worship—The writings of Claudius—His Views of the Sacrament, the Primacy of Peter, etc.—Claudius sustained by Bishops and Synods—The False Accusations of his Enemies—The Trial of Leo III—Charlemagne receives the Crown of the Cæsars—Louis the Mild—Lothaire—Leo IV—Pope Joan—Various Pontiffs—The Assumed Decretals, . . . . .	59
--	----

# CHAPTER V.

## RISE OF THE ITALIAN REPUBLICS.

The Death of Charles the Fat—Various Rulers and Popes—Alberic restores Republican Institutions in Rome—Otho III overthrows Popular Government—His Death—Liberty enjoyed in Rome and Other Italian Cities—The Wealthy and Powerful Republics of Venice, Pisa, and Genoa—Four Emperors—Gregory VII and Henry IV—The Normans, . . . . .	66
--	----

# CHAPTER VI.

## THE STRUGGLES OF THE ITALIAN REPUBLICS.

The War of Investitures—Henry V and Pascal II—The End of the Conflict—The Normans in Southern Italy—The Cities of Lombardy Independent—The Strong Republics oppress the Weak—The Struggle between Milan and Lodi—Frederic Barbarossa in Italy—The "Lombard League," . . . . .	72
---	----

# CHAPTER VII.

## ARNOLD OF BRESCIA.

Arnold's Proposed Reforms—He is condemned and banished—The Bold Reformer returns to Rome—The City in a Tumult—Arnold denounces the Prevailing Corruptions—The Hero's Martyrdom, . . . . .	82
---	----

# CHAPTER VIII.

## THE FRANCISCANS AND DOMINICANS.

Legends of St. Francis's Birth—The Monk in Rome—He is commissioned by Innocent III to establish a Mendicant Order—Its Growth—St. Dominic visits Rome—The Work and Garb of the Dominicans—The Grandeur of their Convents—Prominent Italian Writers—Thomas Aquinas—Bonaventura, . . . . .	87
---	----

# CHAPTER IX.

## THE GUELF AND Ghibelines.

The Claims of the Popes—The Papal Power increasing—Origin of Guef and Ghibelines—Otho IV—Frederic, Honorius, and Gregory—The Capture of the	
---	--

	PAGE.
Papal Fleet—Celestine IV—Innocent IV—The Italian Republics—Conrad— Manfred, . . . . .	95

## CHAPTER X.

## THE GROWTH OF THE ITALIAN REPUBLICS.

The Wealth and Military Defenses of Italian Cities—The Podestas—Factions and Feuds—Giovanni di Vicenza, . . . . .	110
--	-----

## CHAPTER XI.

## DECLINE OF THE IMPERIAL POWER IN ITALY.

Eccelino da Romano—Conradin—Manfred—Urban IV—The Defeat and Death of Conradin—The Ambitious Charles—Dissensions in Milan—Castruccio Castrucani, . . . . .	118
---	-----

## CHAPTER XII.

## THE DOCTRINES AND USAGES OF THE WALDENSES.

The Waldensian Theology—The “Nobla Leyçon”—The “Lingua Romana”— The Synods and Clergy—Waldensian Missionaries, . . . . .	127
---	-----

---

 Part III.

## PAPAL DARKNESS RELIEVED.

## CENTURY XIV—XIX.

## CHAPTER I.

## ITALY DURING THE PAPAL SCHISM.

Robert, King of Naples—Nicola di Rienzi—The Bannerets—Electing a Pontiff— Urban VI—The Rival Popes, . . . . .	133
--	-----

## CHAPTER II.

## THE REVIVAL OF LETTERS IN ITALY.

Dante—His Poetical Works—The “Divina Commedia”—Dante on the Papacy— Petrarch—His Letter to Clement VI—Laura de Sade—Petrarch’s Character and Writings—Boccaccio—His Poems—The “Decamerone,” . . . . .	137
---	-----

## CHAPTER III.

## WARS OF THE ITALIAN REPUBLICS.

A Crisis in Lombardy—The Power and Wealth of Venice—Its Wars with Milan— Florence—Its Government—Cosmo de Medici—The Milanese defeated by the Florentines and Venetians—Various Popes, . . . . .	152
--	-----



CHAPTER IV.

SAVONAROLA—MICHAEL ANGELO—RAPHAEL.

	PAGE.
Girolamo Savonarola—Accepts the Monastic Life—Admired by Lorenzo de Medici—Accomplishes Reforms—The Fiery Trial—Savonarola's Martyrdom—His Character—Michael Angelo—His Works—Raphael—Other Distinguished Italians, . . . . .	157

CHAPTER V.

FIRST PERSECUTIONS OF THE WALDENSES.

The Tragedy of Pragelas—Cataneo's Expedition—The Fearful Massacre—the Invaders defeated, . . . . .	169
--	-----

CHAPTER VI.

FAILURE OF CATANEO'S EXPEDITION.

The Val di Angrogna—Cataneo repulsed—The Pra del Tor—The White Cloud—Captain Sacquet—The Humane Prince, Charles II, . . . . .	181
---	-----

CHAPTER VII.

LUTHER'S JOURNEY TO ROME.

The Monk on his Pilgrimage—An Italian Monastery—Luther in Florence—The Campagna—Luther in Rome—The Prevailing Impiety—The Church of the Lateran—Scala Santa, . . . . .	187
--	-----

CHAPTER VIII.

THE PAPACY AND ITALY.

Pope Julius II—Leo X—The Corruptions of the Papal Court—Indifference and Skepticism—The Patriotic Spirit, . . . . .	201
---	-----

CHAPTER IX.

ITALY RECEIVING LIGHT FROM GERMANY.

The Reuchlin Controversy—Luther's Writings in Italy—Protestant Books in—Rome—Egidio di Porta—Baltasare Fontana, . . . . .	207
---	-----

CHAPTER X.

SACRED LITERATURE IN ITALY.

Various Italian Scholars—The Writings of Pico—Authors of Hebrew Works—Italian Commentators and Translators, . . . . .	213
---	-----

CHAPTER XI.

THE REFORMATION EXTENDED BY COMMERCE AND WAR.

The Intercourse between Germany and Italy—Charles V in Italy—His Controversy with Clement VII—Rome pillaged—Terrible Scenes—The Reformation, . . .	223
--	-----

CHAPTER XII.

THE REFORMATION IN VENICE.

The Condition of Venice Favorable to the Gospel—Luther's Writings circulated—Rosselli's Letter—Protestantism advancing—Altieri's Letter, . . . . .	233
--	-----

## CHAPTER XIII.

## MILAN RECEIVING THE GOSPEL.

Paul III alarmed at the Progress of the Reformation—Celio Secundo Curio—His Arrest and Imprisonment—His Remarkable Escape, . . . . .	PAGE. 239
--	--------------

## CHAPTER XIV.

## MANTUA—LOCARNO—ISTRIA—FERRARA.

The Gospel in Mantua—Folengo—Cardinal Gonzaga—The Reformation in Locarno—Beccaria and Other Reformers—Istria receives Protestantism—Vergerio—The Court of Ferrara—Duchess Renée—She favors the Reformation, .	242
---	-----

## CHAPTER XV.

## THE PROTESTANT CAUSE IN MODENA.

The Academy at Modena—Controversy with the Priests—Paolo Ricio—Giovanni di Politiano—Cardinal Morone, . . . . .	252
---	-----

## CHAPTER XVI.

## THE REFORMATION IN CENTRAL AND SOUTHERN ITALY.

Florence as a Literary Center—Brucioli, Marmochini, and Teofilo—The Writings of Brucioli—The Reformation in Bologna—John Mollio—A Reform Commission—Protestantism in Naples—Juan di Valdez— <u>Peter Martyr Vermigli</u> —Bernardino Ochino—His Popularity in Venice—The Gospel in Sicily and Lucca—Aonio Paleario, . . . . .	257
---	-----

## CHAPTER XVII.

## THE INQUISITION AT VENICE, MODENA, AND FERRARA.

Pietro Caraffa—The Flight of Ochino and Martyr—The "Holy Office"—The Conflict at Modena—Protestants persecuted—Valentino—Trial of Castelvetro—Protestantism at Ferrara—Duchess Renée, . . . . .	280
---	-----

## CHAPTER XVIII.

## PERSECUTION IN NORTHERN ITALY.

The Firmness of Duchess Renée—Her Character—Her Children—Persecution in Venice—Altieri banished—Terrible Scenes in Capo d'Istria—Flight of Vergerio—The Martyrs of Venice—Guirlanda, Ricetto, Segà, Spinula, and Lupe-tino—Persecutions in Cremona, Parma, and Faenza, . . . . .	297
--	-----

## CHAPTER XIX.

## THE CRUELITIES OF THE PAPAL INQUISITION.

The Sufferings and Banishment of the Locarnese Protestants—Persecutions in Lucca, Mantua, Milan, Florence, and Sienna—The Reign of Terror in Naples and Calabria—Wholesale Slaughter, . . . . .	311
---	-----

## CHAPTER XX.

## ITALIAN MARTYRS.

The Cruel Reign of Pius V—Jacobini, Fannio, and Mollio—Algieri, Gamba, and Varaglia—The Imprisonment and Martyrdom of Paschale—Carnesecchi, Paleario, and Beatrice Cenci, . . . . .	335
---	-----

CHAPTER XXI.

ITALIAN RULERS AND POETS.

	PAGE.
The Italian Reformation suppressed—Death of Lorenzo de Medici—Alexander VI succeeds Innocent VIII—Ludovico Sforza—Pietro de Medici—Charles VIII of France—Decline of the Genoese Republic—Death of Leo X—Charles, Archduke of Austria—Andrea Doria—Ludovico Ariosto—Torquato Tasso—Various Italian Writers—Nicola Macchiavelli—His Diplomatic and Literary Career—Political Writers, . . . . .	355

CHAPTER XXII.

SYNOD IN THE WALDENSIAN VALLEYS.

The Vaudois Church declining in Spirituality—The Synod at Chamforans—The Waldenses revived—Delegates from Switzerland, . . . . .	365
--	-----

CHAPTER XXIII.

THE WALDENSIAN REMONSTRANCES.

Emmanuel Philibert's Decree—Persecution at Carignano—Remonstrance to the Prince—to the Queen—to the Council, . . . . .	372
--	-----

CHAPTER XXIV.

THE PAPAL CRUSADE IN THE VALLEYS.

The Vaudois Messenger—The Monks of Pinerolo—Philip of Savoy—A Monk's Sermon—La Trinita invades the "Valleys"—The Enemy repulsed—Deception and Persecution—The Vaudois Covenant—The Defeat of La Trinita's Army—"Articles of Capitulation," . . . . .	377
--	-----

CHAPTER XXV.

DISTINGUISHED PONTIFFS—PROMINENT SCHOLARS.

Clement VIII—He is resisted by the Venetians—Paul V and the Venetians—Urban VIII—Various Pontiffs—Galileo—His Imprisonment—Torricelli—Borelli—Malpighi—Sarpi—Pallavicini, . . . . .	394
---	-----

CHAPTER XXVI.

THE FAMINE—THE PLAGUE—THE MASSACRE.

The Vaudois aided by Foreign Contributions—Castocar's Tyranny—The Fearful Pestilence—The Duchess Christina—The Inquisition at Work—Marchioness di Pianeza—The Exiles—Pianeza's Treachery—The Awful Massacre—Cromwell's Interposition, . . . . .	399
---	-----

CHAPTER XXVII.

GIANAVELLO—THE MASSACRE—THE EXILES.

The Mountains of La Combe—Joshua Gianavello—The Deceptive Pianeza—Gianavello's Bravery—Massacre of the Vaudois—Their Courage—Cromwell's Letter—The Cruel Edict of Amadeus—The Exiled Vaudois, . . . . .	417
---	-----

CHAPTER XXVIII.

THE RETURN OF THE WALDENSES.

The Exiles looking Homeward—Preparations for Departure—Henri Arnaud—The Waldenses Victorious—The Sabbath at Prali—Leidet's Pulpit, . . . . .	427
--	-----



## CHAPTER XXIX.

## THE WALDENSES RE-ESTABLISHED IN THEIR VALLEYS.

The Vaudois at Bobbio and the "Rock of Sibaud"—Arnaud's Warriors on La Balsiglia—The Giant Alps—Supplies for the Vaudois—Catinat defeated—French Cannonading—The "Old Mantle" covers the Vaudois, . . . . .	PAGE. 434
---	--------------

## CHAPTER XXX.

## FOREIGN RULE IN ITALY—PROMINENT POPES AND WRITERS.

Italy under Austrian Rule—Philip V of Spain—Prince Eugene of Savoy—The French and Spanish defeated—Victor Amadeus II and the Vaudois—Charles Emmanuel III—The Spanish Power—Clement XI—Benedict XIII—Clements XII, XIII, and XIV—The Jesuits suppressed—Alfieri and other Eminent Italians in Art, Science, and Literature, . . . . .	442
---	-----

## CHAPTER XXXI.

## THE FRENCH CAMPAIGN IN ITALY.

Bonaparte's Victories in Italy—Overthrow of the Venetian Republic—The Cisalpine, Ligurian, Cispadane, Tiberine, and Parthenopæan Republics—The French Reverses in Italy, . . . . .	452
--	-----

---

 Part IV.

## PAPAL DARKNESS DISAPPEARING.

## CENTURY XIX.

---

 FIRST DECADE, 1800-1810.

## CHAPTER I.

## ITALY UNDER FRENCH RULE.

The Conflict in Italy—The Passage of the Alps by Napoleon's Army—The French Victory at Marengo—Napoleon's Supremacy complete, . . . . .	458
---	-----

## SECOND DECADE, 1810-1820.

## CHAPTER II.

## BIRTH OF CAVOUR—ITALY OPPRESSED—GARIBALDI.

The Birth and Childhood of Cavour—The French Rule in Italy overthrown—The Despotic Power of Austria—Pius VII restores the Jesuits—Giuseppe Garibaldi—His Education—The Young Sailor, . . . . .	461
--	-----

## THIRD DECADE, 1820-1830.

## CHAPTER III.

## JOSEPH MAZZINI AND THE CARBONARI.

The Liberal Movement in Naples and Piedmont—Charles Felix—Young Mazzini aroused—His Writings—Initiated into Carbonarism, . . . . .	469
--	-----

Third Decade, Continued, 1820-1830.

CHAPTER IV.

THE WALDENSES—COLONEL BECKWITH—THE PAPACY.

	PAGE.
Education in the "Valleys"—Aid from Philanthropists—Colonel Beckwith—His Work among the Waldenses—Their Condition—Leo XII—Pius VIII, . . .	479

FOURTH DECADE, 1830-1840.

CHAPTER V.

THE ITALIAN REVOLUTION—"YOUNG ITALY."

The Insurrection in Various Cities—Its Suppression by Austria—Mazzini—His Arrest and Imprisonment—His Release and Retirement to France—Visits Simondini—His Flight to Corsica—Returns to France—His Letter to Charles Albert—"Young Italy"—Its Failure—"Young Europe"—Mazzini in England, . . . . .	483
---	-----

Fourth Decade, Continued, 1830-1840.

CHAPTER VI.

THE WALDENSES—GREGORY XVI—GARIBALDI.

Dr. Baird's Visit to the Waldenses—Their Usages and Doctrines—Colonel Beckwith's Efforts—Gregory XVI—The Degradation of Italy—Garibaldi's Career in South America, . . . . .	497
--	-----

FIFTH DECADE, 1840-1850.

CHAPTER VII.

MAZZINI IN EXILE—THE BANDIERAS.

Mazzini collects Foscolo's Writings—Carlyle's Opinion of Mazzini—Attilio and Emilio Bandiera—Their Expedition, Arrest, and Execution, . . . . .	502
---	-----

Fifth Decade, Continued, 1840-1850.

CHAPTER VIII.

CAMILLO CAVOUR—THE CRISIS IN ITALY.

Cavour's Policy—Piedmontese Reverses—The Condition of Europe—Various Policies proposed—Charles Albert abdicates—Victor Emmanuel, . . . . .	508
--	-----

Fifth Decade, Continued, 1840-1850.

CHAPTER IX.

ALESSANDRO GAVAZZI—PIUS IX—GIOBERTI.

Gavazzi as a Monk, Professor, and Priest—Nicolini on Romanism—Gavazzi's Sermon in Rome—His Imprisonment—The Italians aroused—The Patriotic Army—Ovation to Gavazzi—His Bravery—Welcomed to Bologna—Pius IX abandons his Liberal Policy—Daniel Manin—Gioberti—His Writings, . . .	521
--	-----

Fifth Decade, Continued, 1840-1850.

CHAPTER X.

THE ROMAN REPUBLIC OVERTHROWN—GARIBALDI—ANTONELLI.

Garibaldi returns to Italy—Pius IX at Gaeta—Provisional Government in Rome—The French Repulsed—A Spirited Proclamation—The Neapolitans defeated—The Fall of Rome—Garibaldi and Anna—Sketch of Antonelli, . . . . .	538
--	-----

## SIXTH DECADE, 1850-1860.

## CHAPTER XI.

## THE POLITICAL DEVELOPMENT OF CAVOUR.

Cavour and Rattazzi—Cavour's Proposed Reforms—Massimo D'Azeglio—Parties in Parliament—Cavour's Resignation—Visits France and England, . . . . .	PAGE. 566
---	--------------

## Sixth Decade, Continued, 1850-1860.

## CHAPTER XII.

## THE POLICY OF CAVOUR.

Cavour as President—Financial and Commercial Reforms—Cavour's Religious Policy—His Liberal Views—Denounced by Factions—Public Works, . . . .	579
--	-----

## Sixth Decade, Continued, 1850-1860.

## CHAPTER XIII.

## OPENING OF THE NATIONAL DRAMA IN ITALY.

Piedmont and the Crimean War—The Treaty of Alliance—Cavour's Anxiety—Bravery of the Italian Troops—The Congress at Paris—Death of Manin—Cavour's Triumph—The Alliance at Plombieres, . . . . .	594
--	-----

## Sixth Decade, Continued, 1850-1860.

## CHAPTER XIV.

## ITALY BEFORE AND AFTER THE PEACE OF VILLAFRANCA.

The Italian Question—Cavour and Napoleon III—Austria's Rashness—War declared—Cavour's Labors—Battle of Montebello—Palestro—Magenta—The Austrians defeated—The Battle of Solferino—Peace of Villafranca—Cavour resigns, . . . . .	615
--	-----

## SEVENTH DECADE, 1860-1870.

## CHAPTER XV.

## THE ANNEXATIONS—THE REVOLUTION IN SICILY.

Cavour resumes the Premiership—Tuscany and Emilia annexed to Piedmont—Cession of Savoy and Nice—Debate in Parliament—Cavour's Reply to Rattazzi and Guerrazzi—Garibaldi's Expedition to Sicily—Francis II defeated—Naples surrenders, . . . . .	634
---	-----

## Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

## CHAPTER XVI.

## CAVOUR AND THE UNITY OF ITALY.

The Sardinian Parliament—Victor Emmanuel proclaimed "King of Italy"—The Roman Question—Father Passaglia—Cavour and the "Temporal Power," . .	644
--	-----

## Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

## CHAPTER XVII.

## CAVOUR'S POLICY VICTORIOUS—THE STATESMAN'S DEATH.

The Situation in Southern Italy—Cavour's Arduous Labors—Garibaldi's Caustic Addresses—Ricasoli's Reply—Garibaldi's Speech in Parliament—Cavour's Rejoinder—His Sickness and Death—General Sorrow—Cavour's Appearance, . .	650
---	-----



Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

CHAPTER XVIII.

WALDENSIAN MISSIONS IN ITALY.

	PAGE.
The Bible in Italy—The Waldensian Church—Its Theological School—The Leg- horn Mission—Romish Opposition—Letters of Drs. Revel and M'Clintock— The Gospel in Milan, Aosta, Elba, and Naples—Gavazzi visits England, . . .	665

Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

CHAPTER XIX.

ITALIAN MISSIONS OF THE "AMERICAN AND FOREIGN CHRISTIAN UNION."

The Society sends a Missionary to Florence—Work commenced in the Island of Elba—The Story of Francesco and Rosa Madiati—Papal Intolerance, . . . .	684
---	-----

Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

CHAPTER XX.

THE ITALIAN CABINET—GARIBALDI—PROTESTANT WORK.

Rattazzi's Administration—Garibaldi preparing for War—The Hero wounded—The Italians aroused—Protestant Literature—Evangelical Missions—Death of Gen- eral Beckwith, . . . . .	688
---	-----

Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

CHAPTER XXI.

THE BRIGANDS—THE LIBERAL PRIESTS—MISSIONS.

Brigandage encouraged by the Papal Church—Garibaldi Resigns—Liberal Priests proscribed—Waldensian Synod—The Wesleyan Mission, . . . . .	697
--	-----

Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

CHAPTER XXII.

THE ROMAN QUESTION—THE ITALIAN PRESS.

Garibaldi—Religious Corporations suppressed—The "September" Convention— The Press—Conflict of Ideas—Liberal Papers criticising the Priests, . . . .	705
--	-----

Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

CHAPTER XXIII.

RELIGIOUS PARTIES IN ITALY—THE PAOLOTTI.

The Views of the Three Parties—The Writings of Gabelli, de Boni, and Perfetti— The Paolotti—Their Perfect Organization and Power, . . . . .	717
--	-----

Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

CHAPTER XXIV.

PROTESTANT MISSIONS ADVANCING.

The Prospect in Northern Italy—Preaching in a Monastery—The Converted Su- perior—Reports from Como, Milan, Sienna, etc., . . . . .	727
---	-----

Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

CHAPTER XXV.

EVANGELICAL WORK IN ITALY.

The Valtellina—Colporteurs persecuted—The Mission at Carrara—The Avaricious Priest—The Labors of Don Ambrogio—Gavazzi in Milan—The Italian Free Churches—Various Missions—Religious Parties in Parliament, . . . . .	738
--	-----

## Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

## CHAPTER XXVI.

## THE DEFEAT OF AUSTRIA—ITALY ANNEXES VENETIA.

PAGE.

Italy declares War against Austria—Victor Emmanuel's Proclamation—His Address to the Venetians—The Circular of Ricasoli, . . . . .	753
--	-----

## Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

## CHAPTER XXVII.

## THE ROMAN QUESTION—PROTESTANT MISSIONS.

Garibaldi's Expedition against Rome—A Proposed Conference—The Parliament—Various Evangelical Missions—Burning Protestant Books, . . . . .	760
---	-----

## Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

## PROCEEDINGS IN PARLIAMENT—EVANGELICAL MISSIONS—PAPAL COUNCIL.

Protest against French Intervention at Rome—The Gospel in Central and Northern Italy—The Life and Labors of De Sanctis—Œcumenical Council, . . .	766
--	-----

## EIGHTH DECADE, 1870-1880.

## CHAPTER XXIX.

## THE "FREE CHURCH"—THE KING IN ROME—PROTESTANT MISSIONS.

The "Free Church" Assembly—Declaration of Principles—Papal Council—Victor Emmanuel in Rome—Entrance of the Gospel—Several Missions Organized, .	777
---	-----

## Eighth Decade, Continued, 1870-1880.

## CHAPTER XXX.

## THE GREAT DEBATE—WALDENSIAN CONFERENCE—GENERAL ASSEMBLY.

A Remarkable Discussion—Italian Bible Society—Gavazzi in America—Death of Mazzini—Waldensian Conference—Free Church Assembly, . . . . .	790
---	-----

## Eighth Decade, Continued, 1870-1880.

## CHAPTER XXXI.

## VARIOUS RELIGIOUS AND POLITICAL EVENTS.

The "Military Church" in Rome—Missions in Florence and Rome—Religious Corporations abolished—Roman Catholic Congress—Mrs. Gould's Work, . .	795
---	-----

## Eighth Decade, Continued, 1870-1880.

## CHAPTER XXXII.

## RELIGIOUS PROCESSIONS PROHIBITED—AMERICAN METHODIST MISSIONS.

A Protestant Chapel dedicated—Religious Processions forbidden—Proposed Reforms—Death of Antonelli—Several Mission Stations, . . . . .	810
---	-----

## Eighth Decade, Continued, 1870-1880.

## CHAPTER XXXIII.

VARIOUS EVANGELICAL MISSIONS—THE DECEASED KING AND POPE—CLOSING EVENTS OF THE DECADE.	
---	--

The Waldensian and Free Italian Churches—Gavazzi's Anniversary—Death of Victor Emmanuel—Death of Pius IX—Leo XIII—Garibaldi in Rome—The End, 817	
--	--



## INTRODUCTION.

---

FOR more than twenty-five centuries Italy has occupied a prominent place among the nations of the world, and has been the theater of remarkable events. The geographical position of the Peninsula no doubt contributed to these results. Almost surrounded by the sea, situated between two hemispheres, and abounding in natural harbors, it attracted the nations and became the grand *entrepot* of the world's commerce. This advantage of location secured wealth and power, and that small territory soon had universal dominion.

No other country has a history more interesting and thrilling than Italy. To the philosophical student of human events it is a profound volume. On that narrow strip of land projecting into the Mediterranean arose the fourth great monarchy described by the prophet Daniel, and in the "seven-hilled city," on the banks of the Tiber, stood the magnificent structures of the Roman civilization. Succeeding ages have read with wonder and even admiration the history of Rome and its Cæsars, whose dominion ruled the civilized world for twelve centuries. Not less remarkable in its character and effects is Papal Rome, whose career during the past thirteen centuries is unparalleled in the record of human affairs. In all the great historic epochs the central power in the renowned city of Italy has been a mighty factor in governing and civilizing the nations of the earth.

Italy also presents instructive lessons for the consideration of the statesman who desires to study the science of government and the art of diplomacy. At different periods the Peninsula has been under monarchical and then under republican rule, and the peculiar features of each have been discussed in the intervening centuries by the political writers of all countries. In every age Italy has produced



statesmen, but none surpass the illustrious Cavour, Victor Emmanuel, Ricasoli, and D'Azeglio.

Those who admire martial deeds will find on the pages of Italian history the names of distinguished generals, whose valor will be commended while bravery is esteemed an honor and patriotism remains a virtue. The popular belief that the sons of the Peninsula are effeminate and incapable of military hardships is not sustained by the record. If the achievements of Scipio, Sylla, Cæsar, and other ancient heroes had never been preserved, the daring exploits of Garibaldi, La Marmora, and Cialdini, and the glorious victories of Magenta and Solferino, would shed imperishable lustre upon the escutcheon of that sunny land.

Although crushed by the worst form of political and ecclesiastical despotism, Italy has been the home of the champions of freedom. Hence the friends of liberty delight to repeat the names and read the lives of such noble patriots as Brutus, Cato, Arnaldo, Rienzi, Savonarola, and Mazzini, who were the apostles of a new faith, if not the evangelists of a new dispensation. It is a significant fact that the discoverer of what has become the "land of the free and the home of the brave" was a native of Genoa, in which the spirit of republicanism has always been predominant.

In art, science, and literature—the trinity of a refined civilization—Italy stands pre-eminent. No other country has as many galleries of paintings and sculpture, and the influence of these has cultivated the taste and elevated the feelings of all enlightened nations. Its cathedrals, palaces, and villas are visited by lovers of fine art from every clime, who admire the proud and costly monuments of architecture like St. Peter's at Rome. Michael Angelo, Raphael, Giotto, Ghiberti, Bandinelli, Cellini, Canova, Titian, Tintoretto, Paul Veronese, Salvator Rosa, Grassi, Benvenuti, and a host of other architects, artists, and sculptors have made the name of Italy illustrious. It will also be honored in its relations to scientific discovery, Galileo having invented the telescope to explore the heavens, and Gioja the magnetic needle to explore the earth. In navigation the labors of Columbus, Vespucci, and Marco Polo crown the

brow of Italy with a halo of glory, while Bruno, Malpighi, Torricelli, Bellini, Morgagni, Borelli, and others in the various departments of natural science reflect credit upon their native land. In literature Italy shines as a star of the first magnitude in the galaxy of nations. The productions of Virgil, Cicero, Livy, Horace, Tacitus, and other celebrated writers have been perennial fountains of classic thought, enriching all modern languages and elevating the standard of culture. This age of intellectual activity passed away when the Roman empire fell, and the northern barbarians possessed the land of scholars. For centuries papal dogmas engrossed public attention and repressed all investigation; but the great minds of Italy at last rebelled, and Dante, Petrarch, Tasso, Boccaccio, Macchiavelli, and others startled the ignorant ecclesiastics of Italy by their eloquent appeals in behalf of political and spiritual independence.

Italy is a land of sacred interest to the Christian. Soon after the establishment of Christianity in Palestine it penetrated the country of the Cæsars, and had its representatives in the imperial household. The great apostle to the Gentiles was brought in chains to Rome, preached the Gospel in his own hired house, and then suffered martyrdom, baptizing the soil of a pagan nation with the blood of a noble saint. Then followed the ten fearful persecutions, during which multitudes of Christians were slain, and the remnant worshiped in the catacombs, whose dark, subterranean passages and significant inscriptions will ever impress the Christian world. The martyrs of Italy in the sixteenth century have been canonized in the hearts of every Protestant, and no more thrilling chapter can be found in the history of the Christian Church than that which records the labors of Peter Martyr, Ochino, Paleario, Paschale, Carnesecchi, Fannio, and other worthies.

In the present volume the author has narrated in chronological order, as far as possible, the prominent events, political and religious, in the modern history of Italy. He has commenced with the Christian era, because not until the introduction of Christianity into that country did the real struggle between the conservative and progressive elements of society become manifest. It will be apparent

to the reader, in considering the many changes through which Italy has passed, that it has advanced into the light or receded into the darkness according as it has maintained or corrupted the doctrines of Christianity. Equality, liberty, and fraternity are the fruits of the pure Gospel in society, and a nation can not reach the light of a true Christian civilization without them. For nearly nineteen centuries Italy has been moving slowly toward this grand destiny.

During the first five centuries of the Christian era the Peninsula was a part of the vast Roman empire; but, upon the overthrow of the latter, it became a distinct kingdom. It had been struggling into a new religious light, and the luminous cross which Constantine beheld was prophetic of the complete banishment of pagan darkness. But a short day only intervened between the night of pagan and papal rule, and then followed eight centuries of ignorance and superstition. Filicaja, an Italian poet, in his beautiful sonnet, extols the gift of loveliness possessed by his native land, but calls it a fatal dower, because it has tempted the invader and attracted armed hordes from the time of Hannibal's conquests down to those of Napoleon. The Goths, Vandals, Lombards, Franks, and Germans in succession ravaged the fair plains of Italy and subjugated its people.

At length, however, these oppressions of foreign tyrants aroused the principal Italian cities, and they asserted their independence. This was the first struggle into the light of political freedom, and is a bright epoch in the history of that land. Those small republics were rich and powerful, and even at that early age the Peninsula might have been united under one free government had not the papacy, which acquired temporal possessions during the reign of Pepin, held Rome as its capital, and fomented jealousy between rival cities. From the fourteenth to the nineteenth centuries the prevailing darkness was partly relieved by the lamps of the *Renaissance* and the Reformation. The former was the awakening of the Italian intellect, and the latter the moving of the Italian heart.

Another radiant center was the Waldensian Church, which had lighted its ancient lamp at apostolic altars and kept it burning in the Alpine valleys during that long night of papal ignorance. At differ-



ent periods the bloody hand of persecution endeavored to extinguish this light; but, amid the most terrible sufferings that any people ever experienced, the Waldenses maintained the truth of their significant motto: "LUX LUCET IN TENEBRIS." The names of Arnaud, Leidet, Leger, and other heroes are indissolubly linked with those grand mountains, where marvelous deeds of valor were performed and the pure faith preserved. The Italian Reformation of the sixteenth century was suppressed by the Inquisition, the republics declined, and for two hundred years the Peninsula was ruled by Spain, Austria, and France. Soon after the dawn of the nineteenth century, Italy, profoundly moved by the French Revolution, and weary of its subjection to despotic governments, sighed for national independence and unity. The brilliant victories of Napoleon on its soil and the defeat of Austria aroused its patriotic spirit, and several republics were organized. Once more Italy struggled into the light of freedom, but the overthrow of Napoleon resulted in the restoration of Austrian tyranny. It was too late, however, to crush the aspirations of an awakened people, which found expression in such organizations as the "*Carbonari*" and "Young Italy." Mazzini, the fearless patriot and republican agitator, was the first to raise in the face of all Europe the banner of Italian unity. He gave to his native land a faith and a conscience. His motto was, "Thought and action;" his creed, "God and the people." He was the civil educator of the masses, the oracle of Italian liberals, and the symbol of the national energy and intelligence, working out the problem of the national regeneration. His was "the Titanic dream," as he himself says of Dante, "of an Italy the leader of humanity and the angel of liberty among the nations." Believing that he had a divine mission to fulfill, Mazzini labored to secure the triumph of his lofty ideal, though he sometimes employed means which were unworthy of himself and of his holy cause.

The three decades—from 1850 to 1880—are the most glorious in the history of Italy. During this short period more real progress has been made than in all the previous centuries. At last a bright morning has come to that oppressed country. The house of Savoy

is honored with the inauguration of the new political dispensation, because it had nourished the germ of freedom. In 1850 Victor Emmanuel occupied the throne of Piedmont, when internal dissensions and European complications threatened to defeat all plans for Italian unity; but at the opportune moment Count Cavour, who became the Washington of his country, was appointed prime minister. In ten years, amid insult and opposition, he secured important reforms, and by his diplomacy placed Italy on a level with the great nations of Europe. He was in many respects the most remarkable man of his time, and ranks among the ablest statesmen of the world. Italy, now united and prosperous, is his legacy, and he will ever be recognized as the "Father of his Country."

During the past thirty years Italy has solved a problem which has troubled the nations for ten centuries—the temporal power of the papacy. Victor Emmanuel entered Rome in 1870, and unfurled the tricolored flag from the Quirinal. Pope Pius IX became a subject of the Italian government, and the reproach of Canossa was taken away. Fifteen centuries had elapsed since Constantine left Rome, and Victor Emmanuel took possession of it. The Peninsula once more had its ancient and magnificent capital, and was united under one ruler from the Alps to the sea. The fruits of this recent political and ecclesiastical emancipation are already apparent. While Italy has always been distinguished for art, science, and literature, yet in every age the masses of the people have not been intelligent and enterprising. Indeed, the lower classes were proverbially ignorant, few of them being able to read. No real progress in popular education was made until 1860. As late as 1840 Tuscany and the Lombardo-Venetian kingdom were the only governments in Italy which provided instruction for all classes of youth. These few schools were generally taught by the priests, who were so indolent and inefficient that they were called *ignorantelli*.

In 1862, soon after the awakening of Italy, only one-half of the whole population in the old provinces and Lombardy were able to read, one-fourth in Emilia, Tuscany, the Marches, and Umbria, and one-tenth in Naples and Sicily. Although the Peninsula contained

about 21,000,000 inhabitants, not more than \$1,600,000 were spent in maintaining elementary instruction. In 1864 there were 21,000 schools, attended by about 1,000,000 pupils. At the present time (1879) there are 37,642 public day schools, and 2,299,758 pupils; 9,560 private schools, 193 normal schools, attended by 8,460 students, and in the department of secondary instruction 107 gymnasia with 9,296 pupils, and 80 lyceums with 5,132 pupils. The department of superior education embraces 17 state universities and 4 free universities supported by provinces and communes. These statistics indicate the recent advancement of Italy in the light of popular education, and are prophetic of its future greatness. The press has been emancipated, and contributes to the diffusion of general intelligence. In 1820 Silvio Pellico was imprisoned for publishing a literary journal entitled the *Conciliatore*, and in company with Romagnosi, Maronchelli, and other able writers, endured years of cruel suffering in a gloomy dungeon; but now freedom of thought and speech is unrestricted.

While new Italy rejoices in the possession of national unity, civil and religious liberty, improved educational facilities, a revived commerce, a vigorous press, and other elements of greatness, yet its real prosperity and stability depend upon the success of the evangelical agencies now at work there. An open Bible and a restoration of the primitive Christianity first planted there by Paul are the hope of Italy.

The author, after his return from that country several years ago, resolved to prepare a volume containing the prominent events in its civil, religious, and literary history. He has gathered his material from a wide field, and is indebted to such excellent authorities as Hallam's "Middle Ages," Wylie's "History of Protestantism," M'Crie's "Reformation in Italy," M'Cabe's "Illustrated History of the World," Baird's "Protestantism in Italy," De Mazade's "Life of Cavour, and Dwight's "Life of Garibaldi."

IOWA CITY, IOWA, December 1, 1879.







# ITALY STRUGGLING INTO LIGHT.

---

## Part I.

### PAGAN DARKNESS DISPELLED.

#### CENTURY I-VI.

---

#### CHAPTER I.

##### *THE DAWN IN ITALY.*

THE early history of Italy is closely connected with that of the Roman Empire. Among the earliest inhabitants of the country were the Umbrians, Etruscans or Tuscans, Oscans, Siculi or Latins, Volsci, Æqui, Sabines, Peligni, Marsi, Marrucini, Vestini, Hernici, Ænotrians, Daunians or Apulians, Japyges, Peucetii, and Messapii. These and many other barbarous tribes lived in the northern part of the peninsula, and various Grecian colonies in the southern, which was called "Magna Græcia." The Greek appellation of "Hesperia," or "Hesperia Magna," which was applied to the whole region, was replaced by the name "Italy." The latter was at first employed to designate a small southern portion of the peninsula, but gradually extended to the north until the time of Augustus, when it embraced the provinces of Liguria, Gallia Cisalpina, Venetia, and Istria in the north; Etruria, Umbria, Picenum, Samnium, Latium, and Campania in the center, or Italy proper; and Apulia, Lucania, and Bruttium, in the south.

It is generally admitted that the authentic history of Italy commenced with the founding of Rome, B. C. 753. From that remote period to the birth of Christ pagan darkness enveloped the land. The tribes in the north and the colonies from Greece in the south had introduced polytheism into Italy, and made it the national religion.

Romulus laid the foundation of Rome with the most minute ceremonial, and Numa Pompilius, who succeeded him, B. C. 715, increased the number of the gods, built temples, and instituted different classes of priests and a great variety of religious ceremonies. The flamens officiated each in the service of a peculiar deity; the salii guarded the sacred bucklers; the vestals cherished the sacred fire; and the augurs and aruspices divined future events from the flight of birds.

As Rome advanced in wealth and refinement its pagan worship was rendered more magnificent and impressive by the erection of costly and splendid edifices, adorned with all the arts of sculpture, and filled with offerings and sacrifices. The priests, arrayed in gorgeous costumes, officiated in the temples, and the multitude beheld the spectacle of bleeding animal victims with feelings of the deepest awe. Jupiter and a host of other national deities, celestial and terrestrial, were worshiped in the most solemn and imposing manner. Ancient Rome is said to have contained four hundred and twenty temples dedicated to different gods. Indeed, every virtue and vice of the human heart, every faculty of the mind and body, and every property of the real and imaginary world, was presided over by its peculiar deity. Every mountain and stream and grove had its nymph or naiad, and every hero and sage of Italy was elevated to the rank of a divinity. In the dwelling of almost every wealthy family there was a private chapel, in which their household gods were worshiped.

This system of paganism, with all its mysterious rites and grand ceremonies, degraded the people of Italy. Instead of restraining human passions, this ancient religion actually developed them by inculcating the worship of certain deities who represented the worst forms of vice. There could not be incitements to virtue when the unlimited gratification of appetite was regarded as the *summum bonum* of human life. While some of the heathen philosophers had an indistinct idea of the true God, and of future rewards and punishments, the multitude were ignorant of these important truths. Hence, from age to age, they progressed in wickedness, and so intent were they in practicing evil, and so resolved to gratify their passions, that their minds were excited to discover new modes of indulgence. It is not surprising, therefore, that their entertainments, games, theaters, and sports became cruel and bloody to satisfy the desires of lust and of pride. The priests, who were teachers of error and the base deluders of a wretched, degraded people, could not arrest this

tide of iniquity, because paganism ignored the authority of conscience, declaring the whole of religion to consist of the performance of certain ceremonies, and the gods to be superior to men only in their immortality and power.

Such was pagan Rome when the Christian era dawned upon the world. Christ had proclaimed those truths which were destined to enlighten and elevate every nation; but as yet they had not advanced beyond Judea. At length the instrumentality that was to proclaim them in the great center of paganism was selected. It is not definitely known, however, when the first ray of Christian light penetrated Italy. In A. D. 58 Paul, the chosen apostle to the Gentiles, was moved to address a letter from Corinth to the Christians at Rome, but when and by whom the Gospel was first preached there can not be ascertained. Those who assert that the Apostle Peter was the honored instrument depend upon tradition to support their opinion, as the Bible is silent concerning the matter. If that servant of Christ first preached the Gospel in the "Eternal City," such an important event would have been recorded in the "Acts of the Apostles," which embraces chiefly the labors of both Peter and Paul. Indeed, the name of the original founder of the Church in Rome has not been preserved by history. It is, therefore, probable that it was first organized by private Christians converted in Palestine, who had come to reside at Rome, or who had brought back Christianity with them from some of their periodical visits to Jerusalem, as the "strangers from Rome" from the great Pentecost. (Acts ii, 10.) Among the immense multitudes whom political and commercial reasons constantly attracted to the metropolis of the world there could not fail to be representatives of every religion which had established itself in any of the provinces.

As the organization of the Church in Rome was undoubtedly the early dawn of Christianity in Italy, its character possesses an historic interest. The epistle of Paul reveals some features of it which deserve consideration. The salutations at the close indicate that the apostle was already acquainted with the names of numerous Christians at Rome, though he had never seen the brethren there. He had ascertained from those who had visited the Church some important facts relative to its spiritual condition, and he did not hesitate, therefore, to address its members as "beloved of God, called to be saints." Paul also expresses thanks to God that their faith was "spoken of throughout the whole world." This was a remarkable tribute to the zeal and devotion of the first Italian Church, which



boldly maintained the truth in the magnificent but corrupt capital of the Roman Empire. The apostle, moreover, declared his purpose to visit the brethren at Rome, and by imparting "some spiritual gift," through the preaching of the Gospel, to more fully establish them in their work. He expected to greet them on his contemplated journey from Jerusalem to Spain; but having been delayed, and wishing to assure them of his affectionate regard, he wrote the celebrated epistle.

From Corinth Paul went to Jerusalem to attend the Hebrew festival of Pentecost. He was there arrested and arraigned before the Sanhedrim, but was afterwards sent to Cæsarea to Felix, the Roman governor. At the close of two years' imprisonment he was brought to trial, and having appealed his case to Cæsar was taken a prisoner to the Roman emperor. It is the prevailing opinion that Paul reached the imperial city in the Spring, A. D. 61. How different the circumstances of his visit from what he anticipated three years before when he wrote to the brethren at Rome! He now landed upon the shores of Italy in chains; but his humiliation only served to increase the sympathy of the Italian Christians, who gave the distinguished prisoner a cordial reception, meeting him at Appii-Forum and the Three Taverns, and escorting him to the city. The apostle was delivered to the "captain of the guard," who permitted him to dwell by himself with a soldier that kept him."

The presence and counsels of Paul were a blessing to the Church, and though an "ambassador in bonds," he was determined, as he had previously declared, "to preach the Gospel," under all circumstances, to the believers "at Rome also," for even there he was "not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ." Knowing it to be "the power of God unto salvation," he proclaimed it to others, and made converts in "Cæsar's household." While waiting to be arraigned for trial he "dwelt two whole years in his own hired house, and received all that came in unto him, preaching the kingdom of God and teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ with all confidence, no man forbidding him." It is evident from the various epistles which he wrote to distant Churches while in Rome, that many were converted under his ministry there.

The humble Church to which Paul ministered was as "a light which shineth in a dark place." At that period Italy had reached the meridian of wealth, refinement, and luxury; but its moral condition was fearful to behold. Seven centuries of pagan superstition and idolatry had produced their legitimate effects. Livy says of the age

of Augustus, which closed A. D. 14, "*We can neither bear our vices nor their remedy.*" Seneca, one of the purest moralists of Rome, says of the same period: "All is full of criminality and vice; indeed, much more of these is committed than can be remedied by force. A monstrous contest of abandoned wickedness is carried on. The lust of sin increases daily, and shame is daily more and more extinguished. Discarding respect for all that is good and sacred, lust rushes on wherever it will. Vice no longer hides itself. It stalks forth before all eyes. So public has abandoned wickedness become, and so openly does it flame up in the minds of all, that innocence is no longer *seldom*, but has wholly ceased to exist." Thus the testimony of pagan writers confirms the statements of Paul contained in the first chapter of his epistle to the Romans.

From the beginning of the reign of the Emperor Tiberius, A. D. 14, to the death of Nero, A. D. 69, Italy had continued to sink lower in effeminacy and vice. It could boast of a civilization of intellectual and physical greatness, which may exist even under the dominion of paganism, but sensuality and cruelty everywhere prevailed. The spirit of Roman liberty fled, and the people became slaves under the tyrannical rule of Tiberius, Caligula, Claudius, and Nero. In the mean time the light of divine truth had been radiating from the Church in Rome, and many embraced the doctrines of Christianity. The number of such must have been considerable, because a severe persecution was waged against them by Nero, A. D. 64. In the Summer of that year a terrible conflagration occurred in Rome, which continued nine days, and destroyed ten of the fourteen regions, or "wards," of the city. Nero watched the progress of the flames from a tower on the Esquiline, and chanted the "Sack of Troy" in the dress of an actor. He manifested the most heartless indifference to the sufferings of his subjects. It is said that he ordered the firing of the city because he was disgusted with its narrow, winding streets, and then charged the crime upon the Christians, who were pursued like wild beasts and put to death in the most cruel manner.

During the reign of this blood-thirsty monster Paul suffered martyrdom, the tragic event occurring, according to the best authority, in the Summer of A. D. 68. The heroic apostle, after fearlessly proclaiming the truths of Christianity in the splendid city of the Cæsars, offered himself as a sacrifice; but his death, instead of discouraging the Christians in Italy, inspired them with fresh courage and hope. The immediate successors of Nero were more tolerant

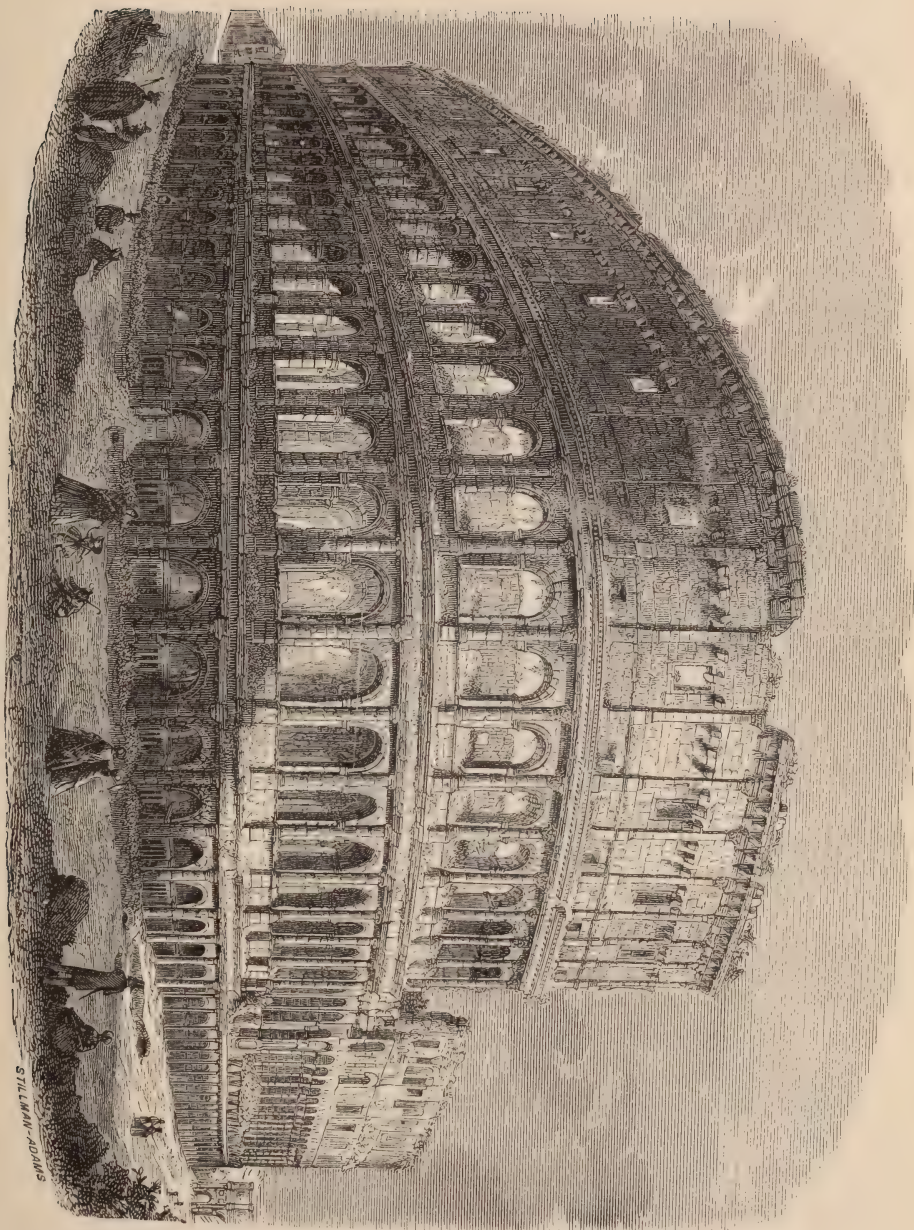
toward the followers of Christ. Galba, who reigned only seven months, was of illustrious descent, and possessed a good moral character. He endeavored to accomplish two important objects—the punishment of the enormous vices then prevalent and the replenishing of the treasury. Otho, who succeeded Galba, occupied the throne only ninety days, but during that time he manifested a humane disposition. One of his generals was proclaimed emperor by the army, and Otho, having been defeated by Vitellius, committed suicide. The latter resembled Nero in his vices and cruelties, and at the end of eight months was ignominiously put to death by his enemies, who had selected Vespasian to be his successor.

The new emperor came to the throne by the unanimous consent of the senate and army, and was received with demonstrations of delight on his arrival at Rome, A. D. 70. He acted under the forms of the republic, and even restored the senate to its deliberative rights. Under his vigorous administration the empire regained a great degree of its lost power and prestige. The prominent features of his character were clemency, affability, and frugality. Vespasian also restored the discipline of the army to its old standard, and promoted education and literature. The spirit of enterprise was fostered by the erection of great public works, which gave employment to the laboring class. The emperor converted the space inclosed by Nero, for his own use, into public grounds, and in a portion of it built the Flavian Amphitheater, or celebrated Coliseum. The interior was decorated with great splendor. The principal seats were of marble, and covered with cushions. Gilded gratings, ornaments of gold, ivory, and amber, and mosaic of precious stones, displayed the generosity of the emperor and gratified the taste of the people.

Vespasian, who died A. D. 79, to the universal regret of the people of Italy, was succeeded by his son Titus, a just and benevolent prince. He was sincerely and unceasingly devoted to the happiness of his subjects, and, notwithstanding his extravagant habits and other grave personal faults, deserves to be classed among the good rulers of Italy. During his reign the country was afflicted with heavy calamities. A terrible fire raged three days and nights at Rome, and this was followed by a destructive pestilence, which carried away ten thousand persons in one day. Titus from his own resources repaired the devastations of the city, even selling the ornaments of his palace to defray the cost of rebuilding the burned district. The great eruption of Vesuvius, which destroyed the beautiful and wealthy cities of Pompeii and Herculaneum, was a serious loss to



THE COLISEUM.



STILMAN-ADAMS



that portion of Italy; but in all these disasters the emperor acted as a father to his people. His brother, Domitian, assumed the royal purple, A. D. 81. The beginning of his reign promised a continuance of their happiness to the inhabitants of Italy; but the scene soon changed, and he became a most execrable villain and tyrant. Possessing a morose and jealous disposition, he delighted in cruel deeds, condemning to death many illustrious Romans, whose agonies he witnessed with ferocious pleasure. His reign was an era of prodigality and luxury as well as of inhumanity and baseness. The people were loaded with insupportable taxes to furnish spectacles and games for their amusement. Though not destitute of learning himself, he was not disposed to patronize it, but banished the philosophers from Rome, and spent his own leisure in the most degrading pursuits. He was bitter against the followers of Christ, who had become numerous, and at his instigation not less than forty thousand of them suffered martyrdom, A. D. 95.

The cruelties of Domitian had so discredited the hereditary principle that the senate now asserted a right which it had not exercised since the days of Augustus, and selected Nerva to occupy the throne, which was made vacant by the death of Domitian, A. D. 96. The new emperor proved to be one of Rome's best sovereigns—economical, prudent, munificent, courteous, and modest. The few vices he possessed were scarcely observed amidst the blaze of his virtues and the fame of his exploits. He replaced the bloody rule of Domitian with a government of great gentleness, and, by rescinding the sanguinary edicts of his predecessor, permitted the Christian Church to enjoy a season of tranquillity.

---

## CHAPTER II.

### *PAGAN DARKNESS DISAPPEARING.*

WHEN the second century opened Trajan still held the imperial scepter, and endeavored to extend his dominions. After a struggle of four years he finally conquered the Dacians, A. D. 105, and, returning to Rome, celebrated his triumph with games which lasted one hundred and twenty-three days, during which eleven thousand wild beasts and ten thousand gladiators, chiefly Dacian prisoners, are said to have been slain. He invaded Armenia, A. D. 115,

and carried his victorious arms as far as Susa. The result of the war was the addition to the Roman territory of the provinces of Armenia, Mesopotamia, and Assyria. Desiring to be considered by future ages as a great conqueror, he resolved to subjugate the whole earth, but was compelled to abandon the enterprise on account of the inconveniences of increasing age. He died in Cilicia, A. D. 117, on his return from the East, and his ashes were conveyed to Rome in a golden urn, and buried under the column which is called by his name.

Hadrian was chosen emperor, and in many respects resembled Trajan. He was genial in his disposition, affable in manner, and liberal in character. Though he ruled with a firm hand he was moderate in all things, and scrupulously maintained the forms of a free government. He expended the public funds lavishly in the service of the state and the improvement of the empire, but managed the finances with such skill that his treasury was never exhausted. He resembled Trajan also in his capacity for and devotion to business, and never allowed his love of pleasure to interfere with his official duties. He was a liberal patron of the arts and a wise friend to literature. His reign was an almost unbroken period of peace and prosperity, as he desired to improve his dominions without caring to extend them. By visiting in person all the provinces of his empire he became acquainted with the various races over which he ruled, and dispensed to each alike the blessings of justice and order. With the advance of age his natural irritability of temper and jealousy increased, and, disregarding the value of human life, he put men to death for small offenses. An architect was condemned to be executed for criticising some statues designed by the emperor. Toward the close of his earthly career he was miserable and unhappy; but his subjects, despite his faults, mourned his demise. "To have combined for twenty years unbroken peace with the maintenance of a contented and efficient army; liberal expenditure with a full exchequer, replenished by no oppressive or unworthy means; a free-speaking senate with a strong and firm monarchy,—is no mean glory."

The wisdom of Hadrian was never more strikingly exhibited than in the choice of his successor, Titus Aurelius Antoninus, or Antoninus Pius, as he is more commonly called. He commenced to reign A. D. 138, and during his peaceful and prosperous administration of twenty-three years conferred innumerable blessings upon Italy. While preferring peace to conquest, yet whenever war became necessary he carried it on with vigor and success. He continued the

liberal policy of Trajan and Hadrian, displaying virtues that were an ornament to human nature. Such was his munificence that in cases of famine or inundation in Italy he supplied with his own money the wants of the sufferers. When told of conquering heroes his humane feelings moved him to say, with Scipio, that "he preferred the life and preservation of one subject to the death of a hundred enemies." He was the first of the pagan emperors who protected the Christians, for whom he manifested an extraordinary regard, declaring that "if any should proceed to disturb them on account of their religion, such should undergo the same punishment which was intended against the accused." A degree of persecution, nevertheless, occurred, for which Antoninus can not be held responsible.

Marcus Aurelius, who ascended the imperial throne A. D. 161, assumed the name of Antoninus, his adoptive father, to whom he was sincerely attached. He was a prince of great talents and virtue, loving retirement and philosophical contemplation, and improving for mental cultivation and enjoyment all his leisure time, which, to his regret, was limited. The disturbances in the empire called him frequently into the field, and being inclined to peace, he disliked these military excursions. It was an infelicity of the otherwise admirable reign of Aurelius, that the Christians at one time were violently persecuted. From his youth he had been a devoted follower of the doctrines of the Stoic philosophy, and it is possible that he was influenced in his treatment of the Christians by the advice of the harsh and arrogant members of that sect who surrounded him. The fanatical pagan priests ascribed to the Christians the various calamities which afflicted the empire—the attacks of the barbarians, and the devastations occasioned by earthquakes, famines, pestilence, and inundations. The disciples of Christ were accused of provoking the gods by impiously refusing to deprecate their wrath. During this persecution, which occurred A. D. 177, many indignities, deprivations, and sufferings were inflicted on those who professed the true faith. These cruel measures, which equaled those of Nero, were permitted by Aurelius, though he was the most philosophic and accomplished of the Romish emperors, and his administration was stained with the blood of such eminent martyrs as the venerable Polycarp, bishop of Smyrna, the friend and companion of the Apostle John, and the excellent and learned Justin Martyr. Among many nameless sufferers history has preserved from oblivion Pothinus, the respectable bishop of Lyons, who was then more than ninety years of age; Sanctus, a deacon of Vienne; Attalus, a native of Pergamus; Maturus, and Alexander;



some of whom were devoured by wild beasts, and some of them tortured in an iron chair made red hot. Some females also, and particularly Biblias and Blandina, reflected honor both upon their sex and their religion by their constancy and courage.

It is said that a circumstance, which seemed to be almost miraculous, gave Aurelius a favorable impression of the Christians, and immediately caused him to relax the persecution against them. In a contest with the barbarians beyond the Danube, the Roman legions unexpectedly, through the artifice of the enemy, found themselves inclosed in a place where they could neither fight nor retreat. In this situation they became at length entirely disheartened from their long-continued fatigue, the excessive heat of the place, and their violent thirst. In this terrible condition, while sorrow and despair were depicted on every brow, Aurelius ran through the ranks and used every effort to rekindle their hopes and courage; but in vain. At this crisis, and just as the barbarians were ready to follow them, it is recorded that the solemn prayers of a Christian legion, then serving in the Roman army, produced such a shower of rain as instantly revived the fainting soldiers. At the same time the clouds seemed to change their appearance and next discharged a fearful storm of hail with thunder, that dismayed the enemy and made them an easy prey to the refreshed and inspirited Romans. This circumstance is related by pagan as well as Christian writers, with this difference, that the latter ascribe the victory to the prayers of the Christian legion, and the former to the prayers of the emperor. The death of Aurelius, A. D. 180, was regretted as a public loss, and great honor was paid to his memory by the people. According to the superstitions of the times he was ranked among the gods, and in almost every house his statue was found. Scholars and philosophers in succeeding ages read and admired his book of "Meditations."

Commodus, the son of Aurelius, was nominated by the latter to succeed him, and he accordingly mounted the throne A. D. 180. He had nothing but the merits of his father to commend him to the Roman people, evidently inheriting the disposition of his infamous mother, Faustina, rather than that of Aurelius. It is a singular fact that the most detestable of all the emperors was the son of one who, in many respects, may be ranked among the best. Commodus indulged in the lowest vices and the meanest pursuits, participating in the sports of the circus and the amphytheater. Proud of his physical strength, he called himself the "Roman Hercules," and engaged in combats with wild beasts and gladiators. His administration of the



government was entirely weak, contemptible, and tyrannical, and the decline of the empire, which had begun as early as the reign of Galba, and had only been arrested by the five good emperors, proceeded with frightful rapidity. The discipline of the army was almost totally destroyed. The troops deserted their standards by hundreds, and either united with the provincials and settled down into an agricultural life, or organized themselves into banditti and plundered the country without restraint. "Meanwhile population was declining and production consequently diminishing, while luxury and extravagance continued to prevail among the upper classes, and to exhaust the resources of the state. Above all, the general morality was continually becoming worse and worse. Despite a few bright examples in high places, the tone of society grew every-where more and more corrupt. Purity of life, except among despised Christians, was almost unknown. Patriotism had ceased to exist, and was not yet replaced by loyalty. Decline and decrepitude showed themselves in almost every portion of the body politic, and a general despondency, the result of a consciousness of debility, pervaded all classes."

Commodus was assassinated, A. D. 193, and in the same year Pertinax, who had been chosen emperor by the conspirators, commenced to reign. The prætorian guards, yielding to the entreaties of their commander, who was one of the murderers of Commodus, sullenly accepted the new ruler; but the senate, overjoyed at the elevation of one of their own order, welcomed him with manifestations of delight. At first he naturally hesitated to receive a crown presented to him by bloody hands, but his scruples were at length overcome. Originally the son of an enfranchised slave, he nevertheless rose to esteem by his virtues and military talents. When called to the throne he possessed an unblemished character and was one of the few surviving friends of Marcus Aurelius. The treasury being empty, Pertinax endeavored to introduce economy into the administration of the government; but he corrected abuses with such an unsparing hand that he aroused the hostility of the avaricious prætorians and alienated the affections of a corrupted people. On the 28th of March, A. D. 193, he was deposed and murdered by the same guards that had elected him. The prætorians now put the imperial dignity up at auction, and Didius Julianus, a man of consular rank and the richest citizen of Rome, charmed with the prospect of unbounded dominion, hastened to the camp, and became the purchaser by a bid of more than fifteen millions of dollars. The senate, afraid to oppose the will of these troops, acknowledged Julianus; but at least three of

the generals in the provinces abroad disclaimed his authority, and were each proclaimed emperor by their respective forces. Of these, Severus was the most energetic, and being the nearest to Rome he soon passed the Alps and marched upon the city. Julianus, unable to raise an army to oppose him, was exposed to disappointment, mortification, insult, and danger. His perplexity and distress at length became extreme and overwhelming. The senate, at this crisis, perceiving his timidity and irresolution, abandoned him, and after causing him to be beheaded proclaimed Severus emperor. Thus within eight months the imperial crown had been worn by two monarchs, Pertinax having reigned three months and Julianus five.

The first act of Septimius Severus, after obtaining possession of the capital, was to degrade the prætorian soldiers and destroy their power, and he secured this result by depriving them of their title and banishing them one hundred miles from the city. The new emperor was an African by birth, and possessed a restless activity with an unbounded share of ambition. He was endowed with a hardihood and decision of character which fitted him for any enterprise. His military talents were conspicuous, and the credit of the Roman arms was sustained during his reign. In his administration of government he was generally wise and equitable, but highly despotic. After defeating Albinus and Niger, his rivals, he put to death forty-one senators and a number of rich provincials, because they did not support him. He spent considerable time in visiting the cities of Italy, but devoted more attention to military than civil affairs.

During the second century Christianity made rapid progress in Italy, and paganism, beholding the desertion of her temples and the neglect of her victims, trembled in the presence of an increasing power which threatened her with inevitable destruction. The writings of Pliny, Justin Martyr, and others, declare that not only the wretched, the ignorant, and the poor accepted the Gospel, and especially the doctrine of immortality, which reconciled them to the miseries of life, but also the learned, the accomplished, and the wealthy. The prominent virtues of the early Italian Christians were instrumental in the spread of the truth. Men could not resist an argument so persuasive and powerful. The followers of Christ, relinquishing the pleasures and vanities of the world, lived in humble style, and those who had possessions voluntarily renounced them for the relief of their indigent brethren. The heathen philosophers, who tolerated every form of vice, naturally abhorred the doctrines and despised the professors of this new religion; but even Marcus Aurelius acknowl-

edged the contrast between the resigned and devout manners of the Christians and the conduct of the other subjects of the empire during a season of peculiar calamity. They were bound by the most solemn obligation to abstain from theft, sedition, adultery, perjury, fraud, and all other crimes which disturb the private or public peace of society. Far from being engaged in any unlawful conspiracy, they were even commended for their loyalty by the pagan governors. Besides these virtues, which shone so brightly in that dark age, the members of this persecuted sect possessed a warm and active charity, which was not confined to their own society, nor even to the whole Christian community, but extended to all, however different in religious opinions.

Notwithstanding that during the greater part of this century the Christians of Italy were not molested, the sword of persecution was not sheathed because the pagan government had ceased to be hostile. It was constantly suspended by a single hair over their innocent heads, but the emperors were often too much engrossed with public affairs to punish them. The decrees of Trajan respecting them were softened by the counsels of the mild and benevolent Pliny, whose humane interference secured for them exemption from further annoyance; and in the succeeding reign of Hadrian, the penalties enacted against them were mitigated, but not abrogated. The enemies of Christianity despised its followers, because their manners and habits were peculiar, and they were accused of being austere and arrogant. As they had no visible object of worship, their pretensions to religion were considered improbable, if not impious, and because they assembled in solitary places they were charged with holding incestuous festivals and practicing human sacrifices. These and other accusations originated in the implacable hatred of the pagan priests.

Not only the pious lives but also the triumphant deaths of many of the prominent martyrs were powerful arguments in favor of the Gospel. The testimony of these illustrious saints confounded the pagan philosophers, and deeply impressed the people. Another element of strength that contributed to the overthrow of error was the Christian literature of Italy. Among the celebrated writers of the century was Justin Martyr, whose piety and eloquence have been admired by succeeding ages. He wandered in pursuit of truth through every known philosophical system, and at length embraced the Christian religion. Without laying aside the philosopher's habit, he taught the doctrines of the Gospel at Rome, where he suffered martyrdom.



## CHAPTER III.

*THE LIGHT SHINING IN ITALY.*

THE reign of Severus extended into the third century and terminated A. D. 211. He died in Great Britain, where he had spent more than two years in military campaigns against the Caledonians. His sons, Caracalla and Geta, conjointly ruled the empire, but the former murdered the latter, A. D. 212. The surviving brother was a cruel monster, and after committing a continued series of fearful atrocities was taken off by assassination, A. D. 217. Macrinus, who instigated Caracalla's death, became emperor; but little is known concerning him. He was of obscure birth, and, alienating the affections of his soldiers by severe discipline, he rendered himself unpopular, and lost his life in the struggle to retain his power, after a brief reign of eighteen months. The army raised Heliogabalus to the throne, A. D. 218, when he was only fourteen years of age; but, notwithstanding his youthfulness, he ranked in wickedness with Nero, Commodus, and Caracalla, hastening by his vices the fall of the empire and covering his name with eternal infamy.

At the end of four years Heliogabalus was assassinated, and Alexander Severus became the imperial ruler, A. D. 222. He was a prince of pure and blameless morals, possessing a kind, beneficent disposition, and having a thorough knowledge of literature and the arts. It is said that in deciding a controversy between the Christians and a company of cooks and vintners about a piece of ground, which the former claimed as a place of public worship, and the latter for exercising their respective trades, he made the following remark: "It is better that God be worshiped there in any manner than that the place should be put to the uses of drunkenness or debauchery." Though a young man of only sixteen years when called to this responsible position, he exhibited great wisdom and was highly honored and esteemed by his subjects. During a mutiny among his soldiers he was slain at the instigation of Maximinus, A. D. 235, in the fourteenth year of his reign. Maximinus did not long wear the crown obtained through crime, for he became so odious to the Roman people on account of his cruelties that his own soldiers were induced to put him to death, A. D. 238. From this period to the



beginning of Diocletian's administration, A. D. 285, one emperor followed another in rapid succession. The prætorian soldiers selected the two Gordians, father and son, and the senate elected Pupienus and Balbinus. During the struggle that ensued all the claimants perished, and Gordian, a grandson to one of the former Gordians, was chosen by the army, and the senate and people were compelled to submit. This ruler was a young man of considerable merit, and was so fond of learning that he collected sixty-two thousand books in his private library. He appointed Philip, an Arabian, his prefect, and the latter showed his ingratitude by murdering his benefactor, A. D. 244; but after reigning five years he himself fell under the assassin's blow, thus receiving, in the manner of his death, a righteous retribution.

When Decius began to sway the scepter, A. D. 249, the profligacy and luxury of the times, the disputes between the pagans and Christians, and the recent eruptions of the barbarians from without, had enfeebled the empire beyond remedy, and hence the activity and wisdom of the new sovereign could not arrest the process of decay. Believing that by destroying the Christians the purity of religion and morals among the Romans would be restored, he inaugurated a series of persecutions, and among the eminent martyrs were the bishops of Antioch, Jerusalem, and Rome. During his reign the Goths, attracted by the riches of the empire, swept over the border in large force, and Decius, in endeavoring to check their advance, was slain. The army now consented to allow the senate to regulate the succession, and that body nominated Gallus, one of the generals of Decius, and two sons of the latter, Hostilianus and Volusianus, to rule the kingdom; but Gallus was really the emperor, his age and experience placing him far above his colleagues. He purchased peace from the Goths by the payment of an annual tribute on condition of their abstaining from invading the Roman dominions. This act rendered him unpopular in Italy, and the prevailing discontent was increased by the calamities which rapidly came upon the people. A destructive pestilence raged in Rome, threatening almost to depopulate it, and among the victims was Hostilianus. Gallus was a vicious sovereign, and was more and more disliked by his subjects. He failed to repel a fresh invasion of the barbarians; but Æmilianus, a governor of one of the provinces, defeated them, and was proclaimed emperor by his troops. Advancing upon Rome, he was opposed by Gallus, whose soldiers revolted, murdered their leader, and accepted Æmilianus. The latter was acknowledged by the senate, A. D. 253; but Valerian,

a general of Gallus, returning from Gaul,<sup>1</sup> contested the elevation of the new ruler, and defeated him in a conflict in which he perished, after a reign of three months.

Valerian was sixty years of age, and being too infirm to grapple with the dangers which now burst upon Italy, he did not enjoy a prosperous reign. In a war with Persia he was made a prisoner, A. D. 260, by Sapor, who refused all offers of ransom for his illustrious captive, allowing him to retain his imperial purple while in chains—a spectacle never before witnessed in the world's history. It is said that the Persian king held the royal prisoner seven years, and used him as a footstool in mounting his horse, declaring that “such an attitude was the best statue that could be erected in honor of his victory.” Gallienus, who had been associated, A. D. 254, in the government of the empire, upon his father's capture became sole ruler; but during his reign of eight years the disasters which had been afflicting Italy, continued without cessation. “The emperor,” says Gibbon, “was a master of several curious but useless sciences, a ready orator, an elegant poet, a skillful gardener, an excellent cook, and a most contemptible prince.” He promised to avenge the insults and death of his father; but after his elevation he thought only of his own base pleasures. In the mean time his dominions were attacked without and disturbed within, and he could do little more than attempt the defense of Italy against the thirty pretenders who at one time contended for the control of the state. In the vicinity of Milan, Gallienus was slain by his troops, A. D. 268, and their selection of Flavius Claudius to fill the vacant throne was indorsed by the whole Roman people. This prince was an active, wise, and good man, and by his firmness arrested for a while the work of destruction which was going on in the empire. He conquered and expelled the Goths and other tribes from Italy; and, after a short but glorious reign of two years, died at Sirmium, A. D. 270. On his death-bed he recommended as his successor Aurelian, one of his generals, whom he considered most competent to the task of completing the work he himself had begun.

The parentage of Aurelian was obscure, but he was esteemed the most valiant commander of his age, and after driving the Germans out of Italy he put an end to the Gothic war by crushing the enemy. He revived the rigid discipline of the army, and led his victorious troops to Palmyra, and not only overthrew the kingdom, but conveyed Zenobia, the ruling princess, to Rome, A. D. 273. Previous to these wars Aurelian, in order to secure the capital against the

sudden attack of the barbarians, fortified Rome with a new wall which inclosed the suburbs that had sprung up beyond the wall of Servius Tullius. This brave general was about to proceed to the East to make war upon the Persians when he was assassinated by several of his officers, who had been instigated to the crime by his private secretary, A. D. 275. The administration of Aurelian was thus suddenly terminated at the end of four years and nine months, and ranks among the most brilliant in the history of Rome. His violent death created great indignation in the army, and the troops, refusing to allow any of the officers to assume the imperial dignity, applied to the senate to appoint a new emperor. After waiting six months the people were informed that M. Claudius Tacitus, a senator of great wealth and pure character, had been chosen. He endeavored to decline the honor, pleading his age and infirmities, but the senate would not release him. During a reign of six or seven months he labored to restore that era of morality and law which had marked the earlier republic. Being called away to the East by the disaffection of the army in that quarter, he sank under the fatigues of the journey, and died, A. D. 276. When the news of his death reached Rome, his brother, Florian, resolved to take the reins of government; but the Eastern army had already invested their general, M. Aurelius Probus, with the imperial purple. The troops of Florian not only refused to fight their comrades, but were induced, within three months, to murder their own commander.

Probus, who now had undisputed possession of the throne, was an able general and a prudent and vigorous monarch, sincerely devoted to the welfare of his subjects, which he believed he could accomplish as well by the arts of peace as by conquest. He endeavored to drain the marshy lands and to improve the agricultural system. In attempting to accomplish the latter object he found it necessary to employ his troops, and they, disgusted with agricultural pursuits, and desiring to be relieved, put Probus to death, A. D. 282. The army selected Carus, the prætorian prefect, to administer the government, and he proclaimed his two sons, Carinus and Numerianus, "Cæsars," associating the former in the empire. Leaving Carinus to govern the West, Carus departed for the East, taking with him his younger son. After a victorious campaign in Mesopotamia and Persia, he died on the banks of the Tigris, A. D. 283. Numerianus assumed the command, but was assassinated by his father-in-law, who hoped to seize the throne. When the legions discovered the crime they placed the scepter in the hands of Diocletian, the





THE TWELVE CÆSARS.

commander of the body-guard, who slew the murderer of the young prince with his own hands and marched westward. Carinus, who had disgusted the people of Italy by his profligacy, hearing of the approach of Diocletian, advanced with a large army to meet him, and obtained a decisive victory, but was himself slain by a tribune whom he had grievously wronged.

The troops acknowledged Diocletian as emperor, A. D. 285, and his accession truly marks a new period in the history of Italy and the whole empire. Since the death of Commodus, the imperial authority had been restricted by the insolent legions, who claimed the right to elevate and dethrone the sovereign at will. By assuming the prerogatives legally belonging to the senate, they inaugurated a tyranny which was unendurable, and which would have destroyed the Roman state long before had not the danger with which the barbarians constantly threatened it made the troops willing to submit to some form of discipline. Diocletian strengthened the authority of the government and taught the army its true position as the servant of the state. He associated with him in the empire one of his generals named Maximian, who had risen from the ranks, and who was little more than a good military commander. The two emperors took each the title of Augustus. Two "Cæsars" were appointed to stand in the relation of sons and successors to the Augusti, Galerius being chosen by Diocletian and Constantius by Maximian. Both were younger than their patrons and possessed great ability as generals. The empire was divided among the four sovereigns, Italy being a part of Maximian's territory; but, according to the basis of agreement, the unity of the whole remained intact. This complex arrangement worked well while Diocletian lived, because his influence was sufficient to maintain harmony in the government. Toward the close of his reign, however, the evils of the system began to manifest themselves. The establishment of four imperial courts instead of one, and the consequent multiplication of officials and of armies, necessarily increased the rate of taxation, already very heavy. The inhabitants of Italy were almost crushed beneath the weight of the imposts laid upon the country, and the taxes were collected with the greatest difficulty. It was generally necessary to employ violence and sometimes torture for this purpose. Hence industry sank beneath this system that deprived it of all its earnings; production diminished steadily, and the prices of all commodities rose.

During the civil and military events of the third century Christianity continued to advance in Italy. Among several causes favor-

able to its diffusion was the rapid succession of the Roman emperors, whose lives and deaths attracted public attention, and delayed the execution of those edicts intended for the destruction of the Christians. The interval between the death of Severus and the time when Maximinus assumed the imperial purple was a period when the followers of Christ enjoyed peculiar privileges. They publicly appeared at court, and composed a considerable part of the household and favorites of the amiable Alexander, being protected by Mammæa, his mother. Maximinus persecuted them, but after his death they had more liberty than they ever before experienced. Philip had even advanced beyond the bounds observed by Alexander Severus, who paid divine honors to Christ, and it is said that he placed his statue or picture along with Abraham and Orpheus in his domestic chapel. After the Decian persecution the Church had comparative peace, which continued during eighteen years of the reign of Diocletian. In this prosperous season the Christians publicly professed their religious sentiments, and increased so rapidly that many additional edifices were demanded for religious worship.

Thus the first dawn of Christian light upon Italy had developed into a bright morning. The storms of persecution often darkened the sky; but the radiance of the Gospel dispelled even the gloom of the Catacombs, the subterranean sanctuaries where the saints assembled to worship God, and the purity of their faith is attested by the symbols on the walls of these wonderful retreats.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

### *PAGANISM OVERTHROWN IN ITALY.*

TOWARDS the close of his reign Diocletian, alarmed at the rapid progress of Christianity, which had been embraced by fully one-half of his subjects, determined to destroy it. He issued an edict, A. D. 303, requiring uniformity of worship throughout the empire; but the Christians refused to comply with it. Thousands were slain in every province; their property was confiscated, and their churches destroyed. Diocletian, weary of the trials and cares of public life, abdicated his throne, and compelled Maximian to do likewise. By this act Galerius and Constantius became Augusti, A. D. 305, and for several years the empire was ruled by various



persons appointed by the senate. Maxentius was (A. D. 311) emperor of that division which embraced Italy, and had alienated his subjects by his cruelties and extortions. They appealed to Constantine to drive their oppressor from the throne; but he disliked to engage in such a war. Finding, however, that Maxentius was preparing to invade Gaul, he anticipated him, and entered Italy at the head of forty thousand men, passing the Alps by way of Mont Cenis without resistance. The struggle was decided by the vigor and rapidity of Constantine's movements. He defeated his adversary in two battles—one near Verona and the other at the Colline Gate—and made himself master of Rome and Italy, Maxentius having been drowned in the Tiber during the last battle.

Constantine declared subsequently to Eusebius, bishop of Cæsarea, according to that writer, that in one of his marches in the campaign against Maxentius he had seen with his own eyes the luminous trophy of the cross, placed above the meridian sun, inscribed with these words, "By this conquer!" This amazing object in the sky astonished the whole army, as well as Constantine, who was yet undetermined in the choice of a religion. His astonishment was converted into faith by a vision which was vouchsafed to him the following night. "Christ appeared before his eyes; and, displaying the same celestial sign of the cross, he directed Constantine to frame a similar standard, and to march with an assurance of victory against Maxentius and all his enemies."

In the fourth century the darkness of paganism disappeared from Italy. When Constantine embraced the Christian religion, A. D. 311, he found the Church crushed by persecution, and resolved to defend it against its enemies. In A. D. 313 he issued an edict from Milan, authorizing every subject of the empire to profess either Christianity or paganism, undisturbed, securing the places of Christian worship, and even directing the restoration of whatever property they had been dispossessed of by the late persecutions. About A. D. 325 he sent forth circular letters to all his subjects, exhorting them to an immediate imitation of their sovereign, who had embraced the divine truths of the Gospel. By legal enactment, Christianity became the national religion of the Roman Empire. From a persecuting the government had been converted into a protecting power. The religious zeal of Constantine increased with his years, and toward the close of his life several imperial edicts were issued for the destruction of the heathen temples and the prohibition of any sacrifices upon the altars of the gods. Before receiving the

initiatory rite of baptism, or entering the ranks of the catechumens, he performed many of the solemn ceremonies appointed by the Church—fasting, observance of the feasts in commemoration of the martyrs, and devout watching during the whole night on the vigils of the saints.

The Church, having received so many advantages from the conversion and protection of Constantine, was prepared to acknowledge the emperor as its supreme head, who desired to unite the office of sovereign pontiff with the imperial dignity. He assumed to himself the title of bishop and ruler of the external affairs of the Church, and regulated whatever pertained to the possessions, reputation, rights, and privileges of the clergy. He and his successors convened councils, in which they presided and determined every thing relating to religious controversy, to the forms of divine worship, to the vices of the ecclesiastical order or the offices of the priests, and to matters of discipline. The limits of episcopal power between the emperor and the clergy were never clearly defined, and hence each party often encroached upon the rights of the other.

The Bishop of Rome claimed superior antiquity, and therefore placed himself at the head of the clerical order. Before the close of the fourth century his authority had a formidable rival in the bishop of Constantinople, who, in the council convened at that city, was elevated to the second clerical rank in the empire. From this period began that contention and animosity which long existed between these rivals, and which finally terminated in a final separation between the Greek and Latin Churches. This strife frequently arose between candidates for the same bishopric. The extensive powers and revenues belonging to the principal sees made them desirable, and presented a temptation to ambition and avarice which even clerical integrity could not resist. A melancholy and disgraceful instance of this kind occurred A. D. 336, when the vacant see of Rome was, by a greater part of the clergy and people, conferred upon Damasus, and the bishops confirmed the election by regularly ordaining him. By various intrigues the designing Ursicinus had obtained ordination to the same see from some other bishops, and proceeded to take possession of what he regarded as his right. This produced a severe contest, which resulted in blows, and even bloodshed and murder. The tumult did not subside after the banishment of Ursicinus, whose followers would not communicate with Damasus. They were likewise banished, but soon returned with their turbulent leader and excited another rebellion.

The Council of Aquileia requested the emperor again to banish the factious prelate; but several years elapsed before Damasus obtained peaceable possession of his office. This specimen of clerical depravity indicated a departure from primitive virtue in the early Church of Italy that must have alarmed those who preferred Jerusalem above their "chief joy."

One of the most striking evidences of the growing formality, superstition, and corruption of the Italian Church was the increasing veneration for the Virgin Mary, which arose in the fourth century, and was generally entertained at the beginning of the fifth. Her image, holding in her arms the infant Jesus, was honored with a distinguished situation in the church, and in many places invoked with a peculiar species of worship. Another step toward Romish idolatry was the respect shown for the bread consecrated for the sacrament of the Lord's-supper. The body, as well as the soul, was supposed to feel its efficacy, and it was used as a medicine in sickness. Many who traveled by land and by sea carried it with them as a preservative against every danger. Some deposited a quantity of it in the sepulchers of their departed relations. This practice was condemned in the Council of Carthage, but it continued to prevail in succeeding centuries. Thus the memorials of the death and sufferings of Jesus Christ, which had formerly been celebrated by all Christians on every Lord's-day, was attended by very few of the numerous professors of Christianity, because they feared that they might receive them unworthily.

A remarkable innovation was also made in the discipline of the Church by Leo the Great, who suppressed all public confessions of sin. It had been customary for the trembling penitent to confess before the assembled congregation, but, in order that the power of the clergy might be extended over the consciences of men, a single priest was authorized to hear confession in private. This change indicated how rapidly the Italian Church was being transformed into the papal hierarchy.

All the magnificent appendages which had characterized pagan ceremonies were now interwoven into the fabric of the Church. Incense was no longer regarded as an abomination, but smoked upon every Christian altar. Even in the day the services of religion were performed by the light of tapers and flambeaux. The discovery of relics was proportioned to the desire of obtaining them.

Another branch of superstition originated at this time, and rapidly increased in Italy and the surrounding nations. This was monk-



ery. It was greatly encouraged by the Emperor Constantine, who was deeply attached to those that devoted themselves to what they called "divine philosophy." Large numbers of females abandoned their elegant homes and all the pleasures of domestic life to dwell in deserts and caves. Among these was Paula of Rome, a matron, descended from one of the most illustrious families. She, with her daughter Eulalia, rent asunder every tender domestic tie, and, forsaking her home, her country, and her weeping children, went to Palestine, visited Jerome, and accompanied him in his visit to Epiphanius at Cyprus. Neither talents nor wealth were demanded of these solitary devotees. Hence, the illiterate and indolent discovered in the monastic life an agreeable retreat, and were soon elevated to positions of peculiar respectability and honor, provided they could assume a fervent sanctity and austerity.

Different motives—religion, fanaticism, hypocrisy—no doubt influenced men and women to become monks, because their conduct revealed the purpose that had animated them. Many were devout, modest, disinterested, and compassionate; some were censorious, austere, and gloomy, and others by intrigue obtained a large part of that property which they pretended to renunciate when they embraced the monastic life. A fanatical spirit controlled a certain class, who voluntarily inflicted upon themselves the severest sufferings and deprived themselves of every earthly comfort. While in this solitary state they opposed education as a useless thing, if not pernicious, and professed to spend their whole time in silence, meditation, and prayer. Some were organized into regular societies, and devoted themselves to study. Their modes of life made them melancholy and visionary, filling them with all the vagaries of a heated imagination; they had prophetic dreams, beheld remarkable visions, conversed with the various inhabitants of the invisible world, and many closed a life of insanity in wretchedness and despair.

Various kinds of ecclesiastical councils were held. The first species of these consisted in an assembly of the bishops and presbyters of a particular city or district. The second was composed of the bishops of several provinces. The œcumenical or general councils were convened by the emperor alone, and the rulers of the Church in every part of the empire were required to attend. The first general council was called by Constantine, A. D. 325, at Nice, in Bithynia. Three hundred and eighteen bishops and two thousand and forty-eight ecclesiastics were in attendance. The synod was in session two months. The emperor frequently took a seat in the

assembly, and even participated in the debates. This council condemned the doctrines of Arius, which had many followers in the Church of Italy. Jesus Christ was declared to be of the same essence with the Father. An effort was made to favor the perpetual celibacy of the clergy, but it was not successful. The Homoousian faith, or the doctrine of consubstantiality, was indorsed, and matters relating to the powers of the clergy and the discipline of the Church acted upon.

During the fourth century the doctrines of the Church received more attention than at any preceding period. The schismatic Arius asserted that there was a time when the Son of God was not, that he was created out of nothing, or that he was of a different substance from the Father. He and his followers were solemnly anathematized by successive councils, and declared the enemies of God. The consubstantiality of the three persons in the Godhead was declared a fundamental article of the Christian faith. The semi-Arians violently attacked the divinity of the Holy Spirit, which was in the general council of Constantinople, A. D. 383, discussed and defined, and the doctrine of three persons in one God established as the orthodox belief of the Church. The Nicene Creed, which was accepted by the Church of Italy, is thus stated in the epistle of Eusebius to the Cæsareans, and in the epistle of Athanasius to Jovian: "We believe in one God, the Father Almighty, maker of all things visible and invisible. And in one Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of God; the only-begotten; begotten of the Father, that is, of the substance of the Father; God of God, Light of Light, true God of true God; begotten, not made; consubstantial with the Father, by whom all things were made, things in heaven, and things on earth; who for us men, and for our salvation, came down and was incarnate, and became man, suffered, and rose again the third day, and ascended into the heavens, and comes to judge the quick and the dead; and in the Holy Ghost. And the catholic and apostolic Church doth anathematize those persons who say that there was a time when he, the Son of God, was not; that he was not before he was born; that he was made of nothing, or of another substance or being; or that he is created or changeable or convertible."

While the maintenance of sound doctrine was of great importance to the cause of Christ in Italy, many practices were introduced which did not contribute to the promotion of either piety or good morals. The minds of the people were confused with difficult and fanatical explanations of the Bible. The Christian emperors encouraged super-

stitution by erecting costly churches over the remains of saints and martyrs, and even the Fathers of the Church believed that wonderful miracles were performed by relics. This veneration for departed saints increased until a degree of worship was rendered them, because they were supposed to intercede with God in behalf of the worshiper. About A. D. 386 some persons asserted that they had received extraordinary revelations from heaven, which declared where the remains of distinguished martyrs could be found. Their bodies had been secretly buried in some obscure place, but when persecution ceased they were brought forth and decently interred. This custom, to a great extent, gave rise to the *translation of relics*, many esteeming it a meritorious act to carry and preserve the bones of martyrs. Constantine commanded the bodies of St. Andrew and St. Luke to be removed from the sepulchers where they had been deposited to the magnificent church at Constantinople, which he had dedicated to the twelve apostles. The powers which belonged to the people in the election of their ministers produced great scandals in the Church. These were at length taken away, and were soon followed by those of the presbyters; but, instead of being lost, were usurped by the bishops, and many of the rights and privileges with which the religious community had been formerly invested were obtained by the emperor and magistrates. The Bishop of Rome assumed powers superior to the other metropolitans, who governed one province only; and the jurisdiction of the bishops differed according to the different extent of their respective sees. The famous Council of Nice determined the mode of establishing the bishops in their functions and offices, and declared that every bishop should be ordained or consecrated by three bishops of the province, and that his election should be confirmed by the metropolitan.

The revenues of the Church in Italy were secured by the edict of Milan. All that had been lost by the persecution of Diocletian was restored, and the establishment continued to be supported by voluntary oblations long after Christianity became the religion of the emperor and the empire. Full and free permission was granted by Constantine to his subjects of bequeathing their possessions to the Church; but while this measure filled the ecclesiastical treasury, it encouraged a practice which brought penury and distress to the desolate widow and defenseless orphan, and made them a dependence upon their kindred or upon the alms of the ecclesiastical body. The emperors themselves considerably increased the riches of the clerical profession. Constantine bestowed upon the Churches



in every city a regular allowance of corn for the purposes of charity, and the no less acceptable present of large donations of land. Far from aiding the Church these measures were among the causes of that apostasy by which it was extensively and deeply injured.

---

## CHAPTER V.

### *AMBROSE—THE WALDENSES.*

WHILE the Church in the southern part of Italy had become formal, and declined in spirituality, the northern section remained comparatively pure. This might be attributed to the fact that the inhabitants of mountainous regions are less effeminate, more virtuous, and stronger in their attachments to civil and religious liberty than those of the plains, residing in an enervating climate. The powerful diocese of Milan, which included the Alps of Piedmont, was not tributary to the papal chair as early as the middle of the fourth century. In those days the see of Rome embraced only the imperial city and neighboring provinces. Pope Pelagius I writes, A. D. 555, "The bishops of Milan do not come to Rome for ordination," and declares that "this was an ancient custom of theirs." This ecclesiastical independence of Northern Italy prevented the corruptions of the Roman see from entering Milan and its diocese.

The remarkable story of Ambrose, bishop of Milan, has an appearance of romance seldom found in real life. He was born about A. D. 340 at Treves (Augusta Trevirorum), where his father resided as prefect of the prætorium among the Gauls. It is said that while he was yet an infant a swarm of bees settled upon his mouth, which his father interpreted as a portent of future greatness. After his father's death his mother took him to Rome, where he received the education of an advocate under Anicius Probus and Symmachus. For some time he pleaded at the bar, and his success, together with his family influence, led to his appointment, about A. D. 370, as consular prefect of Liguria and Emilia, a tract of Northern Italy, which extended, as near as can be ascertained, to Bologna. It is said that Anicius Probus, the prefect, when he sent him to his government, did so in these remarkable words, which may well be called prophetic, "Go, then, and act, not as judge, but as a bishop." Ambrose made Milan his residence; and when Aux-

entius, the bishop, died, the people of Milan assembled to elect a successor. This the cruel divisions made in the Church by the Arian heresy rendered no easy matter; and the contest was carried on between catholics and Arians with such violence that Ambrose was obliged to proceed himself to the church, to exhort the people to make their election quietly and in order. At the close of his speech the whole assembly, catholics and Arians, with one voice demanded him for their bishop. Believing himself to be unworthy of so high and responsible an office, he tried all means in his power to evade their call; but in vain, and he was at last constrained to yield, A. D. 374. He was yet only a catechumen; he had then to be baptized, and on the eighth day after he was consecrated bishop. He devoted himself to his work with unexampled zeal; gave all his property to the Church and poor, and adopted an ascetic mode of life. He opposed the Arians from the very beginning of his episcopacy, and soon acquired great influence both with the people and the Emperor Valentinian. He presided at an episcopal synod in Aquileia, summoned by the Emperor Gratian A. D. 382, at which the Arian bishops Palladius and Secundianus were deposed.

Ambrose had a severe conflict, A. D. 385, with Justina, mother of Valentinian II, who demanded the use of at least one church for the Arians; but the people sided with Ambrose, and Justina desisted. He excommunicated the Emperor Theodosius, A. D. 390, for the massacre at Thessalonica, and did not absolve him till after a penance of eight months and a public humiliation. Augustine, the great theologian and author, was instructed by Ambrose, and converted under his preaching. The former, after remaining two years among the catechumens, was baptized by the latter at Easter, A. D. 387. Ambrose died at Milan, April 4, A. D. 397, having served as bishop twenty-three years. His theology and that of his diocese was not essentially different from that of the Protestants at the present time. The Bible alone was his rule of faith; Christ alone was the foundation of the Church; the justification of the sinner and the remission of sins were not of human merit, but by the expiatory sacrifice of the cross; there were but two sacraments, baptism and the Lord's-supper, and in the latter Christ was held to be present only figuratively. Such, according to Allix, is a summary of the faith professed and taught by the chief bishop of the north of Italy in the end of the fourth century. Hence the evangelical light shone there long after darkness had gathered in the southern part of the peninsula.

Notwithstanding his great talents and ardent piety, Ambrose did

not entirely escape the degeneracy of his age. He was not without a degree of veneration for relics. His writings abound in moral lessons, plentifully interspersed with exhortations to celibacy, and the other superstitions of the day. It is also recorded that he performed many astonishing miracles. He composed a discourse upon the incarnation, mysteries, and penance, several books concerning faith and the Holy Ghost, and many other works, which have been published in two volumes, folio. His services to church music were very great; he was the father of "hymnology" in the Western Church. The writings of the early Fathers concur in recording the employment of music as a part of public worship, though no regular ritual was in existence to determine its precise form and use. This appears to have been first supplied by Ambrose, who instituted that method of singing known by the name of *cantus Ambrosianus*, which is said to have had a reference to the modes of the ancients, especially to that of Ptolemæus. The effect of the Ambrosian chant is described in glowing terms by those who heard it in the cathedral of Milan. "The voices," says, Augustine, "flowed in at my ears, truth was distilled into my heart, and the affection of piety overflowed in sweet tears of joy." Ten of the many hymns ascribed to him are generally admitted to be genuine, but it is doubtful whether the "Ambrosian Hymn," or the *Te Deum*, is his production. It is not certain whether any genuine relics of the music thus described exist at the present time, though the style of singing may have been preserved. The writings of Ambrose are numerous, but some of them are of no practical importance.

It was not alone their proximity to the Alps that imparted to the inhabitants of Northern Italy a spirit of independence which resisted tyranny and corruption in both Church and state. The bracing atmosphere of the mountains had its influence upon their character, but they breathed a still more vitalizing air. The purity of apostolic Christianity had been maintained in the valleys of Piedmont, and its power was felt throughout all that region. It is not improbable that Ambrose was strengthened in the defense of the true faith by observing its elevating effects upon the Waldenses. These people could not confine their religion to their own narrow valleys, but, like the pure, sparkling streams that gushed forth from the rugged mountains and rolled on to refresh the plains below, it permeated the north of Italy.

[The origin of the Waldenses—Vallenses—Vaudois—Valdesi, as they are variously called, has been a fruitful source of controversy,



some tracing their genealogy to the first periods of Christianity, or to a less remote time, according to the ingenuity or fancy of different historians. Some think that they are the descendants of the Christian inhabitants of Spain, whose territory lay in Navarre (a part of Biscay), who, upon the irruption of the Moors, were driven for refuge into the vicinity of the Pyrenean Mountains. In this new situation it has been conceived that they assumed new names, agreeable to their former or present circumstances, or names composed from different combinations; and that one of these tribes took their denomination from a place near Barcelona, called Vallensia, whence the name of Vallenses, Valdenses, or Waldenses, might be easily derived. This opinion is attended with many difficulties that render it unpopular. Turretine, a Waldensian writer, represents them as originating from the Milanese clergy, many of whom refused to repudiate their wives at the command of Leo IX, Nicholas II, and Gregory VII. With still greater probability, however, they are supposed to have been a branch of the Paulicians, who were dispersed in almost all the countries of Europe and Asia, and selected a secluded region in the Alps. These and other theories do not give to the Waldenses a greater antiquity than that which belongs to the period between the seventh and eleventh centuries. But Jerome, the famous theologian of the Church in the fourth century, unquestionably refers to them as then dwelling in the Alps. With the zeal of a new convert, he assailed a Spanish priest, called Vigilantius, on account of religious opinions similar in some respects to those held by the Waldenses. Vigilantius, bitterly persecuted in Spain, fled into Italy, and concealed himself, says Jerome, in a region which is between the Alps of King Cottius and the waves of the Adriatic Sea. There all the inhabitants had the same religious opinions as Vigilantius, and even the bishops cherished him, "though," observes Jerome, "I can not recognize them as bishops, because they would ordain not even a deacon if he has no wife." Evidently that region was the eastern side of the Cottian Alps, where the Waldenses lived. After having spent nine years there, Vigilantius returned to Spain, full of zeal for the truth, and published the most uncompromising treatise against the growing superstitions of the age. It was probably owing to the residence of Vigilantius among them that the name "Leonist" was applied to the Waldensians, for he being a native of Leo in the Pyrenees, was often called the Leonist in Italy. It is a fact that the doctrines advocated by him in his book, in many points, are the same as those of the Waldensian Church.

The marriage of priests has always been maintained as most desirable by the Waldensian Church in the Cottian Alps. Upon this point we have the testimony of Peter Damian, another doctor of the Church in early ages. One of his letters is to Adelaide, marchioness of the Cottian Alps, to excite her to help the local bishop in the holy work of destroying the married clergymen who resided in a part of her dominions. "Thy are new Siseras," says he; "the bishop will be a new Barak, and you must be a new Deborah." In this Scriptural language the new saint goes on insinuating that while the new Barak deals with the husbands, the new Deborah should kill the wives.

The most reliable theory, therefore, concerning the origin of the Waldenses is, that they were among the first inhabitants of Italy who embraced Christianity. History does not reveal who first preached the Gospel to them; but it is probable that the early missionaries, going out from Rome soon after the time of Paul, penetrated these mountains, for the road from Italy to France and Spain passed that way. If Paul ever made his proposed journey into Spain (Rom. xv, 28), he would probably travel that road, and may have been the first Christian preacher to these "men of the valleys." The name *Vandais* was first given to them because they resided in the valleys (or *caux*) of Piedmont. They were "men of the valleys" from time out of mind, and before the dukes of Savoy became princes of Piedmont. While there may be differences of opinion concerning their ethnological history, the antiquity and purity of their religious faith and practice are generally conceded. The testimony which they give of themselves is, that their fathers occupying those same valleys held the same faith from the days of the apostles. Their traditions invariably point to an unbroken descent from apostolic days, as regards their religious belief. The *Nobla Leycon*, which dates from A. D. 1100, shows that they were not established by Peter Waldo, of Lyons, who did not appear until A. D. 1160, though they may have derived the names Vallenses, or Waldenses, from him after he had visited them.

Their greatest enemies, Reynerius, the Jesuit, A. D. 1250, and Claude Seyssel, of Turin, A. D. 1517, have admitted their antiquity, and stigmatized them as "the most dangerous of all heretics, because the most ancient." In a petition presented A. D. 1559 to the persecuting Philbert, Emanuel, duke of Savoy and prince of Piedmont, the Waldenses say: "We likewise beseech your royal highness to consider that this religion is not only ours, nor hath it been invented by men of late years, as is falsely reported, but it was the religion of our fathers and grandfathers and great grandfathers, and other yet

more ancient predecessors of ours, and of the blessed martyrs, confessors, prophets, and apostles, and if they can *prove the contrary* we are ready to subscribe and yield thereto." Rorenco, Prior of St. Roch, Turin, A. D. 1640, was employed to investigate their origin and antiquity, and of course had access to all the Waldensian documents in the ducal archives, and being their bitter enemy he may be presumed to have made his report not more favorable than he could help. Yet he states that "they were not a new sect in the ninth and tenth centuries, and that Claude of Turin must have detached them from the Church in the ninth century."

It is also remarkable that their persecuting princes in replying to their petitions and addresses never accused them of being apostates from the Romish Church. If their claims to antiquity could have been denied with decent plausibility, these learned princes and priests, instead of passing over in silence such pretensions, would have attempted to disprove them. The testimony of Jerome, that the Waldenses in the fourth century were so distinguished for their orthodoxy and piety as to attract Vigilantius from Spain, remains unimpeached.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

### THE GOTHS IN ITALY.

ABOUT the beginning of the fifth century Alaric, king of the Visigoths, attracted by the beauty and wealth of Italy, crossed the Alps and appeared under the walls of Milan. Honorius, who ruled the Western Empire, was alarmed at the invading host, and took refuge in the strong fortress of Ravenna. Stilicho, a famous warrior of Italy, hastily gathered a powerful army, and inflicted a crushing defeat upon the Goths in the neighborhood of Pollentia, about twenty-five miles from Turin, on the 29th of March, A. D. 403. The Gothic infantry was almost totally destroyed; but Alaric, with his cavalry, which was comparatively uninjured, marched rapidly upon Rome, hoping to capture it by a *coup-de-main*. Stilicho followed him closely, and prevented the execution of his design; and desiring to be rid of the enemy on the easiest terms, the Roman general paid Alaric a stipulated sum, and conducted him safely to the boundary of his kingdom. The departure of the barbarians was



celebrated in Rome with great rejoicings. In the midst of the games Telemachus, a Christian monk, sprang into the arena, and, raising the cross above his head, commanded the gladiators, in the name of their crucified Lord, to cease their inhuman sport. The enraged multitude stoned him to death, but subsequently, overwhelmed with remorse for their crime, acknowledged him a martyr. Honorius, taking advantage of the occasion, prohibited human combats in the amphitheater. The seat of government was now transferred from Milan to Ravenna, which, on account of its situation, was impregnable, and it remained the capital of Italy until the middle of the eighth century.

The Vandals, a new host of barbarians, burst into Italy, A. D. 405, passing the Alps, the Po, and the Apennines without opposition, and ravaging with fire and sword the region between the Alps and the Arno before Stilicho could collect an army to oppose them. Radegaste, the savage leader of the barbarians, had sworn a solemn oath to reduce Rome to ashes, and to sacrifice the senators to his gods. Detained before Florence by the stubborn resistance of that city, he refrained from moving southward until he had conquered it. Profiting by this delay, Stilicho advanced with his troops, and by his superior generalship defeated the formidable host of the barbarians, slew Radegaste, and compelled the remnant of his army, about one hundred thousand strong, to withdraw from Italy. Stilicho despised the weakness of Honorius, and resolved to remove him and place his own son upon the throne. The enemies of the great general, suspecting a conspiracy, obtained the consent of the emperor to put him to death; but his execution was a calamity, as he was the only man who could contend with the barbarians. The friends of Honorius alienated the only force that was capable of resisting the Goths by a general massacre of the families of the foreign auxiliaries who had been left in the Italian cities as hostages for the faithful service of these troops. The latter swore vengeance upon the murderers of their wives and children, and invited Alaric to invade Italy, promising him assistance.

The Gothic king gladly accepted the invitation, and at once crossed the Alps, marched upon Rome, and closely invested the city, which was soon reduced to extremities. By the payment of an enormous ransom, Alaric was induced to retire and Rome was spared. The barbarian general withdrew into Tuscany, where he spent the Winter. During negotiations with Honorius he was grossly insulted, and again besieged Rome to gratify his revenge, and by seizing the

fort of Ostia, where the grain for the use of the capital was stored, he starved the city into an unconditional surrender. Alaric entered Rome by night on the 10th of August, A. D. 410, the gates having been opened by the slaves, forty thousand of whom assisted the Gothic king, and thus repaid in full the wrongs they had suffered at the hands of their masters. The city was given up to murder and pillage during a period of five days. The scene was dreadful, for, though the conqueror in his magnanimity had given orders that none except the armed should be killed, many citizens were slain and larger numbers still were reduced from affluence to want and captivity. Rome for ages had been a repository for the plunder of the world, embracing the choicest spoils of conquered countries, such as gold, silver, jewels, silks, Grecian sculptures, and other rare, costly articles. These were remorselessly seized and carried off by the Goths, and much that could not be removed was destroyed. The most ancient and valuable monuments of art and learning were leveled with the ground. Alaric, the Arian invader, professing to be a Christian, declared that he made war upon the Romans, not upon the apostles, and he therefore spared all the churches, even granting life and liberty both to the pagans and Christians who took refuge in the sacred edifices dedicated to the apostles, or at the tombs of the martyrs. The holy vessels which had been pillaged from the Church of St. Peter were also restored by the victorious barbarians. Thus the great city, which had not for more than six hundred years been violated by the presence of a foreign enemy, was sacked, plundered, and partially burnt.

At length the Goths withdrew from Rome, and marching along the Appian way overran Southern Italy, contemplating the conquest of Sicily and Africa, but the death of Alaric suddenly terminated the expedition. The waters of the Busentius were diverted from their channel by the labor of the captive Romans, and in the vacant bed a sepulcher was constructed and adorned with the spoils and trophies of Rome. In this tomb the body of Alaric was laid, and the waters were turned back in their channel. The prisoners who engaged in the work were then inhumanly massacred, lest they should reveal the secret of the tomb. Honorius died, A. D. 423, after a reign of twenty-eight years, and the throne was usurped by John, his principal secretary; but he was beheaded by the troops of Theodosius II, at Aquileia, A. D. 425. Valentinian III, the legal successor, being only six years of age, his mother, Placidia, as regent, governed the empire during the next twenty-five years. Attila, king of the Huns,

invaded North-eastern Italy, A. D. 453, captured and destroyed the cities of Aquileia, Altinum, Concordia, and Padua, and sacked Milan and Pavia. A result which the Hun did not foresee and would not have desired sprang from this destruction. The inhabitants of Aquileia, Padua, and the adjacent towns fled from the cruelties of the barbarians to the safe but humble shelter of the islands at the head of the Adriatic, and there laid the foundations of the famous republic of Venice. Attila then advanced southward, intending to take and destroy Rome. An embassy headed by Pope Leo the Great met him, and the solemn appeal of the pontiff aroused the superstitious fears of the barbarian, and he retired to his own dominions.

Valentinian was slain, A. D. 455, by Maximus, a wealthy senator, whom he had wronged, and the latter ascended the throne, but reigned less than three months. Eudoxia, the widow of Valentinian, being compelled to marry the assassin of her husband, besought aid from Genseric, the Vandal king of Africa, whose fleet commanded the Mediterranean, and that monarch responded to her appeal, eager to enrich himself with the spoils of Italy. He landed at Ostia, and in a short time seized Rome, which was pillaged by his troops for fourteen days. Not even the churches which Alaric had protected were spared, and the city was literally stripped of its wealth of every description. At length, laden with plunder, the barbarians sailed for Carthage, taking with them Eudoxia and her two daughters. This terrible disaster so paralyzed the Romans that they delayed the appointment of a successor to Maximus, whom they had slain. During the next twenty years the throne was occupied by eight different sovereigns, whose brief reigns were unimportant. The barbarians proclaimed Odoacer King of Italy, A. D. 476, and thus fell the Western Empire.



## Part II.

### PAPAL DARKNESS PREVALENT.

#### CENTURY VI-XIV.

---

#### CHAPTER I.

##### *THE REIGN OF THE LOMBARDS.*

WHEN the sixth century dawned upon Italy it beheld one of the most tranquil and flourishing countries in the world. Theodoric extended the boundaries of his kingdom to the north, east, and west, and, besides Italy and Sicily, ruled Dalmatia, Noricum, the two Rhætiæ, Pannonia, and Provence. During the minority of his grandson, Amalaric, the king of the Visigothic monarchy in Gaul and Spain, he managed the affairs of those nations with wisdom. Though an Arian himself, Theodoric tolerated all forms of belief in his dominions, and this liberal policy drew upon him the wrath of the Roman Catholic party. The Eastern emperor, Anastasius, was jealous of such a powerful servant, and attacked the kingdom of Theodoric from the direction of the Danube, but was defeated by the warrior king with an inferior force. The last years of this monarch were in striking contrast with the opening of his reign. Soured by the ingratitude of his people, he became suspicious and cruel. Boethius, a Roman senator, was put to death on the charge of plotting to restore the authority of the Eastern emperor, and his execution was soon followed by that of Symmachus, his venerable father-in-law. Remorse for these crimes hastened the end of Theodoric himself, and he died, A. D. 526. Had he been more a statesman he might have founded an enduring state by a union of the Goths and the Romans; but he did not seem to desire a consolidated empire. Instead of claiming the title of King of Italy, he appeared satisfied with mere dominion over his own Goths. His kingdom did not long survive him.

Theodoric was succeeded by his grandson Athalaric; but, as he was only ten years old, the regency passed into the hands of his mother, Amalasontha, the daughter of Theodoric, who was assisted by the wise counsels of her minister, Cassiodorus. Her son failed to profit by her care and instruction, and indulged in riotous living and excesses of all kinds. Being punished by his mother, he appealed to the Goths to sustain him, and the queen regent was compelled to resign the authority to him. He did not enjoy it long, but died at the age of sixteen from the effects of intemperance. Amalasontha, in violation of Gothic law and custom, then endeavored to retain the throne by conferring her hand upon her cousin, Theodatus, and raising him to the rank of king. Theodatus, however, refused to be ruled by a woman, and caused his wife to be strangled, A. D. 535.

The Emperor Justinian, who had been eagerly watching for a pretext to regain Italy, now constituted himself the avenger of Amalasontha, and prepared to invade the peninsula with a force under the command of Belisarius. Sicily was conquered toward the close of A. D. 535. The next year Belisarius crossed to the mainland. The chief strength of the Ostrogoths was in the north of Italy, and the Greek influence was strong enough in the south to render its conquest by the imperial forces an easy matter. The southern Italians welcomed Belisarius as a deliverer, but the barbarian garrison of Naples held out against him. The city was taken by surprise, and upon its fall Apulia and Calabria were restored to the empire. Advancing northward, Belisarius entered Rome, which opened its gates to him with joy, A. D. 536.

Assembling a powerful Gothic army, Viteges, the successor of Theodatus, laid siege to Rome, which was bravely defended by Belisarius, with an inferior force, for more than a year. During this siege the sepulcher of Hadrian, now known as the Castle of St. Angelo, was used for the first time as a fortress. In their attacks upon the city the Goths met with heavy losses; thirty thousand men fell in the principal assault; and Viteges was compelled to draw off his decimated army to Ravenna, leaving Belisarius master of Italy. This great general could easily have conquered the entire country but for the dissensions of the Roman chiefs. Valuable time was lost, and the Goths were given a breathing spell. Ten thousand Burgundians, allies of the Gothic kings, captured and destroyed Milan, which had revolted from Viteges, A. D. 538. The next Spring Theodebert, the grandson of Clovis, passed the Alps at the head of one hundred

thousand Franks, and defeated both the Roman and the Gothic armies near Pavia, and ravaged Liguria and Æmilia until his losses from disease and the intemperance of his troops obliged him to return to his own country.

Belisarius now applied himself to the completion of the conquest of Italy. He laid siege to Ravenna, and reduced that impregnable city by famine. The Goths, weary of Viteges, proposed to deliver up the city to Belisarius if he would make himself their king. He pretended to accept the proposal, but upon obtaining possession threw off the mask and declared that he held the city only as the lieutenant of the emperor. Pavia, garrisoned by one thousand Goths, alone held out; and these warriors elevated Totila, the nephew of Viteges, to the vacant throne. Before Belisarius could attack this stronghold he was recalled to Constantinople by the emperor, who had become jealous of his fame. Totila at once attempted to regain all that had been lost by his uncle. Many cities which had welcomed Belisarius as a deliverer had been so sorely oppressed by the Byzantine officials that they now gladly opened their gates to Totila. Rome was taken, A. D. 546, the senators carried away as prisoners, and its people scattered. The noble character of Totila won him friends on all sides, and it seemed that he was about to restore the Gothic kingdom in all its strength. Such rapid and marked success compelled Justinian to restore Belisarius to the command in Italy; but the emperor could not overcome his jealousy of his great general, and sent him to Italy without troops, and delayed those which were ordered to follow him. Belisarius soon discovered that he was sent to remain "the idle and impotent spectator of the glory of a young barbarian." Crossing to the coast of Epirus, he succeeded by extraordinary exertions in assembling a small force, with which he sailed to the mouth of the Tiber. He arrived in time to witness the capture of Rome by Totila; and, though he was too weak to prevent this, he succeeded by his firm and temperate remonstrance in inducing Totila to spare the city which he had resolved to destroy. Upon his departure for Southern Italy he failed to leave an adequate force behind him; and Belisarius with a thousand horse seized the deserted city, and, erecting the imperial standard upon the Capitol, succeeded in inducing the scattered population to return. The fortifications were repaired, and Totila was repulsed with severe loss in his efforts to retake Rome, A. D. 547. The jealousy of the emperor still continued to embarrass Belisarius, and he was unable to follow up his success. His movements in Southern Italy were defeated by the



disobedience and cowardice of his own officers. Finding it impossible to accomplish any thing in the face of such obstacles, he sought and obtained leave to return to Constantinople, A. D. 548.

After overrunning Italy, conquering Sicily, Sardinia, and Corsica, and invading Greece, Totila again captured Rome, A. D. 549. These successes induced the pope himself to head a deputation to Justinian, imploring his aid against the Goths. The emperor dispatched a strong force under the eunuch Narses, a man of commanding abilities, and a favorite of the emperor. Narses was invested with absolute power for the prosecution of the war, and was liberally supported by the emperor. He succeeded in regaining the lost territory, and defeated and slew Totila in a great battle near Tagina. Rome at once passed into his hands, A. D. 552, changing masters for the fifth time during the reign of Justinian. Under the title of duke, Narses, gaining some other victories, governed Italy with ability for thirteen years, A. D. 554-568.

Teias, the last Gothic king in Italy, succeeded to the throne of Totila, and sought aid of the Franks; but before it could reach him he was defeated and killed at Cumæ. A force of seventy-five thousand Germans subsequently passed the Alps, and ravaged Italy to the extreme southern end of the peninsula; but Narses defeated them with terrible slaughter at Casilinum, on the Vulturpus. All Italy was now subject to the emperor, and the Ostrogothic kingdom, after an existence of sixty years, was at an end. The seat of the exarchate of Italy was at Ravenna, and the first exarch, or lieutenant of the emperor, Narses, ruled the country successfully. The Goths either emigrated in search of new homes or were absorbed into the mass of the Italian people.

The destruction of the Gothic power in Italy produced a result which the emperor had not seen. During the life of Theodoric and his daughter Amalasontha the Goths had faithfully guarded the important barrier of the Upper Danube against the Gepidæ, who had since the days of Attila occupied, on the opposite banks of the Danube, the plains of Hungary and the Transylvania hills. The necessities of the Goths in Italy compelled them to evacuate Pannonia and Noricum for the defense of their Italian possessions against the imperial arms. Those regions were instantly occupied by the Gepidæ, who, not content with these acquisitions, threatened to burst into Italy. To defeat them Justinian called on the Lombards, or Lango-bards (Long Beards), who had moved from the eastern banks of the Elbe down to the Upper Danube. The Lombard king, Audoin,

accepted the invitation, and, entering Pannonia with his troops, began a war with the Gepidæ, which lasted for thirty years. At his death he was succeeded by his son Alboin, who had greatly distinguished himself by his savage bravery. Alboin, finding the Gepidæ too formidable to be defeated by his own people, made an alliance with the Avars, and the result was the extermination of the Gepidæ. Alboin slew Cummund, king of the Gepidæ, in a single combat, and married the beautiful daughter of that monarch, A. D. 566. The Avars received the lands of the Gepidæ for their services, and the Lombards were obliged to seek new homes. The way to Italy was open, and they resolved to invade that country. Justin II, the nephew of Justinian, succeeded the latter, A. D. 565; and, having degraded and removed Narses from the exarchate, was alarmed at the approach of the fierce warriors of the North, because he had no servant to resist their advance.

Narses, desiring to avenge the insult he received from the emperor, urged Alboin to take possession of the country, and the Lombard king, after crossing the Julian Alps, A. D. 568, soon made himself master of Italy as far as Ravenna and Rome. Pavia alone resisted him in a three years' siege, but was taken, A. D. 571, and made the capital of the Lombard kingdom, which was divided into thirty duchies. Alboin did not long enjoy his success. Having mortally affronted Rosamond, his wife, by compelling her to drink from the skull of her father, she organized a conspiracy against him, and he was slain by the conspirators, A. D. 573. Rosamond and her lover, the latter of whom was the principal actor in the tragedy, fled to the court of the exarch of Ravenna. Longinus, the exarch, becoming enamored of the beautiful queen, offered her his hand in marriage, and she undertook to remove Helmichis, her lover, by poison, in order to accept the offer. Helmichis discovered her treachery, and compelled her to drink also of the fatal cup. He then expired a few moments before the queen.

Upon the death of Alboin, the Lombard chiefs elected Cleph, or Clepho, the bravest of themselves, to be king. He was assassinated, A. D. 574, and for the next ten years the kingdom had no regular government, and was ruled by thirty dukes. Each chief seized some city for himself. Some of them attempted to invade the territories of the German tribes beyond the Alps, and the people of Rome besought aid of the Emperor Tiberius, who succeeded Julian II, A. D. 578. The emperor, unable to assist them, bribed Chilperic, the Frankish king, to invade Italy and expel the Lombards from the peninsula.

In this emergency, the Lombards conferred their crown upon Autharis, the son of Cleph, who defeated the Franks, and compelled them to return to their own country, A. D. 584. The last Frankish invasion was led by Childebert, who was encouraged to it by the Emperor Maurice, who ascended the throne, A. D. 582. Autharis completely baffled the Frankish sovereign by his prudence and superior generalship, and declining an engagement, allowed the heat of Summer to defeat his antagonist. The victorious Lombard extended his kingdom to the southern extremity of the peninsula, where he founded the great duchy of Benevento. He confirmed the various dukes in their authority on condition of their paying him half of their revenues, and serving under his command in times of war, with troops levied within their respective jurisdictions. This is regarded by some as the origin of the feudal system. Autharis died, A. D. 590, and his widow, Theodolinda, was intrusted by the Lombards with the choice of his successor. She conferred the crown and her hand upon Agilulf, duke of Turin. She converted her husband and many of his subjects from the Arian to the Catholic faith, and was rewarded by Pope Gregory the Great with the famous *Iron Crown* of Lombardy, which is still preserved in the Cathedral of Milan, and which is said to have been made of one of the nails of the true cross! Gregory, whose birth, rank, and literary abilities acquired him, in this age of ignorance, the appellation of Great, occupied the papal throne more than thirteen years, his reign having been terminated by death, A. D. 604. Another celebrated son of the Church in Italy was Benedict, a native of Norcia. He was born about A. D. 480, and, at the age of fourteen, attended school at Rome. Disgusted with the corruptions of the Church and the city, he ran away and concealed himself for three years in a cave at Subianco. He retired to Monte Cassino, A. D. 529, converted the "Temple of Apollo" into a monastery, and introduced a new system of rules for the government of monastic establishments. This monk died, A. D. 543, but his system extended over Western Europe. Among the Benedictines of the Middle Ages were two hundred cardinals and four thousand bishops.



## CHAPTER II.

*ITALY IN PAPAL DARKNESS.*

THE condition of Italy during the seventh century was truly sad and deplorable. As a general thing the Lombards ruled their territories with wisdom and firmness, but the state of the exarchate was one of anarchy. It was a period when individual rights were not acknowledged or respected, and when the strongest man alone was sure of any thing. "Conquest, spoliation, and insecurity had done their work. Wave after wave had passed over the surface of the old Roman state and obliterated almost all the landmarks of the ancient time. The towns, to be sure, still remained, but stripped of their old magnificence, and thinly peopled by the dispossessed inhabitants of the soil, who congregated together for mutual support. Trade was carried on, but subject to the exactions, and sometimes the open robberies, of the avaricious chieftains who had reared their fortresses on the neighboring heights. Large tracts of country lay waste and desolate, or were left to the happy fertility of nature in the growth of spontaneous woods. Marshes were formed over whole districts, and the cattle picked up an uncertain existence by browsing over great expanses of poor and uninclosed land. These flocks and herds were guarded by hordes of armed serfs, who camped beside them on the field, and led a life not unlike that of their remote ancestors on the steppes of Tartary." Such was the condition of Italy, and, indeed, of all Europe.

Amid this darkness and neglect, agriculture, which had become almost a lost art, was restored by the Benedictine monks, who had established monasteries in various parts of Italy. The wise founder of the Order, St. Benedict, fearing that many evils would arise from the assembling under a single roof of a number of idle persons, enjoined upon his followers "to beware of idleness as the greatest enemy of the soul." They were directed to cultivate the soil and to perform the various duties belonging to the domestic service of their convents. "No person," he said, "is ever more usefully employed than when working with his hands, or following the plow, providing food for the use of man." These instructions soon produced their legitimate effects. Labor was rescued from the degradation into which

it had fallen, and those who ministered at the holy altars of religion were not ashamed to work with their hands. The lands attached to the monasteries were better cultivated than any other, and these examples of the most approved methods of cultivation encouraged industry. The monasteries also became retreats of learning in this period of darkness and violence, and in them was preserved whatever of education and culture had survived the Roman overthrow. In these places of refuge the scholar found protection, and the leisure and means of pursuing his congenial studies.

The Church did not escape the contaminating influence of this era of ignorance and immorality. Ambitious contests arrayed the different orders against each other, and as the Church grew in prosperity it became more corrupt. The elegant scholarship which was once characteristic of the clergy disappeared, and often a bishop could be found who could neither read nor write, and was notoriously profligate. The bishops and monks were frequently engaged in bitter conflicts, and the latter were oppressed by the former. The Roman pontiff interfered in behalf of the monks, taking them under his special protection, relieving them from the supervision of their local bishops, and making them directly dependent upon and responsible to himself. By this stroke of policy he secured the enthusiastic support of the most compact and influential body in Europe. Their power was completely established by Boniface IV, A. D. 606, whose attachment to them was such that he converted his house at Rome into a monastery. This prelate granted to the monks authority to preach, to baptize, to hear confession, and to absolve, and, in fine, to perform every clerical function. These favors were appreciated by the followers of St. Benedict, and they went forth proclaiming the pope to be the first of earthly powers, even speaking of him, in the enthusiasm of their gratitude, as something more than mortal. Thus the authority and influence of the papacy were securely established as a firm foundation upon which the temporal claims of the Roman pontiff were subsequently based.

During the seventh century the Eastern and Western Churches were convulsed with religious disputes between the Monophysite and Monothelite parties concerning the union of the two natures in Christ, one asserting the existence of a single will, and the other, of two wills in the person of the incarnate Son of God. The pontificates of Honorius, Severian, John IV, and Theodore, who began to reign A. D. 642, were disturbed by these controversies. Pope Martin I, on account of his views, was removed from Rome by the opposite

party, and exiled to Naxos, a small island in the Archipelago. He experienced extraordinary hardships, and after enduring captivity, disease, and insult, was summoned before the senate, refused the indulgence of a seat, though too weak to stand, and was charged with treason against the state. His powerful address, in which he proved his innocence, was ineffectual, and, after being divested of his sacerdotal garments he was loaded with chains and led through the city, preceded by the executioner, bearing a drawn sword. For some reason he was not then put to death, but was thrown into successive prisons and finally sent into banishment, where he died, A. D. 656, in extreme poverty and distress. In order to unite, and, if possible, to restore peace to the Church, Agatho, the Roman pontiff, convened at Constantinople, in November, A. D. 680, a General Council, called the sixth. It continued until the following September, and confirmed the decrees of the Romish synods by the condemnation of the Monothelites.

At first the pretended successors of Peter faintly urged their claims to dominion and supremacy, but they became more ambitious as their power increased. The bishops of Rome denounced those of the Eastern Church for accepting new titles, but at the same time they were eagerly seeking them for themselves. The artful Boniface III, who had for some time resided as nuncio at the imperial court, did not hesitate to insinuate himself into the good opinion of the infamous Phocas, nor to receive with gratitude the effects of his favor. The Romish patriarchs were permitted to assume the title of œcumenical or universal bishops, but it did not confer any new powers. The title of pope, which, in fact, merely signifies the name of father, was equally bestowed upon the Bishop of Rome and those who possessed the other considerable sees; and Cyprian had been complimented with the title of Pope of Carthage, by Cornelius, Bishop of Rome. About the seventh century the prelates of the Roman see began, however, to appropriate this title to themselves. But it is impossible to satisfy the demands of ambition and vanity, and Agatho, not content with the honors already acquired, laid claim to a privilege never yet enjoyed by man, and asserted that the Church at Rome never had erred, nor could err in any point, and that all its constitutions ought to be as implicitly received as if they had been delivered by the "divine voice of St. Peter."

The different fathers of the Romish Church endeavored to excel each other in the invention of new superstitions, and thought that they could not be zealous champions of the holy faith unless they



ignored truth and reason. The sacrament of the Lord's-supper, which, in the first stages of the Church had been received with the utmost plainness and simplicity, was now accompanied by various superstitious observances prescribed by the authority of councils. The council of Toledo, A. D. 646, prohibited any one from receiving it after having eaten the smallest particle of food; and that of Trulla confirmed this decree, with the addition of a command to the receiver to take it stretching out his hands in the form of a cross. The superstitious opinion prevailed that the eucharistical wine, when mixed with ink, rendered the contract with which it was signed peculiarly sacred. The doctrine of the efficacy of masses repeated by ecclesiastics was strenuously urged, and became a fruitful source of wealth. Pilgrimages afforded a profit not less considerable, and devout visitors to the tombs of St. Peter and St. Paul, at Rome, were taught by the priests to believe that great spiritual benefits would be derived from these acts of practical piety. The people, the clergy, and the civil rulers in Italy were equally infected with the most desperate superstition.

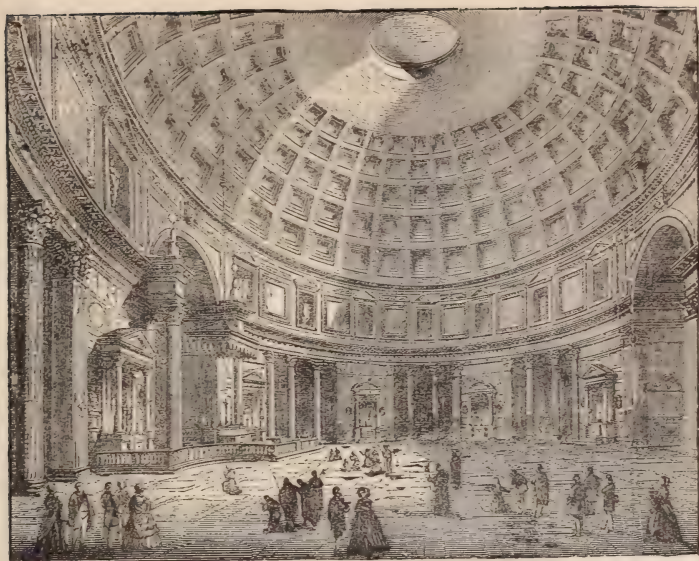
During this century various festivals were instituted by the Romish Church and observed throughout Italy, among which were those in honor of the Virgin Mary. Her departure from the world was commemorated by the faithful, and toward the close of the century the feast of her nativity was established. Few of the saints had, indeed, been forgotten in the distribution of celestial honors; but Boniface IV obtained a grant of the Pantheon at Rome; and, in order that no one might be neglected, he piously dedicated it to *all* the saints. The edifice, therefore, which among the pagans had served as a memorial of all the gods, was consecrated by the papal Church to the remembrance of all its saints.

---

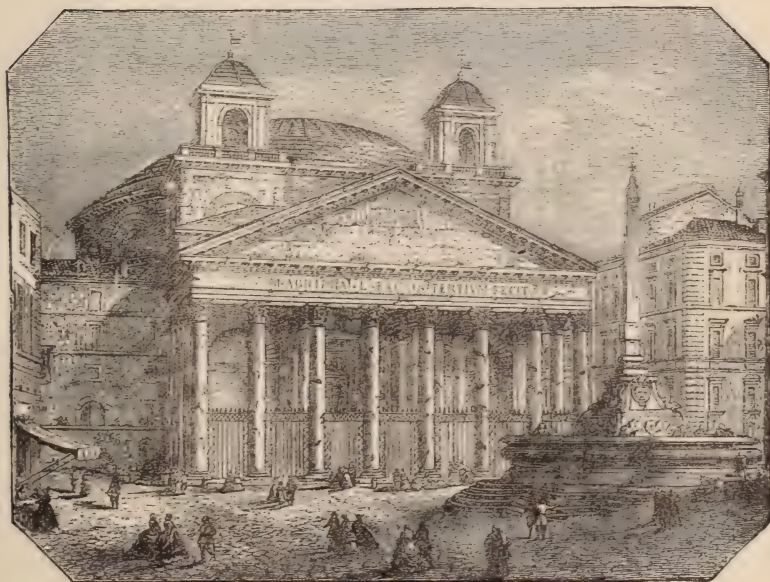
### CHAPTER III.

#### *ITALY UNDER FRANKISH RULE.*

UNTIL the beginning of the eighth century the Italians had regarded themselves as the subjects of the emperor, though he had not always protected them. Even the Bishop of Rome, who was a temporal prince, and did not hesitate to maintain his independence against the exarch, still acknowledged allegiance to the



INTERIOR.



EXTERIOR.  
THE PANTHEON.

Eastern emperor. But when Leo III inaugurated the iconoclastic war, A. D. 726, a serious and determined opposition to it was aroused in Italy. Pope Gregory II, who had strongly resisted the attempts of Leo III respecting image worship, endeavored to soften his resentment by claiming great merit for the measures he had taken in Italy in restraining the growing power of the Lombards, and wrote to the emperor, earnestly entreating him to revoke the imperial edict against one of the most cherished practices of the Latin Church. Leo III refused to comply with this request, and sent private orders to the exarch of Ravenna and to the governor of Rome to arrest the contentious prelate and bring him to Constantinople. Thus a great breach was opened between the empire and Italy, which widened daily. The people of Rome were too little attached to Leo III to suffer the execution of this order, and Gregory II, aware of this fact, excommunicated the exarch, and by letters exhorted the Venetians, with Luitprand, king of the Lombards, and all the cities of the empire to continue steadfast in the Roman Catholic faith. He also absolved the people of Rome from their allegiance to the emperor, and, it is said, would not permit the annual payment of tribute from Italy into the imperial treasury. This step was the signal of revolt; the imperial officers were massacred or banished; the people of Rome refused to acknowledge the authority of the emperor, and new magistrates were chosen.

Leo III made a desperate effort to retrieve his fortunes in Italy, to relieve the exarch, Eutychius, who was shut up in Ravenna, and to reduce the refractory Gregory II and Italy to obedience. Manes, one of his bravest and most experienced generals, sailed for the peninsula with a great fleet; but it encountered a terrible storm on the Adriatic, a large part of the ships were lost, and the "image worshipers on the coast of Calabria beheld their shores strewn with the wrecks of the iconoclastic navy." The inhabitants of Naples murdered their duke, Exhilaratus, the imperial governor, together with his son and one of his principal officers. The peace between Gregory II and the Lombards was broken by Luitprand, who took Ravenna, and then began to overrun the Roman territory. The pope made an alliance with the Venetians, and retook the city. He was enthusiastically supported by the Italians, who disliked the emperor because he was the champion of iconoclasm. Yet Gregory II hesitated to throw off definitely his allegiance to Leo III, as he needed an ally against the Lombards, who were pressing him hard. Finding that it was impossible to obtain the assistance of the emperor, he finally



appealed to Charles Martel, duke of the Franks, and the real ruler of the Frankish kingdom, for aid. In the midst of the negotiations Gregory II died, A. D. 731; but his successor, Gregory III, took up the struggle with equal vigor. Eutychius, who had maintained for a long time his perilous position in Ravenna, temporizing the pope, the Lombards, and the Franks, abandoned the seat of government, and fled to Naples. Italy was now forever lost to the empire, and the pope and the Lombard king only remained to contest its sovereignty. Luitprand, by endeavoring to reduce the pope to submission to him, compelled Gregory III to call upon the Franks for aid, as his predecessor had done. The pope offered the Frankish leader the sovereignty of the Roman people as the reward of his intervention, and the latter prepared to accept it, but died before he could do so, A. D. 741.

Rachisius, king of the Lombards, commenced to reign A. D. 742, and under the pretense that the people of Rome had violated a treaty besieged a city which belonged to the pope; but such was the influence of the pontiff over the king that at their meeting the ruler of the Lombards was persuaded to retire to the abbey of Monte Cassino. His queen and daughter at the same time (A. D. 749) founded a monastery of nuns near that abbey, whither they retired and took the veil. The Lombard king, Astolph, having seized Ravenna, A. D. 752, and invaded the Roman territories, Pope Stephen II appealed for aid to Pepin, the son of Charles Martel, who had been proclaimed king of the Franks by Pope Zachary, A. D. 751. The alarmed pontiff, who visited the Frankish capital in person, after receiving a promise from Pepin to cross the Alps the following year and assist him, rewarded the latter by absolving him from his oath of allegiance to Chilperic, the deposed king, by anointing him, and then investing him with the regal crown, at the same time solemnly conferring upon him the title of Patrician of the Romans. In the Autumn of the next year, A. D. 754, Pepin entered Italy at the head of a powerful army, and compelled Astolph to restore the Roman territory; but the conqueror had scarcely returned home when the Lombard king renewed the war, ravaged the Romagna, laid siege to Rome, and demanded the surrender of the pope as the price of the city's safety. Pepin at once crossed the Alps a second time, and inflicted upon Astolph such a punishment that he was obliged to purchase peace by the surrender of all his conquests, including the exarchate and Pentapolis.

Pepin, who declared that he undertook the war only for the glory

of St. Peter, bestowed upon the pope the restored territory, and thus raised him to the dignity of a temporal as well as spiritual ruler. Thus began the temporal dominion of the Roman pontiffs, which continued until 1871. The district thus acquired by the pope included Ravenna, Rimini, and twenty-three other cities, and embraced the territories of the exarchate and the Pentapolis, which were afterwards known as the "States of the Church." Thus by the gift of a foreign potentate, this large part of Italy became the kingdom of the Bishop of Rome. The sovereignty of this territory was retained by Pepin, but its immediate government, with its rich revenues, passed into the hands of the pope. Still the latter was not yet entirely independent, as money was coined and justice administered in the name of the king of the Franks, and even the election of the pope was subject to his revision.

Astolphus having died, A. D. 756, Desiderius became king of the Lombards; but not until the death of Pepin, which occurred A. D. 768, did he dare molest Rome. But, in the pontificate of Adrian I, the restless and enterprising Lombards invaded the provinces which had been granted by Pepin to the successors of the poor and humble Peter. Desiderius laid waste the Romagna, and threatened the city of the popes. Several years previous he meditated the conquest of Ravenna, and sought the protection of Charlemagne and Carloman, the sons of Pepin, between whom Italy was divided. His two daughters became the wives of these rulers; but a difficulty arose between Charlemagne and Desiderius, and the former divorced his wife. This act displeased the Lombard king, who applied to the pope to favor him in his projects against the French monarch; and failing in the attempt, he attacked the papal territory and endeavored to seize Adrian I. The latter appealed to Charlemagne, who came seasonably to his assistance with a powerful army, captured Pavia after a siege of several months, took Desiderius prisoner, and put an end to the Lombard kingdom, which he added to his own dominions. During the siege of Pavia Charlemagne spent "Holy Week" in Rome, and confirmed the gift of his father Pepin to the pope, and, in return, was crowned king of Italy and "Patrician of Rome," by Adrian I. Charlemagne entered Italy again, A. D. 781, to protect the pope against a league of all the adversaries of the papal and Frankish interests, headed by Arigiso, the Lombard duke of Benevento, who had married a daughter of Desiderius. The prompt appearance of the great conqueror in Italy ended the trouble. Adrian I died, A. D. 795, and Leo III became his successor. He

was unpopular with the factions which divided Rome, and his enemies attacked him in the streets, A. D. 799, and almost killed him. Escaping from the city he went to Spoleto, and thence to Paderborn.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

### *THE PROTEST OF CLAUDIUS.*

THE ninth century produced the most remarkable, perhaps, of all those distinguished champions of the truth in Italy, who denounced the growing superstition of the Church and labored to preserve pure and undefiled the faith which apostles had preached. The mantle of Ambrose fell upon Claudius, archbishop of Turin. He was an earnest and diligent student of the Bible. As he read it he seemed to stand in the immediate presence of the apostles, and of One greater than the apostles. Beholding with dismay the departure of the Church from the true way, he resolved to "cry aloud and spare not." He had been chaplain of the emperor, Louis the Meek, who appointed him bishop of Turin, saying, "I have made this nomination in order to improve the condition of the Italian Churches, which for the greater part have gone astray from the doctrine of the Evangelists." Claudius had talent, learning, firmness, and virtue for such a mission. He commenced it in earnest, and denounced the errors and abuses of the bishop and king of Rome with uncompromising zeal, both in his preaching and writings. He wrote extensive works, which the Inquisition has since destroyed. The titles, however, and many interesting passages of them may be found, as they are quoted in the works of his opponents, and especially in a book published against him by Jonas of Orleans, a contemporary writer.

The opinions of Claudius that may be gathered from such sources were in direct opposition to those which were held by the Bishop of Rome. Claudius maintained that the Church had no other head but Christ, no supremacy in the Church for any bishop, no such place as "purgatory," no merit in pilgrimages and formal penances, no worship of relics and images under whatever pretext, no pagan pomps in the worship of God, no transubstantiation in the Lord's-supper. He grasped "the sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God," and attacked the errors of his day.

In regard to the supremacy claimed by the Bishop of Rome, Clau-



dus remarked that "a certain supremacy was given by our Lord to Peter for the conversion of the Jews as well as to Paul for the conversion of the Gentiles; but this was personal to them, as were all the gifts of the apostles. At any rate, the bishopric of Rome was probably founded by Paul, who went there twice, but not certainly by Peter, who never saw Rome." In addition to this statement concerning the Roman primacy, we present the following from the writings of Claudius: "We know very well that this passage of the Gospel is very ill understood—'Thou art Peter, and upon this rock will I build my Church; and I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven,' under pretense of which words the stupid and ignorant common people, destitute of all spiritual knowledge, betake themselves to Rome in hopes of acquiring eternal life. The ministry belongs to all the true superintendents and pastors of the Church, who discharge the same as long as they are in this world; and when they have paid the debt of death others succeed in their places, who enjoy the same authority and power. Know thou that he only is apostolic who is the keeper and guardian of the apostle's doctrine, and not he who boasts himself to be seated in the chair of the apostle, and in the mean time doth not acquit himself of the charge of the apostle."

The greatest difficulty with which Claudius had to contend in the course of his mission was the worship of relics and images. It had been adopted early by the Church as a compromise with paganism, and the people were fond of it. There is no doubt a tendency in our weak human nature to represent God clothed in our material forms and passions; and this tendency was gratified in a high degree by the sensuous idolatry of the ancient Romans. It was an almost continual exhibition of the fine arts, showy pomps, and exciting spectacles, besides being associated with all the national glories. Claudius regarded the worship of images and relics as the source of all abominations, and resisted it with all the logic of his pen and all the force of his eloquence. The Bishop of Rome was the great advocate of this innovation, which was then making rapid advancement. The bishop of Milan condemned the practice as idolatrous, and purged those churches in his diocese which had begun to admit representations of saints and divine persons within their walls, not even sparing the cross itself. The seventh General Council or second of Nice, held A. D. 787, had decreed the worship of images; but France, Spain, Germany, and the diocese of Milan rejected it. It was also condemned by the Council of Frankfort, A. D. 794.

The advocates of images in the ninth century employed the very same arguments in their defense that Romanists at the present time offer, and Claudius refuted them on the same ground that Protestant writers still maintain. The former declared that they did not worship the image itself, but simply used it as the medium through which they worshiped him whom the image represents, and when they kissed the cross this act expressed their adoration of Him who died upon it. But Claudius would not accept this common excuse that the worship rendered to a material object is directed to an immaterial one. "*First*," said he, "this is not true. The common class of men are not able to make that subtle distinction, and for this reason the Bible forbade absolutely even to make images of God. *Secondly*, some images and relics are the objects of pilgrimages and greater veneration than others; and this proves that an intrinsic virtue is supposed to reside in those material objects. *Thirdly*, there is no reason why we should worship the souls of those whom we believe to be saved. To God alone is due honor, praise, and worship. Should the saints be worshiped at all it would be preferable to do so when they are still alive and in the image of God."

Claudius, in his letter to Theodemir, says: "Appointed bishop by Louis, I came to Turin. I found all the churches full of the filth of abominations and images. . . . If Christians venerate the images of saints they have not abandoned idols, but only changed their names." While employing the most invincible arguments, the bishop of Milan also occasionally indulged in sarcasm. "God commands one thing," says he, "and these people do quite the contrary. God commands us to bear our cross and not worship it; but these are all for worshiping it, whereas they do not bear it at all. To serve God after this manner is to go away from him. For if we ought to adore the cross because Christ was fastened to it, how many other things are there which touched Jesus Christ! Why don't they adore mangers and old clothes, because he was laid in a manger and wrapped in swaddling clothes? Let them adore asses, because he entered into Jerusalem upon the foal of an ass!"

Where the voice of this earnest preacher could not reach he labored to convey truth by his pen. He published expositions of almost all the epistles of Paul, and several books of the Old Testament, besides writing commentaries on the Gospels. According to Allix, none of these works have been printed except his commentary upon the Epistle to the Galatians. The monks of St. Germain have his commentary upon all the epistles in manuscript, in two volumes,

which were found in the library of the abbey of Fleury, near Orleans. They have also his manuscript commentaries on Leviticus, which formerly belonged to the library of St. Remy at Rheims. There are several manuscript copies of his commentary on Matthew in England and elsewhere.

In A. D. 815 he expressed, in his commentary on Matthew, his views of the Eucharist, declaring that it was a memorial of Christ's death, and not a repetition of it, and that the elements of bread and wine were only symbols of the flesh and blood of Jesus. It appears, therefore, that the doctrine of transubstantiation was not held in the ninth century by the Italian Church at the foot of the Alps. The bishops of neighboring dioceses indorsed the opinion of the bishop of Milan, and urged him to continue his expositions of the Bible. Though differing from him on other subjects, they concurred in his views of the sacrament. Among these prominent ecclesiastics who favored the teachings of Claudius were Jonas, bishop of Orleans, and the Abbot Theodemirus.

The doctrines which Claudius so powerfully advocated by both voice and pen were essentially the same that Luther proclaimed in the sixteenth century. He insisted that there is but one Sovereign in the Church, and he is not on earth; that Peter had no superiority over the other apostles, but was honored in being the first who preached the Gospel to both Jews and Gentiles; that human merit does not avail, and that man is saved by faith alone. This earnest reformer of the ninth century rejected such dogmas as the authority of tradition, prayers for the dead, and the infallibility of the Church. With regret he beheld the downward tendency of the Church in Italy, the worldliness of its ministry, the ignorance of its people, the prominence of image worship in its service, and the magnificence of its ceremonies. Yet while there was a general declension of piety throughout Italy, the Church in the northern part, to a great extent, maintained its purity. The Bishop of Rome had not succeeded in compelling universal submission to his jurisdiction, and had not persuaded all the Churches to accept his new opinions and to adopt his peculiar customs.

The dominant power at Rome would have silenced Claudius, but he was not alone. Bishops and synods extended to him sympathy and support. Agobardus, the bishop of Lyons, was as strong an iconoclast as the reformer at Turin, and stood by him in defense of the true faith. Dupon says that the emperor, Louis the Pious (le Débonnaire), summoned a council, A. D. 824, of "the most learned



and judicious bishops of his realm" to discuss the question of images. At that time emperors could convene synods and appoint bishops. Hence no papal allocution determined the action of this council. "It knew no other way to settle the question than by determining what they should find upon the most impartial examination to be true, by plain text of Holy Scripture, and the judgment of the Fathers." This ecclesiastical body, which met at Paris, like the great council at Frankfort, A. D. 794, indorsed the principles for which Claudius had contended. During the twenty years of controversy he was publicly opposed by only two men, Dungulas, a recluse of the abbey of St. Denis, an Italian, it is believed, and naturally inclined to the opinions of the pope; and Jonas, bishop of Orleans, who differed from Claudius on the one question of tolerating the use of images, the bishop of Orleans defending them, but not for idolatrous purposes, while the bishop of Turin condemned any use of them in churches.

The doctrines of Claudius found many followers, both in Italy and in France. The abbot of St. Theodomin, in France, who had been a school-mate and friend, wrote to him, saying that his doctrines had already been extensively embraced, and beseeching him to give up his preachings and writings, because they were not approved by the apostolic lord, the Bishop of Rome. Claudius replied that his doctrines were those of the Gospel, and incidentally remarked that the title "apostolic does not belong to him who administers a bishopric founded by an apostle, but to him who truly fulfills the apostolic mission." This important letter was followed by the publication of a book on the same subject. An extract of this book was made by Dungal, an Irish priest, who, selecting here and there some propositions, changed their meaning, and charged them as being heretical. A self-constituted council assumed to examine those propositions; but Claudius declined their judgment, and regarded with indifference the attack of Dungal.

At this the enemies of Claudius openly and directly accused him of heresy to the emperor, Louis the Meek, by whom he had been appointed bishop of Turin. That monarch did not heed the accusation or order a trial, but simply gave a commission to Jonas, bishop of Orleans, to make an inquiry into the doctrines of Claudius. Six years elapsed, and Jonas was silent. In the mean while Claudius freely continued his mission, completed his extensive commentaries on the New Testament, and died in full communion with all the Churches of Italy and France. It was only after his death that

Jonas of Orleans published and presented to the emperor a book in which he admits that the bishop of Turin was right in opposing the worship of images, but rebukes him on account of his intemperate zeal on that subject, for his disregard of the Bishop of Rome, and for his aversion to pilgrimages, invocation of the saints, and worship of the cross. Jonas in the same book hints also that heretical books were *said* to have been found in the library of Claudius after his death, and that a *rumor* had been spread of his having received the heresy of Arius. The words of the bishop of Orleans would rather imply a malignant insinuation than an open accusation of heresy. And yet, with no other foundation, a modern French writer, Bossuet, has positively asserted that Claudius was an Arian or a Nestorian. The inconsistency of this late charge is shown from the fact that he communed and almost identified himself with the Waldensian Church, against which no such accusation was ever made.

The civil and religious history of Italy during the ninth century are so intimately connected that they may be narrated together as one inseparable cluster of events. Leo III, who had been driven from Rome, A. D. 799, naturally appealed to Charlemagne for the punishment of his enemies and his restoration to the papal throne. His enemies endeavored to defend their course by charging the pontiff with grave crimes. The Frankish monarch did not decline to undertake the judicial investigation of the case, but postponed it until his arrival in Rome, in the mean time continuing to treat the pope with undiminished respect and familiarity. Toward the close of the Autumn, A. D. 800, Charlemagne proceeded to Rome, and the trial of Leo III occurred. It resulted, as a matter of course, in his acquittal and the punishment of his accusers, the king with his own voice proclaiming the innocence of the pontiff. The latter, desiring to manifest his gratitude, resolved to reward his benefactor; and accordingly, while he was kneeling on the steps of the great altar in St. Peter's Cathedral at the service of the mass, Leo III came suddenly behind him and placed upon his head the golden crown of the Cæsars, at the same time hailing him with the ancient imperial titles: "Long life and victory to Charles Augustus, crowned of God, great and peace-giving Emperor of the Romans!" It was Christmas, A. D. 800, which was then the day of the New Year, and a vast throng of clergy, warriors, and citizens filled the church. This multitude echoed the words of the pontiff with an enthusiastic shout, joyfully acknowledging the king of the Franks as the lawful successor of the Cæsars. Thus an august title which had remained

dormant for several centuries was revived, but it did not restore Rome to its ancient splendor.

Charlemagne, the "Emperor of the West," was now the most powerful monarch in the world; but his fame does not rest so much upon his great exploits as a conqueror as upon his learning and statesmanship. He labored to promote the civilization and Christianization of Europe, and during his life Italy enjoyed a period of rest and prosperity. On his death, A. D. 814, his only lawful surviving child, Louis, known as "Le Débonnaire," or the meek, mild, or gentle one, became emperor, having been crowned the previous year. Feeling his own incompetency, and hoping to preserve peace among his turbulent sons, the new monarch gave to each of them a share in his dominions, A. D. 817, Italy being included in that portion assigned to Lothaire. The death of Louis occurred A. D. 840, and Lothaire took the imperial title, which he held for fifteen years. His son, Louis II, who had been ruler over Lombardy, succeeded Lothaire, A. D. 855, and was a brave and virtuous sovereign. He advanced into Southern Italy, and saved Rome from the further attacks of the Saracens. These invaders, after striving to get possession of Sicily, landed upon the Italian coast, and, encouraged by the dissensions of the cities in the lower end of the peninsula, extended their ravages to the vicinity of Rome, even besieging the city itself. Had they been united they might have conquered all Italy. The distress of the Romans was increased by the death of their pontiff, Sergius II; but in his successor, Léo IV, they found a chief fitted for the employment both of the cabinet and the field. By his courageous conduct Rome was saved. He successfully resisted the Saracens in their attacks upon the city, and brought about a league of the cities of Gaeta, Naples, and Amalifei. Their combined fleets inflicted a severe defeat upon that of the Saracens off Ostia, and a tempest destroyed the remnant of it. Leo could not prevent the Saracens from plundering the churches and shrines which lay without the walls. Upon the withdrawal of the enemy he inclosed this portion—the Vatican quarter—with a strong wall, and called it, in honor of himself, the *Leonine City*, A. D. 852.

The Saracens, having captured Bari, had control of the Adriatic and the southern part of Italy; but Louis II, aided by the Greek fleet of Basil I, defeated them, A. D. 871. The death of Louis II occurred A. D. 875, and Charles the Bald of France was crowned emperor by his nephew, Pope John VIII. The latter is believed by some authorities to have been a female in disguise, a native of Ger-



many, educated at Athens, and celebrated for eloquence, learning, and popular manners. It is said that she was elected pope, A. D. 854, and reigned nearly two years and a half, but, not observing the laws of chastity, she died in child-birth from improper exposure in a public procession between the theater called Coliseum and the church of St. Clement. Mosheim refers to this extraordinary or imaginary person, still known under the popular name of Pope Joan, and says that it is "more than probable that some unusual event must have happened at Rome, from which this story derived its origin." Some writers maintain that she is a fictitious character, whose degradation represented the profligacy of the popes at that time. Among the prominent pontiffs who reigned in the latter part of the century were Adrian II (who, upon the death of Benedict III, A. D. 857, ascended the papal throne), John VIII, and Eugenius III. In this century the power and influence of the popes in civil affairs arose to an enormous height through the favor and protection of the Italian princes. Carloman, who became emperor, A. D. 877, and Charles the Fat, who succeeded him, A. D. 885, in the kingdom of Italy and in the Roman Empire, were elected by the Roman pontiff and the Italian princes. To support their pretensions to supremacy and independence the bishops of Rome forged ancient records, and presented them as authentic documents. Among these assumed decretals of the early Church were those of some obscure writer, to which was attached Isidore's name.

---

## CHAPTER V.

### *RISE OF THE ITALIAN REPUBLICS.*

**D**URING the tenth and eleventh centuries Italy was in a state of constant strife. Hostile factions contended for the supremacy, and surrounding nations, taking advantage of these internal dissensions, invaded the peninsula. In the early part of the tenth century it experienced many disasters. The Magyars and Northmen swept over the Alps and ravaged the northern portion with fire and sword, and Southern Italy was devastated by the Saracens. The death of Charles the Fat, A. D. 887, ended the Carolingian line in Italy, and was followed by the disruption of Charlemagne's magnificent empire. A struggle at once ensued between the adherents of

Beranger, duke of Friuli, and Guido, duke of Spoleto, for the possession of the Italian crown. The latter prince was victorious, and became emperor; and Beranger appealed to the German king, Arnulf, to assist him against his enemy. He responded willingly to the summons, and invaded Italy, A. D. 894. Having taken Rome, he set aside both Beranger and Lambert, son of Guido, who had died during the conflict, and was himself crowned emperor by Pope Formosus. He had no real power in Italy, and soon returned to Germany, where he died, A. D. 899. Death removed Lambert about the same time, and Beranger occupied the Italian throne at the beginning of the tenth century.

Leo V succeeded Benedict IV in the pontificate, A. D. 903; but he reigned only forty days, having been dethroned and imprisoned by Christopher, one of his domestics. But the usurper was overthrown the following year by Sergius III, a Roman presbyter. This pontiff owed his elevation to the protection of Adalbert, a powerful Tuscan prince, whose influence at Rome was unlimited; and his short reign was followed by those of Anastasius III and Lando, all too transient to be very fruitful in events. An archbishop of Ravenna, under the title of John X, ascended the papal throne, A. D. 914, and, like the most of his predecessors, was licentious and corrupt. His glorious campaign against the Saracens, whom he expelled from their settlements upon the banks of the Garigliano, A. D. 916, was a redeeming feature of his reign. He did not, however, long enjoy his elevation, as he was disliked by an infamous woman named Marozia, the daughter of Theodora, and wife of Albert, marquis or count of Tuscany. She was the mistress of one pope, the mother of a second, and the grandmother of a third; and the record of her career forms the darkest page in the history of the papacy. Upon the death of her husband and Beranger I she endeavored to strengthen herself by marrying Hugh of Provence, who had assumed the Italian crown, and had been acknowledged king by Pope John XI, the successor of Leo VI and Stephen VII, whose respective reigns were unimportant. John XI was the illegitimate son of Marozia by Sergius III, and yet accepted, A. D. 931, the sacred position once occupied by St. Peter! His mother introduced Hugh of Provence into the castle of St. Angelo; but the Romans, led by Alberic, the legitimate son of Marozia, refused to allow Hugh to enter their city, and confined him to the castle, from which Alberic soon drove him. Marozia and John XI were thrown into prison, A. D. 933, and the latter died, A. D. 936. The pontiffs who in their turns succeeded

and filled the papal chair, until A. D. 956, were Leo VII, Stephen VIII, Marianus II, and Agapet, whose characters were greatly superior to those of their immediate predecessors, and whose government, at least, was not attended with those tumults and revolutions which had so frequently shaken the pontifical throne and banished peace from Rome.

For twenty years Alberic ruled Rome, restoring to a limited degree the old republican institutions. He joined to his dignity as Roman consul a degree of authority and opulence which nothing could resist, and, consequently, upon the death of Agapet, he raised his son Octavio to the pontificate. This inexperienced youth took the name of John XII, when he began to reign, A. D. 956, and thus introduced the custom, which has since been adopted by all the popes, of assuming a new appellation upon occupying the chair of St. Peter. Hugh of Provence, though driven from Rome, retained his hold upon the rest of Italy; but he was an infamous tyrant, and became so unpopular with the people that they devised a plot to supplant him by electing Beranger, marquis of Ivrea, the most powerful noble of Northern Italy. Hugh detected the conspiracy and Beranger fled; but the former was finally compelled to return to Provence, and his son Lothaire became king of Italy, A. D. 945. This sovereign died, A. D. 950, and his father's rival at once mounted the throne, as Beranger II. He endeavored to compel Adelaide, the young and beautiful widow of Lothaire, to marry his son Adelbert; but she refused, and was thrown into prison. After suffering the most cruel treatment, she succeeded in escaping, and appealed to the German king, Otho the Great, for protection. He crossed the Alps, defeated Beranger, and married Adelaide himself, at the same time assuming the title of King of the Lombards. Allowing Beranger to retain his crown, and Lombardy as his vassal, Otho returned home in triumph, A. D. 951. After ten years of violence and discontent, during which the Lombard nobles succeeded in winning the uncompromising hostility of the pope, John XII, the latter invited Otho to become emperor of the Romans, and accordingly he was crowned, with Queen Adelaide, at Rome, in February, A. D. 962.

Otho had scarcely passed the Alps, on his return to Germany, when the pontiff commenced to plot against him, and finally plunged Rome into a revolt against its German master. The emperor returned to Italy, A. D. 964, and solemnly deposed the pope from his high office. The Romans were deprived of their independent institutions, and placed under the rule of Leo VIII, who was appointed by Otho.



Thus the power of the German emperor was firmly established in Rome. He endeavored to add Southern Italy to his empire, but was unsuccessful. The Romans attempted to regain their independent municipal government during the latter part of the reign of Otho II, and set up a consul named Crescentius, who compelled Benedict VI, who succeeded John XIII (A. D. 972), to acknowledge his authority. The unfortunate pontiff, upon the death of Otho the Great, A. D. 973, was murdered the following year. Boniface VII and Donus II each reigned a few months, and when the papal chair became vacant, A. D. 975, Benedict VII was chosen to occupy it. He remained in the pontificate nine years, and was succeeded by John XIV. \* The latter, however, was deposed by Boniface VII, who had returned from his exile, A. D. 965, but whose reign extended over a period of only six months. His successor was John XV, a wise and prudent ruler, whose administration was tranquil and continued until A. D. 996. In that year Otho III placed Gregory V, a German, upon the papal throne, then marched to Rome at the head of a powerful army, put an end to the consular government, and was crowned emperor by the pope. As soon as he had departed from the city some hostile factions raised a revolt, and elected a Greek to the pontificate. Otho III promptly returned to Rome, deposed the rival pope, cruelly tortured him, and laid siege to the castle of St. Angelo. Self-government was now at an end in Rome, and the power of the emperor was supreme. He even dreamed of reviving the ancient glories of the Roman Empire, and of reigning as master of the world, with Rome as his capital; but his early death defeated all these plans. One of his last acts was the appointment of Gerbert, his tutor, to the pontificate, to succeed Gregory V. The new pope, Sylvester II, was esteemed the most profound scholar and most daring thinker of his day, using his power to promote literature and science. Mosheim extols his genius and declares that by his writings "many were incited to the study of physics, mathematics, and philosophy, and in general to the pursuit of science in all its branches."

The disorders which had marked the tenth century in Italy continued throughout the eleventh. After the death of the emperor, Otho III, A. D. 1002, Rome passed again under popular government, and the great cities of Northern Italy enjoyed, under various forms, much of the liberty which prevailed in them at earlier periods. The great trouble against which they had to contend was the repeated effort of some powerful noble to make himself master of some important city. Even the bishops, not content with their spiritual privileges, endeavored

to obtain temporal power; and the people of Milan, especially, had a severe struggle with their archbishop, who was resolved to deprive them of their liberties. The municipal governments of Italy were generally conducted by two or more consuls chosen by the people. Each city had usually two councils, the smaller being called the *Consiglio di Credenza*, and the larger, the *Senate*; but the supreme power was in the hands of the citizens. The great Italian republics were more thoroughly organized than their minor sisters. In the eleventh century Venice was one of the richest and most powerful of the Italian states, and was just entering upon its remarkable commercial career. It was the only republic in Italy which never submitted to the German emperors, and no foreign power had as yet been acknowledged within its walls. Its chief magistrate was styled the Doge, or Duke, and possessed all the powers of a king. For six centuries Venice had not been involved in the great struggles which convulsed the other portions of the peninsula, and consequently enjoyed a steady growth. During the Crusades the republic engaged in ship-building, expelled the pirates from the Adriatic Sea, carried on an extensive commerce with eastern countries, and became the mistress of the seas. The example of Venice was followed by Pisa, and that republic next rose to wealth and importance, and became the principal commercial rival of the other. Genoa did not advance so rapidly, but her territory ultimately embraced the cities of the two *Rivieras*, and extended around the head of the Gulf of Genoa from Nice to Spezzia. She was always the enemy of Venice, and the rival of Pisa, though sometimes the ally of the latter republic.

During the eleventh century the Italian crown was worn by Henry of Bavaria, Conrad II, Henry III, and Henry IV, the Great. All these German emperors had more or less contention with the Roman pontiffs. Gregory VII compelled Henry IV to remain three days and nights barefooted in the snow, and without food, at the gate of the castle of Canossa, in February, A. D. 1077. The chief ally of the pope in Italy was the Countess Matilda, of Tuscany, who possessed great fiefs. She laid the foundation of the temporal power of the popes by bequeathing (A. D. 1080) a large portion of her dominions to Gregory VII. The Normans, under Robert Guiscard, invaded Sicily, expelled the Saracens, and captured (A. D. 1053) Pope Leo IX, who had advanced against them with an army. Afterwards the Normans defended the Roman pontiffs, and Roger, the son of Robert Guiscard, became king of Sicily, and promised to make his dominion a fief of the "Holy See."



HILDEBRAND (POPE GREGORY VII).



## CHAPTER VI.

*THE STRUGGLES OF THE ITALIAN REPUBLICS.*

THREE important events mark the civil history of Italy during the twelfth century—the struggle between the empire and the papacy for ecclesiastical investitures; the establishment of the Norman kingdom in Naples, and the formation of distinct and nearly independent republics among the cities of Lombardy. Pascal II, who had been raised to the pontificate in the closing year of the preceding century (A. D. 1099), appeared firmly seated in the apostolic chair without the least apprehension from the imperial faction. After the death of Guibert, A. D. 1100, this faction, indeed, chose in his place a person named Albert; but he was seized and imprisoned on the day of his election. Theodoric and Magnulf were successively chosen after Albert, who could not long support their claim to the pontificate. No sooner did Pascal observe his deliverance from his domestic enemies than he determined not to suffer the present season of tranquillity to pass unimproved. He assembled a council at Rome, A. D. 1102, in which the decrees of his predecessors against investitures and the excommunications they had fulminated against Henry IV were renewed, and the ambitious pontiff employed the most vigorous efforts to excite new enemies against the unfortunate emperor. The latter, however, resisted with great constancy and resolution the aggressions of this violent pope, and eluded his perfidious stratagems with much vigilance and dexterity. But the heart of the emperor was wounded in the tenderest part, and lost all its firmness and courage, when his unnatural son, who was afterwards named Henry V, under the impious pretext of religion, took up arms, A. D. 1104, against his person and his cause. He seized his father in a treacherous manner, and compelled him to abdicate the empire; after which the unhappy prince retired to Liege, where, deserted by all his adherents, he was released from his miseries by death, A. D. 1106.

This odious rebellion produced a revolution in the empire; but Pascal II did not derive from it all the benefits which he anticipated. While Henry V was willing to grant the right of election to the canons and monks, as was usual prior to his reign, he could by no means be persuaded to renounce his right of *investing* the bishops and

abbots. This refusal exasperated the pontiff, who renewed, in the Councils of Guastallo and Troyes, the decrees which had so frequently been issued against *investitures*, and the flame burst forth with new fury. It was, indeed, suspended during a few years by the wars in which Henry V was engaged, and which prevented him from terminating the dispute. But as soon as he had made peace with his enemies and composed the tumults which disturbed the tranquillity of the empire, he departed for Italy, A. D. 1110, with a formidable army, to put an end to the long and unhappy contest. He advanced toward Rome by slow marches, while the trembling pope, reduced to the lowest and most defenseless condition, proposed to him the following conditions of peace: That he on the one hand should renounce the right of *investing* with the ring and the crosier; and that the bishops and abbots should, on the other, resign to the emperor all the grants they had received from Charlemagne, of those rights and privileges which belong to royalty, such as the power of raising tribute, coining money, and possessing independent lands and territories, with other immunities of a similar nature. Henry accepted these conditions, and accordingly ratified them by a formal consent, A. D. 1111; but the Italian and German bishops were extremely displeased, and strongly expressed their dissent.

The contending parties were assembled in the church of St. Peter, and, a fatal tumult having arisen between their respective followers, Henry ordered the pope and several of the refractory cardinals to be seized and to be confined in the castle of Viterbo. After remaining a prisoner for some time the captive pontiff was engaged, by the unhappy circumstances of his present condition, to enter into a new convention, by which he solemnly receded from the article of the former treaty which regarded *investitures*, confirmed to the emperor the privilege of inaugurating the bishops and abbots with the *ring* and *crosier*, and anathematized all who might oppose this concession. Thus was peace concluded, and Henry received the imperial diadem from Pascal II. This peace was transitory—the fruit of violence and necessity—and was followed by greater tumults and more dreadful wars than had yet afflicted the Church. Immediately after this treaty had been concluded Rome was convulsed with the most vehement commotions, and a universal clamor was excited against the pontiff, who was accused of having violated, in a scandalous manner, the duties and dignity of his station, and of having prostituted the majesty of the Church by his ignominious compliance with the demands of the emperor. Pascal desired to appease these commotions, and, in

defiance of his anathema, assembled in the church of Lateran a council, A. D. 1112. There he not only confessed, with the deepest contrition, the crime he had committed in concluding such a convention with the emperor, but submitted the decision of the affair to the determination of the council, who accordingly took the treaty into consideration, and solemnly annulled it. This step led to many events which, for a long time, resulted unfavorably to the interests of Henry. Many synods and councils both in France and Germany excommunicated him, and he was even placed in the black list of *heretics*, a denomination which exposed those who were embraced in it to the greatest dangers in these barbarous and superstitious times; and to make his anxiety more intense, he saw the German princes revolting from his authority in several places, and taking up arms in the cause of the Church.

Henry, desiring to terminate the calamities which thus afflicted the empire on all sides, started for Italy a second time with a large army, A. D. 1116, and arrived the year following at Rome, where he assembled the consuls, senators, and nobles, while the fugitive pontiff retired to Benevento. During his forced absence, however, Pascal engaged the Normans to march to his assistance, and, encouraged by the prospect of immediate succor, prepared for a vigorous war against the emperor, and attempted to make himself master of Rome. But in the midst of these warlike preparations, which attracted the attention of Europe, the military pontiff died, A. D. 1118. John Cajetan was chosen as his successor, but ended his turbulent reign in the beginning of the following year. Calistus II was the next incumbent of the papal chair, A. D. 1119. He renewed the dispute concerning investitures; but it was evident that both parties had become wearied by constant agitation, and desired the blessings of peace. Conditions were therefore proposed, which derogated neither from the majesty of the empire nor the rights of the Church, and temporary tranquillity was once more restored. In the pontificates of his successors, until the elevation of Alexander III, A. D. 1159, few remarkable events occurred, except the struggles of contending popes, and their disputes with Roger, king of Sicily, who haughtily refused to acknowledge his dominions as dependencies upon the "Holy See."

By the compact between Henry V and Calistus II the emperor resigned forever all pretense to invest bishops by the ring and crosier, and recognized the liberty of elections. But, in return, it was stipulated that elections should be made in his presence or that of his



officers, and that the new bishop should receive his temporalities from the emperor by the scepter. As both parties in the concordat at Worms receded from so much of their pretensions, it is difficult to determine which was victorious. On one hand, the emperors, by restoring the freedom of episcopal elections, deprived themselves of a prerogative which they had long possessed, and which was almost essential to the maintenance of authority over not the least turbulent part of their subjects. While the form of investiture by the ring and crosier seemed in itself of no importance, yet it had been, in effect, a collateral security against the election of obnoxious persons. For the emperors, by delaying this necessary part of the pontificals until they should confer investiture, prevented a hasty consecration of the new bishop, after which, the vacancy being legally filled, it would not be decent for them to withhold the temporalities. But then, on the other hand, they preserved by the concordat their feudal sovereignty over the estates of the Church in defiance of the language which had recently been held by its rulers. Gregory VII had positively declared in the Lateran Council, A. D. 1080, that a bishop or abbot receiving investiture from a layman should not be reckoned as a prelate. A bishop of Placentia asserts that prelates dishonored their order by putting their hands, which hold the body and blood of Christ, between those of impure laymen. The same expressions are used by others, and are directed against the form of feudal homage, which, according to the principles of that age, ought to have been as obnoxious as investiture.

The same doctrine had been maintained by all the successors of Gregory, without any limitation of their censures to the formality of the ring and crosier. But Calistus II himself had gone much farther, and absolutely prohibited the compelling ecclesiastics to render any service to laymen on account of their benefices. "It is evident," says Hallam, "that such a general immunity from feudal obligations, for an order who possessed nearly half the lands in Europe, struck at the root of those institutions by which the fabric of society was principally held together." The disciples of Gregory had aimed at this complete independence; and by yielding to the continuance of lay investitures in any shape, Calistus may, in this respect, appear to have relinquished the principal object of contention. In some battles immediate success may seem pretty equally balanced, but subsequent effects indicate to whom the intrinsic advantages of victory belong. So it is evident, from the events which followed the settlement of this great controversy about investitures,

that the "Holy See" had conquered. The emperors were not the only sovereigns whose practice of investiture excited the hostility of Rome, though they sustained the principal brunt of the war. A similar contest broke out under the pontificate of Pascal II with Henry I of England.

The Normans in the southern part of Italy continued loyal to the papal hierarchy. As has been previously stated Leo IX, A. D. 1053, invested them with their conquests in Apulia, as fiefs of the "Holy See." This investiture was repeated and enlarged as the popes, especially in their contentions with Henry IV and Henry V, found the advantage of using the Normans as faithful auxiliaries. Finally Innocent II, A. D. 1138, conferred upon Roger the title of King of Sicily. It is difficult to understand by what pretense these countries could be claimed by the Roman See in sovereignty, unless by virtue of the pretended donation of Constantine, or that of Louis the Debonair, which is hardly less suspicious. Muratori presumes to suppose that the interpolated, if not spurious, grants of Louis the Debonair, Otho I, and Henry II to the Roman See were promulgated about the time of the first concessions to the Normans, in order to give the popes a colorable pretext to dispose of the southern provinces of Italy. It appears strange that Innocent II should surrender the liberties of the city of Naples, whether that was considered as an independent republic or as a portion of the Greek Empire. But the Normans, who had no titles but their swords, were naturally glad to give an appearance of legitimacy to their conquest; and the kingdom of Naples, even in the hands of the most powerful princes in Europe, never ceased to pay a feudal acknowledgment to the chair of St. Peter.

The cities of Lombardy, in the northern part of Italy, manifested the same independent spirit during the twelfth century that they did in the eleventh. There was, in fact, no power remaining in the empire to control them. The two Henrys, IV and V, were so much embarrassed during the quarrel concerning investitures and the continual troubles of Germany that they were less likely to interfere with the rising freedom of the Italian cities than to purchase their assistance by large concessions. Henry IV granted a charter to Pisa, A. D. 1081, full of the most important privileges, promising even not to name any marquis of Tuscany without the people's consent; and it is possible that, though the instruments have perished, other places might obtain similar advantages. However this may be, it is certain that, before the death of Henry V, A. D. 1125, almost all the cities of Lombardy, and many among those of Tus-

cany were accustomed to elect their own magistrates, and to act as independent communities in waging war and in domestic government. As already stated, the territory originally under the control of the count or bishop of these cities had been reduced by numerous concessions to the rural nobility. But the new republics, believing that they were entitled to all which their former governors had once possessed, commenced to attack their nearest neighbors, and to recover the sovereignty of all their ancient territory. They besieged the castles of the rural counts, and successively conquered them. They suppressed some minor communities, which had been formed in imitation of themselves by little towns belonging to their district. Sometimes they purchased feudal superiorities or territorial jurisdictions; and, according to a policy not unusual with the stronger party, converted the rights of property into those of government. This produced a vast intricacy of titles, which, of course, was of great advantage to those who desired a pretext for robbing their neighbors.

Hence, at the middle of the twelfth century, hardly any nobleman could be found except the marquis of Montferrat who had not submitted to some city. Among the independent families were those of Este, Malaspina, and Savoy. Muratori produces many charters of mutual compact between the nobles and the neighboring cities, whereof one invariable article is, that the former should reside within the walls a certain number of months in the year. The rural nobility were thus deprived of the independence which had endeared their castles; but they imbibed a new ambition of directing the municipal government of the cities, which, during the first period of the republics, was chiefly in the hands of the superior families. The Lombards adopted the sagacious policy of inviting settlers by extending to them the privileges of citizenship, and sometimes even bestowing them by compulsion. Sometimes a city, imitating the wisdom of ancient Rome, granted these privileges to all the inhabitants of another. Thus the principal cities, and especially Milan, reached, before the middle of the twelfth century, a degree of population very far beyond that of the capitals of the great kingdoms. Within their strong walls and deep trenches, and in the midst of their well-peopled streets, the industrious dwelt secure from the license of armed pillagers and the oppression of feudal tyrants. Artisans, whom the military land-holders despised, acquired and deserved the right of bearing arms for their own and the public defense. Their occupations became liberal, because they were the foundation of their political franchises; the citizens were classed in



companies according to their respective crafts; each of which had its tribune or standard-bearer (gonfalonier), at whose command, when any tumult arose or enemy threatened, they rushed in arms to muster in the market-place.

While the growth of these little republics and the corresponding advancement of liberty excite our admiration, their national conduct awakens an opposite feeling. Besides their love of freedom they possessed a restless spirit, which led them to tyrannize over weaker neighbors. They played over again the tragedy of ancient Greece, with all its circumstances of inveterate hatred, unjust ambition, and atrocious retaliation, though with less consummate actors upon the scene. Among all the Lombard cities Milan was the most conspicuous, as well for power and population as for the abuse of those resources by ambitious and arbitrary conduct. An intensely bitter feeling of long continuance had existed between the inhabitants of Milan and Lodi. This animosity originated, according to Arnulf, in the resistance made by the citizens of the latter place to an attempt made by Archbishop Eribert to force a bishop of his own nomination upon them. The bloodshed, plunder, and conflagrations which had ensued would, he says, fill a volume if they were related. And this is the testimony of a writer who did not live later than A. D. 1085. Seventy years more either of servitude or hostility elapsed before Lodi enjoyed peace. It was razed to the ground by the Milanese, A. D. 1111, and its inhabitants distributed among six villages, where they were subjected to an unrelenting despotism. Milan commenced a war of ten years' duration with the little city of Como, A. D. 1118; but its inhabitants exhibited such remarkable perseverance that they obtained better terms of capitulation, though they lost their original independence. The Cremonese treated the town of Crema so harshly that it revolted from them and put itself under the protection of Milan. Cities of more equal forces carried on interminable hostilities by wasting each other's territory, destroying the harvests, and burning the villages.

At this period the sovereignty of the emperors, though not very effective, was in theory always admitted. Their name was used in public acts and appeared upon the coin. When they came into Italy they had certain customary supplies of provisions called *fodrum regale*, at the expense of the city where they resided; during their presence all inferior magistrates were suspended, and the right of jurisdiction devolved upon them alone. But the jealousy of the Lombards was so great that they built the royal palaces without their

gates, a precaution to which the emperors were compelled to submit. This was at a very early period a subject of contention between the inhabitants of Pavia and Conrad II, whose palace, seated in the heart of the city, they had demolished in a sedition, and were unwilling to build in that situation.

Such was the condition of Italy when Frederick Barbarossa, duke of Swabia and nephew of the last emperor, Conrad III, ascended the throne of Germany, A. D. 1152. His accession forms the commencement of a new era, the duration of which is about one hundred years, and which is terminated by the death of Conrad IV, the last emperor of the House of Swabia. It is characterized, like the former, by three distinguishing features in Italian history—the victorious struggle of the Lombard and other cities for independence, the final establishment of a temporal sovereignty over the middle provinces by the popes, and the union of the kingdom of Naples to the dominions of the House of Swabia. The Italians soon discovered that Frederick Barbarossa was a very different sovereign from the last two emperors, Lothaire and Conrad III, who had seldom appeared in Italy, and whose forces had not been adequate to rule such insubordinate subjects. This prince had a severe and arbitrary temper, and a haughty conceit of his imperial rights. Combined with these qualities were distinguished valor and ability which rendered him very formidable. He believed, or professed to believe, the great absurdity that, as successor of Augustus, he inherited the kingdoms of the world. According to the same standard of right he claimed with more authority, if not more reason, the entire prerogatives of the Roman emperors over their own subjects, and the professors of the civil law, which was now diligently studied, sustained him with the utmost servility.

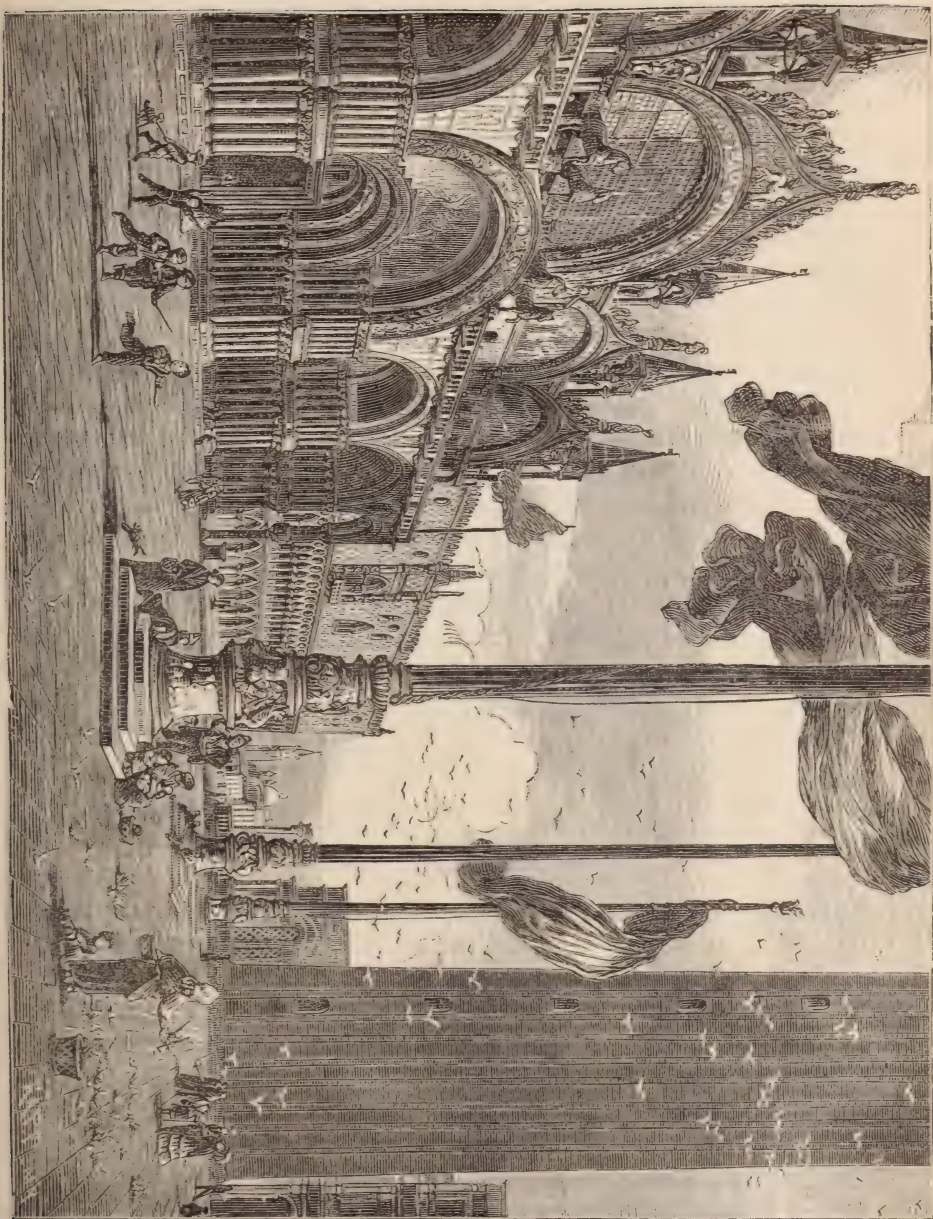
To such a disposition as Frederick possessed the self-government of the Lombard cities appeared real rebellion, and against Milan especially, the most celebrated of them all, he cherished the most inveterate resentment. Its behavior toward Lodi afforded him a good pretext for interference. Two natives of that ruined city threw themselves at the emperor's feet and implored him, as the ultimate source of justice, to redress the wrongs of their country. A striking illustration of the terror inspired by Milan is the fact that the consuls of Lodi disavowed the complaints of their countrymen, and the inhabitants trembled at the danger of provoking a summary vengeance against which the imperial arms seemed no protection. The Milanese, however, did not attack the people of Lodi, but treated with contempt the emperor's order to leave them at liberty. Otho Morena, a citizen

of Lodi, wrote an interesting account of these circumstances, which Sismondi criticized by reproaching Morena for partiality towards Frederick in the Milanese war; but that historian should have remembered the provocations of Lodi.

Frederick, meanwhile, entered Italy and held a diet at Roncaglia, where complaints poured in from many quarters against the Milanese. Pavia and Cremona, their ancient enemies, were impatient to renew hostilities under the imperial auspices. Brescia, Tortona, and Crema were allies, or rather dependents, of Milan. Frederick soon found an occasion to attack the latter confederacy. Tortona was compelled to surrender and leveled to the ground. In a short time the feudal army was dissolved; the emperor's attention was demanded at Rome, where he had contentions with Pope Adrian IV, and when the imperial troops were withdrawn from Lombardy the Milanese rebuilt Tortona and expelled the citizens of Lodi from their dwellings. Frederick assembled a fresh army, to which almost every city of Lombardy, willingly or by force, contributed its militia. It is said to have exceeded one hundred thousand men. The Milanese shut themselves up within their walls, and perhaps might have defied the imperial forces if their immense population, which gave them confidence in their strength, had not exposed them to a different enemy. Hunger compelled them to capitulate, upon conditions not very severe, if a conquered people could ever safely rely upon a convention that testifies their submission. At the end of three weeks an order was given to the Milanese to evacuate their habitations, and the imperial army instantly occupied the deserted streets. The people of Pavia and Cremona, of Lodi and Como were commissioned to revenge themselves on the respective quarters of the city assigned to them; and in a few days the pillaged churches stood alone amid the ruins of what had been Milan. The freedom to which Lombardy had aspired had vanished, and she groaned beneath the yoke of servitude. "But there still remained at the heart of Lombardy," says Hallam, "the strong principle of national liberty, imperishable among the perishable army of her patriots, inconsumable in the conflagration of her cities." Frederick placed the imperial eagle on the spire of the Milan cathedral in token of his supremacy.

In the same year that the city surrendered (A. D. 1159), Pope Adrian IV died, and the papal party elected Alexander III, while the imperialists conferred the honor upon Victor IV. Each pontiff excommunicated his rival and his followers, and all Christendom was divided into two parties. Alexander III was more generally acknowl-





ST. MARK'S, VENICE.

edged, and he successfully resisted his formidable enemy, Frederick, while the latter was fighting the cities of Lombardy; but the fall of Milan gave the emperor control of Northern Italy and made Rome an unsafe place for the pope. Sicily was so torn with violence and strife that it no longer offered the pontiff his accustomed asylum, and he fled into France, where he remained three years. During this period his rival, Victor IV, died, and Guido of Crema succeeded him, under the name of Pascal III. While the emperor was detained in Germany, Alexander III returned to Rome, A. D. 1165. An alliance against Frederick, called the "Lombard League," was organized, A. D. 1167, and this combination of all his enemies seriously threatened his power. Taking the field in person, he vainly attempted to capture Ancona; but Rome surrendered to him, and the pope fled. A pestilence in his army caused Frederick to abandon the city. He made an effort, A. D. 1174, to take the new Guelfic city of Alessandria, near Pavia, but was defeated by the forces of the "League." In the battle of Legnano, A. D. 1176, the emperor's troops were routed, and a truce between the hostile parties was soon arranged at Venice. Frederick condescended to prostrate himself at the feet of Alexander III, the haughty pontiff, in the celebrated Church of St. Mark, and to receive from him the kiss of peace.

---

## CHAPTER VII.

### *ARNOLD OF BRESCIA.*

ABOUT the beginning of the twelfth century there was born in the town of Brescia, Italy, the eloquent and earnest reformer, Arnold, whose career was both stormy and brilliant. In early life he became a devout student of the Bible, and was a reader in the public congregation. Having a deep love of learning he went to the desert of Nogent, in France, to be instructed by Abelard, whose fame was then filling Christendom. As a pupil of the celebrated scholastic he advanced in wisdom until, in some respects, he surpassed his teacher. Abelard was his superior in genius and knowledge, but not in fervid eloquence, practical piety, courage, and entire devotion to the great cause of elevating humanity.

Arnold returned to Italy, not as a mystic, to discuss the subtleties of philosophy, but as a fearless champion of the truth, to battle for



reform. He beheld the corrupt condition of the Italian Church, which resulted from the anomalous union of the spiritual and the temporal. The clergy had become worldly. From the highest ecclesiastic downwards they filled civil offices, presided in the cabinets of princes, imposed taxes, commanded armies, owned extensive domains, and lived in luxury. Arnold was convinced that the immense wealth of the Church was the source of innumerable evils—the profligacy, the ignorance, the wickedness, the intrigues, the wars and bloodshed which cursed the world. His scheme of reform was based on the great truth that the Christian Church was not of this world, and therefore its ministers ought not to accept temporal offices and engage in temporal employments. He maintained that kings and statesmen could discharge these secular duties, and to these civil rulers should be surrendered all the enormous revenues from lands and palaces which had been flowing into the coffers of the ministry and were not necessary to the performance of their spiritual functions. His theory was that the ministry should be supported by the voluntary offerings of their flocks, and not depend upon secular occupations, which consumed their time, degraded their office, and corrupted their hearts.

It was evident that this bold Italian reformer had sat at the feet of a wiser teacher than Abelard, and had drunk from diviner fountains than those of the scholastic philosophy. With his monk's cloak around him, and with a countenance stamped with resolution, he stood in the streets of his native Brescia, and in thunder tones announced his proposed reform. His predecessors had demanded a purification of the faith of the Italian Church, but he called for a rectification of her constitution. Hence his plan was more radical and comprehensive than any that had yet been submitted. The townsmen of Arnold gathered round him. All classes were disgusted more or less with the corruptions of the clergy, and, though they did not manifest a strong desire for spiritual Christianity, they welcomed at least an external reformation. The bishop of Brescia was stunned by the sudden and daring assault of Arnold, but soon recovered when he saw his entire congregation deserting the cathedral and assembling in the market-place, and listening with applause to the eloquent preacher. He resolved to silence the brave monk.

Arnold, however, continued to denounce the prevailing evils, not only those in his own community, but the more glaring abuses of the proud hierarchy which had its center on the "Seven Hills" of Rome, and extended its circumference to the extremities of Christendom. He demanded that this apostate system, which had crowned itself



with temporal dignities and supported itself by temporal arms, should reform and return to the simplicity and purity of the first century. It was not probable that one man, even of Arnold's courage and eloquence, could produce such a reformation; but he hoped to arouse the populations of Italy to such an extent that the Vatican would be compelled to yield to the pressure. He was not alone in this crusade, men of prominence, such as Maifredus, the consul of Brescia, having sustained his movement from its origin.

The bishop of Brescia, finding that he could not successfully contend against Arnold when in the midst of his numerous followers, presented a complaint to the pope, Innocent II, who convoked a General Council in the Vatican, A. D. 1139, and summoned the offending monk to appear. He went to Rome, and though in the estimation of the hierarchy he had committed the most heinous of crimes in attacking the authority, pleasures, and riches of the priesthood, yet they must invent other pretexts on which to condemn him. It was said of him that "he was unsound in his judgment about the sacrament of the altar and infant baptism." Another suspicious circumstance was the heresy of Abelard, his teacher. St. Bernard sent to Innocent II a catalogue of the errors of Abelard, accusing him of "teaching concerning the Eucharist, that the accidents existed in the air, but not without a subject; and that when a rat doth eat the sacrament, God withdraweth whither he pleaseth, and preserves where he pleases the body of Jesus Christ." He was accused of rejecting transubstantiation and baptismal regeneration, and was condemned to perpetual silence and banishment from Italy until permitted to return by the pope.

After leaving his native land, and passing the Alps, he proceeded to France, where he met an old fellow-student, the papal legate, Guido, afterward Pope Celestinus II; but he found in Bernard of Clairvaux an unrelenting adversary, who compelled him to seek refuge in Zurich, and then in Constance about A. D. 1140. Otho says, "Arnold settled himself in a place of Germany called Turego, or Zurich, belonging to the diocese of Constance, where he continued to disseminate his doctrine," the seeds of which no doubt vegetated until the times of Zwinglius. He preached against the abuses of the clergy, and had many favorable hearers. But Bernard traced him there also, and caused the bishop of Constance to banish him.

Having been informed of the death of Innocent II, which occurred A. D. 1143, Arnold returned to Rome in the beginning of the pontificate of Eugenius III (A. D. 1144-45). It may appear strange that

a man under the condemnation of a pope and council should deliberately march into the gates of Rome, and defy the power of the Vatican, or, as Gibbon calls it, "the desperate measure of erecting his standard in Rome itself, in the face of the successor of St. Peter." But this action of Arnold was not as desperate then as it would have been at other times. The Italy of those days was perhaps the least papal of all the countries of Europe. In speaking of the fifteenth century, M'Crie says: "The Italians could not, indeed, be said to feel at this period a superstitious devotion to the See of Rome. This did not originally form a discriminating feature of their national character; it was superinduced, and the formation of it can be distinctly traced to cases which produced their full effect subsequently to the era of the Reformation. The republics of Italy in the Middle Ages gave many proofs of religious independence, and singly braved the menaces and excommunications of the Vatican at a time when all Europe trembled at the sound of its thunder." This remark is equally applicable to Italy in the twelfth century. Sedition and tumult were common at the gate of the Vatican. Indeed, in no city did rebellion so often break out as in Rome, and no rulers were so ignominiously and frequently driven from their capital as the popes.

When Arnold entered Rome he found it in the midst of revolution. Lucius II had died of the wounds received in a popular affray, and Eugenius III, a disciple of Bernard, succeeded him in the papal chair, but was driven away from the city by the people and the senate. Arnold put himself at the head of the insurrection, and endeavored to direct the agitation in a wholesome channel. With burning eloquence he portrayed the humble and holy lives of the first Christian bishops, and the sufferings of the first Christian martyrs. He urged upon the Romans to arise and unite with him in the effort to restore the glorious times of the past. The primitive simplicity and virtue that once characterized the clergy of Italy would return when the wealth that burdened them was taken away. The buyers and sellers who had entered the Temple must be expelled. This courageous monk insisted that there should be a separation between the temporal and spiritual jurisdiction, rendering unto the pope the things of the pope, even the government of the Church, and to the emperor the things of the emperor, namely, the government of the state. He believed that the ancient flame of liberty might be revived from its ashes, and the bright form of a pure Christianity cleansed from its corruptions. In glowing terms he described the noble achievements of the patriots and heroes of classic ages, and declared that such

lofty characters and illustrious deeds might again shine upon Italy. Rome could become once more the capital of the world. "He propounded to the multitude," says Bishop Otho, "the examples of the ancient Romans, who, by the maturity of their senators' counsels, and the value and integrity of their youth, made the whole world their own. Wherefore he persuaded them to rebuild the capitol, to restore the dignity of the senate, to reform the order of knights. He maintained that nothing of the government of the city did belong to the pope, who ought to content himself only with his ecclesiastical." Thus the monk of Brescia demanded the separation of the spiritual from the temporal under the very shadow of the Vatican.

The multitude in Rome hurried on to excesses which Arnold probably had never contemplated. The houses of the cardinals and nobles were attacked, and the plunder distributed among the revolutionists. Arnold, however, still remained poor; he really despised wealth, and his morals were irreproachable. For about ten years, A. D. 1145-55, he continued to prosecute his mission in Rome, which was in a state of agitation little differing from anarchy; at war with the popes and the people of Tibur, and at variance within itself. Bernard, in his epistles, draws a fearful picture of the state of the city at that time. The pontifical chair was repeatedly emptied. The popes of that era were short-lived. They seldom resided in Rome, but more frequently went to Viterbo, or retired to a foreign country. When they ventured within the walls of the city, they intrusted their personal safety rather to the gates and bars of their stronghold of St. Angelo than to the loyalty of their subjects. Eugenius III died, A. D. 1153, and his successor, Anastasius IV, followed him to the grave shortly after. Arnold's influence was great, and his party numerous. If the Romans had possessed virtue enough during these ten favorable years, when the city was in their hands, a movement might have been inaugurated which would have produced important results for the cause of liberty and the Gospel. Arnold labored in vain to recall a spirit that was fled for centuries. Rome was a sepulcher. Her population could be stirred into tumult, not awakened into life.

The golden opportunity passed. Then came Adrian IV, who was elected pope A. D. 1154, and was the only Englishman who ever ascended the throne of the Vatican. He was a man of more determined spirit than his predecessors. A cardinal having been attacked and seriously wounded in the streets of Rome, Adrian resorted to the bold measure of excommunicating the first city in Christendom, a thing without a precedent. The Romans, who had set at



naught the temporal power of the pope, trembled before his spiritual authority. In order to be reconciled to the pontiff they exiled Arnold, who took refuge among some friendly nobles in Campania. The portals of the churches, to them the gates of heaven, were again opened to the penitent citizens. But the banishment of Arnold did not appease the anger of Adrian, who bargained with Frederic Barbarossa, then a visitor in Rome soliciting from the pope coronation as emperor, that the monk should be arrested. Arnold was seized, sent to Rome under a strong escort, and, after being strangled, his body was burned and the ashes thrown into the Tiber "to prevent the foolish rabble from expressing any veneration for his dust." This indicated that his followers in Rome were numerous to the last. But they could not resist the tide of iniquity that seemed to increase every day. Alexander III, Adrian's successor, died A. D. 1181, and he was followed by Lucius III, whose reign closed A. D. 1185. Urban III then assumed the reins, but yielded them to Celestine III, A. D. 1187.

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

### *THE FRANCISCANS AND DOMINICANS.*

THE religious condition of Italy in the thirteenth century did not indicate any tendency toward reform. Indeed, the absurd and degrading superstitions which characterized the practice of the Romish Church rather increased than diminished. There were many causes which concurred to render still darker that cloud which concealed from the world the divine light of a genuine Christianity. The Roman pontiffs resisted every effort to limit their authority or to encroach upon their prerogatives; and the theologians, by their intricate distinctions, obscured the plain truths of religion. The public mind was prepared to accept almost any superstition or usurpation. In the fourth Lateran Council, which was held by Innocent III, A. D. 1215, and composed of an immense number of ecclesiastics and ambassadors from almost every court in Christendom, without condescending to enter into any consultation, he produced seventy canons, already prepared, which were read to the assembly, who submissively subscribed the decrees; in which, however, they had the consolation to find their own powers extended and confirmed. The first canon contained a confession of faith, in which the

opinion, which is still maintained by the Romish Church, respecting the eucharist, was pronounced by Innocent to be the only true and orthodox account of the Lord's-supper; and he had the honor of establishing the use of the term *transubstantiation*, which was hitherto almost unknown. Innocent III had also the credit of instituting by his own authority, among the duties prescribed by the divine laws, that of *auricular confession* to a priest—a confession which implied not only a general acknowledgment, but also a particular enumeration of the sins and follies of the penitent.

The thirteenth century was further distinguished by the institution of two of the most celebrated orders of monks which have ever misled or disturbed the world—the Franciscans and Dominicans. The professed object of these orders was to recover, by means of their humility, poverty, and apostolic zeal, the credit which had been lost to the Church in Italy and elsewhere through the pride, wealth, and indolence of the elder monks. It was also claimed that the Church was entering upon a new era, and therefore demanded new services. Preachers were needed to confute the heretics, and this want of the Church was kept in view in the constitution of the newly created orders. The founders of both were very unlike in their natural disposition and temper.

St. Francis, the founder of the Franciscans—*Fratres Minores* (Younger Brethren), or Minores, as he called them, to signify their humility—was born at Assisi, in Umbria, Italy, A. D. 1182. His father was a rich merchant of that town. The historians of St. Francis relate that certain signs accompanied his birth, which prognosticated his future greatness. His mother, when about to be confined, appeared to be dying. For many days previous she had experienced severe and prolonged pains. At that crisis an angel, in the garb of a pilgrim, appeared at her door and demanded alms. The charity sought was instantly bestowed, and the grateful pilgrim proceeded to tell the inmates what they must do in order that the lady of the mansion might become the joyful mother of a son. She must be carried out in her couch and laid in the stable. The pilgrim's instructions were followed, the pains of labor were now speedily ended, and the child first beheld the light among the "beasts." "This was the first prerogative," remarks one of his historians, "in which St. Francis resembled Jesus Christ—he was born in a stable." Despite this augury recorded by Francesco Fontana, another writer, D'Emillianne, says that Francis grew up "a debauched youth, and, having robbed his father, was disinherited; but he

seemed not to be very much troubled at it." He was seized with a malignant fever, which produced a frenzy that appears never to have wholly left him. When stricken down with disease he was a gay spendthrift and profligate, but when he arose from his bed of sickness he was entirely engrossed with the idea that all holiness and virtue consisted in poverty. His subsequent conduct was in harmony with his belief. He gave away all his property; he exchanged garments with a beggar whom he met on the highway, and wandered about the country around his native town of Assisi. Emaciated, squalid, covered with rags, and dirt, and his eyes burning with a strange fire, he was followed by a crowd of boys, who believed him to be a madman, and accordingly hooted at him. Having secured seven disciples, he proceeded to Rome to present his plan to the pope. When he arrived there he found Innocent III promenading on the terrace of the Lateran palace.

What a scene for an artist! The haughtiest of the pontiffs—who, like another Jove, had but to nod, and kings were tumbled from their thrones, and nations were smitten down with interdict—was pacing to and fro beneath the pillared portico of his palace, revolving, doubtless, new and mightier projects to illustrate the glory and strengthen the dominion of the papal throne. His eye occasionally wanders as far as the Apennines, which rise up like a grand wall around the Campagna. The latter then lay spread out beneath him—not as now, a blackened expanse, but a magnificent garden, sparkling with villas, and gay with vineyards and olive and fig trees. While this glorious prospect was visible from the front of his palace, another very different scene in the opposite direction met the pontiff's eye. Extending from the Lateran to the Coliseum was a hideous gap covered with the fragments of what had once been palaces and temples. This unsightly spectacle marred the beauty of the pontifical city, and being a memorial of the war of investiture, would naturally call the thoughts of Innocent back to the times of Hildebrand and the fierce struggles which his zeal for the growth of the papacy had provoked in Christendom.

During the century which had elapsed since Gregory VII swayed the scepter which Innocent now held, a tide of prosperity had flowed in upon Rome. All the popes, from Gregory to Innocent, had been continuously and successfully engaged in rearing a stupendous Babel, whose height received an addition in every pontificate and in every decade. At this time the papal fabric stood complete. Indeed, it seemed impossible to conceive of a higher advance. Rome was now



more truly mistress of the world than even in the days of the Cæsars, and her influence went deeper into the heart and soul of the nations. Again, she sent forth her legates as of old, her proconsuls to govern the kingdoms that were subject to her authority; again she issued her edicts, which all the world obeyed; again kings and suppliant princes waited at her gates; again ambassadors and suitors from every part of Christendom crowded her highways. The pilgrim and the devotee came from the most distant regions to pray at her holy shrines. From her gates there flowed day and night, without intermission, streams of papal blessings to refresh the faithful throughout the world. She bestowed with a lavish hand mystic virtues and priestly offices, crosiers and palls, pardons and dispensations, relics and amulets, benedictions and anathemas; and, in return, she received tribute from all the nations. The thoughts of Innocent, no doubt, were resting on these pleasant subjects as Francis of Assisi approached him.

The eye of the pontiff is immediately arrested by the strange figure before him. Halting a few moments, Innocent surveys him more closely, and finds him in the garb of a beggar, with haggard looks and fierce eyes; yet, despite his repulsive appearance, there was something about him that indicated his determination to discharge an important duty. He seemed to say, "I come with a mission, and therefore do I venture into this presence. I am not here to beg, but to give alms to the popedom." Innocent did not then appreciate the fact; but this man in rags had come to lay at the feet of Rome greater gifts than most of the kings had it in their power to bestow. The pope, curious to know what his strange visitor had to communicate, permitted him to address him. Francis hurriedly explained the object of his mission; but Innocent, failing to comprehend the importance of the project, or doubting the ability of Francis to execute it, dismissed the enthusiast, who retired disappointed and downcast, believing that his scheme was "nipped in the bud."

The mind of the pontiff, however, had been more deeply impressed by this incident than he was aware, and while resting on his couch by night the beggar seemed again to stand before him pleading his cause. Innocent dreamed that a palm-tree suddenly sprang up at his feet and became great in stature. In a second dream he beheld the Lateran ready to fall, and Francis stretching out his hand to save it. When the pope awoke he commanded the man of Umbria to be brought before him. The cardinals were immediately convened, and, after considering the project, pronounced it

good ; and it appeared proper to Innocent and his conclave that the enthusiast who conceived the enterprise should be appointed to execute it. Accordingly, Rome gave her commission to the ragged beggar, A. D. 1215, and, armed with the pontifical sanction, authorizing him to found, arrange, and put in operation such an order as he had sketched out, Francis went forth to begin his work. The enthusiasm that burned so fiercely in his soul kindled a similar feeling in that of others. In a short time he found a dozen men who were willing to become his followers ; the dozen speedily multiplied into a hundred, and the hundred into thousands, until the increase went on at a rate of which history scarcely affords another example. Before his death St. Francis had the satisfaction of seeing five thousand of his monks assemble in his convent in Italy to hold a general chapter ; and, as each convent sent only two delegates, the convention represented two thousand five hundred convents. The solitary fanatic had become an army ; all the countries of Christendom were full of his disciples, whose every idea and object were subordinated to that of their leader, and, united together by their vow, they labored with remarkable zeal to promote the cause to which they had consecrated their lives. The Franciscans have enrolled among their number five popes and forty-five cardinals.

St. Dominic, the founder of the Dominicans, was born in Aragon, A. D. 1170. He possessed the fiery enthusiasm and intense zeal of Francis, and to these qualities he added a somewhat stern temper, cool judgment, firm will, and great acquaintance with affairs of the world. Having seen the ravages of heresy in the southern provinces of France, he desired the adoption of more effectual measures to arrest its progress. He was convinced of the futility of those splendidly equipped missions which Rome had sent forth from time to time to convert the Albigenses. He saw that these missionaries left more heretics on their departure than they had found on their arrival. Mitered dignitaries, mounted on richly caparisoned mules, were followed by a sumptuous train of priests, monks, and other attendants, who, too proud or too ignorant to preach, were only successful in dazzling the gaze of the multitude by the magnificence of their ceremonies. While this pageant most conclusively indicated the wealth of the Romish Church, it did not attest with equal conclusiveness the truth of its doctrines. Instead of bishops on palfreys, Dominic called for monks in wooden soles to preach to the heretics.

He resolved to visit Rome, and also submit his scheme to Innocent, offering to raise an army that would perambulate Europe and

promote the interests of the "Holy See." With garb as humble, and habits as austere, and speech as plain as those of the peasants they were to address, these missionaries would soon win the heretics from their errors. Another inducement presented by St. Dominic was that they would live on alms, and ask no support from the papal treasury. Innocent, however, for some reason, refused to sanction the scheme. Having so recently indorsed the Franciscans, he may have considered the one organization sufficient. But Pope Honorius was more favorable, and confirmed the project; and from beginnings equally small with those of the Franciscans the growth of the Dominicans in popularity and numbers was equally rapid.

The Dominicans were divided into two bands, each having its peculiar work. One went forth to preach, while the other was employed in exterminating those who refused to be converted. D'Emilienne calls the latter class "a troop of merciless fellows, whom he [St. Dominic] maintained to cut the throats of heretics when he was a-preaching; he called them the *militia of Jesus Christ*." By this division of labor heresy was refuted and heretics effectually silenced. So rapidly did the number of preaching friars increase that in a few years their voices were heard in almost all the cities of Europe. They were generally ignorant men; but their enthusiasm made them eloquent, and admiring crowds listened to their harangues. In the centuries before the Reformation the Franciscans and Dominicans accomplished for the papacy what the Jesuits have done for it in the centuries that have followed it.

These newly organized orders were different in some respects from those which already existed in Italy and elsewhere. The monks of the latter were recluses, who had no relation to the world which they had abandoned, and no duties to perform to it. Their world was the cell, or the inclosure within the walls of the monastery, where their whole time was presumed to be spent in prayer and meditation, thus presenting an example of austere piety for the edification of others. The Franciscans and Dominicans, on the other hand, were not confined to a particular spot. Their convents were not places of seclusion, but rather hotels or temporary abodes, where they could rest on their preaching tours. They perambulated provinces and cities, addressing the people every-where and at all times, on the Sabbath and week-days, and erecting their pulpit in the market, at the street-corner, or in the chapel. The secular or parochial clergy seldom preached, because they were too ignorant to prepare a sermon, and too indolent to deliver it, even were it written



for them. Preaching was, therefore, among the lost arts; and these pastors endeavored to instruct their flocks by ceremonial services, prayers, and litanies in a language which the people could not understand. The friars, on the contrary, visited all classes of the community, and preached to them in their own familiar tongue.

The new monastic disciples appeared in striking and favorable contrast to the old in regard to their earthly possessions. The latter were very rich, while the former were exceedingly poor, living on alms, and literally begging as a means of support. The name of *mendicants* was therefore applied to them, and they accepted it, saying that the profession was ancient and holy because Christ and apostles were mendicants. The early monks had taken the vow of poverty; and, though they could not, as individuals, possess property, yet in their corporate capacity they might and did possess it to an enormous amount. But the Franciscans and Dominicans, individually and collectively, were disqualified by their vow from holding any property whatever. They were not allowed to own a penny, and their profession of poverty was confirmed by their plain garb and frugal diet. With a great reputation for sanctity, which gave them a proportionate influence among all classes, they seemed to be exactly adapted to the age in which they appeared and to the work which was committed to them. They were truly the household troops of the Vatican, or the regular soldiers of the pope, sent throughout Christendom in two bands, yet constituting one united army, which became stronger every day, and which, having nothing to resist its progress, marched victoriously forward against heresy, and extended the fame and dominion of the papal See.

The habit or dress of these friars consisted of a great hood, a scapulary, a knotted girdle, and a wide cope. The Dominicans wore a white gown of coarse woollen cloth, which was girded by a broad sash. The Franciscans were clad with a similar gown, though brown in color, which was tied with a cord of three knots, which, "they say," writes D'Emillianne, "hath virtue to heal the sick, to chase away the devil, and all dangerous temptations, and serve what turn they please." These gowns contained numerous and capacious pouches in which these begging friars deposited amulets, rosaries, little images, square pieces of papers, scraps of bread and cheese, morsels of flesh, and other victuals. But while their humble dress and scanty fare were outward signs of poverty, they also served as a cloak to conceal the secret accumulation of wealth. The more discriminating friars could discover a distinction between *proprietors* and

*stewards.* As the original constitution of the orders remained unaltered, no member could be a proprietor; but any one might be a steward and possess wealth to any amount, provided it should be dispensed for the benefit of the order. This ingenious distinction was sanctioned by the "Constitution," issued by Nicholas III, in 1279, in which the rule of St. Francis is explained and confirmed. The gates of their convents, which had been so effectually closed by a most stringent vow of poverty, as yet unrepealed, were unlocked by this new interpretation, and immediately a stream of gold, emanating from their devoted admirers, began to flow into the coffers of the "mendicants." They refused to become landed proprietors, but the splendor of their edifices surpassed those of the Benedictines and Augustinians. In Italy and other countries they had churches in which the skill of the architect and the genius of the painter were fully displayed, and their convents and cloisters were worthy to have been the habitations of monarchs. The writer in traveling from Perugia to Terni beheld the convent of St. Francis d'Assisi, which stands on the lower slope of the Apennines, overlooking the vale of the Clitumnus. It is in magnificence a palace, and in size it is almost a small town. In it is the tomb of the man who died under a borrowed cloak.

This wealth produced indolence, insolence, a corruption of manners, and a grievous abuse of those vast privileges and powers which the papal see conferred upon these monastic institutions. Their prodigious increase in riches was followed by a corresponding declension, which was even more rapid than former ages had witnessed in the Benedictines and Augustinians.

During the thirteenth century, amid the prevailing darkness and superstition, the study of literature and philosophy engaged the attention of a few individuals in Italy. Among the prominent authors were Giuncelli, Ghislieri, Fabricio, Onesto, d'Arezzo, da Lucca, Pisano, Sanese, and Fiorentino. Brunetto Latini was the teacher of Dante and the author of *Il Tesoro*, written first in French and afterwards translated into Italian, in which he aimed to give a cyclopædic view of the state of knowledge at that time. Guido Cavalcanti, one of the best friends of Dante, was styled by Benvenuto da Imola, the second eye of Italian literature, of which Dante was the first. He was a philosophic poet, possessed a deep knowledge of the human heart, and was accustomed to moral reflections. The first book in Italian prose was the *Chronica*, by Matteo Spinello, a Neapolitan, relating the history of events from A. D. 1247 to A. D. 1268. The honor of writ-

ing history in a neat style belongs also to Ricordano Malespini, a Florentine, who died about A. D. 1281. Pietro Crescenzi, of Bologna, wrote several scientific works. At that time the scholastic divinity and the philosophy and logic of Aristotle pervaded the schools of Italy. Thomas Aquinas, who was born A. D. 1224, stood at the head of these sciences. He was descended from the ancient kings of Sicily, had considerable enthusiasm, and, though a strong Roman Catholic, would not accept the archbishopric of Naples. He took the habit of the Dominicans, A. D. 1241, and, after visiting Paris and lecturing to admiring audiences, returned to Italy, became divinity professor to several universities, and at last settled at Naples, where he led a chaste and devout life. He was called the angelical, and Bonaventura, another professor, the seraphic, doctor.

---

## CHAPTER IX.

### *THE GUELF AND GHIBELINES.*

THE political history of Italy during the thirteenth century presents the sad spectacle of a people comparatively free, but so weakened by hostile factions that they could not resist accepting despotic rule. After the election of Frederick II as emperor of Germany a series of contests occurred during his minority, from A. D. 1198 to A. D. 1216. Pope Innocent III desired to consolidate a separate principality for the "Holy See" in the center of Italy. The real or spurious donations of Constantine, Pepin, Charlemagne, and Louis had given rise to a perpetual claim on the part of the popes to very extensive dominions; but little of this had been effectuated, and in Rome itself they were thwarted by the prefect, an officer who swore fidelity to the emperor, and by the insubordinate spirit of the people. The cities contiguous to Rome were not ruled by the capital, and were probably as much self-governed as those of Lombardy. In reading of the desperate wars between Rome and Tibur or Tusculum, neither of which was subjugated until the latter part of the twelfth century, we are reminded of the earliest days of the republic. The popes pretended also to have a claim to the duchy of Spoleto, the march of Ancona, and what had been the exarchate of Ravenna. In a former age the famous Countess Matilda, to whose zealous protection Gregory VII had been indebted during his long dispute



with the emperor, Henry IV, granted the reversion of all her possessions to the "Holy See," first in the life-time of Gregory, and again under the pontificate of Pascal III. These were very extensive and held by different titles. She certainly could not dispose of her vast imperial fiefs—Mantua, Modena, and Tuscany. "The duchy of Spoleto and march of Ancona," says Hallam, "were supposed to rest upon a different footing. I confess myself not distinctly to comprehend the nature of this part of her succession. These had been formerly among the great fiefs of the kingdom of Italy. But if I understand it rightly they had tacitly ceased to be subject to the emperors some years before they were seized by Godfrey, of Lorraine, father-in-law and step-father of Matilda. To his son, her husband, she succeeded in the possession of those countries. They are commonly considered as her allodial or patrimonial property; yet it is not easy to see how, being herself a subject of the empire, she could transfer even her allodial estates from its sovereignty. Nor, on the other hand, can it apparently be maintained that she was lawful sovereign of countries which had not long since been imperial fiefs, and the suzerainty over which had never been renounced. The original title of the "Holy See," therefore, does not seem incontestable even as to this part of Matilda's donation. But I state with hesitation a difficulty to which the authors I have consulted do not advert. It is certain, however, that the emperors kept possession of the whole during the twelfth century; and treated both Spoleto and Ancona as parts of the empire, notwithstanding continual remonstrances from the Roman pontiffs."

At the negotiations of Venice, A. D. 1177, Frederick Barbarossa promised to restore the patrimony of Matilda in fifteen years; but at the close of that period Henry IV was not disposed to execute this arrangement, and granted the county in fief to some of his German followers. His death resulted in producing a condition of affairs favorable to Innocent III. The infant king of Sicily had been intrusted by Constance to his guardianship. The princes of Germany engaged in a civil war growing out of the double election of Philip, brother of Henry VI, and of Otho, duke of Brunswick, entirely overlooked the claims of young Frederick. As neither party was able to enter Italy, the imperial throne was vacant for several years; but the death of Philip removing one competitor, Otho IV, whom the pope had constantly favored, was crowned emperor. During this interval the Italians had no superior; and, of course, Innocent III embraced the opportunity to maintain the pretensions of the "Holy

See," resting his claims upon a questionable document called the will of Henry VI, which was said to have been found among the baggage of Marquard, one of the German soldiers who had been invested with fiefs by the late emperor. In the twelfth century the cities of the ecclesiastical state had their own municipal government, like those of Lombardy; but they were far less able to assert a complete independence. They gladly, therefore, accepted the protection of the "Holy See," which promised to secure them from Marquard and other rapacious partisans without disturbing their internal regulations. Thus Innocent III obtained possession of the duchy of Spoleto and march of Ancona; but he was not sufficiently strong constantly to rule such extensive territories, and some years afterward adopted the wise course of granting Ancona in fief to the marquis of Este. The pontiff at the same time was careful to maintain his authority at home, and compelled the prefect of Rome to swear allegiance to him, thus ending the regular imperial rule over that city and abridging the privileges of its citizens. This is the proper era of that temporal sovereignty which the bishops of Rome possessed over their own city, though various causes prevented it, for nearly three centuries, from becoming unquestioned and unlimited.

It was not difficult now to understand the policy of Rome, which was more clearly defined than ever. She resolved to preserve what she had thus suddenly gained, rather by opportunity than by strength, and therefore endeavored to weaken the imperial power, and, consequently, to maintain the freedom of the Italian republics. Formerly a marquis of the emperor's appointment ruled Tuscany, though her cities were flourishing, and within themselves independent. Desiring to imitate the Lombard confederacy, and strongly urged by Innocent III, they organized a similar league for the preservation of their rights. Pisa, which was always strongly attached to the empire, did not enter into the combination. The influence of the pope was far more strongly manifested in this league than in that of Lombardy. The latter had been an ally of Alexander III, and was formed during the height of his dispute with Frederick; yet so little did this ecclesiastical quarrel intrude itself into the struggles for liberty that it is not alluded to in the act of their confederacy. Muratori says that the Tuscan union was expressly established "for the honor and aggrandizement of the apostolic see. The members bound themselves to defend the possessions and rights of the Church, and not to acknowledge any king or emperor without the approbation of the supreme pontiff." The Tuscans, therefore, were more strongly

attached to the Church party than to the Lombards, whose principle was animosity towards the house of Swabia. Hence, when Innocent III subsequently supported Frederick II against the emperor, Otho IV, the Milanese and their allies espoused the imperial cause, but the Tuscans continued to favor the pope.

During the wars between Frederick Barbarossa and Milan the cities of Lombardy were divided, and a large number of them were firmly attached to the imperial party. History does not inform us, but it is probable that even at this early period the citizens did not agree upon questions of public policy, and therefore a particular city adhered to the emperor, or to the Lombard league, according as one faction or another controlled its councils. The existence of jealousies for a long time between the different classes, and which were only suspended by the termination of the national struggle at Constance, produced new modifications of interests, and new relations towards the empire. About A. D. 1200, or perhaps a little later, the two leading parties which divided the cities of Lombardy were distinguished by the celebrated names of Guelfs and Ghibelines, the former supporting the papal faction, and the latter, the imperial. These appellations, derived from Germany, where they had been the rallying word of party for more than half a century, directed and invigorated the prejudices of these cities, whose mutual animosity had not as yet been violently manifested. The Guelfs took their name from a very illustrious family, several of whom had successively been dukes of Bavaria, in the tenth and eleventh centuries. The heiress of the last of these intermarried with a younger son of the house of Este, a noble family settled near Padua, and possessed of great estates on each bank of the Lower Po. They gave birth to a second line of Guelfs, from whom the royal house of Brunswick is descended. The name of Ghibeline is derived from a village in Franconia, whence Conrad the Salic came, the progenitor, through females, of the Swabian emperors. At the election of Lothaire, A. D. 1125, they were disappointed of what they considered almost an hereditary possession; and at this time an hostility appears to have commenced between them and the house of Guelf, who were nearly related to Lothaire. Henry the Proud, and Henry the Lion, representatives of the latter family, were frequently persecuted by the Swabian emperors: but their fortunes belong to the history of Germany. Meanwhile the elder branch, though not reserved for such glorious destinies as the Guelfs, continued to flourish in Italy. The marquises of Este were by far the most powerful nobles in Eastern Lombardy, and about the end of the



twelfth century began to be considered as heads of the Church party in their neighborhood. Sismondi states that they were frequently chosen to the office of podestà, or chief magistrate, by the cities of Romagna, and the people of Ferrara, A. D. 1208, set the fatal example of sacrificing their freedom for tranquillity, by electing Azzo VII, marquis of Este, as their lord, or sovereign.

Otho IV, the son of Henry the Lion, and, consequently, the head of the Guelfs, on obtaining the imperial crown, diverted the prejudices of Italian factions out of their usual channel. In a short time he and Pope Innocent III were engaged in a bitter controversy, as the latter was hostile to the empire, whoever might be its ruler. Hatred of the house of Swabia, however, prevailed more than jealousy of the imperial prerogatives. In Milan, and generally in the cities which had belonged to the Lombard league against Frederick I, the people adhered to names rather than principles, and supported a Guelf emperor even against the pope. From this period every city, and almost every citizen, gloried in one of these barbarous denominations. The imperial party ruled several cities through hatred of their neighbors, who espoused that of the Church. Thus the inveterate feuds between Pisa and Florence, Modena and Bologna, Cremona and Milan divided them into opposite factions. But there was in every one of these a strong party against that which prevailed, and consequently a Guelf city frequently became Ghibeline, or conversely, according to the fluctuation of the time.

This change in the politics of the Guelf party lasted only during the reign of Otho IV. When the heir of the house of Swabia had reached manhood, Innocent, who, though his guardian, had taken little care of his interests as long as he flattered himself with the hope of finding a Guelf emperor obedient, placed the young Frederick at the head of an opposition, composed of cities always attached to his family and of such as implicitly followed the see of Rome. He was successful to a considerable extent, both in Italy and Germany, and after the death of Otho received the imperial crown. But he could no longer obtain assistance from the pope who conferred it. Innocent died, and Honorius III, his successor, beheld with apprehension the vast power of Frederick supported in Lombardy by a faction which balanced that of the Church, and menaced the ecclesiastical territories on the other side by the possession of Naples and Sicily. This kingdom, feudatory to Rome, and long her firmest ally, was thrown into the hands of her most dangerous enemy by a fatal connection, which she could not prevent. Hence the temporal dominion which Inno-

cent III labored so earnestly to establish, became a very precarious possession, exposed on each side to the attacks of a power that had legitimate pretensions to almost every province composing it.

According to a custom observed by every pope, to urge princes into a crusade for the recovery of Palestine, Honorius III exacted a vow from Frederick, before he conferred upon him the imperial crown, that he would undertake a similar mission. Frederick evidently was not sincere, because he endeavored afterward to evade the engagement. He became by marriage nominal king of Jerusalem; but his excellent judgment was not captivated with so barren a prospect, and at length his delay in the performance of his vow provoked Gregory IX to issue against him a sentence of excommunication. Frederick could not disregard such a thunder-bolt, and sailed the next year for Palestine. Believing that he had not committed a crime, he refused to solicit absolution, and thereby excited the court of Rome to still greater indignation against him, whom they regarded as too profane to conduct a crusade. Upon the arrival of Frederick in Palestine he received intelligence that the papal troops had invaded the kingdom of Naples. He could have abandoned the Holy Land without accomplishing any thing advantageous; but he made a treaty with the Saracens, which, though not as satisfactory as under all the circumstances might have been expected, served as a pretext for new calumnies against him in Europe. He repelled the charge of irreligion, so easily and successfully propagated, by issuing persecuting edicts against heresy that do not honor his memory and availed him little at the time. He ruled his Neapolitan dominions with great rigor, which, perhaps, was rendered necessary by the levity and insubordination of the inhabitants, but which resulted, through the artful representations of Honorius and Gregory, in alarming and alienating the Italian republics.

Since the peace of Constance a new generation had risen up in Lombardy, and the prerogatives reserved by that treaty to the empire were so seldom called into action that few cities were disposed to recollect their existence. They called themselves Guelfs or Ghibelines, according to habit, and out of their mutual opposition, but without much reference to the empire. Those of the former party, and especially Milan, remained hostile to the house of Swabia. If established usage creates a right, Frederick II was entitled to the sovereignty of Italy; but the Milanese would never acknowledge him, nor permit his coronation at Monza, according to ancient ceremony, with the iron crown of the Lombard kings. The pope

labored to the extent of his power to foment this disaffected spirit, and encouraged the Lombard cities to renew their former league. While this was in accordance with a provision in the treaty of Constance, it was manifestly antagonistic to Frederick, and may be considered as the commencement of a second contest between the republican cities of Lombardy and the empire. But there was a striking difference between this and the former confederacy against Frederick Barbarossa. Almost every city in the league, formed A. D. 1167, seemed to forget all smaller animosities in the great cause of defending the national privileges, and contributed its share of effort to sustain that perilous conflict. The existence of even a transient unanimity in a people so distracted by internal faction as the Lombards is the strongest evidence of the justice of their cause. Their war against the second Frederick, sixty years afterward, had less of provocation and less of public spirit. It was, in fact, a party struggle of Guelf and Ghibeline cities, to which the names of the Church and the empire gave more of dignity and consistence.

In the thirteenth century the republics of Italy were so numerous and independent, and their revolutions so frequent, that it is difficult to give the history of each in regular order. For convenience, therefore, they may be divided into four clusters or constellations; not, indeed, unconnected one with another, yet each having its own center of motion and its own boundaries. The first of these we may suppose formed of the cities in central Lombardy, between the Sessia and the Adige, the Alps and the Ligurian mountains; it comprehends Milan, Cremona, Pavia, Brescia, Bergamo, Parma, Piacenza, Mantua, Lodi, Alessandria, and several others less distinguished. These were the original seats of Italian liberty and the principal leaders in the wars of the elder Frederick. Milan was at the head of this cluster of cities, and through her influence the Guelf party obtained the ascendancy; she had, since the treaty of Constance, rendered Lodi and Pavia almost her subjects, and was in close union with Brescia and Piacenza. Parma and Cremona, however, were unshaken defenders of the empire. In the second class we may place the cities of the march of Verona between the Adige and the frontiers of Germany. Of these there were but four worth mentioning: Verona, Viacenza, Padua, and Treviso. The citizens of all the four were inclined to the Guelf interests; but a powerful body of rural nobility, who had never been compelled, like those upon the Upper Po, to abandon their fortresses in the mountainous country or reside within the walls, connected themselves with the opposite denom-



ination. Sismondi says that some of them had great authority in the civil feuds of these four republics; and especially two brothers, Eccelino and Alberic da Romano, of a rich and distinguished family, celebrated for its devotion to the empire. The former by remarkable vigor and decision of character, by dissimulation and violation of oaths, by the intimidating effects of almost unparalleled cruelty, became, after some years, the absolute master of three cities—Padua, Verona, and Vicenza; and during the continuance of his tyranny the Guelf party was entirely everthrown beyond the Alps. His cruelties excited universal horror, even in an age when inhumanity to enemies was as common as fear and revenge could make it. All over Italy beggars generally resorted to the trick of pretending that the Veronese tyrant had deprived them of their eyes or limbs. “There is hardly an instance in European history,” says Hallam, “of so sanguinary a government subsisting for more than twenty years.” The crimes of Eccelino are well authenticated by the testimony of several contemporary writers, who enter into great details. Sismondi is more full than any of the moderns. Another cluster was composed of the cities in Romagna; Bologna, Imola, Faenza, Ferrara, and several others. Of these Bologna was far the most powerful, and as no city was more steadily and earnestly devoted to the interests of the Church, the Guelfs usually predominated in this class—a result to which the influence of the house of Este largely contributed. Modena, though not geographically within the limits of this division, may be classed along with it from her constant wars with Bologna. A fourth class will comprehend the whole of Tuscany, separated almost entirely from the politics of Lombardy and Romagna. Florence was at the head of the Guelf cities in this province, Pisa, the Ghibeline. As we have already stated, the Tuscan union was formed by Innocent III, and was strongly in favor of the papal party; but gradually the Ghibeline acquired its share of influence, and the cities of Sienna, Arezzo, and Lucca shifted their policy according to external circumstances or the fluctuations of their internal factions. The petty cities in the region of Spoleto and Ancona hardly perhaps deserve the name of republics; and Genoa does not readily fall into any of our four classes, unless her wars with Pisa may be thought to connect her with Tuscany. In this division Piedmont has not been mentioned, because no important events have been transmitted connecting it with the republics already named. It was at this time divided between the counts of Savoy and marquises of Montferrat. But Asti, Chieri, and Turin,

especially the two former, appear to have had a republican form of government. They were, however, not absolutely independent. The only Piedmontese city that can properly be considered as a separate state, in the thirteenth century, was Vercelli; and even there the bishop seems to have possessed a sort of temporal sovereignty.

The Guelf cities, after several years of transient hostilities and precarious treaties between the Lombard confederacy and Frederick II, engaged in a regular and protracted war with him, or more properly with their Ghibeline adversaries. This contest is not deserving of a detailed historical record. Neither party ever obtained such decisive advantages as had alternately belonged to Frederick Barbarossa and Lombardy during the preceding century. The emperor defeated the Milanese at Corte Nuova, A. D. 1237; but the next year this victory was balanced by his unsuccessful siege of Brescia. Assisted by the Pisans, he gained a great naval triumph over the Genoese fleet, A. D. 1241; but he was compelled to abandon the blockade of Parma, which had renounced the Ghibeline cause, A. D. 1248. The tedious struggle, however, ultimately exhausted the strength of the house of Swabia; the Ghibelines of Italy had their vicissitudes of success, but their country, and even themselves, lost more and more of the ancient connection with Germany. In this resistance to Frederick II the Lombards received the constant support of Gregory IX and his successor, Innocent IV; and the Guelf party and the Church were used as synonymous terms. The hatred of these pontiffs to the house of Swabia was unquenchable; their animosity could not be mitigated by any concessions, and they would not favor any reconciliation.

Frederick II was not without faults, but it is impossible for any one not blindly devoted to the papacy to deny that he was iniquitously proscribed by her unprincipled ambition. This is especially exhibited in the contest between him and Gregory IX. No sooner was the latter placed in the papal chair than, contrary to all justice and order, he excommunicated the emperor for deferring his expedition against the Saracens to another year, though that delay was manifestly owing to a fit of sickness which seized that prince when he was ready to embark for Palestine. At length the emperor arrived in the Holy Land, A. D. 1228, and the insidious pontiff, taking advantage of his absence, made war upon his dominions and used his utmost efforts to arm against him all the European powers. When Frederick heard of these violent and perfidious proceedings he returned to Europe, A. D. 1229, defeated the papal army, retook

the places he had lost in Sicily and Italy, and in the following year made his peace with the pontiff, from whom he received a public and solemn absolution. But this peace was only temporary. The emperor's real crime was the inheritance of his ancestors and the name of the house of Swabia, and consequently Gregory would not permit him to enjoy a tranquil reign. On the other hand, Frederick could not tolerate the imperious temper and insolent proceedings of Gregory. He, therefore, resolved to punish the pontiff; and, as we have already stated, he distressed the cities of Lombardy which were in alliance with the Roman See, seized upon the island of Sardinia, which Gregory considered as a part of his spiritual patrimony, and erected it into a kingdom for his son Entius. These, with other measures equally provoking to the avarice and ambition of Gregory, drew the thunder of the Vatican afresh upon the emperor's head, and he was publicly excommunicated, A. D. 1239, with all the circumstances of severity which vindictive rage could invent, accused of the most flagitious crimes and the most impious blasphemies. The exasperated pontiff even sent a copy of these charges to all the courts of Europe. The emperor, on the other hand, defended his injured reputation by solemn declarations in writing, while, by his victorious arms, he avenged himself of his adversaries, maintained his ground, and reduced the pontiff to the greatest distress.

The emperor found himself able to enter the States of the Church, A. D. 1239, and march upon Rome. In that city his claims were so strongly and loudly advocated that Pope Gregory, perceiving his danger, marched in procession through the streets, preceded by the wood of the true cross and the heads of St. Peter and St. Paul, and called on the multitude to take up arms for the Church. This imposing appeal to superstitious enthusiasm was successful. A crusade was preached against Frederick; and the same indulgences in the line of present license to sin and future deliverance from purgatorial fires were extended to the new crusaders as were formerly confined to warriors in the Holy Land. Even the priests enrolled themselves among the combatants; and in a single day the pontiff was at the head of an army strong enough to resist all the forces of the emperor. Frederick retired into Apulia; but he was indignant at the preaching of a crusade against himself, as if he had been an open enemy of religion, which he revenged by ordering all the prisoners who wore the sign of the cross to be put to death. To extricate himself from these difficulties, and to assist his own authority by the voice of the Church, Gregory summoned a general council,



and directed all bishops to assemble in Rome at Easter, A. D. 1241. His main purpose was to depose the emperor by the unanimous suffrages of the cardinals and prelates; and Frederick, anticipating an unfavorable decision from such a council, sent letters to all the sovereigns of Europe protesting against it. Not content with mere protests, he resolved to capture the French bishops, who had sailed from Nice, convoyed by a powerful Genoese fleet. By the orders of Frederick, they were met off the island of Meliora by the fleets of Sicily and Pisa. A bloody battle was fought, in which the Pisans were completely victorious. Four thousand Genoese were sent prisoners to Sicily, and the unfortunate cardinals and bishops were brought to Pisa. Their treasures were seized, and the reverend fathers themselves were imprisoned and fettered; but because of their sacred calling and lofty rank they were closely confined in the chapter-house of the cathedral, and their chains were chains of silver. It is not certain, however, that the illustrious captives derived any comfort from this fact. The amount of treasure obtained was so enormous that it was divided among the Pisans and Sicilians by bushels, reminding us of the bushel of gold rings gathered from the soldiers after the battle of Cannæ. One prominent result of this sea-fight was the infliction of mortification and grief upon the venerable pope. This disappointment, attended with others which gave an unhappy turn to his affairs and blasted his most promising expectations, dejected and consumed the despairing pontiff, and contributed probably to his death, which occurred within three months, A. D. 1241.

Geoffry, bishop of Milan, who succeeded Gregory IX, under the title of Celestine IV, died before his consecration, and for about two years the papal chair was vacant. During this interregnum there was much wrangling and fighting between the aristocrats and plebeians in many of the Italian cities. In Milan a dispute arose with respect to the election of an archbishop; and the chapter agreed to refer the question to the decision of one "Brother Leo," a holy man, who was represented to be entirely free from terrestrial ambition. Brother Leo accepted the responsibility; but after long deliberation he announced that he could think of no one so fit to fill the office as himself, and forthwith, to the astonishment and disgust of both parties, stepped into the position.

Senibald, one of the counts of Fiesque, was raised to the pontificate, A. D. 1243, and assumed the title of Innocent IV. His elevation offered at first a prospect of peace, as he had formerly been

attached to the interests of the emperor; and accordingly conferences were opened, and a reconciliation was proposed. But the terms offered by the new pope were too imperious and extravagant not to be rejected with indignation by the emperor. After these futile attempts at negotiation, Innocent, affecting a dread of personal violence from Frederick, and not esteeming himself safe in any part of Italy, left his palace at night in disguise, and, departing from Genoa, the place of his birth, succeeded in reaching Lyons safely, A. D. 1244. In the following year he there convened the general council, which the capture of the French bishops a few years before had postponed. The emperor was represented by Peter de Vencis and Thaddæus de Suessa. At the opening of proceedings Thaddæus offered on his master's part, if he might be reconciled to the Holy Father, to recall the Greek Empire to the unity of the Romish Church, to undertake a new crusade at his own expense, and to restore to the Church the possessions he had taken from it—the fulfillment of these provisions to be guaranteed by the kings of France and England. But Frederick had sinned too deeply to be forgiven. Innocent adroitly avoided the settlement. Said he: "I shall not accept his offer; for, did he fail in the fulfillment of his contract (as I have not the slightest doubt he would), I should have to fall back on his securities; and then the Church would have three enemies of unequalled power instead of one."

At that time Lyons was an imperial city; but Frederick could no longer retain his supremacy over it. In this assembly, where one hundred and forty prelates appeared, the question whether Frederick ought to be deposed was solemnly discussed. He submitted to defend himself by his advocates; and the pope, in the presence, though without formally collecting the suffrages, of the council, pronounced a sentence by which Frederick's excommunication was renewed, the empire and all his kingdoms taken away, and all his subjects absolved from their fidelity. Matthew Paris says, "The pope and the prelates sitting round him in council, with lighted tapers thundered forth dreadful sentence against the Emperor Frederick, whilst his agents retreated in confusion." As soon as these proceedings were reported to their object he burst into a violent rage. "Has the pope, then, deprived me of my crown?" he shouted. "Bring me my jewel-case." He seized his crown, set it on his head, and, with a voice almost inarticulate with passion, exclaimed: "No pope or council shall take it from me without a bloody struggle. I am better off than I was before the sentence.

Then I was bound in some things to obey—at least, to respect him; but now I am released from all obligation.” This is the most pompous act of usurpation in all the records of the Church of Rome; and “the tacit approbation of a general council,” says Hallam, “seemed to incorporate the pretended right of deposing kings, which might have passed as a mad vaunt of Gregory VII and his successors, with the established faith of Christendom.”

After the emperor had been deposed, and the imperial throne declared vacant, the effect of the sentence was soon manifested in cowardly plots for the assassination of Frederick, some of which were known to the pope. The consciousness of these plots and a life of incessant anxiety began to break down the hitherto unconquerable spirit of the emperor. His protracted war with the Church wearied him, and he resolved to renew his efforts for a reconciliation. In the garb of a penitent he set out on a friendly visit to the pope; but while on the way to Rome he heard that the pope’s adherents had excited a revolt against him in Parma. Frederick, postponing his penitence till a more convenient season, rapidly collected an army, and besieged the rebellious city. The siege was maintained for some months; but on one occasion the besieged, taking advantage of the emperor’s absence at hawking, made a sally into the German Winter-quarters, and completely routed the besieging army, taking three thousand prisoners. Frederick, returning from hawking, met his army retreating before the victorious Parmese, and was compelled to accompany them. He now returned to the obligations of his tardy penitence, but without avail, the haughty pontiff scornfully repulsing him.

Frederick next determined to establish the Ghibeline party in Florence by the expulsion of the Guelfs. These two factions were of almost equal strength in that city, and for thirty-two years the beautiful streets of Florence had been seldom free from civil war. Certain portions of the town formed the battle-fields where the rival families contended. Movable barricades, or *chevaux-de-frise*, called *serragli*, which could at a moment’s notice be thrown across the streets, were kept in readiness at the proper places. A hasty word, as is aptly illustrated in “Romeo and Juliet,” was often enough to cause an appeal to arms; in an instant the streets were blocked by the *serragli*, and the town was soon filled with the dead and dying. At night-fall the battle ceased to rage, and each party collected their slain. Next day, while peace reigned, the victims of the skirmish were buried; and but few days were permitted to elapse without a



repetition of the same terrible work. Frederick ended this state of things in Florence by expelling the Guelf faction utterly from the city, and thus giving his own party the predominance.

About the same time the Bolognese attacked Modena, a city in alliance with the empire. The number of the Modenese was so small that, shutting themselves within their fortifications, no provocation could induce them to take the field. The Bolognese devised an expedient, which has at least the merit of originality. Taking the body of an ass, they ornamented it with silver fetters, and projected it from a powerful catapult into the middle of the town. The donkey unfortunately alighted in the center of the handsomest fountain in the city. The Modenese were so infuriated at this insult that they could no longer restrain themselves; they made a furious sally, and smashed to atoms the obnoxious engine. Soon after this incident the city surrendered and was lost to Frederick. The latter, whose firm and heroic spirit had supported him through these cruel vicissitudes, at length yielded to the conqueror of all, and died, A. D. 1250. His life was wasted in an unceasing contention with the Church and with his Italian subjects whom she excited to rebellion against him. While this prince was a patron of letters, and possessed many eminent qualities, he was very ambitious and practiced dissimulation; but we must remember that in every period of his reign he was compelled to act on the defensive almost constantly against the aggressions of others. But if he had been a model of virtues, such men as Honorius III, Gregory IX, and Innocent IV, the popes with whom he had successively to contend, would not have given him respite while he remained master of Naples as well as the empire. Indeed, the hatred of bigoted popish writers has hardly subsided at the present day. Tiraboschi commended him very moderately, but the Roman editor contradicted the statement. Muratori shows sufficient prejudice against the emperor's character, and yet a fierce Roman bigot becomes furious in his animadversions of every syllable that looks like moderation. Giannone, who suffered for his boldness, has highly eulogized Frederick, perhaps too extravagantly, in the sixteenth and seventeenth books of the civil history of Naples.

Pope Innocent IV of course received the tidings of his death with exceeding joy, bursting into songs of praise: "Let the heavens rejoice and let the earth be glad; for the storm which the Almighty has so long allowed to impend over us is changed by this man's death to refreshing zephyrs and fertilizing dews." At this juncture the pope thought that the kingdom of Naples would be a valuable

addition to the patrimony of St. Peter, and hence wrote as follows to the Neapolitans, impudently ignoring their right to any voice in the government of their city. He says: "We have taken your persons, your property, and your town itself, under the protection of the "Holy See;" and we have decreed that Naples shall remain henceforth under our immediate jurisdiction; and we guarantee that the Church shall never make over the sovereignty, or any right over Naples, to any emperor, king, duke, prince, or count, or any person whomsoever." Innocent, upon the death of his formidable and magnanimous adversary, returned into Italy, hoping now to enjoy with security the fruits of his ambition. His progress through Lombardy was one long triumphal procession. The Milanese especially received him with unbounded enthusiasm. He remained with them two months, and manifested his gratitude in a somewhat singular manner. The city finances being at this time in a depressed condition, the Milanese resolved to make a final effort to stave off national bankruptcy, and accordingly requested the pontiff to appoint a foreign magistrate, with the title of *podestà*, with absolute and unlimited power of levying taxes from themselves, by every method which his brain could conceive. For four years Gozzadini, the officer appointed, exhibited an ingenuity which would excite the envy of a modern secretary of the treasury. At the end of this period the suppressed wrath of the people boiled over, and Gozzadini was killed in a tumult.

Upon the death of Frederick II, which occurred in Apulia, on the 13th of December, A. D. 1250, he left to his son Conrad a contest to maintain for every part of his inheritance, as well as for the imperial crown. But the vigor of the house of Swabia no longer remained; Conrad was compelled to fight for the kingdom of Naples, the only succession he could hope to secure against the troops of Innocent IV, who still pursued his family with implacable hatred, and claimed that kingdom as forfeited to its feudal superior, the "Holy See." After Conrad's premature death, which happened A. D. 1254, the throne was filled by his illegitimate brother, Manfred, who retained it by his bravery and address, in opposition to the popes, till they were compelled to invoke the aid of a more powerful arm.

## CHAPTER X.

*THE GROWTH OF THE ITALIAN REPUBLICS.*

THE death of Conrad brought to a close that period in Italian history which was nearly coextensive with the greatness of the house of Swabia. Perhaps Italy never displayed more national energy and patriotism than she did at that time. A Florentine or Venetian may recur with pleasure to later days; but a Lombard will cast back his eye across the desert of centuries till it reposes on the field of Legnano. In the light of modern events the successful resistance of the Lombard cities to such princes as both the Fredericks appears strange to the student of history. But a closer examination of the facts gives a satisfactory explanation. The feudal army was enlisted only for a short term of service, and was reluctantly maintained in the field at its own cost. It could not, therefore, be effectually controlled, and besides, many German princes regarded the house of Swabia with peculiar distrust and disaffection. Nor did the kingdom of Naples, almost always in agitation, yield any material aid to the second Frederick. The principal cause, however, of that triumph which crowned the efforts of Lombardy was the intrinsic energy of a free government. The cities became virtually republican in the eleventh century, and from that period they began to put forth those vigorous shoots which are the growth of freedom alone. The fierce assaults of their national enemies, their mutual wars, and their domestic feuds did not check their strength, their wealth, or their population; but the republics of Italy were rendered more vigorous and courageous by the conflicts they sustained, as the limbs of the human body are nerved by labor and hardship. In order to appreciate the changes produced in Italy by the growth of its cities, we must remember what savage license prevailed during the ages preceding their rise. Penal laws were inadequate because it was impossible to execute them. Feudal nobles were then little different from robbers, the industrial arts were held in contempt, and rapine and violence reigned supreme. During the twelfth century, when the cities of Lombardy were in the first stage of their independence, they were convulsed by dissensions; but the evils resulting from them appear slight and momentary in comparison with the blessings of the



new *régime*. Industry was now protected, injustice controlled, and emulation awakened.

There are only a few authentic testimonies as to the domestic improvement of the free Italian cities while they still deserved the name. But history declares that their power and population, according to their extent of territory, were almost unprecedented. Galvanus Flamma, a Milanese writer, gives a curious statistical account of that city, A. D. 1288, a date about thirty years after the overthrow of its liberties by usurpation. The inhabitants are reckoned at two hundred thousand; the private houses, thirteen thousand; the nobility alone dwelt in sixty streets; eight thousand gentlemen, or heavy cavalry (*militates*), might be mustered from the city and its district, and two hundred and forty thousand men capable of arms; a force sufficient, the above-named writer observes, to crush all the Saracens. There were in Milan six hundred notaries, two hundred physicians, eighty school-masters, and fifty transcribers of manuscript. In the district were one hundred and fifty castles, with adjoining villages. If such was its prosperity after the destruction of its liberties, it must have previously reached a higher degree of advancement, even if we make allowance, as probably we should, for some exaggeration. At this period the territory of Milan was not large, being bounded at a little distance on almost every side by Lodi, or Pavia, or Bergamo, or Como. It is possible, however, that Flamma may have intended to include some of these as dependencies of Milan, though not strictly united with it. The state of cultivation must have been flourishing in the district of Milan when it not only drew no supplies from any foreign land, but exported part of its own produce. It was in the best age of their liberties, immediately after the battle of Legnano, that the Milanese commenced the great canal, which connects the waters of the Tesino to their capital, a work very extraordinary for that time. During the same period these cities advanced in architecture, the solidity and magnificence of which may yet be seen, indicating the internal prosperity of the Italian republics in the thirteenth century. France and England, perhaps, had more splendid ecclesiastical edifices, but neither country, according to Sismondi and Tiraboschi, could equal Italy in palaces and public buildings, streets flagged with stone, bridges of the same material, and commodious private houses.

These cities possessed means of defense which inspired security and made them courageous, and sometimes insolent. From the time of the Romans to that when the use of gunpowder prevailed, very little change was made, or perhaps could be made, in that part of

military science which relates to the attack and defense of fortified places. According to Muratori, there were the same engines of offense, the cumbrous towers from which arrows were shot at the besieged, the machines from which stones were discharged, the battering-rams which assailed the walls, and the basket-work covering (the vinea or testudo of the ancients, and the gattus or chatchateil of the Middle Ages) under which those who pushed the battering engines were protected from the enemy. On the other hand, a city was fortified with a strong wall of brick or marble, with a tower raised upon it at intervals and a deep moat in front. Sometimes the anti-mural or barbican was added; a rampart of less height, which impeded the approach of the hostile engines. The gates were guarded with a portcullis, an invention which, as well as the barbican, was borrowed from the Saracens. Having such means of defense, a numerous and brave body of burghers, could resist a powerful army; and it is not surprising, therefore, that so many besieged towns exhibited such desperate bravery when they knew the terrible consequences that would follow capture, and while resistance was seldom hopeless. Unless compelled by famine or treachery, few large towns were ever taken. Tortona did not submit to Frederick Barbarossa till the besiegers had corrupted with sulphur the only fountain that supplied the citizens; nor Crema till her walls were overtopped by the battering engines. Ancona nobly endured the pressure of extreme famine. Brescia tried all the resources of a skillful engineer against the second Frederick, and would not yield when that prince, adopting the atrocious policy of his grandfather, at the siege of Crema, exposed his prisoners upon his battering engines to the stones that were hurled by their fellow-citizens upon the walls. These sieges, which Sismondi so forcibly describes, exhibit the military spirit of the Italian people during the Middle Ages.

It is impossible to give a definite sketch of the government which existed in the republics of Italy during the twelfth and thirteenth centuries. The historians of those times are few and barren in details, and, like contemporaries, rather intimate than describe the civil polity of their respective countries. If it were even possible it would be tedious to delineate the constitutions of thirty or forty little states which were in perpetual fluctuation. When the most of them first began to throw off the jurisdiction of their count or bishop, they elected magistrates called consuls, a word of great significance to the Italians, since, in the darkest ages, tradition must have preserved some knowledge of the republican government of Rome. The earliest

mention of these magistrates was by Landulf the younger, whose history of Milan extends from A. D. 1094 to A. D. 1133. These consuls were elected annually and were intrusted with the command of the national militia in war, the preservation of public order and the administration of justice; their number was various—two, four, six, or even twelve. The Lombards, in their legislative and deliberative councils still copied the Roman constitution, or perhaps naturally adopted the form best calculated to unite sound discretion with the exercise of popular sovereignty. There was also a council of trust and secrecy (*della credenza*), which was composed of a small number of persons who managed public affairs, and may be called the ministers of the state. But the general council decided all important matters, making treaties of alliance, declaring war, and choosing consul or ambassadors. This tribunal, it appears, was not uniformly constituted in every city, and, according to its composition, the government was more or less democratical. "An ultimate sovereignty, however," says Hallam, "was reserved to the mass of the people; and a parliament or general assembly was held to deliberate on any change in the form of constitution."

About the close of the twelfth century a new and singular species of magistracy was introduced into the Lombard cities. During the tyrannical reign of Frederick I he had appointed officers of his own, called *podestàs* instead of the elective consuls. Instead of exciting insuperable alarm and disgust in the free republics, as might be expected, this memorial of despotic power was, on the contrary, almost universally revived after the peace of Constance. They had abrogated it when they first rose in rebellion against Frederick, but subsequently favored its restoration. As their domestic factions interfered with the administration of justice, the republics, in order to avoid partiality, adopted the plan of electing a citizen of some neighboring state, and under the title of *podestà* he became their general, their criminal judge, and preserver of the peace. For the performance of the last duty, which was often arduous, a vigorous and upright magistrate was needed. During the Middle Ages offenses against the laws and security of the commonwealth were more frequently committed by the rich and powerful than by the lower class of society. From Villani's "History of Florence," and Stella's "Annals of Genoa," we have many dark pictures of family feuds, rude and licentious manners, and private revenge. This state of society rendered the execution of criminal justice a necessary protection to the poor against oppression. When a magistrate pronounced sentence



upon a powerful offender, a tumult generally followed, and in almost every case force was necessary to execute it. The relatives of a convicted criminal did not consider him disgraced, but imputing his sentence to iniquity, or glorying in an act which the laws of his fellow-citizens, but not their sentiments, condemned, his circle of friends were ready to defend him. The law was often enforced, not against a family, but a faction, not perhaps against a local faction, but the whole Guelf or Ghibeline name, which might become interested in the quarrel. The podestà, therefore, was compelled to arm the republic against the refractory citizen, besiege and raze his house to the ground, and overcome his defenders by force. Accustomed to outrage and homicide under the rule of their magistrates, the people were disposed to repeat such scenes whenever their passions instigated them.

The podestà was sometimes chosen in a general assembly, and sometimes by a select number of citizens. His office was annual, though in peculiar emergencies it was prolonged. He was invariably a man of noble family, even in those cities which excluded their own nobility from any share in the government. He received a fixed salary, and was compelled to remain in the city after the expiration of his office for the purpose of answering such charges as might be brought against his conduct. He was neither allowed to marry a native of the city nor have any relation resident within the district; and so great was their jealousy that he was not even permitted to eat or drink in the house of any citizen. These foreign magistrates did not have the same authority in all cities. In some it appears that he superseded the consuls and commanded the armies in war. In others, as Milan and Florence, his authority was merely judicial. Muratori refers to old annals in which the years are headed by the names of the podestàs, as by those of the consuls in the history of Rome.

The fatal effects which these discordant elements produced in the republics of Lombardy were not entirely confined to national interests or to the grand distinction of Guelf and Ghibeline. In every city dissensions prevailed and became more fierce and irrepressible as the danger of foreign war diminished. The feudal system rested upon the principle of territorial aristocracy, and maintained the pride of rank. When, therefore, they came into the cities to reside, the rural nobility preserved the ascendancy of birth and riches. These advantages were naturally respected by the people, who divided all the offices of trust among the nobles. It seems that the inferior citizens had the right of choosing their own magistrates by free suffrage from

a large body of these nobles. As a form of government this limited aristocracy has its commendable features, and affords some security against anarchy and oppression. During the eleventh and twelfth centuries such a system as this prevailed in most of the Lombard cities. A civil war occurred at Milan, A. D. 1041, between the capitanei, or vassals of the empire, and the plebeian burgesses, which was appeased by the mediation of Henry III. The nobility were compelled to leave Milan and carry on the conflict in the adjacent plains, and one of their number, named Lanzon, moved either by ambition or by real indignation against tyranny, espoused the cause of the people. From this period until after the peace of Constance dissensions among the two orders are rarely mentioned, and, even admitting the defective character of contemporary history, it is evident that such disturbances were neither frequent nor serious. There was a schism between the nobles and people at Faenza, A. D. 1185, and a prolonged civil war occurred between them at Brescia, A. D. 1200. The domestic tranquillity of other cities was subsequently interrupted by mutual jealousies, and about A. D. 1220 the question of aristocratical or popular ascendancy was tried by arms in Milan, Piacenza, Modena, Cremona, and Bologna.

It would be unprofitable for a writer of the present age to discuss the merits of these feuds, which the meager historians of that period seldom attempted to elucidate, and then they permitted their prejudices to control their opinions. Why should we recall the forgotten animosities of the past, and, like a partial contemporary, record the failings of one or another faction? It is not necessary to have positive testimony in order to become acquainted with the general tenor of their history. A nobility is always insolent and a populace is always intemperate; and we may safely presume that the former began, as the latter ended, by injustice and abuse of power. At one time the aristocracy endeavored to exclude the bulk of the citizens from suffrage because they selected the annual magistrates from the body of the nobles. At another the merchants, whose riches made them proud and confident of their strength, sought the honors of the state which had been reserved for the nobility. Commercial wealth inevitably produces such a result; and the same is true of freedom and social order, which are the parents of wealth. In the progress of civilization there comes a time when the possessors of exclusive privileges must yield, or be overthrown along with their usurpations. "In one or two cities," says Hallam, "a temporary compromise was made through the intervention of the pope, whereby offices

of public trust, from the highest to the lowest, were divided in equal proportions or otherwise between the nobles and the people." This expedient was very efficacious in appeasing the dissensions of Rome.

In all these turbulent scenes, whether the contest was between the nobles and people, or the Guelf and Ghibeline factions, the conquerors exhibited no mercy. The defeated were deprived of their fortunes and homes; and, retiring to other cities, where their own party was in the ascendancy, waited for the opportunity of revenge. In a popular tumult the houses of the vanquished were often leveled to the ground, not from a "senseless fury," which Muratori condemns, but because these fortified residences were used to inflict injury upon the lower citizens. Proscription and forfeiture excite the most deadly hatred in men toward their own country; and no wonder Italy was afflicted with calamities when every defeated faction was pursued into banishment with unrelenting bitterness. When the Ghibelines were returning to Florence, after the overthrow of the Guelfs, A. D. 1260, they proposed to demolish the city itself which had expelled them; and but for the persuasion of one man, Farinata degl'Uberti, their revenge would have thus extinguished all patriotism. Yet Dante placed this patriot in one of the worst regions of his *Inferno*. This vindictive feeling moved them to invoke assistance from every side, and to accept even servitude for the sake of retaliating upon their adversaries.

The citizens of an Italian state, besides their animosities arising from different views of their form of government and their relation to the empire, were divided by other causes, insignificant, and yet mischievous. The quarrels of private families in every city became the foundation of general schism, sedition, and proscription. Sometimes these were identified with the great names of Guelf and Ghibeline; sometimes they were more distinctly conspicuous. Imilda de Lambertazzi, a noble young lady at Bologna, was discovered by her brothers in a secret interview with Boniface Gieremei, whose family had long been the inveterate enemy of her own. She had just time to escape while the Lambertazzi pierced her lover with their poisoned daggers. When she returned she found his body still warm; and, entertaining some hope of his recovery, she sucked the venom from his wounds; but it permeated her own veins, and her attendants found both lifeless by each other's side. This cruel outrage madened the Gieremei, and they formed alliances with the neighboring republics. The Lambertazzi adopted the same measures; and, after a conflict of forty days' duration, they were driven out of the city,



with all the Ghibelines, their political associates. Sismondi states that twelve thousand citizens were condemned to banishment, their houses razed, and their estates confiscated. This contest between the Gieremei and the Lambertazzi suggests the story of "Romeo and Juliet," which was founded upon an Italian novel, and is not an unnatural delineation of Italian manners.

Florence was at rest until A. D. 1215, when the assassination of an individual produced a mortal feud between the families Boundemonti and Uberti, in which all the cities took part. In the earlier stages of the Lombard republics their differences, both mutual and domestic, had been often settled by the mediation of the emperors; and the want of this salutary influence was greatly felt in the thirteenth century, when Italy was emancipated from foreign rule. The popes sometimes endeavored to interfere, and their authority, though not so direct, was held in greater veneration; but as they were not always free from selfishness and revenge, they did not accomplish permanent good. Considering the Ghibelines as their own peculiar enemies, they labored to secure the triumph of the Guelfs. Gregory X and Nicholas III, whether from benevolent motives, or because they were jealous of Charles of Anjou, while at the head of the Guelfs, advocated the revival of a Ghibeline party as a counterpoise to his power. The reign of these pontiffs was distinguished by the enforcement of measures of reconciliation in all Italian cities; but their successors returned to the ancient policy and prejudices of Rome.

Fra Giovanni di Vicenza, a Dominican friar, who began his career at Bologna, A. D. 1233, created a profound sensation by preaching the forgiveness of injuries and the cessation of war. This singular individual, though far less elevated in station than popes or emperors, persuaded men to lay down their instruments of warfare and embrace their enemies. Tiraboschi, in his account of this new apostle, says that several republics implored him to settle their differences and to reform their laws. A general meeting was called in the plain of Paquara, upon the banks of the Adige. The Lombards came from Romagna and the cities of the March; Guelfs and Ghibelines, nobles and burghers, free citizens and tenantry of feudal lords, stationed around their carroccios, eagerly listened to the illusive promise of universal peace which the preacher eloquently presented. The masses under a popular government are proverbially susceptible of momentary impulses, and they accordingly submitted to the dictation of Fra Giovanni. He arranged terms of agreement or a mutual amnesty; but when reputation and power are suddenly obtained they are gen-

erally transitory, and the star of this pacificator soon disappeared below the horizon. He was not content with being the legislator and arbiter of Italian cities, but desired to become their master, and was transformed from an apostle into a usurper, abusing the enthusiasm of Vicenza and Verona to acquire a grant of absolute sovereignty.

---

## CHAPTER XI.

### *DECLINE OF THE IMPERIAL POWER IN ITALY.*

AFTER the death of Frederick II the distinctions of Guelf and Ghibeline had no real significance. The former party favored the nominal but indefinite sovereignty of the empire, and the latter party was not disposed to interfere; yet these fanatical enthusiasts of faction continued to be mutually hostile. The most bitter hatreds were engendered, and the most fearful crimes were constantly perpetrated.

In the fall of the house of Swabia the Guelfs achieved a great triumph; and although the Ghibelines were able for a short time to maintain themselves, and even to advance in the north of Italy, yet two events, which soon after occurred, restored their adversaries to power. The first of these was the defeat of Eccelino da Romano, A. D. 1259, whose victories followed one another in such rapid succession that both Guelfs and Ghibelines feared the establishment of a cruel despotism, and formed a temporary union, which resulted in his overthrow. The atrocities of this tyrant have been incidentally mentioned in the previous chapter. He was one of those monsters of mankind whose actions render still darker the record of the weakness and wickedness of humanity. The details of the crimes of "Eccelino the Ferocious" are so horrible that they have not been published by later historians. He was originally a soldier of fortune, and possessed that unconquerable energy which at length made him ruler of the north of Italy. Alexander IV preached a crusade against him, an act sufficient to extenuate many unholy actions of the "Holy See." The crusade was first preached in Venice, where large numbers of Paduans who had escaped from the tyranny of Eccelino were harbored. It was difficult for them to reach this city of refuge, because the frontiers were strictly guarded; and those

detected in an attempt to cross were punished by the loss of their legs or eyes. The Venetians, jealous of the increasing power of the tyrant, readily joined the crusade. The first attempt was on the city of Padua. Eccelino's lieutenant, in order to check the advance of the Venetian fleet, turned the waters of the river Brento into another channel. The pope's army, taking advantage of this brilliant maneuver, marched across the dry bed of the river, beat back the outposts of the Paduan army, and established themselves in the suburbs. On the following day the city was assaulted. The besieged set on fire the vinea of the storming party. The crusaders then pushed the burning mass against the wooden gate of the town; the gate was consumed, and the city captured. A week's pillage ensued. For eighteen years it had groaned under Eccelino's tyranny; and now the scanty remnants which his avarice or cruelty had spared were seized by their liberators. Yet the city was filled with rejoicing, because it had been delivered from oppression. A multitude of ghastly people emerged from the dungeons of Eccelino. The sight of aged men and women, young girls exhausted with torture, and young children barbarously mutilated and blinded, enraged the crusading soldiery, and excited in them an inextinguishable passion for revenge on the monster. In the mean time he heard of the fall of Padua, and was maddened with rage. To satisfy his thirst for vengeance Eccelino commanded all the Paduan soldiers in his army to be disarmed, and they were deposited in his numerous dungeons. Of the whole number—about eleven thousand men, or one-third of all his force—only two hundred escaped. Some perished on the scaffold, others were burned to death, and the great mass of the unhappy wretches died of cold and hunger in prison.

The priests persisted in conducting the crusade, which, owing to their incompetence, was prolonged three years. Eccelino's last atrocity was committed at Friola. He had besieged and captured this town. By his orders, every man, woman, and child had their legs and noses cut off, and if they survived this horrible treatment they were turned out to beg their bread along the roads. Two months after this barbarity he was attacked by the papal forces, his army routed, and he, desperately wounded, captured. In a few days he died from the effects of his wounds, all regretting his honorable fate in dying a soldier's death.

The second and far more important event which contributed to the ascendancy of the Guelfs was the change of dynasty in Naples. The fact that Pope Innocent IV sent a paternal letter to the Neapoli-



tans proposing to take their kingdom under his protection, has already been stated. Its reception excited a fierce rebellion against the house of Swabia—that is, the family of the late emperor; but Conrad and Manfred, sons of Frederick, speedily suppressed it. The pope soon discovered that he could not, by his own unaided force, wrest their dominions from these young men, and he therefore determined to assign the kingdom of the Two Sicilies (that is, Sicily and Naples) to some other prince who would be powerful enough to conquer it, and sufficiently humble to acknowledge himself as the pope's vassal. The offer, however, was not very tempting, and it was difficult to find any one to accept it. It was first offered to the earl of Cornwall; but that prince said that the pope's grant was of about as much value as if he were to say, "Here is a grant of the moon, climb up and take it." At this crisis in the history of the kingdom Conrad died, leaving an infant son, Conradin, in the care of his younger brother, Manfred, and of Berthold, his general. After the death of the energetic Conrad, the pope changed his tactics. He collected a large army from the Guelf cities, and marched into the Neapolitan territories. Manfred, while reserving his own and his nephew's rights, saw that resistance would be in vain, and he himself conducted the pope across the frontier, holding his horse's bridle. In a short time a quarrel arose between Manfred and his escort, and his personal enemy, Borello, attended by a similar escort. In the conflict Borello was slain, and Manfred was immediately summoned to appear before the pope on the charge of murder. He applied for a safe-conduct, and being refused, he began to appreciate his extreme danger, and fled to the Saracen colony of Lucera, whose soldiers had always been faithful to his family. When he arrived there, he rode forward boldly to the gates with only three servants. The governor was absent from the town, and his lieutenant, Marchisio, was in command, with orders from his chief to keep the gates constantly shut. "Here is your prince," cried out Manfred's attendants in Arabic; "he trusts your loyalty, throw open your gates." When the Saracens heard that the son of their late king had arrived, they were filled with enthusiasm, and shouted, "Let him in, let him in, before the governor hears of his arrival." They rushed against the gate, burst it open, admitted Manfred, and carried him in triumph to the palace. Bowing before him they took the oath of allegiance to him, and he became master of the town. Lucera contained the imperial treasures, and Manfred, obtaining these, took a large number of troops into his pay. The situation of affairs was now reversed. He expelled

the pope's soldiers from the Capitanata, and they, in full retreat, reached Naples just as the pope died—happy to have died too soon to hear of this reverse of fortune.

The weak reign of Alexander IV closed A. D. 1261, and that of Urban IV began. The new pope remembered how Manfred, son of the late Frederick, had frustrated the ambitious schemes of the preceding popes, and, with great cunning, inspired by bitter hostility, he commenced to checkmate this successful enemy of the "Holy See." The pontiff felt himself no stronger than his predecessors, but he resolved to adopt the plan of Innocent IV, and endeavor to find some one who would be glad, with the help of the Church's moral support, to win the kingdom of the Two Sicilies, and hold it as the pope's vassal. His choice was Charles of Anjou. But a difficulty in the way was St. Louis, Charles's brother, honorably distinguished among the kings of the earth for integrity of life and scrupulousness of conscience. Both the nature of his objections, and the methods by which they were overcome, may be ascertained from the following letter of the pope: "We have received your letter, from which, among other things, we perceive that our dear son in Jesus Christ, the illustrious king of France, lends a credulous ear to the crafty speeches of those who would gladly frustrate the negotiations which we have intrusted to you. They would persuade him that Conradin, grandson of Frederick, has some right to the kingdom of Sicily; or, even admitting that he has been lawfully deposed, that his right has passed by concession of the "Holy See" to Edmund, son of our very dear son in Jesus Christ, the king of England. Thus he hesitates, although he sees that the nomination of his brother would be conducive to the honor and happiness of the Roman Church. We will be especially on our guard to preserve his fair fame from scandal; his soul, intrusted to our keeping, from damnation; his person and his state from danger. He should believe that both ourselves and our brethren are anxious, with God's help, to keep our consciences pure, and save our souls before the Author of salvation; and that we know, of certain knowledge, that nothing that we would do is to the prejudice of Conradin or of Edmund, or of any other man."

Having overcome the scruples of St. Louis, Urban dealt next with those of Charles. But they were of a different kind. A too scrupulous conscience was not among his weaknesses. He was very anxious to be king of Sicily, but he wished to pay as little as possible for an empty title and the pope's patronage. A bargain was finally made that Charles was to pay his holiness the town of

Benevento, and an annual tribute of ten thousand ounces of gold. Charles rapidly collected an army of thirty thousand men, and invaded the Neapolitan territory. He met Manfred's army drawn up in battle array on the plain of Benevento. Manfred made some attempt at negotiation, but Charles sent back his envoys with the message: "Tell him that I am resolved on battle; and this day I will either send him to hell or he shall send me to heaven." At first Manfred's army had the advantage, but the treacherous flight of his reserve, at a critical moment, turned the fortune of the day. He resolved not to survive his defeat. As he was putting on his helmet, the crest, a silver eagle, fell off his saddle-bow. "*Hoc est signum dei*," said he to his barons; "I fastened on this crest myself, and no mere accident has loosed it." He rushed into the *mêlée*, and, fighting there without any royal insignia, perished by an unknown hand.

Charles had not been long on the throne when the nobles, who had deserted Manfred, began to groan beneath the heavy hand of the invader. Charles, like all others who are promoted by military power, was compelled to purchase the continued favor of the authors of his success by unlimited munificence. He bestowed upon his high officers the confiscated estates of the barons, and he indefinitely increased the number of subordinate government officials in order to provide for the inferior soldiery. Under the former government there were various petty civil officers, and to each class of these Charles added the corresponding functionaries of the French administration. He also rigorously exacted all the taxes which had been imposed at any time during the reign of Manfred. Where one tax had been repealed in order that another might be substituted, both were now levied alike. The people were fearfully oppressed, and the pope, by writing to Charles an unavailing letter of censure for his misgovernment, made but slight and tardy atonement for his perfidy.

Another claimant to the throne which Charles occupied was Conradin, Manfred's nephew. He was only sixteen years of age, and his sensible mother was not willing that the inexperienced stripling should take the field against such a veteran as Charles. But the Ghibeline party was in need of a champion. They represented to Conradin that the Sicilians hated the French because they were rapacious and licentious. They assured him that all sects and parties would rally around the lawful successor to the throne of Frederick. Conradin was encouraged by this assurance, and by promises of assistance from several of the Lombard princes. He therefore resolved to



avenge the persecutions of his ancestors, and in a few weeks gathered a large army, which he commanded.

Charles marched forward to meet him, but was compelled to return to his kingdom, being recalled by tidings of a dangerous revolt. The pope, as usual, was ready with a letter of counsel. It said: "I know not for what reason I address you as king, seeing you do not appear to trouble yourself about your kingdom. Established first by brigands, your ministers, it is now devoured by your enemies—the caterpillar destroys what has escaped the locust. If you lose your crown do not imagine that the Church will renew her labor and expense in order to replace it on your head. Perhaps you think that your virtues entitle you to a miracle of God on your behalf; or, it may be, you are relying on the sagacity you imagine you possess, and which you prefer to the good advice of others."

Meanwhile, the senate of Rome declared in favor of Conradin, and the young prince advanced towards that city. By this time the youthful warrior had been excommunicated by his holiness with all pomp and solemnity. The arrival of Conradin at Rome was celebrated with the magnificence usually given to the emperor alone. After resting his troops there for a few days, he set out for Naples with five thousand soldiers enlisted under his standard. He marched without opposition as far as the plain of Tagliacozzo, where he encountered Charles and his army. The main portion of Charles's forces was in sight, but he himself, with eight hundred picked men, was concealed in a small valley in the rear. Conradin attacked the Neapolitan forces and soon routed all whom he saw. His army of Germans supposing that the battle was decided, dispersed, as usual, for pillage. As soon as the whole army had broken their ranks, Charles emerged from his hiding-place, his eight hundred men rushed into the field, and easily cut to pieces the scattered troops.

Conradin escaped from the field of battle, but was captured within a few days. At the court which was assembled for his trial Charles himself acted as prosecutor. He accused his conquered rival of rebellion against the legitimate sovereign, of contempt of the Church's sentence, of his alliance with the Saracens, and of the plunder of the monasteries. It was urged in defense that Conradin was a prisoner under protection of the laws of war; that his title to the crown was at least plausible; and that, even if the merits of the case were against him, his youth ought to protect him. The judges were under the immediate influence of Charles; but they had neither the courage to condemn nor acquit him, and sat there in cowardly

silence. Only one spoke, giving his verdict for death; and on the authority of that one vote, Charles passed sentence of death on Conradin and his companions. The unhappy youth was led into the market-place of Naples. A scaffold was erected on the shore, while Charles, from an eminence, looked down upon the dying boy. The multitude sympathized most intensely with their rightful prince, but a bristling fence of French spears divided them from him. The judge who had voted for death stepped forward to read the sentence. "But," says Professor Jones, a writer on Italian history, "the days of the unjust judge were numbered. Robert, of Flanders, Charles's own son-in-law, rushed up to him, and exclaiming, 'It beseems not thee to condemn a noble prince to die,' buried his sword in his breast, and the judge fell dead at the king's feet. Charles did not dare to avenge this wild act of justice, though it did not arrest the execution. Conradin kneeled in prayer. Rising, he said, 'What bitter grief will this day's tidings bring thee, my mother!' while the people, and even the soldiery, were dissolved in tears. Five of his adherents perished on the same scaffold. All the bodies were buried by the seashore in unconsecrated ground; but long afterwards a Carmelite church was built over the place where their remains were buried."

The voice of those rude ages, as well as of a more enlightened posterity, has united in branding with everlasting infamy the name of that prince, who did not hesitate to purchase the security of his own title by the public execution of an honorable competitor, or rather a rightful claimant to the throne he had usurped. With the death of Conradin, A. D. 1268, the house of Swabia was extinguished; but Constance, the daughter of Manfred, had transported *his* right to Sicily and Naples into the house of Aragon, by her marriage with Peter III. The tide of faction was turned over all Italy by the success of this monarch, whom the Roman pontiffs selected as their champion. He expelled the Ghibelines from Florence, which had been completely in their possession since the memorable victory a few years before upon the river Arbia. After the fall of Conradin, that party was every-where discouraged. Germany did not promise any substantial support, even when the imperial throne, which had long been vacant, should be occupied by one of her princes. The populace in almost every city were attached to the Church and to the name of Guelf. The popes, by their excommunications, and the kings of Naples, by their arms during the remainder of the thirteenth century, rendered the name of Ghibeline a term of proscription in

the majority of Lombard and Tuscan republics. Pope Clement IV constituted Charles, who was already master of Provence, Naples, Sicily, and head of the Guelf party in Italy, vicar-general in Tuscany.

This was a new pretension of the Roman pontiffs to name the lieutenants of the empire during its vacancy, though their consent was generally obtained. It soon appeared, however, that Charles aimed at the sovereignty of Italy. Some of the popes themselves, Gregory X and Nicholas IV, became jealous of their own creature. Sismondi states that at the Congress of Cremona, A. D. 1269, it was proposed to confer upon Charles the seigniorship of all the Guelf cities; but the greater part were prudent enough to choose him rather as a friend than a master. Several, however, including Milan, took an oath of fidelity to him the same year. A few years later, A. D. 1273, he was lord of Alessandria and Piacenza, and received tribute from Milan, Bologna, and most Lombard cities. He evidently intended to avail himself of the vacancy of the empire, and either to acquire that title himself, or at least to stand in the same relation as the emperors had done to the Italian states; which, according to the usage of the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, "left them," says Hallam, "in possession of every thing that we call independence, with the reservation of a nominal allegiance."

At the latter end of the thirteenth century there were almost as many princes in the north of Italy as there had been free cities in the preceding age. They were often annoyed with domestic revolutions, which rendered their seat unsteady, and thus prevented them from encroaching on each other. Gradually, however, they decreased in number, many obscure tyrants were overthrown in the smaller cities, and the people, careless or hopeless of liberty, gladly exchanged the rule of mean, petty usurpers for that of more powerful and distinguished families.

Milan was the most prominent city in supporting both wars against the house of Swabia, and manifested the strongest attachment to republican institutions, but in a few years after the death of Frederick II it was the first to sacrifice them. It had been convulsed for a considerable time by civil dissensions between the nobility and inferior citizens. These parties were about equally divided, and their victories were consequently alternate. Each had its own *podestà* as a party leader distinct from the legitimate magistrate of the city. Fra Leon Perego, the archbishop of the nobility, was selected as their champion, while the people appointed Martin della Torre, who belonged to a noble family which had ambitiously supported the democratic faction.



The two parties became involved in a civil war, A. D. 1257, which originated from the crime of a nobleman, who had murdered one of his creditors. The conflict was carried on with various success, and, though temporary peace prevailed several times, the unhappy disposition of the belligerents would not allow the strife to terminate. At the end of two years, however, the aristocracy were completely defeated, and Martin della Torre was elected chief and lord (*capitano e signore*) of the people. While the Milanese did not probably intend to renounce the sovereignty which resided in their general assemblies, yet they soon lost the republican spirit. Five of the family Della Torre reigned in succession in Milan, each having been formally elected, but with an implied recognition of a kind of hereditary title. Twenty years afterward the Visconti, a family of opposite interests, supplanted the Torriani at Milan, and the rivalry between these great houses did not end until the final establishment of Matteo Visconti, A. D. 1313.

The victories of Charles of Anjou infused vigor into the Guelf party, but they were not very durable. He was soon involved in a protracted and unfortunate controversy with the kings of Aragon, to whose protection his revolted subjects in Italy had recurred. On the other hand, the Ghibeline interests in Lombardy, and even in Tuscan cities, were retrieved by several men of energetic character. The Visconti were acknowledged heads of that faction. The Della Scala, a family early established as lords of Verona, espoused the same cause between the Adige and the Adriatic. Castruccio Castrucani, an adventurer of remarkable ability, became prince of Lucca, and by his influence the imperial party received a large accession from the heart of the Guelfs in Tuscany. After his death, however, the ancient order of things was restored. The inferior tyrants were partly Guelf, partly Ghibeline, according to local revolutions; but upon the whole the latter obtained a gradual ascendancy. Those, indeed, who favored the independence of Italy, or cared for their own power, "had far less to fear," says Hallam, "from the phantom of imperial prerogatives, long intermitted, and incapable of being enforced, than from the new race of foreign princes, whom the Church had substituted for the house of Swabia."

## CHAPTER XII.

## THE DOCTRINES AND USAGES OF THE WALDENSES.

IN ages so remote events appear dim, and, in the absence of historical records, it is difficult to obtain a satisfactory account of the remarkable people called the Waldenses, who now attracted the attention of Europe by their resistance to the papacy. From a variety of sources we can glean some interesting facts, sufficient to form a picture, though not complete, of their venerable Church. For many centuries preceding the Reformation they were the only representatives of evangelical Christianity of which we have any knowledge. We learn from the *Nobla Leyçon*, and other ancient documents, that this school of early Protestant theology was presided over by *barbes*, or pastors, who preached the saving doctrines of the Bible. Their theological system was not as clear, well-defined, and comprehensive as that which the sixteenth century gave to the world; it was only what the faithful men of the Lombard Churches had been able to save from the wreck of primitive Christianity. As true religion is a revelation, it was perfect in the beginning; yet it is necessary in this, as in every other, branch of knowledge to search after its various parts and systematically arrange them. It is only by patient effort and thorough investigation that man can come into the full possession of the truth. The cardinal doctrine of the Waldensian theology was the atoning death and justifying righteousness of Christ. In the *Nobla Leyçon*, or "Noble Lesson," we find a tolerably clear presentation of the doctrine of the Trinity, the fall of man, the incarnation of the Son, the perpetual authority of the Decalogue as given by God; the need of divine grace in order to good works, the necessity of holiness, the institution of the ministry, the resurrection of the body, and the eternal bliss of heaven. The professors of this evangelical creed exemplified it in lives of peculiar virtue. Indeed, the blamelessness of the Waldenses passed into a proverb, and if any one abstained to a limited extent from the prevailing vices, he was suspected of being a Vaudois. Dr. Wylie quotes the following passage from the *Nobla Leyçon*: "If there be an honest man who desires to love God and fear Jesus Christ, who will neither slander, nor swear, nor lie, nor commit adultery, nor kill, nor steal, nor avenge himself

of his enemies, they presently say of such a one, He is a Vaudois, and worthy of death."

If any doubt concerning the religious tenets of the Waldenses existed, it would be removed by the charges which their enemies have brought against them. It is evident from these accusations that the men of the "Valleys" held substantially what the apostles before their day, and the reformers after, taught. The indictment against them included a formidable list of "heresies," among which was Manicheism, but the declaration in the *Nobla Leyçon* that they believe in the "perpetual authority of the Decalogue" was a sufficient refutation of the charge. They affirmed that there had not been a true pope since the days of Sylvester; that ministers of the Gospel should not accept temporal offices and dignities; that the pardons bestowed by the pope were a sham; that purgatory was a fable; that relics were simply rotten bones which had belonged to some unknown person; that pilgrimages accomplished only one result—the emptying of the purse; that flesh might be eaten any day if the appetite demanded it; that holy water was not any more efficacious than rain water; and that prayer in a barn was as effectual as if offered in a church. The Romanists also accused the Vaudois of having scoffed at the doctrine of transubstantiation, and of having spoken blasphemously of Rome as the "harlot" of the Apocalypse. The Jesuit Reynerius, who wrote A. D. 1250, charged upon them numerous heresies and blasphemies, which the historian Allix has published.

It appears from recent historical researches that the Waldenses possessed the New Testament in the vernacular. The "*Lingua Romana*," or Romaunt tongue, was the common language of the south of Europe from the eighth to the fourteenth century. During the Dark Ages the troubadours and men of letters used it, and into it the first translation of the whole of the New Testament was made so early as the twelfth century. Dr. Gilly, in his work, "*The Romaunt Version of the Gospel according to John*," has diligently labored to establish this fact. By a patient investigation into all the evidence, and a great array of historic documents, he reached the following conclusions: That all the books of the New Testament were translated from the Latin Vulgate into the Romaunt; that this was the first literal version since the fall of the empire; that it was made in the twelfth century, and was the first translation available for popular use. There were numerous earlier translations, but only of parts of the Bible, and many of these were rather paraphrases or digests of Scripture than translations, and on account of their bulk and cost



were entirely beyond the reach of the common people. This Romaunt version was the first complete and literal translation of the New Testament of Holy Scripture. Dr. Gilly shows, by a chain of proofs, that it was probably made under the superintendence and at the expense of Peter Waldo, of Lyons, not later than A. D. 1180, and is, therefore, older than any complete version in German, French, Italian, Spanish, or English. It was widely circulated in the south of France and in the cities of Lombardy, and was also in general use among the Waldenses of Piedmont. Its preservation and dissemination by these mountaineers was no insignificant part of the testimony which they gave in behalf of the truth. Only six copies of the Romaunt New Testament now remain, one at each of the four following places: Lyons, Grenoble, Zurich, and Dublin; and two copies at Paris. These volumes are small, plain, and portable, contrasting with those magnificent and ponderous folios of the Latin Vulgate, written in gold and silver characters, richly illuminated, and having bindings decorated with gems. But their splendor and size awakened admiration rather than a desire for study, and prevented them from being used by the people.

In the simplicity of its constitution the Church of the Alps may be considered a reflection of the Church of the first centuries. The entire Waldensian territory was divided into parishes, in each of which was placed a pastor who watched over his flock, preaching, dispensing the sacraments, visiting the sick, and catechising the young. A consistory of laymen was associated with him in the government of his congregation. The synod, which met once a year, was composed of all the pastors with an equal number of laymen, and its most frequent place of meeting was the secluded, mountain-engirdled valley at the head of Angrogna. Sometimes as many as a hundred and fifty *barbes*, with the same number of laymen, would assemble. In imagination we behold them seated—it may be on the grassy slope of the valley—a venerable company of humble, learned, and earnest men, presided over by a simple moderator. While deliberating concerning the affairs of their Churches and the condition of their flocks, they did not neglect to offer their praises and prayers to the living God, in whom they trusted for wisdom. Their assembly was solemn and imposing without the pageantry of mystic rites, and, though no magnificent fane towered above them, the majestic snow-clad peaks rose up in the silent firmament with a grandeur that no human architecture can produce.

The Bible was the text-book used by these young men who

received instruction from the more venerable and learned of their *barbes*. They not only studied the sacred volume, but they were required to commit to memory and be able accurately to recite whole Gospels and epistles. This accomplishment was almost indispensable to public instructors in those days when printing was unknown and copies of the Bible were rare. They devoted a part of their time to the work of transcribing the Holy Scriptures, or portions of them which they were to distribute when they went forth as missionaries. Through this and other agencies the seed of divine truth was scattered more widely throughout Europe than is commonly supposed. This result was produced by a variety of causes. At that time a general impression prevailed that the world would soon end. Disorder reigned in almost every nation, and many men believed that the signs of the times indicated the speedy termination of earthly things. In view of the luxury, pride, and profligacy of the clergy, not a few laymen asked whether more competent spiritual guides could not be obtained. Many of the troubadours were religious men who wandered from country to country, singing lays which were often sermons in poetry. The hour of deep and universal slumber had passed away, and a period of unusual activity was inaugurated. The serf was demanding personal freedom from his seigneur, and the city waged war with the baronial castle for civic and corporate independence. The appearance of the New Testament, and, as we learn from incidental notices, portions of the Old, in a language which was understood alike in the court as in the camp, in the city as in the rural hamlet, was opportune, having received a cordial welcome from many at that period. Indeed, the truths of the Bible were more widely promulgated then than they had been at any time since the publication of the Vulgate by Jerome.

The Waldensian youth, after remaining a certain time in the school of the *barbes*, usually went to the seminaries in the great cities of Lombardy, or to the Sorbonne at Paris, where they became acquainted with other customs, were initiated into other studies and enjoyed a wider horizon of observation than they did in the seclusion of their native valleys. Many of them became expert dialecticians, whom the priests of Rome did not desire to meet in argument. These Waldensian missionaries often made converts of the rich merchants with whom they traded, and the landlords in whose houses they lodged. The Vaudois were not satisfied with merely maintaining the truth in their own mountains, but realized their responsibility to spread the Gospel abroad and reconquer the kingdoms of Christen-

dom, which the Romish hierarchy had overwhelmed with moral darkness. The Waldensian Church was not only evangelical, but *evangelistic*. Among its old laws was one which required that all who took orders in the Church should serve three years in the mission field before they could be eligible to a home charge. It was not necessary for them to cross oceans in order to perform mission work. The extensive region at the foot of their own mountains afforded the Vaudois youth, upon whose heads the assembled *barbes* had laid their hands, an important field, which would bestow upon them not a rich benefice, but a possible martyrdom. By assuming the guise of a secular profession, most commonly that of merchants or peddlers, they concealed their real character. Going forth two and two they carried silks, jewelry, and other articles which at that time could not be easily purchased, except at distant marts, and they were welcomed as merchants where they would have been rejected as missionaries. The door of the cottage and the portal of the baron's castle stood equally open to them. The gems and silks procured them entrance, but they were also venders of rarer and more valuable merchandise—portions of the Word of God—usually their own transcription, which they carried with them carefully concealed among their wares or about their persons. While displaying their goods to the inmates of the dwelling they would also direct attention to the manuscripts, and donate them when desired to those who were unable to purchase. Thus the truth was disseminated by these humble instrumentalities, and struggling Italy received more light.



## Part III.

### PAPAL DARKNESS RELIEVED.

#### CENTURY XIV—XIX.

---

#### CHAPTER I.

##### *ITALY DURING THE PAPAL SCHISM.*

THE fourteenth century dawned upon Italy, revealing the existence of small tyrannies, established upon the ruins of republican government. The cities of Lombardy, both Guelf and Ghibeline, by force or stratagem, or free consent, had, with few exceptions, fallen under the yoke of some prominent citizen, who became the lord (*signiore*), or, in the Grecian sense, tyrant, of his country. The career of Eccelino beyond the Adige should have naturally inspired the Italians with more universal abhorrence of despotism; but in the eyes of exasperated factions every danger seemed trivial when compared with the ascendancy of their enemies. The conflicts between these adversaries were constant and unprofitable, inflicting alternately disaster upon either party, until liberty, wearied and disgusted, withdrew from a people who disgraced her name. Strange as it may appear, the brave, tumultuous, and intractable Lombards were anxious to submit themselves to a master, and became patient under the heaviest oppression. Sometimes tyranny passed beyond the limits of forbearance, and the reigning prince was expelled by seditious parties; but the revolution simply placed the impotent people under a different and perhaps worse despotism. "In many cities," says Hallam, "not a conspiracy was planned, not a sigh was breathed in favor of republican government, after once they had passed under the sway of a single person. The progress, indeed, was gradual though sure, from limited to absolute, from temporary to hereditary power, from a just and conciliating rule, to extortion and cruelty." Before the middle of the fourteenth century, all those cities which had indignantly

rejected the invitation to submit to imperial rule lost even the recollection of self-government, and were bequeathed, like an indisputable patrimony, among the children of their new lords.

Though divided into several hostile factions, the victorious popular party in the Italian cities was able to frustrate the efforts of the German emperor, Henry VII, who, A. D. 1312, attempted to regain the dominion of Italy. Robert, king of Naples, was more successful. Like his grandfather, Charles I, he almost openly aspired to a real sovereignty over Italy. When the Guelf cities were engaged in war he offered his assistance upon the condition that they should submit to his rule. Many yielded to his demands, and even Florence twice bestowed upon him a temporary dictatorship. He was (A. D. 1314) acknowledged lord of Lucca, Florence, Pavia, Alessandria, Bergamo, and the cities of Romagna. The Guelfs of Genoa, A. D. 1318, being unable to overcome the Ghibeline emigrants, who were under their walls, resigned their liberties to the king of Naples for the term of ten years, which was afterwards extended six more. All these ambitious measures were sanctioned by the Avignon popes, especially John XXII, who entertained the most bitter hatred to the Emperor Louis of Bavaria, and the Visconti family. But the death of Robert, and the disturbances in his kingdom, rendered these measures unsuccessful.

After the secession of the popes to Avignon (A. D. 1308), Rome, their own city, was far more demoralized than before. Disorders of every kind, tumult and robbery prevailed in the streets. The Roman nobility were engaged in perpetual war with each other. They were not satisfied with their own fortified palaces, but converted the sacred monuments of antiquity into strongholds, causing greater destruction than time or conquest had ever done. At no period had the city received such irreparable injuries. Indeed, the contemptible feuds of the Orsini and Colonna families were more disastrous to the capital than the downfall of the Western Empire. Government existed only in form, and whether administered by a legate from Avignon, or by the municipal authorities, did not restrain these powerful barons. In the midst of this degradation and wretchedness (A. D. 1347) Nicola di Rienzi, an obscure man, resolved that he would restore good order to Rome, and render her great as in ancient times. His education was advanced for one of such humble birth, and his mind was enriched with the study of the best writers. He harangued the people on many public occasions; but the nobility, blinded by self-confidence, made no effort to repress the excitement which prevailed. An insurrection suddenly broke out, and soon obtained complete success.

Under the title of tribune, Rienzi was placed at the head of a new government, and had almost unlimited power. The first effects of this revolution were wonderful. All the nobles submitted, though with great reluctance; robbers no longer infested the roads; tranquillity was restored at home, and by severe examples of justice, offenders were intimidated. Indeed, all the people regarded the tribune as the destined restorer of Rome and Italy.

The court of Avignon could not indorse this usurpation, but it was wise enough not directly to oppose it. Most of the Italian republics, and some of the princes, sent ambassadors and recognized the pretensions of the ostentatious Rienzi. The king of Hungary and queen of Naples submitted their quarrel to his arbitration, but he did not undertake to decide it. He was intoxicated by his sudden exaltation, and exhibited weaknesses which were entirely incompatible with his elevated station. Rienzi possessed really great talents, and, if he had lived in our own age, they would have found their proper orbit. His character, as described by Sismondi, Tiraboschi, Petrarch, and other writers, was that of a literary politician—"a combination of knowledge, eloquence, and enthusiasm for ideal excellence, with vanity, inexperience of mankind, unsteadiness, and physical timidity." These latter qualities became so conspicuous that his virtues were overlooked and his benefits forgotten. He was finally compelled to abdicate his government and retire into exile. After an absence of several years, some of which he passed in the prisons of Avignon, he was brought back to Rome with the title of senator, and under the command of the legate. The Romans, still cherishing some of the spirit of insubordination, gladly welcomed their favorite tribune, and rallied around his standard for a few months; but after that time they ceased altogether to respect a man who so little respected himself in accepting a station where he could no longer be free. During a sedition in the city he was killed.

It is difficult to form a correct opinion of Rienzi's history. That great Italian writer, Petrarch, was so blindly infatuated with the romantic life of his hero that he indulged in the most glowing panegyrics concerning him. Hallam regards some of these enthusiastic utterances as extravagant and absurd, and commends the sensible and proper estimate of Rienzi given by Giovanni Villani, of Florence, a strong republican. An illustrious female author, Madame de Stael, of France, in her "*Corinne*," an Italian novel, by a single stroke has portrayed the character of Rienzi, Crescentius, and Arnold of Brescia, the fond restorers of Roman liberty: "*Qui ont pris les souvenirs pour*



*les espérances.*" Not long after the death of Rienzi, the freedom of Rome appears to have revived in republican institutions, though the names associated with the movement are not calculated to inspire peculiar recollections. At the head of the commonwealth, magistrates called bannerets were placed. They were chosen from the thirteen districts of the city, with a militia of three thousand citizens at their command. This new organization was instituted to intimidate the Roman nobility, who, in the total absence of government, had committed intolerable outrages. The execution of several of them the first year, by order of the bannerets, produced a good effect. The citizens, however, entertained no serious thoughts of renouncing their allegiance to the popes, but simply provided for their own safety. It seems strange that they should be obedient to pontiffs who, after abandoning the holy city, continued to demand their support, though denying them protection. But they were ready to acknowledge and welcome back their bishop as their sovereign. Without waiting for their return, they surrendered their republican constitution, and permitted the legate of Innocent VI to assume the government. Some years afterward the institution of bannerets was revived and possessed full authority. During the schism of the Church, Rome probably enjoyed some degree of political freedom; but its internal history is so obscure that it is difficult to ascertain, amid the licentious tumults of the barons or populace, when their privileges were legitimate. The Romans formally took away the government from Eugenius IV, and elected seven seigniors, or chief magistrates, like the priors of Florence. But this revolution was only temporary. On the death of Eugenius the citizens deliberated upon proposing a charter to the future pope. One of their principal instigators was a man of good family, named Stephen Porcaro, who was animated by a strong spirit of liberty. The people, however, were not equally patriotic, and nothing was accomplished. Afterward Porcaro was engaged in a fresh conspiracy, and, having been detected, was put to death under the pontificate of Nicholas V.

The Romans attributed all their troubles to the absence of the popes from the "Eternal City." This was no doubt the cause of their pecuniary embarrassments, for the presence of the pontiffs there attracted crowds of strangers from all parts of Europe, and the expenditures of these visitors, and of the papal court, were a source of considerable wealth to the citizens. Hence they exerted themselves to the fullest extent to persuade the popes to return to their city. Finally Gregory XI returned to Rome, A. D. 1377, and it

once more became the religious center of the world. Gregory died the next year, and the Romans took up arms to compel the cardinals to conduct the election for his successor at Rome, and choose an Italian pope, or, at least, one who would remain in Rome. They even invaded the hall where the conclave had assembled, shouting, "A Roman pope! We will have a Roman pope!" Though persuaded to retire, they crowded the streets for two days and threatened the cardinals with death if they refused to comply with their demands. In the midst of these exciting scenes, the trembling cardinals elected the archbishop of Bari, an Italian, to the papal throne. At this very moment, the mob, still shouting their demands, made a fierce attack upon the hall and were determined to handle the cardinals violently. The frightened ecclesiastics induced the venerable cardinal of St. Peter's to appear as the newly chosen pontiff. He presented himself at the window "hastily attired in what either was or seemed to be the papal stole and miter. There was a jubilant and triumphant cry, 'We have a Roman pope! the cardinal of St. Peter's. Long live Rome! Long live St. Peter!'" The mob, now wild with joy, could not be restrained, but burst into the hall. "The supposed pope was seized by his enthusiastic friends, his gouty and swollen hands and feet were pressed and kissed with such fervor that he shrieked with pain, and swore to them in very emphatic language that he was not the pope."

The archbishop of Bari was hastily proclaimed, and commenced to reign under the title of Urban VI. He was a violent and savage man, and, though he sought to reform the abuses of the Church, he did so by the severest measures. He seemed utterly incapable of conciliating the affections of his opponents, or even of retaining his particular adherents. By his intolerable arrogance and harshness he soon raised up a formidable opposition to him among people of all ranks, and especially among the leading French cardinals. The latter, unable to endure his insolence, withdrew from Rome to Anagni, and thence to Fondi, a city of the kingdom of Naples, where they elected to the pontificate Robert, count of Geneva, who took the name of Clement VII. The seceding cardinals declared that the election of Bartholomew de Pagnano, archbishop of Bari, was a mere ceremony, which they had been compelled to perform in order to calm the turbulent rage of the populace. Urban remained at Rome, and Clement retired to Avignon, in France. All the prominent kingdoms, except France and Naples, supported Urban.

The union of the Latin Church under one head was destroyed at

the death of Gregory XI, and was followed by that deplorable dissension commonly known by the name of the *great Western schism*. Upon the death of Urban, A. D. 1389, the Italian cardinals proceeded to the election of Boniface IX, a Neapolitan; and Clement VII dying, A. D. 1394, the French cardinals raised to the papal throne a Spaniard, who assumed the name of Benedict XIII.

---

## CHAPTER II.

### *THE REVIVAL OF LETTERS IN ITALY.*

AS the three centuries preceding the fourteenth witnessed a rapid revival and growth of architecture and the arts in Italy, so the close of the thirteenth and the whole of the fourteenth century saw the sudden blossoming of Italian literature. Dante (Alighieri), the greatest of Italian poets, rose like a sun, and shone on his native land with an unparalleled splendor, imparting to it a new life. He was born of a respectable family at Florence, A. D. 1265, but his writings belong almost exclusively to the fourteenth century. Attached to the Guelf party, which had then obtained a final ascendancy over its rival, he might justly promise himself the natural reward of talents under a free government—public trust, and the esteem of his compatriots. But the unhappy division of the Guelfs into the Bianchi and Neri factions was unfortunate for Dante, as he was connected with the former, which proved to be the unsuccessful one. He filled the office of one of the priori, or chief magistrates, at Florence, A. D. 1300; and having manifested in this, as was alleged, some partiality toward the Bianchi, a sentence of proscription passed against him about two years afterward, when it became the turn of the opposite faction to triumph. Banished from his country, and baffled in several efforts of his friends to restore their fortunes, he had no resource but at the courts of the Scalas at Verona and other Italian princes, attaching himself in adversity to the imperial interests, and “tasting, in his own language, the bitterness of another’s bread.”

While in this state of exile he finished, if he did not commence, his great poem, the “*Divina Commedia*,” or the Divine Comedy, a representation of the three kingdoms of futurity, hell, purgatory, and paradise. This masterpiece, incomparably the greatest of Italian epics, is divided into one hundred cantos, and contains about four-



teen thousand lines. It was so called because he conceived that there were three kinds of style—the sublime, the middle, or comic, and the lowest of all, which he designated the elegiac; and he selected the second of these for his poem. Even in this finest product of his genius he supported the emperor and the Ghibeline party against their enemies, the Guelfs. He depicted an inferno, in which were placed those petty tyrants and chieftains who had filled Italy with the horrors of civil war. He described a purgatory, in which those men were punished who with too little heroism and firmness had maintained the cause of justice and their country. He finally pictured a paradise, in which those were rewarded who had devoted themselves only to virtue, and had labored for the commonwealth with strong hearts and magnanimous deeds. There he imagined a throne to be raised, and a crown upon it, as a reward for that Henry who he hoped would restore Italy to her ancient power and splendor. This political aim of the “*Divina Commedia*” was only incidental to its moral and religious meanings. The work displays an immense amount of theological as well as philosophical and historical knowledge, and contains some ingenious scientific views, which were fully developed and understood only after several centuries. It is for these that Redi, Magalotti, and other scientific writers quoted from him in preference to any other poet. To every succeeding age the poem has been a mine of elegant quotations; and in some of the descriptions the reader feels transported by the force and solemnity of the phrases, as if it were the work of a prophet.

The unfinished “*Convito*” of Dante is called by Monti the first sober and sound prose writing that Italian literature can boast, and the first on moral philosophy. He abandoned the Latin language, in which he had begun to write, for the Italian, which he raised from comparative rudeness to the highest refinement, believing that its perfection and embellishment would be of great advantage toward uniting Italy. In his Latin treatise, “*De Vulgaro Eloquentia*,” he maintained that no one of the Italian dialects merited the name of the Italian language, which was spoken in all the cities, without belonging to any one in particular. Dante is among the very few who have created the national poetry of their country. For, notwithstanding the polished elegance of some earlier Italian verse, it had been confined to amorous sentiments; and it was yet to be seen that the language could sustain, for a greater length than any existing poem except the “*Iliad*,” the varied style of narration, reasoning, and ornament. “Of all writers,” says Hallam,” he is

the most unquestionably original. Virgil was, indeed, his inspiring genius, as he declares himself, and as may sometimes be perceived in his diction; but his tone is so peculiar and characteristic that few readers would be willing at first to acknowledge any resemblance. He possessed in an extraordinary degree a command of language, the abuse of which led to his obscurity and licentious innovations. No poet ever excelled him in conciseness and in the rare talent of finishing his pictures by a few bold touches; the merit of Pindar in his better hours. How prolix would the stories of Francesca or of Ugolino have become in the hands of Ariosto, or of Tasso, or of Ovid, or of Spenser!"

In the first part of the "*Divina Commedia*" this excellence is strikingly exhibited. Dante, after forming his plan so as to give an equal length to the three regions of his spiritual world, found himself unable to vary the images of hope or beatitude, and the "*Paradise*" is a continual accumulation of descriptions, separately beautiful, but uniform and tedious. While images derived from light and music are the most pleasing, and enjoyed longer in poetry than any others, yet their frequent repetition detracts from their sweetness, and makes the intermixture of sharper flavors desirable. In this third part of Dante's poem there are detached passages of great merit; and even in the long theological discussions, which occupy the larger proportion of its thirty-three cantos, it is impossible not to admire the enunciation of abstract positions with remarkable energy, conciseness, and sometimes perspicuity. The first twelve cantos of the "*Purgatory*" are an almost continual flow of soft and brilliant poetry. The last seven are also very splendid; but there is some heaviness in the intermediate parts. Fame has justly given the preference to the "*Inferno*," which displays throughout a more vigorous and masterly conception; but the mind of Dante can not be thoroughly appreciated without a perusal of his entire poem.

While he was so peculiarly happy in his power of expression, he sometimes introduced coarse idioms, and employed a word to complete his measure or his rhyme, even when the sense of the passage did not warrant it. Indeed, as a writer, Dante had many faults; but he composed his poem in the infancy of a language which he assisted in creating, and therefore could not know that words, which he borrowed from the Latin and from the provincial dialects, would by accident, or through the timidity of later writers, lose their place in the classical idiom of Italy. The phrases which now appear barbarous, and are at least obsolete, might have been fixed by use in

poetical language if Petrarch, Bembo, and a few more, had not aimed at purity rather than copiousness.

Elevation of sentiment is the characteristic feature of this great poem, and its compressed diction and the emphatic cadences of its measure contribute largely to that result. The reader does not find in Dante the amusing poet, but rather the master of moral wisdom, who inspires the mind with reverence and awe. He studied closely and seriously the truths of philosophy, and, learning in the severer school of experience, made his poem a mirror of his heart and life, the register of his solitudes and sorrows, and of the speculations in which he sought to escape their recollection. The banished magistrate of Florence, the disciple of Brunetto Latini, and the statesman accustomed to trace the varying fluctuations of Italian faction, always appears to the reader. While a prodigal display of erudition seems inappropriate in an epic poem, yet in the "*Divina Commedia*" it is not objectionable. Except Milton, he was much the most learned of all the great poets, and, relatively to his age, far more learned than Milton. How sad that one so highly endowed by nature, and profound through instruction, should be filled with a resentment which exile and poverty rendered perpetually fresh. His heart was naturally sensitive, and even tender; his poetry abounds with simple comparisons from rural life, and the sincerity of his early passion for Beatrice pierces through the veil of allegory which surrounds her. "But the memory of his injuries," says Hallam, "pursues him into the immensity of eternal light; and in the company of saints and angels his unforgiving spirit darkens at the name of Florence."

Dante's wonderful production was received in Italy with that enthusiastic admiration which works of genius awaken in an age too rude to listen to the envy of competitors or the fastidiousness of critics. Almost every library in that country contains manuscript copies of the "*Divine Comedy*," and an account of those who have abridged or commented upon it would swell to a volume. It was thrice printed A. D. 1472, and at least nine times within the fifteenth century. The city of Florence, A. D. 1373, with a magnanimity which almost redeems her original injustice, appointed a public professor to read lectures upon Dante; and it was hardly less honorable to the poet's memory that the first person selected for this office was Boccaccio. The universities of Pisa and Piacenza imitated this example; but, according to Tiraboschi, Dante's abstruse philosophy was often more regarded in their chairs than his higher excellences. Italy, indeed, and Europe had reason to be proud of such



a master. Since Claudian there had been seen for nine hundred years no considerable body of poetry, except the Spanish poem of the "Cid," of which no one had heard beyond the Peninsula, that could be said to pass mediocrity; and we must go much farther back than Claudian to find any one capable of being compared with Dante. His appearance made an epoch in the intellectual history of modern nations, and dissipated the discouraging suspicion, which long ages of lethargy tended to excite, that nature had exhausted her fertility in the great poets of Greece and Rome. "It was," says Hallam, "as if, at some of the ancient games, a stranger had appeared upon the plain, and thrown his quoit among the marks of former casts, which tradition had ascribed to the demigods." The admiration of Dante gave a general impulse to the human mind, and inaugurated that "revival of letters" which prepared the way for the Reformation.

The "*Divina Commedia*" abounds with complaints of the corruptions of the Roman Church, and Dante, with his great mind surcharged with the truths of the Bible, denounced the papacy, foretelling retributions, and, like Daniel and St. John, picturing the doom of anti-Christ. He was one of those poets in whom the *vates* and rhapsodist co-exist, and transfusing himself into the heart of Italy, from which the Bible was shut out, he became the leaven that leavened the whole lump, and finally created, in the nineteenth century, a united Italy. In his "*Monarchia*" he pleads, indeed, for a utopian empire, but he does so under the idea that by gathering all nations under a single imperial scepter, the clashing interests of petty kingdoms would be removed, and the rise and perils of wars be obviated. Co-existing with this monarchy, which was to be an embodiment of the reign of the "Prince of Peace," Dante desired to see a universal Church, united, indeed, under one chief, who must be thoroughly spiritual, working in harmony with human government, and never advancing beyond that limitation of Christ, "Render unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's." Deep in the midnight of the papal despotism, and long before the cock-crowing was heard from the little hamlet of Lutterworth, in England, Dante struck the key-note of his immortal song in the following words: "*The Church of Rome, mixing two governments that ill assort, hath missed her footing, fallen into the mire, and there herself and burden much defiled.*"

The poet appears to have had no faith in the infallibility of either popes or general councils. While he freely bestows the keys on St. Peter, and speaks honorably of his early successors, he expresses himself doubtfully, in the second chapter of the "*Inferno*," concerning



DANTE.



Rome's claim to be the mistress of Christendom. By his advice, "Think on what succeeds," he did not encourage those who went into purgatory, and reminded them that no power on earth could avail them but what "riseth up from heart which lives in grace." In the twenty-seventh chapter of the "*Inferno*" he reduces priestly absolution to a conditional declaration of pardon, asserting that "no power can the impenitent absolve;" and in the twenty-fourth chapter of the "*Paradiso*" he describes an imaginary interview between himself and St. Peter, in which, at the request of the latter, he makes a confession of his faith. When asked by the apostle from what source he derived his faith, he answers: "From that truth it cometh to me rather, which is shed through Moses, the rapt prophets, and the Psalms, the Gospel; and what ye yourselves did write, when ye were gifted of the Holy Ghost." When asked how he knew these to be the Word of God, he does not reply by appealing to the authority of the Church or tradition; he says, "The works that follow evidence their truth." He then proceeds to consider the early triumphs of Christianity as proofs of its divine character, and says to St. Peter: "E'en thou wentest forth in poverty and hunger to set the goodly plant, that from the vine it once was is grown unsightly bramble." It is impossible to pronounce a clearer and more decisive judgment on one of the most prominent and important points of controversy between Protestantism and Romanism than Dante has given in this part of his poem.

In the "*Divine Comedy*" a simple adherence to the Bible, in opposition to the human inventions and fables, then so prevalent, is repeatedly inculcated. "E'en they," says the poet, "whose office is to preach the Gospel let the Gospel sleep, and pass their own inventions off instead." After having given some specimens of this, he adds: "The sheep meanwhile, poor, witless ones, return from pasture fed with wind; and what avails for their excuse, they do not see their harm?" Dante has strikingly exhibited, in his pictorial style, the indecent buffoonery which disgraced the pulpit in that age; and he treated the credulity of the people with almost as much severity as the impudence and imposture of the priests and friars. He celebrated the virtues of St. Francis and St. Dominic, but pronounced a severe censure on the degeneracy of their respective orders. He is warm in his praises of the Virgin, but puts them into the mouth of St. Bernard, the great opponent of those who ascribed to her the honors due to Christ. His *hell*, as well as his *purgatory*, are peopled with Romish clergy, from popes down to mendicant friars.



He did not hesitate to compare modern Rome to the idolatrous Babylon of the Apocalypse. In describing the avarice and luxurious living of the priests he sometimes seemed to be at a loss whether to employ the language of ridicule or of indignation; but in the twenty-first chapter of the "Paradiso" he combined them in a passage, which he imagined to be the utterance of a cardinal, who, by a rare fate, had escaped both purgatory and hell. These were not the mere effusions of poetical exaggeration, but the honest declarations of a noble spirit who was deeply impressed with the corruptions of the Romish Church, of which he was a member. In his "Monarchia" he is even more severe on the abuses of the Church than in his poems; and that treatise, which so boldly assailed tradition, the main pillar on which the papacy rests its claims to spiritual authority, has a place in the "Index Prohibitorius" of Rome, A. D. 1559. The influence of Dante upon the religious, intellectual, and political destiny of Italy can not be estimated. He conceived a poem which is admitted to be one of the finest creations of the human mind, charmed a people yet groping in ignorance and barbarism by the sweetness, beauty, and grandeur of his delineations, compelling them to listen to the dictates of morality and Christianity, and also proclaimed the principles which alone could deliver his country from the desolation of civil wars. He closed his earthly career at Ravenna, A. D. 1321.

In the same year that Dante was expelled from Florence a notary, named Petracco, was involved in a similar banishment. Retiring to Arezzo, he there became the father of Francis Petrarch, who was born A. D. 1304. This great man shared, of course, during his early years, in the adverse fortunes of his family, which he was reluctant to restore, according to his father's wish, by the profession of jurisprudence. He was strongly inclined by nature to polite letters and poetry. These are seldom the fountains of wealth; yet they would, perhaps, have been to Petrarch a source of revenue, if his temper could have borne the sacrifice of liberty for any worldly acquisitions. At the city of Avignon, where his parents had latterly resided, his graceful appearance and the reputation of his talents attracted one of the Colonna family, then bishop of Lombes, in Gascony. In him, and in other members of that great house, never so illustrious as in the fourteenth century, he experienced the union of patronage and friendship. This, however, was not confined to the Colonnas. Unlike Dante, no poet was ever so liberally and sincerely encouraged by the great. This social atmosphere had its perils, but Petrarch was independent, and, to a considerable extent, free from

interested adulation. He praised his friends lavishly because he loved them ardently; but he was easily offended, and possessed much of that restlessness and jealousy of reputation which is, perhaps, the inevitable failing of a poet. In a letter to Boccaccio he detracts from the merit of some writer whose popularity had evidently filled him with envy. It was believed by many that he refers to Dante, but others assert that Zanobi Strata, a contemporary Florentine poet, was meant; but whichever was intended, the letter shows the irritable humor of Petrarch. Yet, in his writings he declares that envy did not rule him. But no matter how prominent his faults, they were overlooked in a man who was the acknowledged boast of his age and country.

Clement VI conferred one or two sinecure benefices upon Petrarch, and would probably have raised him to a bishopric if he had chosen to adopt the clerical profession. But he never took orders, his ecclesiastical tonsure being a sufficient qualification for holding canonries. The same pontiff even afforded him the post of apostolical secretary, and this was repeated by Innocent VI. It was either magnanimity or policy that caused Clement VI to favor the poet, because the latter made the residence of the popes at Avignon and the vices of their court the topic of invectives too well founded to be despised. A letter written by him, and dropped in the consistory at Rome, was read in the presence of Clement VI and his whole court. It was inscribed, "Leviathan, prince of darkness, to Pope Clement, his vicar and the cardinals, his counselors and good friends;" contained an enumeration of the crimes committed by the prelates of the courts, for which he expressed his thanks, exhorting them to continue in the same course, by which they would merit more and more his favor; and concluded with these words: "Given at the center of Hell, in the presence of a crowd of demons." In his confidential letters Petrarch seems at a loss for words to express his detestation of the sins of the papal court. "I am at present," says he to a friend, "in the western Babylon, than which the sun never beheld any thing more hideous, and beside the fierce Rhone, where the successors of the poor fishermen now live as kings. Here the credulous crowd of Christians are caught in the name of Jesus, but by the arts of Belial, and being stripped of their scales are fried to fill the belly of gluttons. Go to India, or wherever you choose, but avoid Babylon if you do not wish to go down alive to hell. Whatever you have heard or read of as to perfidy and fraud, pride, incontinence, and unbridled lust, impiety and wickedness of every kind,

you will find here collected and heaped together. Rejoice and glory in this, O Babylon, situated on the Rhone, that thou art the enemy of the good, the friend of the bad, the asylum of wild beasts, the whore that hast committed fornication with the kings of the earth! Thou art she whom the inspired evangelist saw in the Spirit; yes, thee and none but thee, he saw, 'sitting upon many waters.' See thy dress—"a woman clothed in purple and scarlet." Dost thou know thyself, Babylon? Certainly, what follows agrees to thee and none else—"Mother of fornications and abominations of the earth." But hear the rest, 'I saw,' says the evangelist, 'a woman drunk with the blood of the saints, and the blood of the martyrs of Jesus.' Point out another to whom this is applicable but thee."

In this strain Petrarch continues his comment on the description of the apocalyptic Babylon, and inveighs against the monstrous vices, heresies, and false miracles of the papal court. Several of his Latin eclogues are concealed satires on the popes and their clergy. In his sonnets the satire is avowed, and the "Holy See" is characterized as "impious Babylon," "avaricious Babylon," "the school of error," "the temple of heresy," "the forge of fraud," and "the hell of the living." The Abbé de Sade, in his copious "*Memoirs of Petrarch*," complains that the Protestants "have in their declamations against the Church of Rome abused certain secret letters which the poet wrote to his friends, in which he opens his heart with a little too much freedom." But the only way in which the Protestants have "abused" them is by quoting them, which the abbé has prudently avoided amidst his numerous extracts; and when he calls the letters "secret" he seems to have forgotten that Petrarch himself had carefully collected them into a volume by themselves, intended for public use, as appears from his preface, and his having suppressed the names of the persons to whom they were written. The poet, in referring to the residence of the papal court at Avignon, in France, where it continued during his life-time, sometimes deploras its transference from Rome under the name of a captivity. But the chief part of his description is borrowed from that of Dante, which preceded that event; and he himself traces the sad change on the face of the Church to a much higher period. Petrarch supported the project of Nicola di Rienzi, which aimed at the deliverance of the city of Rome from the temporal sovereignty of its bishop. Notwithstanding these bold utterances against the corruptions of the Church and his support of Rienzi, the poet was popular among the most respectable Italian princes, who sought his society and friendship. Besides these were



Robert, king of Naples, and Andrew Dandolo, the famous doge of Venice, both of whom greatly admired his genius. He was also a special favorite among the Visconti, the Correggi of Parma, and the Carrara family of Padua, under whose protection he spent the latter years of his life.

But Petrarch's popularity was not confined to the nobility, but extended to the humbler classes. A goldsmith of Bergamo, named Henry Capra, an enthusiast in literature, earnestly requested the honor of a visit from the poet. The house of this good tradesman was full of representations of the distinguished writer and of inscriptions with his name and arms. No expense had been spared in copying all his works as they appeared. He was received by Capra with a princely magnificence, lodged in an apartment hung with purple, and a splendid bed on which no one before or after him was permitted to sleep. According to the Abbè de Sade, who narrated this incident, goldsmiths in those days were opulent persons; yet the friends of Petrarch endeavored to dissuade him from this visit as derogatory to his own elevated station.

Some of the events of the poet's life were rather singular, particularly his devotion to Laura de Sade. He first saw this beautiful woman A. D. 1327, after he had fixed his residence at Vacluse, near Avignon, and immediately became infatuated. But though the soft passion was expressed in the softest language of poetry, the heart of the fair one was by no means moved. To divert the melancholy which ensued, he traveled through various countries and was at last persuaded to enter into the service of Pope John XXII. But Petrarch was unhappy, and abandoning the pleasures of curiosity and of greatness fled to the shades of Vacluse to converse with his beloved Laura. He again devoted his hours to studious pursuits and to the amatory effusions of his muse. Twenty years of unrequited and almost unaspiring love were lightened by song, and, though the idolized Laura did not heed his poetry, the world did; and Rome, Paris, and Naples, at the same moment, invited him to come and receive the poetical crown. Rome prevailed, and in that famed seat of empire and of genius Petrarch's brow was entwined with the resplendent honor, A. D. 1341. His solemn coronation as poet laureate was the most conspicuous testimony of public esteem he had received; but it is a singular fact that, previous to the ceremony, he had not composed any remarkable works entitling him to such distinction.

He was occasionally drawn from his favorite residence on public

business, and it was during an absence, A. D. 1348, that he was informed of Laura's death, which affected him with the deepest gloom and changed his affection into an intenser feeling, a sort of celestial adoration. The poet's purity in this romantic affair has been maintained by some and denied by others, and in the midst of so many conflicting opinions it is difficult to determine the question. It is generally believed that before the time of his first accidental meeting with her, Laura was united in marriage with another, probably Hugues de Sade, a fact which, besides some more particular evidence, appears deducible from the whole tenor of Petrarch's poetry. Unquestionably such a passion was not innocent, and can not be defended or palliated, though the manners of that age were not of the highest moral type. Like other great and good men, the poet had an infirmity of character which induced him both to obey and to justify the emotions of his heart. The lady, too, concerning whose virtue and prudence a difference of opinion exists, appears to have tempered the light and shadow of her countenance so as to preserve her admirer from despair, and consequently to prolong his sufferings and servitude.

There was combined in the moral character of Petrarch all the elements of a great poet, the emotions of love and friendship, of glory, of patriotism, and of religion. To these impulses he gave full rein, and nearly every page of his writings shows traces of these dispositions or affections. But he possessed a noble delicacy and peculiar tenderness of heart, which made him distinctively the poet of love and gave the greatest celebrity to his name. As the father of Italian lyric he treated all the passions, hopes, and memories of love. With equal power and pathos he lamented the evils of his country and preached peace and union. His various lyrical pieces, sonnets, songs, and triumphs abound in favorite quotations, and his language was so choice that every word employed by him is said to have remained in use from that time to the present. In this department he surpassed all his predecessors and has been equaled by none of his numerous imitators. His name also deserves to be revered by philosophers, archæologists, political orators, and all men who honor and cherish learning and patriotism. Both by precept and example he labored to deliver his native land from intestine discords and to elevate it to a worthier life. His principal philosophical treatises are in Latin. In one of them he consoles a friend suffering under calamities; in another he defends a life of solitude for purposes of study, introducing illustrious examples from the ancients and the Fathers of the Church; in

a dialogue on the contempt of the world he makes fine reflections on the object of life and the destiny of man; and in another he ridicules the conceit of some young men who, on a visit to him, had taken pains to display their skill in disputation. His various Latin treatises and poems demonstrate his erudition, justness of philosophical thought, and exquisite skill in Latin composition.

Among the general excellences of Petrarch's writings are his command over the music of his native language, his correctness of style, his elegance of diction, improved by the constant study of Virgil, and, far above all, that tone of pure and melancholy sentiment which has something in it unearthly, and forms a striking contrast to the amatory poems of antiquity. Most of these are either licentious or uninteresting, and those of Catullus, a man endowed by nature with deep and serious sensibility, and a poet of greater and more varied genius than Petrarch, are contaminated, above all the rest, with the most degrading sentiments. It is worthy of remark that nothing gross or unchaste can be found in the writings of the poet of Vaucluse, whose strains, diffused and admired as they have been, impart to the imaginations of youth an elevation and refinement which criticism can not estimate. "The great defect of Petrarch," says Hallam, "was his want of strong original conception, which prevented him from throwing off the affected and overstrained manner of the Provençal troubadours and of the earlier Italian poets. Among his poems the Triumphs are perhaps superior to the Odes, as the latter are to the Sonnets; and of the latter those written subsequently to the death of Laura are in general the best. But that constrained and laborious measure can not equal the graceful flow of the *canzone* or the vigorous compression of the *terza rima*. The Triumphs have also a claim to superiority as the only poetical composition of Petrarch that extends to any considerable length. They are in some degree, perhaps, an imitation of the dramatic Mysteries, and form at least the earliest specimens of a kind of poetry not uncommon in later times, wherein real and allegorical personages are intermingled in a masque, or scenic representation."

Petrarch lived in different cities, honored as a poet by various courts, until he was found dead in his library with his head resting on a book, and was said to have passed from the serenity of study to that of death, A. D. 1374, at the age of seventy. He will ever be regarded as one of the restorers of classical learning, and more perhaps than any other person as the father of modern poetry. He displayed all the powers of genius and poetical inspiration, not only



in his own native language, but also in Latin. His sonnets are esteemed the sweetest, most elegant, and most highly finished verses ever written in Italian; and his songs possess uncommon beauty and



PETRARCH.

BOCCACCIO.

grace, indicating that the poet had a most charming fancy. He deserves credit, not only for his own writings and scholarship, but also for his services in promoting the revival of learning in Italy; and

the aim of his whole life may be said to have been to seek to accomplish the true mission of literature.

A less versatile author was Giovanni Boccaccio, who was born, A. D. 1313, at Certaldo, in Tuscany. He abandoned successively commerce and law for literature, studied with ardor the "*Divina Commedia*," and cherished the friendship of Petrarch, from whom he received early instruction, and to whom he looked as a patron. After spending some time abroad he returned to his native village, and devoted the remainder of his days to literary pursuits. A prose romance and an epical poem were his earliest compositions, and were written to please, and indirectly to praise, a lady of whom he was enamored. The poem, "*La Teseide*," is in the *ottava rima*, or strophe of eight verses, of which he has therefore been called the inventor, but which was previously known in Sicily. He wrote several works in Latin, and made an expensive collection of Greek manuscripts, but is chiefly known as the author of the "*Decamerone*," and thereby as the father of Italian prose. The "*Decamerone*," or ten days, is so-called because each of the ten persons introduced into it—seven ladies and three young men—relates ten stories each day, one hundred stories being thus told in ten days. The scene is a villa in the vicinity of Florence, whither they had fled from the plague, A. D. 1348, and the description of that pestilence, with which the work opens, is admired as a masterpiece of eloquence. Its avowed aim was only to furnish entertaining narratives, but its real object seems to have been to present a picture of the whole human family, and to encourage virtue by commendation and to correct vice by ridicule. The style of the romance varies with wonderful ease as the occasion requires, and is in turn grave and elevated, most jocose or deeply pathetic, tragic, comic, or satirical. While it touches upon whatever in human affairs may delight or instruct, its beauty of composition is sometimes expended upon the most indelicate subjects.

Despite the unchaste blemishes in it, the general tone of this elegantly written story is wholesome. The poems of Boccaccio are not equal to those of Petrarch, but his prose is unrivaled for its simplicity and grace. He possessed uncommon learning, and shares with Dante, Petrarch, and a few others the honor of contributing to the revival of letters in Europe. His constitution was weakened by his close application to study, and he died, A. D. 1375.

## CHAPTER III.

*WARS OF THE ITALIAN REPUBLICS.*

THE republics of Italy, in the early part of the fifteenth century, were disturbed by wars carried on by rival governors. The death of Gian Galeazzo Visconti, A. D. 1404, was followed by a remarkable crisis in Lombardy. His two sons, Giovanni Maria and Filippo Maria, both young, were placed under the care of a mother who was not competent to train them for usefulness. Through her misconduct, and the selfish ambition of some military leaders, who had commanded Gian Galeazzo's mercenaries, that extensive dominion was soon broken into fragments. Bergamo, Como, Lodi, Cremona, and other cities, revolted, submitting themselves in general to the families of their former princes, the earlier race of usurpers, who had for nearly a century been crushed by the Visconti. A Guef faction revived, after the name had long been proscribed in Lombardy.

Francesco de Carrara, lord of Padua, availed himself of this revolution, and seized Verona, at the same time menacing all the cities beyond the Adige. No family was so odious to the Venetians as that of Carrara, and they gladly made an alliance with the lord of Mantua against Padua, their old enemy. Both Padua and Verona were reduced, and, after surrendering the latter city, Francesco de Carrara, with his two sons, was sent to Venice, where all three were put to death by order of the "Council of Ten," a cruelty perfectly characteristic of that government. This war placed Venice in possession of Treviso, Feltro, Verona, Vicenza, and Padua, and, by thus giving her a considerable territory on the main-land, raised her to the dignity of a leading Italian state. Notwithstanding the deranged condition of the Milanese, no further attempts were made by the senate of Venice for twenty years. They had not yet acquired that decided love of war and conquest which soon began to influence them against all the rules of their ancient policy. Some cautious statesmen of the old school still remained to check ambitious designs.

Sanuto has preserved an interesting account of the wealth and commerce of Venice in those days. The doge, Mocenigo, is represented as dissuading his country, with his dying words, from undertaking a war against Milan, declaring that peace was more profitable.



He stated that three thousand merchant-ships were employed in carrying on the trade of the republic; and that forty-three galleys and three hundred smaller vessels, manned by nineteen thousand sailors, constituted its naval power. Ten millions of ducats were invested in



THE BRIDGE OF SIGHTS.

mercantile business in different parts of the world, and the annual profits to the traders from this amount of capital was four millions of ducats. From the Milanese dominions alone the republic obtained

one million of ducats in coin, and the value of almost a million more in cloths—the profit upon this traffic being about six hundred thousand ducats. Mocenigo reminded the Venetians that, having acquired this great wealth, they would become the masters of all the gold in Christendom, but warned them that unjust wars would lead infallibly to ruin. “You have many among you,” he said, “men of probity and experience; choose one of these to succeed me; but beware of Francesco Foscari. If he is doge you will soon have war, and war will bring poverty and loss of honor.”

Mocenigo died, and Foscari became doge. The prophecies of his predecessor were neglected; and it can not wholly be affirmed that they were fulfilled. Yet Venice is described by a writer, thirty years later, as somewhat impaired in opulence by her long warfare with the dukes of Milan. The latter recovered a great part of their dominions as rapidly as they had lost them. Giovanni Maria, the elder brother, a monster of guilt, even among the Visconti, having been assassinated, Filippo Maria assumed the government of Milan and Padua, almost his only possession. He was weak and unwarlike himself; but he had the good fortune to employ Carmagnola, one of the greatest generals of that military age. Most of the revolted cities had become tired of their new masters; and Carmagnola, by his eminent talents and activity, made this disaffection contribute to the welfare of the house of Visconti, which soon reassumed its former ascendancy from the Sessia to the Adige. It might have obtained greater conquests if Filippo Maria had not rashly and ungratefully offended Carmagnola, who retired to Venice, and inflamed the warlike disposition which the Florentines and the duke of Savoy had already excited. The Venetians had previously gained some important advantages in another quarter by reducing the country of Friuli, with part of Istria, which for many centuries had depended on the temporal authority of a neighboring prelate—the patriarch of Aquileia. They entered into this new alliance, which was in the end very profitable to the republic. Carmagnola commanded their armies, and in two years (A. D. 1426) Venice acquired Brescia and Bergamo, and extended her boundary to the river Adda, which she was destined never to pass.

Florence, the most illustrious and fortunate of Italian republics, rapidly descended from her rank among free commonwealths, though shining with unusual luster. Ever since the insurrection, A. D. 1382, she had been ruled by an oligarchy, composed of the old Guelfic families and the new “*popolani grossi*,” or rich men of the people.



During these fifty years this ancient aristocracy, or party of the Albizzi, suppressed every attempt at rebellion, and banished the principal leaders. The populace and inferior artisans were discouraged by these failures, and their rulers, rendered still more tyrannical, did not hesitate to violate the ancient constitution of the republic. They assembled a parliament, A. D. 1393, after a partial movement in behalf of the defeated faction, and established what was technically called at Florence a "Balìa," composed of a considerable number of citizens, to whom was delegated, for a limited time, a certain degree of sovereignty, having the authority during their dictatorship to banish suspected individuals and to name the magistrates instead of drawing them by lot. This was a dangerous precedent, and at length resulted fatally to themselves and to the freedom of their country. A council of two hundred, consisting only of those who had enjoyed some of the higher offices within the past thirty years, was formed, A. D. 1411, and through this every proposition must pass before it could be submitted to the two legislative councils. It was evident that the Albizzi were jealous of the people, and if they had continued to govern the republic of Florence more innovations would have been introduced until the constitution would have become, in legal form and substance, an instrument entirely favorable to the aristocracy.

But while crushing with great severity their adversaries, the ruling party did not disturb the Medici family, whose prudence, wealth, and popularity had saved them from persecution. They were among the most prominent of the new or plebeian nobility, and from the first years of the fourteenth century their name often occurs in the domestic and military annals of Florence. Salvestro de Medici was partially implicated in the democratic revolution that occurred in the latter part of the fourteenth century; but, the Guelf party having revived, he was not proscribed, though some of his family were afterward banished. During the long period of depression, through which the popular faction passed, they always regarded the house of Medici as their consolation and their hope. The leader of the opposition was a rich merchant named Cosmo de Medici, whose genial and affable disposition made him popular in Florence. Albizzi disliked this wealthy and generous citizen, and succeeded in procuring his banishment, A. D. 1433; but the next year Cosmo was recalled by the Florentines, welcomed with great enthusiasm, and hailed as the "Father of his Country." The Medici soon placed themselves at the head of the state, and secured a power which they never afterward entirely lost. Neither Cosmo nor his successors assumed any partic-



ular title. "Their power was of a different kind from that of the lords or tyrants, either in old Greece or in other cities of Italy. Nor was it such a power as that of Pericles at Athens, as it passed on from father to son. It was more like the power of Augustus and the other Roman emperors who respected the forms of the commonwealth."

The party opposed to Cosmo fled to Milan and induced the duke, Filippo Maria Visconti, who was already at war with Pope Eugenius IV, to attack Florence. The pope sought refuge in the latter city, and was sustained by both the Florentines and Venetians. The duke of Milan was defeated, and Francesco Sforza, the papal general, was acknowledged by the Milanese as their ruler, simply because they could not prevent it. The middle of the century saw Italy divided among four great temporal powers—the kingdom of Naples, the duchy of Milan, and the republics of Venice and Florence. A fifth power—the papacy—now began to assume its true place among the Italian states. It was weakened, however, by the "Great Schism," which continued until A. D. 1416. The successor of Boniface IX was Innocent VII, who commenced to reign, A. D. 1404. After his removal by death, A. D. 1406, Gregory XII, was elected by the Roman faction. Benedict XIII, who ruled at Avignon, fled from France, and the cardinals of both parties held a council at Pisa, on the twenty-fifth of March, A. D. 1409, in order to heal the divisions of the Church. Alexander V was chosen as a compromise; but the followers of Benedict and Gregory would not accept him, and hence there were three rival pontiffs. They were deposed, however, by the Council of Constance, A. D. 1416, and Martin V became the true pope, whom all acknowledged. He was followed by Eugenius IV, A. D. 1431, who reigned sixteen years. His successor, Nicholas V, was one of the greatest of the Roman pontiffs. He built the magnificent palace of the Vatican, and adorned Rome with splendid churches. By his efforts the peace of Lodi (A. D. 1454), between Venice, Milan, and Naples, was secured. After his death (A. D. 1458), Pius II mounted the papal throne, and occupied it six years. Cosmo de Medici died, A. D. 1464, leaving his son, Pietro, to govern Florence. The latter reigned until A. D. 1469, and then joined his illustrious father in the realm of the departed. His sons, Lorenzo and Giuliano, became his successors; but the former soon obtained the entire control, which he held until A. D. 1492.

## CHAPTER IV.

*SAVONAROLA—MICHAEL ANGELO—RAPHAEL.*

ABOUT the middle of the fifteenth century, or A. D. 1452, when the papal throne was occupied by a man of the most profligate character, and the spirit of freedom had almost departed from the Italian republics, the birth of Girolamo Savonarola occurred at Ferrara. He was descended from an illustrious family, originally belonging to Padua, and at an early age distinguished himself in his studies. It is said that from his childhood he was an enthusiast in religious matters, and directed his attention chiefly to theology. His parents desired that he should become a physician, but he resolved to accept the monastic life, and in the twenty-third year of his age entered the Dominican convent at Bologna, as some have asserted, contrary to the wishes of his father. The superiors of the order, observing his deep piety and brilliant talents, appointed him to read lectures on philosophy. He won great distinction in the academical chair; but his first efforts as a pulpit orator were unpromising. A harsh and feeble voice and an ungraceful and unpleasant address were defects that detracted from his efficiency, and he resolved to conquer them. Encouraged by the example of the renowned Athenian orator, he began, with the same enthusiastic perseverance, to overcome these obstacles. In A. D. 1488, after six years of earnest effort, he succeeded, and both surprised and delighted his former hearers by addressing them with a voice deep-toned and well modulated, accompanied with a remarkable gracefulness of action. He had now become a popular orator and a profound scholar.

Savonarola, fearing that his eloquence would give him a popularity which might diminish his piety, determined to return to his cloister, and redouble his monastic austerities. In a short time he was again within the convent walls, renewing his self-denial and his penances with increased rigor, and prosecuting his studies, especially those of theology and metaphysics, with new zeal. It has been said that this event in his history first suggested to him the idea of his divine mission. In A. D. 1484 he commenced to preach on the Book of Revelation at Brescia, and in a series of discourses which he delivered he attacked the vices and luxury of the inhabitants, and boldly de-



LORENZO DE MEDICI.

clared to them that the walls of their city would one day be deluged with blood as a divine punishment for their sins. His followers believed that this threatening was accomplished, and the prediction remarkably fulfilled two years after his death, when Brescia was taken and sacked by the French.

In A. D. 1489 Savonarola went to Florence, and resided in the Convent of St. Mark, which belonged to his order. Lorenzo de Medici admired his talents, and, knowing that he exerted a great



influence over the public mind, endeavored to attach him to his cause; but the monk refused all the offers presented to him, and would not even visit the man whom he regarded as the usurper and destroyer of his country's liberties. Lorenzo had so much confidence in his piety that, when on his dying bed, he sent for him. Savonarola this time obeyed the summons, and went to the ducal palace. He propounded to the dying man three very important questions: Whether he had entire confidence in the mercy of God? Whether he was willing to make restitution of all the goods which he had procured unlawfully? And whether he was prepared to restore the Florentine republic to its former liberty? To the first two Lorenzo replied in the affirmative; but, as to the third, he was silent. Whereupon Savonarola left him without administering the rite of absolution. The accuracy of this statement is disputed by Roscoe in his "Life of Lorenzo de Medici," but it is affirmed by the impartial Sismondi in his admirable "History of the Italian Republics." The latter had access to all the authorities, and is therefore far more accurate and fair than the former writer, who has done great injustice to Savonarola.

During the government of Pietro, the proud and luxurious successor of Lorenzo, the influence of Savonarola increased, and his enthusiasm became more intense as his popularity advanced. Admiring thousands were attracted by his fervid eloquence to every church in which he preached, and he addressed them in the name of Heaven concerning the calamities that were approaching. With all the power of his vivid Italian imagination he described the immorality and luxury which prevailed among all classes of the citizens, the corruptions of the prelates, the disorders of the Church, the troubles of the state, and the tyranny of its rulers. He announced to the people the coming judgments of God, and summoned them to speedy repentance. His denunciations produced a great effect, because, at that time, there were rumors of the invasions of Italy by Charles VIII, of France, whom Savonarola declared to be the monarch employed by Providence to punish the inhabitants for their vices, to introduce a salutary reform into the Church, and to deliver the country from political bondage. An extraordinary reformation followed the preaching of this stern and faithful monk. The people of Florence were strongly influenced by his exhortations; luxury was repressed, the women were governed in their dress by the rules of modesty, general immorality was greatly diminished, and a change of manners became visible over the whole city. After the expulsion of the Medici,

Savonarola gave all the weight of his authority to those who established a popular government in Florence, and he had the satisfaction of beholding it rise on the ruins of the despotic and ambitious house of the Medici. His influence was all in favor of the re-establishment of the republic, and his advice was a controlling power in its counsels. But his greatest efforts were directed to that moral reform which he regarded as absolutely necessary to the perpetuity of the new government as to individual happiness and salvation.

It was evident that a crisis was rapidly approaching. Savonarola had many enemies in Florence among the Franciscans, the Augustinians, the secret adherents of the house of Medici, and the dissolute portion of the citizens, who impatiently submitted to the freedom of his reproofs and the severity of the laws which he had procured. These various parties devised different means to destroy his influence, and finally succeeded by accusing him of disloyalty to the pope. Savonarola had preached that reform should commence with the head of the Church; and in his invectives he had not spared the then reigning pontiff, the infamous Borgia, Alexander VI. The Florentine monk publicly denounced the crimes which, in A. D. 1497, disgraced the family of the pope and scandalized all Italy. Alexander feared that these reforms introduced into Florence would make the corruptions at the court of Rome appear more prominent, and, moved also by personal resentment, he accused Savonarola of heresy, interdicted him from preaching, and finally hurled a bull of excommunication at him. The Florentine republic was likewise threatened if it permitted the heretic to speak, and, at the request of the senate, he desisted for some time from the exercise of his office, seeking to pacify the irritated pontiff. But Savonarola's courage soon returned, and, desiring to manifest his disregard for the papal tribunal, he came forth from his cloister, appeared in public, and declared that the unjust sentence of the pope was invalid. He denounced him as an usurper, destitute of piety, and, therefore, unworthy to be a Christian bishop. Asserting that the Church had no human head, the brave monk announced that he was absolved, by divine command, from all obedience to the corrupt court of Rome. After celebrating mass he conducted a solemn procession round the convent, and then preached in the cathedral to greater crowds than ever.

It required no gift of prophecy to foretell the fate of Savonarola. Defeated in every attempt to silence the object of his hatred, Alexander VI resolved to send Francesco de Pouille, a Franciscan and a preacher of the *Minor Observantines*, to Florence. This deputy from

Rome publicly denounced the monk as a heresiarch, who had seduced the republic, and threatened the government with immediate interdiction and the confiscation of the property of its merchants in foreign countries unless the senate should prevent him from preaching any more. The Florentines were alarmed at the prospect of a conflict with the pope, and, despairing of the help of France, yielded to Alexander, and Savonarola was silenced. Pursuing his advantage, Pouille next declared from the pulpit that he understood that the heresiarch desired to confirm his false doctrines by a miracle. He therefore challenged him to submit the truth to the test of fire, and offered to walk with him through the flames. Savonarola, believing that this was a snare devised by his enemies, declined the fiery contest; but Bonvicini, one of his disciples, accepted the challenge. Pouille refused to go through the proposed ordeal with any one except the heresiarch himself, and another Franciscan, named Rondinelli, appeared as his substitute. The whole city, as well as the government, made preparations for the strange affair. The pope wrote to the Franciscans of Florence, commending their zeal for the honor of the "Holy See," and declaring that the memory of the glorious event would be imperishable.

On the 7th of April, A. D. 1498, the combustibles being prepared, the champions appeared on the spot, surrounded by an immense crowd of eager spectators, consisting of the inhabitants of the city and adjoining territories. The religious ceremonies had been performed, the flames were already kindled, and the multitude waited in breathless anxiety; but the Franciscans began to waver and suggest difficulties. First, they urged that the Dominican, Bonvicini, might be an enchanter, and therefore insisted that he should be divested of his raiment and clothed with a suit of their own selection. This demand having been complied with, they then objected to their opponent taking the host along with him, considering it impious to expose the body of Christ to the risk of being consumed by the flames. But on this point Savonarola was inflexible, and declared that it was unreasonable to deprive his friend of that which was the comfort of all Christians in their trial and the pledge of their safety. There was a protracted dispute on this point, which continued to a late hour; and while it was yet undecided, a violent and unexpected shower of rain came on and extinguished the fire. The senate then dismissed the assembly to the satisfaction, it may be presumed, of both parties. But the multitude were disappointed. Their curiosity had been excited to the highest point, but it was now converted into



indignation and ridicule. They were ignorant of the real ground of dispute between the monks, which had prevented the spectacle; but, hearing that Savonarola had refused to comply with some condition required by the opposite party, the fickle, dissatisfied crowd insulted him. On reaching his convent he addressed the people, and explained the whole affair. An unfavorable impression, however, had already been made upon their minds, and he discovered that his influence over the masses was gone. On the following day he preached with great unction his last sermon, and, at its close, as if foreseeing his approaching doom, took farewell of his audience, and announced himself ready to sacrifice his life for the cause of Christ.

The enemies of Savonarola, taking advantage of the prevailing dissatisfaction, irritated the public mind against him, by calling him a false prophet, who, at the moment of danger, declined to give the proof of his mission. Having collected in the cathedral church that same night, they raised the cry during divine service, "to arms! to St. Marc!" Instantly an infuriated mob rushed with hatchets and lighted torches to the convent, forced open its gates, and seizing Savonarola and two other monks, conducted them to prison amidst insults and threatenings. While the excitement was intense, the conspirators led the mob through the city, killed many of the popular party, and compelled others to abdicate their places, which were immediately filled with persons belonging to the libertine faction. The institution of the carnival and the renewal of the sports that had been suppressed for several years indicated that the government had passed into different hands. A sudden revolution had indeed occurred, the republic was overthrown, and the Medici restored. The insurgents immediately sent a courier to the pope to inform him of the imprisonment of Savonarola. Alexander demanded that he and his companions should be brought to Rome and tried, and, in order to obtain the request, promised to grant indulgences to the people of Florence, with authority to reconcile to the Church all who had incurred excommunication by listening to the sermons of the heretical monk. The senate insisted, however, that the trial should be conducted in Florence, and requested the pope to send two ecclesiastical judges from Rome to take charge of it. On their arrival the process commenced with the torture, and Savonarola, having a feeble constitution, which had been further weakened by labors and austerities, could not long endure the rack. He was, therefore, forced to acknowledge that his prophecies were only simple conjectures; but when his deposition was afterwards read to him, he declared that it was extorted

by bodily agony, and maintained anew the truth of his revelations and of the doctrines he had preached. A second trial of the devoted monk, of which Roscoe has given an incorrect account, resulted as before, and the tribunal, finding them still heretical, condemned Savonarola and his two companions to the flames. He spent the interval in composing a commentary on the fifty-first Psalm, which, in lecturing on the Psalter, he had passed by, saying he would reserve it for his own calamity. On the 23d of May, A. D. 1498, a pile of fagots was erected on the spot where the voluntary trial by fire was to have occurred a few weeks before; and the monks, after having been degraded, were bound to the stake. When the presiding bishop declared them separated from the Church, Savonarola exclaimed, "From the militant!" intimating that they were about to enter the Church triumphant. He spoke no more. The fire was immediately applied to the pile by one of his enemies, who took upon him the office of the executioner, and soon the bodies of the three monks were reduced to ashes, which, by order of the magistrates, were gathered up and thrown into the Arno. Some relics were preserved by the soldiers, who guarded the place, and are still shown at Florence for the adoration of the devout.

There are conflicting opinions concerning the character of Savonarola. The Roman Catholic historians, without exception, and the ardent admirers of the house of Medici, have represented him as a turbulent, ambitious fanatic and demagogue, who endeavored to excite the people against their civil and ecclesiastical rulers, by claiming to possess the gift of prophecy, and to have immediate intercourse with heaven. These interested advocates of the Romish Church pronounced him a vile impostor, who pretended to have supernatural powers, so that he could humble and rule his superiors. On the other hand, his name has been enrolled among the bold witnesses for the truth before the Reformation, and some have called him the Luther of Italy, a glorious reformer and martyr. It is evident that a true estimate of his character can not be obtained by adopting either of these representations. The best and most intelligent men of his age testify to his integrity, sanctity, and patriotism; but there is no satisfactory evidence that he was an Italian Luther. Indeed, it is not certain that he taught the doctrines concerning justification, the communion under both kinds, and others which were afterwards called Protestant. He labored to secure a thorough reformation of the manners of the people and of the clergy, rather than of the doctrines and ritual of the Church. While he believed

that the profligate court of Rome was the fountain whence flowed the corruptions which prevailed in the community, yet he did not seem to understand the true method of securing a radical reform in society. Instead of purifying the fountain by seeking a change in the erroneous doctrines and practices of the Romish Church, he endeavored to cleanse the streams. It must be admitted that he was an earnest and, to some extent, a successful representative of those of his countrymen who, as Christians, lamented the corrupt condition of the Church, and as citizens resisted the encroachments made on their political rights. The fervor of his zeal led him into extravagance, and, in prosecuting his plans of reform, he sometimes yielded to the illusions of an overheated imagination, and deluded himself by believing that he possessed supernatural gifts. This was probably one of the effects of his monastic life. But, admitting all this, there is abundant evidence that he was a good man, and sincerely desired to remedy the glaring evils of his times. Certainly there were few men of the fifteenth century to be compared with him, either as a Christian or patriot.

While Italy produced in this century a Savonarola to reform Church and state, she also gave to the world, at the same period, a Michael Angelo and a Raphael Sanzio, to purify and elevate art. The former was born near Florence, A. D. 1474. His great genius showed itself in his earliest childhood. The ruler of Tuscany, Lorenzo de Medici, a liberal patron of the arts, was so pleased with the boy's simple manners, as well as by his devotion to art, that he invited him to reside entirely in his house, where he remained three years, treated with the greatest kindness. When Lorenzo died his brother, Pietro de Medici, continued to patronize Michael Angelo, but in a different spirit. Treating art as a toy, he employed the artist during a severe Winter to make a statue of snow. A few years after Pietro's banishment from Florence, which occurred, A. D. 1494, Michael Angelo made the celebrated statue of a "Sleeping Cupid," which was sent to Rome; where, without the sculptor's consent, it was shown as a piece of sculpture dug up from a vineyard, pronounced to be a genuine antique, superior to any thing which the art of the day had been able to produce. When the trick was discovered, Michael Angelo's reputation was so increased by it that he was invited to Rome, where he devoted himself to close study, and executed several marvelous works. By the novelty and grandeur of his style he created quite a new era in the arts. He designed the celebrated church of St. Peter's, at Rome, the largest and most magnifi-





MICHAEL ANGELO.

cent in the world. As early as the fourth century a church had been erected by Constantine the Great upon the site of the circus of Nero, to commemorate the spot which had been hallowed to the Christian world as the burial-place of St. Peter, and the scene of many of the early martyrdoms. This church having fallen into decay in the course of eleven centuries, Nicholas V resolved to erect another in its place, which should rival the glories of Solomon's temple. When Michael Angelo was appointed architect he adopted the plan of the

Greek cross, and designed the dome, the tribune, and the transepts substantially as they now are; and down to the beginning of the seventeenth century the spirit of this great man presided over the work and ruled it from his tomb.

The artist also executed the splendid monument of Pope Julius II's tomb. While this latter work was in progress his patron, the same pope, delighted to come and inspect it. His next grand triumph was his painting of the roof of the Sistine Chapel, in the Vatican, which he completed in a year and six months. When Raphael saw it, struck with admiration, he immediately changed his own style, and with the candor of a great mind thanked God that he had been born in the same age with such a remarkable artist. Pope Leo X treated Michael Angelo badly, even compelling him to hew rocks and excavate roads. Afterwards this extraordinary man withdrew to Venice, where he designed the Rialto Bridge. Returning to Rome he finished Julius II's monument, and proceeded with his picture of the "Last Judgment," also for the Sistine Chapel, an immense work, which occupied him eight years. The career of Michael Angelo is an example of the splendid results produced by great powers when joined with great opportunities. He spent the closing years of his life in the construction of the mighty fabric of St. Peter's Church, directing fortifications, adorning the city with superb buildings, finishing the Farnese palace, and executing many other important works. Old age, with its infirmities, came upon him, but he retained the vigor of his mental faculties to the end. He died, A. D. 1563, in his eighty-ninth year. His last words were: "In your passage through this life remember the sufferings of Jesus Christ." He was buried at Rome, but his remains were afterwards removed to the Church of the Santa Croce at Florence, where so many of the illustrious men of Italy have found their resting-place.

Raphael Sanzio, or Santi, was the son of Giovanni Santi, and was born at Urbino, A. D. 1483. By studying the best masters in painting, he soon rose to eminence, and merited the appellation of the "Divine Raphael." He is the Achilles of art; but beautiful as are his works, none excel the perfect picture of his life. Contemporary writers dwell with enthusiasm upon the gentle grace of his manners, the sweetness of his temper, his freedom from envy, and the readiness with which he communicated his knowledge to others. He breathed the atmosphere of love and admiration. By general consent he is acknowledged to have been the prince of painters, and was also an architect, performing some important work in



St. Peter's Church at Rome. He died, A. D. 1520, at the early age of thirty-seven.

The writers of the fifteenth century were not distinguished, like Dante and Petrarch, for creative genius, but delighted rather in reproducing and commenting on the authors of antiquity. The printing press, invented in Germany, was most usefully employed in Venice, Bologna, and Rome, in multiplying copies of the ancient authors, corrected by learned scholars. Only the first steps had been taken by Petrarch and Boccaccio toward a new civilization. The introduction of the mariner's needle by Flavio Gioja had opened the ocean to the Europeans; the travels of Marco Polo had awakened that curiosity concerning the way to the East Indies which led Columbus to the discovery of the new world; the Arabic numerals had been substituted in Italy for the Roman; academies were established to nurture the love of letters, and courts became an asylum for the most distinguished men; and the popes in Rome, the Medici in Florence, the houses of the Visconti and Sforzas in Milan, and of the Gonzagas and Estes in Mantua and Ferrara, became protectors of literature and the arts. Pope Nicholas V is especially celebrated for the encouragement which he gave to every branch of learning, and for the generous sacrifices which he made in collecting books. Alfonso of Aragon, king of Naples, is also eminent among these patrons of literature and science. Ludovico, surnamed the Moor, invited to his court in Lombardy many learned men, painters and architects, among whom were Leonardo da Vinci and Bramante, founded the University of Pavia, granting it many privileges, and opened schools in Milan, to which most renowned professors gave distinction. The name of the Estes should be written in letters of gold among the protectors of literature in Italy. Gian Francesco Gonzaga, marquis





of Mantua, opened a school, which attracted young men from Greece, Germany, and France. The example of the houses of Este and Gonzaga was imitated by the dukes of Savoy, who founded the University of Turin. But the most illustrious of the patrons of letters was Cosmo de Medici, who rose to pre-eminence among the



CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS.

noble families of Europe. He founded one library in Venice and three in Florence, and established the first academy for the study and promulgation of the Platonic philosophy. During his administration of affairs, the beautiful dome of the cathedral of Florence was built, and the city adorned with works of art. Pico della Mirandola was almost unrivaled in erudition, being profoundly versed in various languages.

But Lorenzo the Magnificent may be considered the reviver of Italian literature, and was even called its father. He enriched libraries, reopened the University of Pisa, promoted the study of the popular poetry, and wrote, himself, many admired pieces for the popular taste. Under him Florence became a new Athens. Poliziano, Burchiello, Benivieni, and Pulci were among the poets who flourished at that period. Two names that belong to the fifteenth century are illustrious, especially in the eyes of Americans—Amerigo Vespucci and Christopher Columbus. The former was a native of Florence, and the latter of Genoa. Their discoveries shed a halo of imperishable glory upon Italy, and opened a new era in the history of mankind.

## CHAPTER V.

*FIRST PERSECUTIONS OF THE WALDENSES.*

IT has been truly said that the Waldenses occupy a unique position, not only on the surface of Europe, but also in the history of the Christian world. God selected them to accomplish a great work, and in the performance of it they stood alone. As the snow-clad peaks amid which they dwell look down upon the plains of Italy on the one side, and the provinces of France on the other, so this remarkable people are equally related to ancient and modern times. It is an undeniable fact that they existed many centuries before the birth of Protestantism. All the histories and countries of mediæval Europe present proofs and monuments of the antiquity of the Waldensian faith and worship, in which was the germ of the Reformation. Indeed, the doctrines of Protestantism are as old as the Waldenses, who simply preceded Luther in discovering them in the Bible.

The peculiar and bitter hostility that Romanism has ever manifested toward this holy and venerable community is readily explained. If the Church of the Alps is old, the Church of Rome must be new; if the former is pure, then the latter is corrupt; and if the one has retained the faith of the apostles, it inevitably follows that the other has departed from it. It is natural, therefore, that the Romish hierarchy should wish to destroy this overwhelming proof of her apostasy, and silence a witness whose testimony so conclusively confirms the position of Protestantism. The growth of the Waldenses alarmed the Vatican. In their dispersions over so many lands—over France, the Low Countries, Germany, Poland, Bohemia, Moravia, England, Calabria, Naples—they sowed the seeds of that great spiritual revival which, commencing in the days of Wickliffe, and advancing in the times of Luther and Calvin, made Romanism tremble, and now regenerates its ignorant and degraded multitudes throughout the earth.

In the fifteenth century the Church of Rome made a desperate effort to crush these Alpine Christians. About A. D. 1332 Pope John XXII, desiring to resume the work of Innocent III, ordered the inquisitors to visit the valleys of Lucerna and Perosa, and exterminate the heretics that inhabited them. The bull commanding this persecution undesignedly acknowledged the then flourishing condi-

tion of the Waldensian Church, inasmuch as the pope complains that the synods, which he calls chapters, were used to assemble in the valley of the Angrogna, attended by five hundred delegates. In A. D. 1352 Pope Clement VI instructed the bishop of Embrun, with whom he associates a Franciscan friar and inquisitor, to purify those parts adjoining his diocese which were contaminated with heresy. Clement also urged Louis, king of Naples, to punish any of his subjects who had wandered from the faith, evidently referring to the Vaudois colonies then existing at Naples. Indeed, the pope, in a letter to Joanna, wife of the king of Naples, who owned lands in the marquisate of Saluzzo, near the "Valleys," insisted that she should purge her territory of the heretics. The secular lords, while wishing to obey the pope, were governed by self-interest, and evaded the command, which threatened the extermination of the most industrious and peaceable of their subjects. At that time these princes were often engaged in war among themselves, and had not much leisure or inclination to gratify the caprices of the pope.

Gregory XI, writing to Charles V, of France, A. D. 1373, complains that his officers interfered with the inquisitors in Dauphiné; that the consent of the civil judge was required before any papal judge could institute proceedings against suspected parties, and that great disrespect to the spiritual tribunal was shown in releasing condemned heretics from prison. While the princes and magistrates were disposed to be lenient, the inquisitors did not relax their efforts. One of them, Borelli, had one hundred and fifty Vaudois men, besides a great number of women, girls, and even young children, brought to Grenoble and burned alive. These acts of violence provoked opposition at times on the part of the Waldenses. In A. D. 1375 they attacked the popish city of Susa, forced the Dominican convent, and put the inquisitor to death. Another cruel agent of the Vatican sent from Turin is said to have been slain on the highway near Bricherasio. Many Dominicans suffered the penalty of death by venturing too far in the pursuit of the Vaudois. The persecuting policy of the popes, which was thus inaugurated in the fourteenth century, became more sanguinary toward its close, and the flight of Peter's successor from Rome to Avignon, and the greater calamity of the schism in the Romish Church, did not divert their attention from the confessions of the Alps. The edicts of extermination still went forth, and inquisitors searched the "Valleys" for new victims.

The opening of the fifteenth century was marked by the most



terrible tragedy that the Inquisition had yet enacted among the Waldenses. It occurred on Christmas, A. D. 1400, in the Valley of Pragelas, one of the higher reaches of Perosa, which opens near Pinerolo, and is watered by the Clusone. As the snow was deep on their mountains, the inhabitants, considering themselves sufficiently protected, apprehended no attack; but they soon learned by bitter experience that the severity of Winter had not extinguished the fire of malice, which burned in the hearts of their persecutors. The man named above, Borelli, in command of an armed troop, broke suddenly into Pragelas, with the determination to exterminate the entire population. The terrified inhabitants fled hastily to the mountains, taking on their shoulders their old men, their sick, and their infants, dreading to leave them in the hands of their enemies. In their flight a great many were overtaken and slain. The darkness of the night enabled them to escape from their pursuers, but other dreadful calamities awaited them. The main body wandered in the direction of Macel, and encamped on a summit which rises from the valley of San Martino. Without food, without shelter, the Winter's sky above them, the frozen snow around them, their sufferings must have been inexpressibly great in this ice-clad and storm-swept region. On the following morning a heart-rending scene was disclosed by the early dawn. The hands and feet of many were frozen, while others had perished, and their stiffened corpses were stretched out on the snow. Fifty young children died with cold, some on the bare ice, and others locked in the frozen arms of their mothers. That memorable spot has since been called the Alberge, or Refuge, and to this day in the valley of Pragelas the venerable sire recites to the son the tale of that Christmas tragedy.

During the fifteenth century the bloody work of destroying heretics was vigorously prosecuted, though no fearful catastrophe, like that already described, occurred in the valleys of Piedmont. The inquisitors, ever on the track for them, kidnaped individual Vaudois, whenever they ventured into the plains, and carried them to Turin and other towns, where they were burned alive. But the Roman Church was enraged at the slow progress she was making in crushing this heresy. The number of Waldensians did not seem to diminish; their constancy was unshaken, and no power could compel them to accept the dogmas of Rome. They were as unmoved by the edicts, inquisitors, torturings, and burnings of their unrelenting persecutors as their rocks were under the tempests of hail and snow, which the whirlwinds of Winter hurl against them. Pope Innocent VIII was

in the papal chair, A. D. 1487, when the crusades against the Waldenses seemed to languish, and remembering how his celebrated namesake, Innocent III, had purged the south of France of the Albigensian heresy, he resolved to strike a severe blow, and, by an act of summary vengeance, exterminate the Vaudois as effectually and speedily as his predecessor had disposed of the Albigenses on the plains of Dauphiné and Provence.

The issuing of a bull denouncing as heretical those who had been marked for the slaughter was the first step. This remarkable document, like all others of its kind, was adroitly written, containing the most sanctimonious words, but pervaded with a malignant spirit. The Waldenses were not charged with lawlessness, idleness, dishonesty, or any crime, except disloyalty to the pope, and the practicing of a "simulated sanctity" which seduced the sheep of the true fold. It was proclaimed, therefore, that this "malicious and abominable sect of malignants, if they refuse to abjure, must be crushed like venomous snakes."

Innocent VIII appointed Albert Cataneo, archdeacon of Cremona, his legate to execute his bull practically, and by him papal instructions were sent to all princes, dukes, and powers within whose dominions any Vaudois were found. Among these were Charles VIII of France, and Charles II of Savoy, who were commanded to support Cataneo with their entire military power. "The bull invited all Catholics to take up the cross against the heretics; and to stimulate them in this pious work, it absolved from all ecclesiastical pains and penalties, general and particular; it released all who joined the crusade from any oaths they might have taken; legitimized their title to any property they might have illegally acquired, and promised remission of all their sins, to such as should kill any heretic. It annulled all contracts made in favor of Vaudois, ordered their domestics to abandon them, forbade all persons to give them any aid whatever, and empowered all persons to take possession of their property."

What more powerful incentives than plenary pardon and unrestrained license could be presented to awaken the zeal of the neighboring populations, always too willing to manifest their devotion to the papal Church by shedding the blood and forcibly taking the goods of the Waldenses? The king of France and duke of Savoy were obedient to the summons from the Vatican, and hastened to unfurl their banners and enlist soldiers in the holy cause. In a short time a numerous army was advancing to the mountains to sweep

from their ancient home these confessors of the Gospel faith. Following this organized force was a motley crowd of volunteers, "vagabond adventurers," says Muston, "ambitious fanatics, reckless pillagers, merciless assassins, assembled from all parts of Italy;" in fact, a miserable horde of brigands, and well adapted to the work they were assembled to do. Besides these thousands of ruffians, whom the spiritual and temporal rewards of this combined piety and pillage had attracted, the joint army contained about eighteen thousand regular soldiers.

It was June, A. D. 1488, before all the arrangements for the campaign had been completed. The pope's bull was discussed in all countries, and the din of preparation was heard far and near. All kings were invited to assist the Church in destroying her enemies. The soil polluted by Vaudois feet must be cleansed; the air tainted by Vaudois breath must be purified; and no Vaudois psalm or prayer must be permitted in the future to ascend and spread the infection of heresy. The terrible blow was to fall, not only on the Waldensian mountains, but on the Waldensian race in Germany, in Calabria, and wherever dispersed. While the surrounding nations were excited, and the bustle of preparation resounded throughout Italy and France, these innocent Christians, upon whom this fearful tempest was about to burst, were ignorant of approaching danger. The Piedmontese division of the army marched toward the "Valleys" proper, on the Italian side of the Alps. The French division, advancing from the north, proceeded to attack the inhabitants of the Dauphinese Alps, where the Albigensian heresy, recovering to some extent from the cruel persecutions of Innocent III, had again taken root. Two devastating storms, from opposite directions, or more correctly from all directions, approached those mighty mountains. The lamp of truth which had shone for ages in this sanctuary of the primitive faith was about to be extinguished.

The plan of the campaign was to attack at the same time on the two opposite points of the great mountain chain; and marching, the one army from the south-east, and the other from the north-west, to meet in the Valley of Angrogna, the center of the territory, and there strike the final blow. The French division of this host, advancing against the Alps of Dauphiné was commanded by the lord of La Palu, a daring and cruel adventurer. With his fanatics he ascended the mountains, and entered the Vale of Loyse, a deep gorge overhung by towering mountains. The alarmed inhabitants, beholding an armed force, twenty times their own number, penetrating their



valley, abandoned all hope of resisting them, and prepared to escape. Placing their old people and children in rustic carts, together with their domestic utensils, and collecting such food as the urgency of the occasion permitted, and driving their herds before them, they began to climb the rugged slopes of Mount Pelvoux, which rises more than six thousand feet over the level of the valley. As they climbed the steepes they sang hymns of praise, which seemed to smooth their rocky path and cheer their drooping hearts. Many were overtaken and slain, and thereby delivered from a more terrible death, which awaited the others. At length the fugitives reached Aigue-Froid, an immense cavern, named from the cold springs that gush out from its rocky walls. Standing on a platform of rock in front of the cavern, they saw beneath them only fearful precipices, which must be clambered over before they could reach the entrance of the grotto, but to them this was not a difficult undertaking. This place of concealment is a roomy hall of irregular shape, the roof of the cave forming a magnificent arch, which gradually subsides and contracts into a narrow passage, or throat, and then widens again. Into this grotto the Vaudois entered, the able-bodied men having posted themselves at the mouth of the outer passage, after they had placed their women, children, and old men, in the inner hall, and distributed their cattle and sheep in the cavities which abound on the sides of the cave. The doorway and path leading to it were barricaded with huge stones. Cataneo says they had provisions to last "two years," and there was but little probability of their capture, because the enemy could be hurled headlong down the precipices, even if they succeeded in scaling them.

But their pursuer, La Palu, contrived a plan, which rendered all these precautions and defenses unavailable. Ascending the mountain on the other side, and approaching the cave from above, he let down his soldiers by ropes from the precipice that overhangs the entrance to the grotto, thus securing for his soldiers the platform in front. It seems strange that the Vaudois did not cut the ropes and destroy the soldiers as they were being lowered one by one; but the boldness of the movement evidently paralyzed them, and, terror-stricken, they retreated into the depths of their hiding-places. La Palu would not permit his men to follow them, but, collecting a sufficient quantity of wood, he placed it at the entrance and set fire to it. The black smoke rolled into the cave, and the Vaudois were compelled to decide between death by suffocation and death by the sword. Some rushed out and were massacred, but the greater part remained and

were stifled by the murky vapor. "When the cavern was afterwards examined," says Muston, "there were found in it four hundred infants suffocated in their cradles or in the arms of their dead mothers. Altogether there perished in this cavern more than three thousand Vaudois, including the entire population of Val Loyse. Cataneo distributed the property of these unfortunates among the vagabonds who accompanied him, and never again did the Vaudois Church raise its head in these blood-stained valleys."

The inhabitants of the neighboring valleys of Argentière and Fraissinière had been selected for slaughter, and the catastrophe of the Vale of Loyse convinced them that their only chance of safety was in resistance. By barricading the passes of their valleys and massing their forces, they alarmed the enemy and were not disturbed. A detachment of the French army advanced across the Alps in a south-east direction toward the Waldensian valleys, there to unite with the main body under Cataneo. Marching onward, they slaughtered, burned, and pillaged until at last they reached the Valley of Pragelas, which had been the scene of the Christmas tragedy, A. D. 1400. When this horde of cruel assassins suddenly burst upon them the peaceful inhabitants, not expecting an invasion, were busy reaping their harvests. A panic ensued, the people abandoning their homes, and seeking safety in flight. Some were overtaken and massacred; hamlets and whole villages were burned, and the barbarous deeds of the Val Loyse were repeated in the Valley of Pragelas. Taking combustible materials and placing them at the openings of caves, the soldiers kindled fires, whose fatal smoke penetrated the hiding-places of the Vaudois, and then eddying along the roof slowly made its exit into the clear Summer sky. All was silent within. There, in one motionless heap, lay patriarch and stripling, mother and babe. These outrages aroused the inhabitants, who united and drove the murderers from their valleys, compelling them to pay a heavy penalty for the depredations they had committed.

The Piedmontese division of the invading army was led by the papal legate, Cataneo, in person, and was advancing to those valleys in Piedmont which were considered the ancient seat and stronghold of the Vaudois heresy. Halting at Pinerolo, near the frontier of the doomed district, Cataneo sent a company of preaching monks to convert the men of the "Valleys;" but they returned without having accomplished any thing. The army continued its march, and entered the fertile plain through which flows the river Clusone, amid lovely vineyards and rich corn-fields, and overlooking which are the towering



mountains with their pasturages, chestnut forests, and snows. Turning round the shoulder of Bricherasio, the forces of Cataneo, followed by a multitude of pillagers and cut-throats, advanced up the avenue



VIEW OF LA TORRE.

to La Torre, the capital of the "Valleys," and encamped before it. The inhabitants, inoffensive and without any means of resistance, understood how to cultivate vineyards and lead their flocks to pas-



ture, but were entirely ignorant of the art of war. Beholding this mighty host the Waldensians sent two of their patriarchs, John Campo and John Desiderio, as ambassadors, to request an interview with Cataneo. "Do not condemn us without hearing us," said they, "for we are Christians and faithful subjects, and our *barbes* are prepared to prove, in public or in private, that our doctrines are conformable to the Word of God. . . . Our hope in God is greater than our desire to please men; beware how you draw down upon yourselves his anger by persecuting us; for remember, if God so wills it, all the forces you have assembled against us will nothing avail."

These weighty words were meekly spoken, but they produced no visible effect upon Cataneo and his ruffian host. Their hearts appeared to be as hard as the rocks that rose around them. Believing that these simple herdsmen were entirely defenseless, and desiring to strike a finishing blow, the papal legate divided his army into a number of attacking parties, which were to commence the battle simultaneously at various points. One troop was stationed at the entrance of Val Lucerna. Then the next important movement of the invaders was to occupy the town of La Torre, which is situated on the angle formed by the junction of the Val Lucerna and the Val Angrogna. The inhabitants having fled to the mountains, the blood-thirsty crusaders were probably denied the pleasure of murdering them in their homes. Beyond La Torre the valley is wide, and incapable of being defended. The army moved along it without opposition, the warlike appearance of the troops presenting a striking contrast with the peaceful countenance of the landscape. It was clothed on all sides with a carpet of rich meadows, flecked with the shadows of fruitful trees, and watered by the silver Pellice. A massive wall of mountains rises on either hand, their sides decorated with rich pasturages, golden grain, festooned vines, and dark chestnut forests. Over these are suspended immense battlements of rock; and above all are the everlasting peaks, towering into the heavens, and clad in their white robes of ice and snow. But what were these sublimities of nature to men in whom the worst passions struggled for supremacy?

In their march up the valley the soldiers next came to Villaro, which is situated about midway between the entrance and head of Lucerna, on a ledge of turf in the side of the great mountains, raised some two hundred feet above the Pellice, which flows past at about a quarter-mile's distance. The town was taken without much difficulty, as most of the inhabitants, having been warned of approach-

ing danger, fled to the Alps. History does not record what punishment was inflicted on those who were unable to escape, but it is known that the half of Lucerna, with the towns of La Torre and Villaro, and their hamlets, was occupied by Cataneo's soldiers, whose progress, though victorious, could not be called glorious, because they had conquered only unarmed peasants.

Pursuing their march, the invaders came next to Bobbio, a name not unknown in classic history. The town nestles at the base of the Col la Croix, whose lofty summit points the way to France, and overhangs a path that may have been traversed by apostolic feet. Through the dark gorges of the mountains the river Pellice rushes in a thundering torrent, and meanders in a flood of silver along the valley. At this point the grandeur of the Val Lucerna reaches its culmination. Every traveler halts to survey the scene that must have met the eyes of Cataneo and his marauding host, and which should have softened their hearts. Immediately behind Bobbio rises the "Barion," with all the symmetry of an Egyptian obelisk, but far taller and more massive, its summit attaining an elevation of three thousand feet above the roofs of the little town. The grandest monument of Europe's proudest capital is a mere child's toy compared with this huge monolith. But even this is only one of the majestic figures in the group. Sweeping round the extremity of the valley, and extending above the Barion behind, is a magnificent amphitheater of precipices and crags, inclosed by a background of towering mountains, some rounded like domes, others sharp as needles. Rising out of this sea of hills are the loftier forms of the Alp des Rousses and the Col de Malaure, which seem to guard the gloomy pass that winds its way under overhanging precipices and splintered rocks, until it opens into the valleys of the French Protestants and ends on the plains of Dauphiné. In Summer Bobbio sits in this glorious amphitheater like a queen in a bower of blossoms and fruit, and in the Winter like a king, on whose frowning castle fall the shadows of the mountains and the mists of their tempests. As Cataneo hastened onward to the little town, the repose and beauty of nature should have awakened some emotion of compassion; but his thoughts were only of blood.

The capture of Bobbio was an easy undertaking and an important victory, because the inhabitants had escaped to the Alps or their blood mingled with the waters of their own Pellice, and possession of the town gave the invading army the control of the entire Valley of Lucerna. Having obtained many advantages of position, Cataneo

projected other and remoter expeditions. His plan was to march over the Col Julien, sweep down upon the Valley of Prali, which is on the north of it, punish its inhabitants, move on to the valleys of San Martino and Perosa, and, making the circuit of the "Valleys," clear the ground as he went onward of its polluting heresy, at least of its heretics, meet the main body of crusaders, who he expected would, by this time, have finished their work in the Valley of Angrogna, and unitedly celebrate their victory. If this plan could be executed, the papal forces would then be able to say that they had gone over the Waldensian territory, and accomplished that desirable work so long meditated, often attempted, but never effected.

The expedition across the Col Julien was immediately commenced. For this service a corps of seven hundred men was detached from the army in Lucerna. On the north side of Bobbio the ascent of the mountain opens, and the soldiers begin to march upwards; but they soon find it a toilsome undertaking, as the track is a mere foot-path formed by the herdsmen. As they proceed further, numerous chalets and hamlets, sweetly embowered amid mantling vines, or the branches of the apple and cherry tree, or the goodlier chestnut, present a home-like appearance; but the inhabitants have fled. Continuing the ascent, a great altitude on the mountain-side is attained. Beneath them is Bobbio, a mere speck of brown. There is the Valley of Lucerna, a ribbon of green with a thread of silver woven into it, and lying along amid masses of mighty rocks. There, across Lucerna, towering up in the silent sky are the mountains that inclose the Valley of Rora; on the right are the spiky crags that bristle along the Pass of Mirabouc, that leads to France, and yonder in the east is a glimpse of the far-extending plains of Piedmont.

But the summit is still in the distance, and the soldiers of the papal legate slowly toil up the rugged, steep path. Ascending higher, they look down on pinnacles which half an hour before looked down on them. Other lofty eminences, tall as the former, still rise above them; they climb to these spires of Nature's cathedral, which in their turn sink beneath their feet. This process is repeated again and again, until at last they stand upon the downs that clothe the shoulders of the mountain. The scene around them now becomes one of stupendous and inexpressible grandeur. Away to the east, now fully within the range of vision, is the plain of Piedmont, level as the ocean, and green as a garden. Dark gorges and fearful abysses yawn at their feet, while pinnacles resembling spikes



peer up from below, as if to buttress the mountains. A multitude of Alps seem to fill the horizon. Prominent among these on the east is the Col la Vechera, whose snow-capped summit attracts the eye to the more than classic valley over which it towers, where the *barbes* in ancient days were accustomed to assemble in synod, and sent out missionaries at the peril of life to distribute the Bible and sow the seed of the kingdom. As this was the terminating point of their expedition in the Val di Angrogna, the advancing corps no doubt marked the spot. Monte Viso, the crowning glory of the scene, rising up in the west in bold relief and appearing in the ebon vault like a mountain of silver, spread its magnificence before them; but these crusading soldiers had neither eyes to see nor hearts to feel the majesty of God's works.

The pass terminates in a steep grassy slope, which they climbed on their hands and knees, and, standing on the summit, they looked down on the Valley of Prali, then a scene of peace. Its snow-clad hills, conspicuous among which is the Col 'd Abries, stood as a guard around it. Foaming torrents rolled down their sides, and, by uniting in the valley, formed a full and rapid river. Numerous hamlets were scattered over the bosom of the plain. The peasants were working in the corn-fields and meadows; their children played around the humble cottages; their herds browsed in the rich pastures. This flock of human vultures had suddenly appeared on the mountains above, and with greedy eyes looked down upon their prey. Believing that a few hours' work would convert these dwellings into smoldering ruins, these seven hundred assassins rushed down on the plain to slaughter the inhabitants and take their herds and goods. But the humble peasants of this secluded valley, instead of fleeing, as the soldiers expected, hastily assembled and prepared to defend their homes. A battle was fought at the hamlet of Pommiers. Fired with indignation at the cowardly and bloody assault, the Vaudois, with rude weapons, and an unwavering trust in God—which gave them strength and courage—attacked the enemy, already wearied with the rugged, slippery tracks of the mountains. The entire company, with the exception of one ensign, was cut down. During the carnage he escaped and ascended a mountain stream. Finding a cavity which the Summer heats had formed in a mass of snow, he crept into it for safety, and remained there in concealment for some days until at last, driven forth by hunger and cold, he went to the men of Prali and entreated their mercy. They generously pardoned this solitary survivor of all the seven hundred that had come to massacre them, and

sent him back across the Col Julien to those from whom he had come, that they might know the determination of the Vaudois to fight for their hearths and altars, and that they might ascertain the fate of the six hundred and ninety-nine.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

### *FAILURE OF CATANEO'S EXPEDITION.*

RETURNING to the main body of the papal army, we find Cataneo encamped almost at the gates of La Torre, beneath the shadow of the Castelluzzo. The entrance to the Val di Angrogna is near the place where the camp was established. This valley extends a dozen miles into the Alps, consisting of a grand succession of open dells and narrow gorges, with walls of majestic mountains on either side, and terminating in a noble circular basin—the Pra del Tor—which is surrounded with snowy peaks, and forms the most interesting spot in all the Waldensian territory, being the seat of their college, and the meeting-place of their *barbes*. In the Pra del Tor, or Meadow of the Tower, Cataneo expected to find the mass of the Waldensian people assembled, supposing it to be their strongest refuge. Besides his own army, he expected to have the assistance of the corps which he had sent round by Lucerna, and which, no doubt, had made the circuit of the “Valleys,” devastated Prali and San Martino, climbed the mountain barrier, and would soon reach La Torre. While he awaited their coming the corpses of all that slain host were lying in the valley of Prali; but Cataneo was ignorant of their fate. The humble supplication of the Waldenses for peace was contemptuously rejected, as we have stated in the previous chapter, and now they must choose one of three courses: accept the doctrines of the Romish Church, be slaughtered like sheep, or fight for their lives. They resolved to go to war, and prepared for it by first removing to a place of safety all who were not able to bear arms.

Taking their ovens, kneading-troughs, and other culinary utensils, conveying their aged on their shoulders, and leading their children by the hand, they ascended the hills in the direction of the Pra del Tor, at the head of the Val di Angrogna. They could be seen traversing the rugged paths, transporting their household articles, and making the mountains melodious with their religious songs, which they



sweetly sung as they advanced. Many remained behind to manufacture pikes and other weapons of defense and attack, to repair the barricades, to arrange themselves in fighting parties, and assign to



PASS OF PRA DEL TOR.

the various corps the positions they were to defend. Cataneo commanded his army to move forward, feeling confident that on the same spot where the *Barbes* had so often met in synod, and enacted rules



for the government of their Church and the spread of their faith, he would complete the campaign by proclaiming the final extinction of the Waldensian heresy.

He advanced to a point near the town of La Torre, then made a sharp turn to the right, and entered the Val di Angrogna. Its opening is soft and even as any meadow in America, and the invaders, finding no obstructions, marched onward. The Vaudois determined to make a stand on the heights of Rocomaneot, and accordingly stationed their fighting men along its ridges. Clad in the simplest armor, the bow being almost their only weapon of attack, and their bucklers only skin, covered with the bark of the chestnut tree, these brave men awaited the beginning of the conflict. There were a number of women and children gathered for shelter in a hollow which is protected by the rising ground on which their fathers, husbands, and brothers were arranged for battle. The Piedmontese soldiers advanced up the acclivity, and sent a shower of arrows into the Waldensian line, which made it waver. Those behind, beholding the danger, fell on their knees, and extending their hands in supplication to the God of battles, cried aloud, "O God of our fathers, help us! O God, deliver us!" The attacking host heard that cry, and one of its captains, Le Noir of Mondovi, or the Black Mondovi, a bigoted, proud, blood-thirsty man, instantly shouted out that his soldiers would give the answer, pronouncing horrible blasphemies with the threat. As he spoke he raised his visor, and immediately an arrow from the bow of Pierre Revel of Angrogna penetrated his skull between the eyes, and he fell dead on the earth. The death of this daring leader disheartened the papal army. The soldiers began to retreat, and were chased down the slope by the Vaudois, who now rushed down upon them like their own mountain torrents. After driving the enemy to the plain, and destroying many in their flight, the Waldenses returned toward evening to the heights where they had triumphed, to celebrate with songs the victory which the God of their fathers permitted to crown their arms.

In a few days Cataneo, burning with shame and rage, because he had been defeated by herdsmen, reassembled his forces and made a second attempt to enter the Angrogna. After passing the heights of Rocomaneot, the scene of his first disaster, and not encountering any resistance, he plunged into the narrow defiles beyond, believing that success would now attend his efforts. The path through this dark passage is overhung with great rocks, rendered gloomy by the branches of large chestnut-trees that extend over it, and then termi-

nates in an ample and fertile valley. Thus far the papal leader had proceeded without opposition, and had in his possession that part of of the Val di Angrogna on the left of the torrent, including numerous hamlets, with their finely cultivated fields and vineyards; but he saw no inhabitants. They had fled to the men of Lucerna in the Pra del Tor, and between him and them stood the "Barricade," a steep mountain of Cyclopean height and strength, which extends like a wall across the valley.

It now seemed as if the advance of Cataneo must here end. He beheld the white peaks around the Pra; but between him and his prey rose the Barricade, which could not be scaled. After searching he found, unfortunately for him, an entrance, which some convulsion of nature had made by rending the mountains and forming a long, dark, and narrow chasm, and through this runs the one only path to the head of Angrogna. Into this frightful gorge the commander of the papal host boldly led his men, little thinking how few would ever return. On the side of the mountain is a rocky ledge, so narrow that only two abreast can traverse it, and in case of attack, either in front or in rear or from above, there is no opportunity to retreat, nor can the assailed party find room to fight. This only pathway through the chasm is midway between the bottom of the gorge, along which thunders the stream, and the summit of the mountain. The naked cliff rises up perpendicularly at least one thousand feet, in some places leaning over the path in huge masses, and threatening to fall upon it. At one point the golden beams of the sun shine in through fissures in the mountain side, relieving the darkness of the chasm and making it visible. At another, appears a level space of about a half-acre, affording room on the brink of the mountain to a clump of birches, with their tall, silvery trunks, or a chalet, with its bit of bright, closely shaven meadow. But these cheerful spots only partially relieve the rugged features of the terrible chasm, which runs from one to two miles, and suddenly opens, with a burst of light, revealing to the eye a flashing of white peaks above, and a vast amphitheater of meadow beyond, apparently large enough for the encampment of an entire nation.

The papal army marched as best they could along the narrow ledge, and was now approaching the Pra. Cataneo was confident that his prey could not escape him; and the Waldenses seemed to him possessed of but one neck, which he would soon sever at a blow. But God protected his people. He had said of the invader, as of another tyrant of former ages, "I will put my hook in thy nose,

and my bridle in thy lips, and I will cause thee to return by the way by which thou camest." But by what agency was this host to be destroyed? God did not send a mighty angel to blockade the pass and smite Cataneo's army, as he did Sennacherib's. He had power to awaken the sleeping thunder and hurl its bolts, and to rain the hailstones upon Cataneo's soldiers, as of old on Sisera's, but they fell not. An earthquake, rocking the ground, or a whirlwind, rending the mountains, would have discomfited the papal forces; but all was quiet in nature's realm. The instrumentality employed to shield the Vaudois was one of the lightest and frailest in the material world, but it closed the pass as effectually as bars of adamant could have done.

The Vaudois beheld a white cloud, no larger than a man's hand, gathering on the summit of the mountain, about the time the Piedmontese army would be entering the defile. That cloud, unobserved at first by the invaders, became rapidly larger and blacker, and soon commenced to descend, a sea of murky vapor, rolling down the side of the mountain, wave on wave, like an ocean tumbling out of heaven. Falling into the chasm, and filling it from top to bottom with a thick, black fog, it covered Cataneo's host, and instantly they were in night, unable to see either before or behind. They were bewildered and stupefied, and could neither advance nor retreat.

The Waldenses, believing that God had interposed in their behalf, and given them power to defeat the enemy, climbed the slopes of the Pra, and, coming out of all their hiding-places in its environs, hastened along the familiar paths of the mountain. While the papal army stood riveted beneath them, panic-stricken by the double calamity of the defile and the mist, the Vaudois tore up the great stones and rocks, and sent them thundering down into the ravine, crushing the papal soldiers where they stood. Then some of the Waldenses, sword in hand, boldly entered the chasm and attacked them in front, spreading consternation through the entire army. They attempted to flee; but the confusion in their own ranks was more fatal than the sword of the Vaudois, or the rocks that, swift as an arrow, came bounding down the mountain. Amid the excitement they ran against one another and threw each other down in the struggle. Some were trodden to death; others were rolled over the precipice, and crushed on the rocks below or drowned in the torrent.

History records the fate of one of these invaders, a certain Captain Sacquet—a man, it is said, of gigantic stature, from Polonghera, in Piedmont. Like his Philistine prototype, he began to curse the



Waldensian dogs; but while the words were yet in his mouth his foot slipped, and he rolled over the precipice into the torrent. His body was carried away by the stream, and finally deposited in a deep eddy or whirlpool, called, in the *patois* of the country, a "tompie," from the noise made by its waters. To this day it bears the name of the *Tompie de Sacquet*, or Gulf of Sacquet.

For a whole year this cloud of war hung above the "Valleys," and discharged its fury upon the Waldenses, inflicting much suffering and loss. The burning of their homes, the devastation of their fields, the plundering of their goods, and the massacre of their people were great calamities; but the invaders suffered more than they inflicted. Few of the eighteen thousand regular troops, and of an equal number of desperadoes, that started out in the campaign, ever returned to their homes. Their corpses enriched the mountains and valleys they had come to subdue. They were generally cut down one by one. Flying parties of Vaudois would suddenly issue from some cave known only to themselves, or from the mist in a narrow defile, attack and defeat the enemy, and then as suddenly retreat behind the protecting rock or into the friendly vapor. Thus it came to pass that, in the words of Muston, "this army of invaders vanished from the Vaudois mountains as rain in the sands of the desert."

"God," says Leger, "turned the heart of their prince toward this poor people." He sent a prelate to their "Valleys," to assure them of his good will, and intimated his wish to receive their deputies. Twelve of their more venerable men were sent to Turin, and, being admitted into the duke's presence, made such a statement of their faith that he candidly confessed that he had been deceived concerning them, and would not again permit such wrongs to be inflicted upon them. He several times remarked that he "had not so virtuous, so faithful, and so obedient subjects as the Vaudois." He surprised the deputies by expressing a wish to see some of the Vaudois children. Twelve infants, with their mothers, were brought from the Valley of Angrogna and presented to the prince. Closely examining them, and finding them well-formed, he expressed his pleasure in beholding their healthy faces and clear eyes. He had been informed that "the Vaudois children were monsters, with only one eye placed in the middle of the forehead, four rows of black teeth, and other similar deformities." This young ruler, Charles II, was humane and wise, and promised the Vaudois that they should not be molested in the future. Thus the storm of persecution ceased, A. D. 1489, and the Alpine Christians had rest.

## CHAPTER VII.

*LUTHER'S JOURNEY TO ROME.*

AN interesting event in the religious history of Rome was Luther's visit to it, A. D. 1510, or, according to others, A. D. 1512. While meditating in his cell at Erfurt, the sinfulness of his own heart and his helplessness as a lost sinner were revealed to him. At Rome he was to be shown the vileness of that Church which he still believed to be the Church of Christ and the abode of holiness. As is often the case, a very trifling circumstance led to results of momentous importance both to Luther himself and to Christendom. A quarrel having broken out between seven monasteries of the Augustines and their vicar general, they agreed to submit the matter to the pope, and as Luther was a young man of eloquence and sagacity, he was selected to undertake the task. In imagination we now behold him starting for the metropolis of Christendom. As every step brought him nearer the "Eternal City," illustrious as the abode of the Cæsars, and still more illustrious as the abode of the popes, the pulse of the young monk no doubt beat quicker, because to him Rome was a type of the Holy of Holies. Was not the throne of God's vicar there? Did not the oracle of infallibility reside there? Were not the consecrated ministers and priests of the Lord dwellers within its sacred walls? Did not armies of devout pilgrims and tribes of holy anchorites and monks go up thither every year to pay their vows in her temples and prostrate themselves at the footstool of the apostles? The heart of Luther no doubt was thrilled with deep emotion when he thought that his feet would stand within the gates of this thrice holy city.

But, alas! his bright dream was not to be realized at the end of his journey; a terrible disenchantment awaited him, or rather a happy emancipation from an illusion both enfeebling and pernicious. It had imprisoned truth and enchained the nations, and Luther would be its captive until this spell was broken. Christendom could not be emancipated by blows from a fettered arm. It was necessary that the monk should see Rome, not as his dreams had painted, but as her own corruptions had made her. He must behold her with his own eyes, because a description of her moral degradation by another

would have been discredited by him. The more profound the idolatrous reverence that he felt as he approached the city, the more resolute would be his purpose when recrossing her threshold not to leave of that wicked and tyrannical power one stone upon another.

Luther passed over the Alps and descended upon the fertile plains of Lombardy. At the present time the traveler proceeds with ease and pleasure along magnificent highways through the snows and rocks that form the northern wall of Italy; but the German monk was compelled to scale this rampart by rugged, narrow, and dangerous tracks. The sublime scene that met his eye and regaled his spirits must have elevated and expanded his mind. There was a charm to him as to others in the rapid transition from the homely German plains and the frowning Alps to the brilliant sky, the voluptuous air, and the smiling landscape, bright with fruits and flowers which burst upon his sight when he had accomplished his descent. The ideality of the Italian began to mingle with the robustness of the Teuton. Luther, weary in body and desiring to refresh himself a few days, entered a monastery situated on the banks of the Po. He was struck with wonder at the splendor of the establishment, whose annual revenue of thirty-six thousand ducats was all expended in feeding, clothing, and lodging the monks. This enormous sum enabled them to live in elegance. Their apartments were sumptuous in the extreme, being inlaid with marble, adorned with paintings and filled with rich furniture. Their clothing was equally luxurious and delicate, consisting mostly of silks and velvet. They sat down daily at a table loaded with dishes containing the most exquisite and skillfully cooked food. The German monk in his native land had been accustomed to live in a bare cell, and at times his provision for each day was only a herring and a small piece of bread. He was greatly astonished, but remained silent. When Friday came he expected that, as faithful sons of the Church, they would obey her commands and not taste flesh; but he was shocked to find the table groaning under the same abundance as before, and dishes of meat as on other days. Luther could no longer restrain himself, but cried out: "Such things may not be eaten. The pope has forbidden them." The monks opened their eyes in astonishment on the rude German, and were indignant at his boldness. This reproof did not spoil their appetite, but they feared that the stranger might report their manner of life at headquarters. While they were consulting together how to obviate this danger, the porter of the establishment, a humane man, informed Luther that he would incur a great risk by remaining there. After receiving this friendly



counsel he resolved to profit by it while health permitted, and without delay departed from the monastery.

The monk, traveling on foot, next came to Bologna, "the throne of the Roman law," where he became dangerously sick. In addition to his bodily suffering, he experienced great mental depression from those feelings of melancholy natural to one who expects to die in a foreign land. Then, to make his anguish still more intolerable, his religious condition alarmed him. The judgment-seat rose up before him, and the thought of appearing in the presence of God filled his soul with dread. The old terror and anguish, though less violent, returned to him. As he waited for death he thought he heard a voice saying to him: "The just shall live by faith." So vivid was the impression it made upon him that Luther believed the voice was from heaven. This was the second time this passage of Scripture had been addressed to him by some invisible power. While lecturing in his chair at Wittenberg on the Epistle to the Romans, he had come to these same words: "The just shall live by faith," and they impressed him so deeply that he was compelled to pause and ponder over them. He asked himself again and again, What do they mean? There was only one meaning in them, and it was simply this, that the just have a new life which is derived from faith. But faith on whom, and on what?

On whom but on Christ, and on what but his atoning merits as the only ground of salvation? If that be so, pardon and eternal life are not of works, but of faith; they are the free gift of God to the sinner for Christ's sake.

So had Luther reasoned when these words first penetrated his soul, and so did he again reason in his sick-room at Bologna. They were a needful admonition to him now that he was approaching a city where endless rites and ceremonies had been invented to enable men to live by works. His



GIOTTO.

sickness and anguish had been the means of teaching him the first elements of life and the only one source of holiness. He learned that this holiness springs up in the heart where faith is enthroned, and

therefore is not restricted to any soil, any system, or any rite. Its source was not in Rome, but in the Bible; its bestower was not the pope, but the Holy Spirit. "The just shall live by faith." As he stood at the gates of death these words seemed to shed a light all around him. He arose from his bed healed both in body and soul. Resuming his journey, he traversed the Apennines, and experienced no doubt after his sickness the invigorating influence of their healthful breezes and the fragrance of their dells, bright with the blossoms of early Summer. Crossing this rugged chain of mountains, he descended into that delicious valley, where Florence sits gracefully on the banks of the Arno amid lovely cypress and olive groves, and under a sky where light lends beauty to every object on which it falls. Here Luther made his next resting place.

At that time the "Etrurian Athens," as Florence has been called, was in its first glory. Its many magnificent and sumptuous edifices had been recently erected and still reflected their pristine beauty and freshness. Already Brunelleschi had hung his dome—the largest in the world—in mid-air; already Giotto had raised his Campanile, whose great height, elegant form, and variously colored marbles make it the prominent feature of the city. Already the Baptistery had been constructed with its bronze doors which Michael Angelo declared to be "worthy of being the gates of Paradise." When the future reformer visited it, Florence was adorned with other monuments and works of art. Having been familiar with only the comparatively homely and unattractive architecture of a northern land, he could not be indifferent to these splendid creations of genius which he beheld in Italy. Wood was then often used in Germany and England in the erection of dwellings, but the Italians built with marble.

As a scholar, Luther could appreciate many other things in the Etrurian capital. It was the cradle of the *Renaissance*. In the previous century the house of Medici had risen to prominence. Cosmo, the founder of the family, had amassed immense riches in commerce, and, being passionately fond of letters and arts, he freely expended his wealth in the magnificent patronage of scholars and artists. He and his son Lorenzo welcomed to his superb villa, on the sides of Fiesole, lovers of letters from every land, who were entertained with princely hospitality. To this delightful retreat came learned men from England and the north of Europe, and even from the East, to meet the poets and philosophers of Italy. With the city, the Arno, and the cypress and olive clad vale beneath them, these eminent scholars would assemble in groups in the alcoves of the gardens, or

walk on the terraces, sometimes prolonging their conversation on the new learning and the renovated age, which literature was producing, until the shadows of night concealed the domes of Florence at their feet and brought out the stars in the calm azure overhead. Thus the city of the Medici became the center of that intellectual and literary revival which was then radiating over Europe and heralding a day of more glorious and blessed light than any which philosophy and letters have ever shed. How sudden and desolating the change to Italy when this light was extinguished, and her morning turned into the shadow of death!

But Florence had very recently been the scene of events of which doubtless Luther had heard, and which must have touched a deeper chord in his heart than its grand edifices and literary glory could possibly awaken. Only fourteen years had elapsed since Savonarola had been burned on the Piazza della Gran' Ducca, for upholding the supreme authority of the Scriptures, denouncing the corruptions of the Church, and teaching that men are to be saved, not by good works, but by the expiatory sufferings of Christ. Luther had learned these same truths in his cell; their light, shining from the pages of the Bible, had illuminated his darkened mind; the Holy Spirit, with the iron pen of anguish, had engraven them upon his heart; he had proclaimed them to listening crowds in his wooden chapel at Wittenberg, and on this spot in Florence, already marked by a statue of Neptune, a brother monk had been burned alive for preaching in Italy the same doctrines which he had been advocating in Saxony. He regarded the martyrdom of Savonarola as an augury of both good and evil. He was encouraged by the fact that a brother in this far-distant country, by the study of the same book, had reached the same conclusion that he arrived at in Germany concerning the way of salvation. Luther was cheered, moreover, to think that the Florentine monk had been enabled to seal his testimony for the truth with his blood.

But the stake of Savonarola might be differently interpreted, and to some was prophetic of other stakes to be planted in the future. The death of the noble confessor indicated that the ancient hatred of the darkness to the light was as bitter as ever, and that the enemy would not abdicate without a mighty struggle. Truth was not to progress peacefully amid the plaudits of the multitude; but, on the contrary, her path would be through tempest and conflict. She was compelled to win at a fearful cost every step of her advance, and before she could reign she must suffer and bleed.



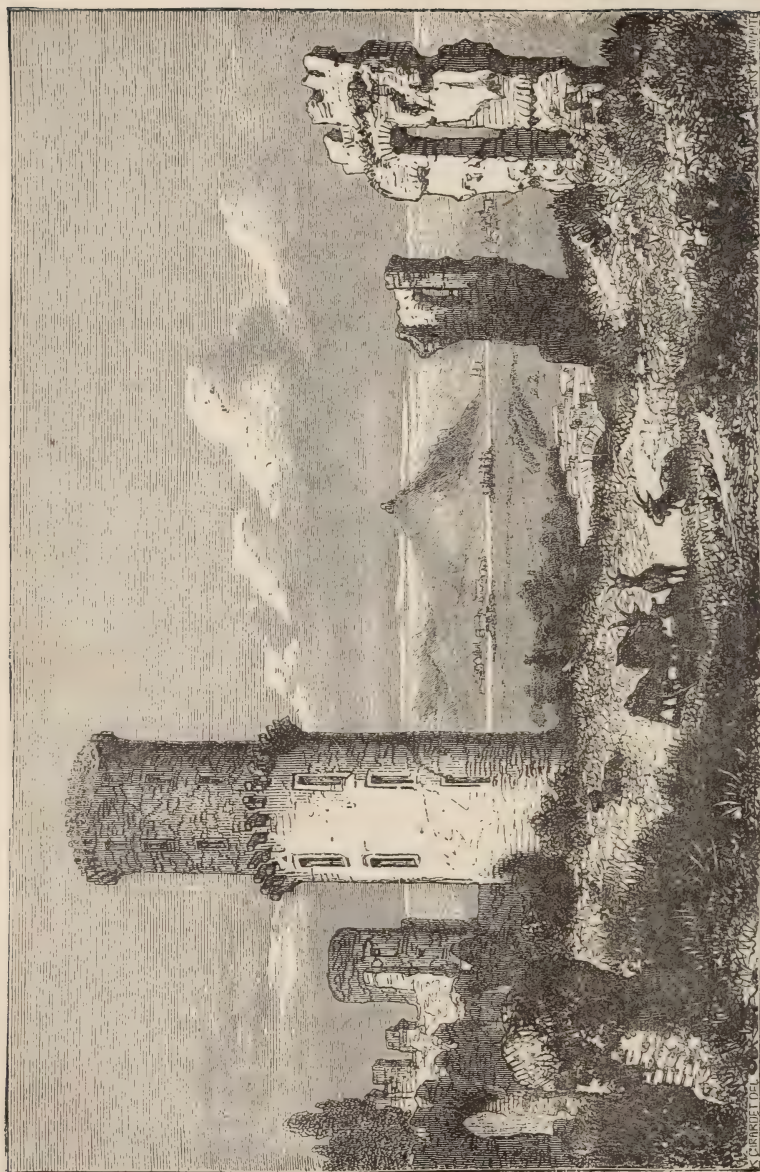
These were among the instructive lessons which Luther learned on the spot to which, no doubt, he often came to meditate and pray. The author, when visiting Florence in 1871, was shown the Bible of Savonarola, which is preserved in the library of San Lorenzo. His small, elegant handwriting may be seen covering the broad margin of its leaves. After his martyrdom his disciples were accustomed to come secretly and kiss the spot where he had been burned. When the reigning duke, Pietro de Medici, ascertained this fact he resolved that the practice which gave him annoyance should be discontinued, and accordingly erected on the spot a statue of Neptune, with a fountain falling into a circular basin of water, and sea-nymphs, satyrs, and tritons clustering on the brim. The device of the duke, however, has only rendered more memorable, instead of obliterating, the event of the martyrdom and the spot where it occurred.

Without doubt, another point of anxious inquiry to Luther was to know how many disciples Savonarola had left behind him in the city in which he had poured out his blood. The answer to this important question was not encouraging. The zeal of the Florentines had abated. They saw that it was hard to enter into life as Savonarola had done, and, therefore, were not inclined to travel the thorny path of persecution which possibly might lead to the narrow gate of martyrdom. The admirers of the sainted monk praised him, but they had not the courage to imitate him. Florence might have been the cradle of an evangelical *Renaissance* if her sons, who, under the voice of their great orator and preacher, seemed to be not far from the kingdom of heaven, had not drawn back; but when brought face to face with the stake they crouched down before the twofold burden of sensuality and superstition. When Luther commenced his journey he believed that a peculiar sanctity sprang spontaneously, as it were, out of the holy soil of Italy; but so far he had failed to discover it. The farther he advanced into the country, the more he was shocked at the impiety and irreverence which characterized all ranks, especially the "religious." There appeared to be a universal relaxation of morals. The land was defiled with avarice, pride, luxury, abominable crimes and vices, and, to crown all, "sacred things" were mocked. Luther was delighted with the balmy climate of Italy; but he observed that, while its genial influence caused the fruits of the earth to grow with a luxuriance unknown to his northern home, it nourished with equal luxuriance the voluptuous appetites of the body and debasing passions of the soul. It was not strange, therefore, that he should sigh for the comparative piety, simplicity, frugality, and

temperance of his dear father-land. But he would soon be in Rome, and the thought consoled him. In that holy city Christianity, in the spotless beauty of her apostolic youth, would stand before him. Surely no monks in the costly apparel of silk and velvet would be seen there. He was also confident that conventual cells, having walls aglow with marbles, gildings, and paintings, and their floors crowded with sumptuous tables, damask couches, and curious furniture inlaid with silver and mother-of-pearl, could be found in many Italian cities, but not in Rome. It seemed sacrilegious to him, no doubt, to even think that priests who tarry by the wine-cup, or partake on fast-days of meat, could dwell in the sacred metropolis. Instead of the sound of the harp, the lute, and the viol, he expected to hear hymns of praise in the monasteries of Rome—matins welcoming the day, and vesper songs speeding its departure. To Luther it must have appeared impossible for any thing that was defiling to enter the holy place where sat God's vicegerent. He was eager to enjoy its select and devout society, and there forget the dark scenes which made him sad on the way thither.

Leaving Florence, he hastened toward Rome, on the last stage of his journey. In imagination we behold him on his way, now descending the southern slopes on which Viterbo is situated, and at every short distance straining his eyes if haply he may discover on the broad plain at his feet some signs of her who once was "Queen of Nations." On his right the blue Mediterranean laved the shore of Latium; on his left rose the "triple-topped Soracte" and the "purple Apennine," on whose crests white towns were hanging, and on whose sides olive woods and forests of pine were clinging—this mountain range running on in a magnificent wall of craggy peaks until it fades from the eye in the southern horizon. Luther is now traversing the celebrated Campagna di Roma.

Whoever crosses this plain at the present day finds it herbless, silent, and desolate. It once nourished multitudes of men, but they have perished from its bosom. In its prosperous days numerous and populous towns crowned every conical height that dots its surface, but now they are buried in its soil. Where orange groves and olive woods once flourished, there reeds, wiry grass, and thistles now grow. Its roads, which were in former ages crowded with armies, proconsuls, and ambassadors, are now deserted and almost untrodden. This great plain was once adorned with many magnificent structures and cultivated gardens, but the only memorials of its pristine glory which remain are heaps of brick-work with the marble peeled off, broken



CAMPAGNA DI ROMA.



columns protruding through the soil, and substructions of temples and tombs which have become the lair of the fox or the lurking place of the brigand. But at the time of Luther's visit the Campagna di Roma was not the treeless, blighted, devastated expanse that it is in our day. Many memorials of decay no doubt met his eye as he passed along. The frightful scars of war had defaced the landscape, and the indolence and ignorance of the inhabitants had produced even worse effects upon the plain, but in the sixteenth century it had not become so deserted of men and so forsaken of its cities as it is now. The engravings of Peranesi, which are nearly two hundred years old, represent the country around Rome as tolerably well peopled and cultivated. The land then enjoyed what is at present almost unknown to it—seed-time and harvest. Besides, Luther beheld it in the beginning of Summer, the light of an Italian sun rendering the young verdure which clothed its surface still more charming, and revealing to the itinerant monk a pleasant scene. But his thoughts were then engrossed with one main object—he was within sight of the metropolis of Christendom. The first thing that would naturally catch his eye was the heights of Monte Maria, adjoining the Vatican, for the cupola of St. Peter's was not yet built; the long, ragged line formed by the buildings and towers of the city would next come into view. When Luther first beheld the domes of the sacred place he was thrilled with those emotions which every one, who has the first sight of it feels, yet few hearts have ever been so deeply stirred as the German monk's, for he fell upon his knees and exclaimed, "Holy Rome, I salute thee!"

After traveling many a weary league his feet stood at last within the gates of the "Eternal City." He persuaded himself to believe that he breathed a holier air, and was in the midst of a righteous people. Every moment the Nazarites of the Lord in their long robes passed by, while the chimes, which pealed forth all the day and were not silent even in the night, indicated that prayers and praises were continually ascending in the temples of worship. The decay and ruin visible in different directions deeply impressed the mind of Luther. Glorious palaces and noble monuments rose on every side of him; but, to his astonishment, in the midst of these were heaps of rubbish, the remains of the once imperial glory of the city, when in its palmy days it was adorned with the products of art, the creations of genius, and the spoils of war. These physical ruins gave him some idea of Rome's greatness under her pagan emperors and consuls, and their defaced and mutilated condition excited in his heart

the profoundest veneration. In his thoughts they were associated with the immortal names of the great men whose deeds had thrilled him and whose writings had instructed him in his native land. While looking at the stupendous ruins of the Coliseum he was reminded of the martyrs who contended on that spot with wild beasts and died in the triumphs of that faith which he had recently embraced. The mighty temple of St. Peter and the Vatican, where the Vicar of Christ had erected his throne, were the more sacred to Luther, because they stood where the martyrs were burned "as torches to illumine the darkness of the night." As he wandered through the city he remembered the fact that Paul's feet also had walked over it, and that his letter to the brethren there had been opened and read by them, teaching not only them, but even himself, sixteen centuries later, the important truth that "the just shall live by faith."

The first weeks which Luther spent in Rome were occupied in visiting the holy places and saying mass at the altars of the more holy of its churches; for, though converted in heart and trusting in the one true Mediator, he had an imperfect knowledge of evangelical religion, and had not fully emerged from the darkness of Romanism. The law of life in the soul may not be able suddenly to produce an outward course of liberty. There may be a reformation of ideas while the old habits and acts of legal belief yield slowly and for a time survive. It was difficult for Luther, or even Christendom, to find the way out of a night of twelve centuries. At the present time that night still broods over a large part of Europe. The physical deformities of Rome were not the only stumbling-blocks in Luther's way. He soon discovered that these scars and other outward blemishes, which war or barbarism had produced, were as nothing compared with the hideous moral corruptions that existed beneath the surface. The impiety, luxury, and lewdness which shocked him in the first Italian towns he had entered, and which he had beheld at almost every place since crossing the Alps, were all repeated in Rome on a scale of seven-fold magnitude. The enchantment that had surrounded Luther was suddenly dispelled. Instead of a paradise he found a pandemonium. His practice of saying mass at all the popular churches brought him into daily contact with the priests, whom he met and heard behind the scenes. Their conversation startled him, and he could not conceal from himself the fact, though it caused him unspeakable sorrow, that these men were simply playing a part, and that they privately held in contempt and treated with mockery the very rites which they publicly celebrated with so much apparent

devotion. While he was terribly shocked at their profane levity, they were no less astonished at his solemn credulity, deriding him as a dull German, who did not possess enough genius to be a skeptic nor sufficient cunning to be a hypocrite. Indeed, they regarded him as a fossilized specimen of a fanaticism which generally prevailed in the twelfth century, but which they were amazed to find still existing in the sixteenth.

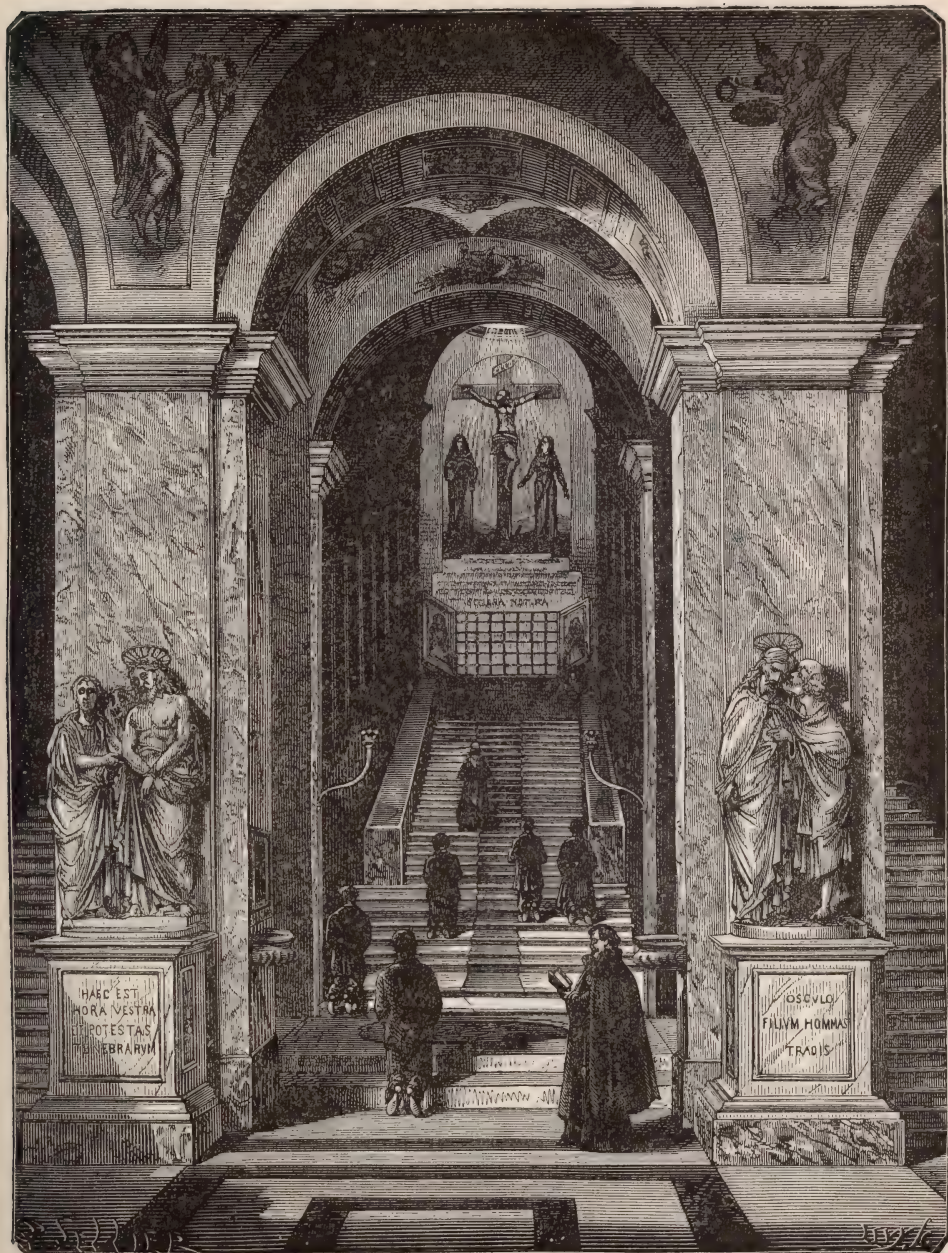
While Luther was saying mass one day in a prominent church with his usual solemnity, the priests at the neighboring altars, who had sung seven masses to his one, reproved what they considered his delay with these words of blasphemy: "Make haste, and send Our Lady back to her Son." To them "Lady and Son" were worth only the money they brought. But these were the common priests, and not the true representatives of the faith and piety of the Church. Hence Luther resolved to mingle with the holy dignitaries, but his belief in their purity must also be destroyed by an acquaintance with them. On a certain occasion he was in a company of prelates who, supposing the German monk to be a man of the same easy faith and morals as themselves, lifted the veil higher than prudence would dictate by openly expressing their disbelief in the mysteries of their Church, and shamelessly boasting of their shrewdness in deceiving the people. Instead of the words, "*Hoc est meum corpus*," etc., the words at the utterance of which the bread is changed, as the Church of Rome teaches, into the flesh and blood of Christ, these prelates, according to their own statement, were accustomed to say, "*Panis es, et panis manebis*," etc., "Bread thou art and bread thou wilt remain," and then, elevating the Host, they were amused at seeing the people bow down and worship. These declarations of the prominent priests filled Luther with inexpressible horror. A fearful abyss seemed to yawn suddenly beneath him, but it exerted a salutary influence upon him. His eyes were opened, and he was now convinced that he must either renounce belief in Christianity or in Rome. He could not reject the first, because his faith in it had been too deeply rooted by his struggles at Erfurt. The Church of Rome must, therefore, be abandoned; but, while he was resolved to separate himself from her corrupt clergy, he was not yet ready to give up her doctrines and ceremonies.

Instead of a city of prayers and alms, Rome was full of mocking hypocrisy and defiant skepticism. Among the clergy, where contrite hearts and holy lives are naturally expected, Luther found shameless revelry and glaring impiety. Borgia had lately closed his infamous



pontificate, and the warlike Julius II was now on the papal throne. The city was patrolled every night by a powerful police force, which was empowered to inflict summary justice on offenders, and, in some cases, the latter were hanged at the first post, or thrown into the Tiber. But all the vigilance of the police could not secure the peace and safety of the streets. Robberies and murders occurred almost every night. "If there be a hell," said Luther, "Rome is built over it." And yet it was in Rome, in the midst of all this darkness, that the light of truth shone fully into the mind of the reformer. There, under peculiar circumstances, that grand central idea, on which his own life and also the whole of that Reformation which God permitted him to accomplish, were based—the doctrine of justification by faith alone—rose upon him in its full-orbed splendor. Desiring to improve every hour of his sojourn in Rome, he was constantly employed in performing religious acts, because he believed that they had a tenfold degree of merit when done on the sacred soil and at the privileged altars and shrines of the city. To nourish his piety and return a holier man than he came, Luther multiplied his good works, for as yet he saw but dimly the sole agency of faith in the justification of the sinner.

While under the influence of these feelings, he one day visited the Church of the Lateran. It has always been held in peculiar reverence from its venerable antiquity, and especially from its having been long regarded as the mother church of Christendom. The original edifice, founded by Constantine, was greatly injured by fire in the fourteenth century; and it has since been so altered and enlarged that hardly a stone of the old fabric remains; but, as there has never been a total demolition and reconstruction, the chain of association remains unbroken, and the reverend form of the first Christian emperor, whose statue stands in the vestibule, is still the presiding genius of the place. The façade is of a style of architecture kindred to that of St. Peter's, but superior in beauty and simplicity, the perpendicular of the columns and pilasters which support the massive entablature being broken only by the horizontal line of the balconies running across nearly in the middle. The interior is rich and imposing, though not in the purest taste. The features of the basilica have disappeared, as the columns which once separated the nave from the aisles and imprisoned in piers, patched over with ornaments in stucco and marble. Twelve colossal statues of the apostles in marble—six on either hand—occupy niches scooped out of these piers. The execution of these works fell upon evil days in art, and they are



SCALA SANCTA.



characterized by flutter and extravagance. The impressions of the writer, who recently visited this interesting basilica, are expressed by Hilliard, the distinguished American lawyer and connoisseur, who was in Rome thirty years ago. Speaking of the interior of St. John Lateran, he says: "The draperies look as if the wearers" (the apostles) "had been out in a high wind, and suddenly stiffened into stone; and their attitudes are painful to the eye, for they seem to be maintained by muscular effort. But they show great skill and mechanical cleverness. They are in art what Darwin's 'Botanic Garden' is in poetry; and, in making this comparison I recognize the merits both of the statues and the poem." The visitor to the basilica will be reminded of those Gothic forms so rarely seen in Rome, when he beholds the high altar of gilded bronze, resting on four columns of granite, and resembling the diminished spire of a cathedral. The venerable mosaics of the tribune, executed by a contemporary of Cimabue, show in the attitude and expression of the figures the gleams of the new dawn of art, but they are not in harmony with the objects around them.

To the devout Roman Catholic this venerable edifice has always been sacred. In it Pope Sylvester II was buried, A. D. 1003; but neither this fact nor the artistic attractions drew Luther to it. He went there to ascend the *Scala Santa*, or Holy Stairs, which tradition says Christ descended on retiring from the hall of judgment, where Pilate had passed sentence upon him. It is said that these stairs, which are of marble, were conveyed from Jerusalem to Rome by angels, who have so often rendered similar services to the Church—"Our Lady's House" at Loretto, for example. The stairs, so transported, were enshrined in the palace of the Lateran, and every one who climbs them on his knees merits an indulgence of fifteen years for each ascent. The steps became so worn by both lips and knees, as to necessitate wooden coverings, which have been replaced several times. They can only be ascended on one's knees; but, fortunately for curious unbelievers, there is a narrower staircase on either side, by which they can mount, and by which the faithful may descend. During any morning of "Holy Week" may here be seen a throng of devotees, climbing with prayerful patience, and leaving kisses on every step. These pilgrims are not always solemn, as Dr. Wylie, in 1851, saw some peasants from Rimini ascending and, at the same time, enlivening the performance with roars of laughter, for it is the devout act, not the devout feeling, that earns the indulgence. A French gentleman and lady, with their little daughter, also made the



ascent, but in a more decorous manner. The writer several years ago witnessed a large number performing the same ceremony, and, while the Protestant Christian visits the place because of its association with Luther's conversion, he beholds the scene enacted there, and with a sad heart pities the credulity of the superstitious Roman Catholic.

Luther, not doubting either the legend concerning the stairs or the merit which the bulls of the popes attached to the holy act of climbing them, began the work with earnestness. While slowly mounting upward in the appointed way, securing for himself a year's indulgence at every step, he was startled by a sudden voice, which seemed as if it spoke from heaven, and said, "The just shall live by faith." Luther started to his feet in amazement. This was the third time these same words had been conveyed into his mind with such emphasis that they appeared to be uttered with a voice of thunder. Its tones were now louder than ever, so that he grasped more fully the great truth which it announced, and under its inspiration departed from Rome to inaugurate the great Reformation.

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

### *THE PAPACY AND ITALY.*

THE voice of Savonarola had been silenced by the flames, but his eloquent words, demanding a reformation of the Church, both in its head and members, lingered in the hearts of the people. This earnest, fearless monk expressed the sentiment that had been secretly, yet surely advancing in Italy ever since the Council of Pisa, A. D. 1409. Soon after the beginning of the sixteenth century, or in A. D. 1511, Pope Julius II was compelled to convene a council at Pisa. Louis XII, king of France, provoked by the insults he had received from this violent pontiff, meditated revenge, and even caused a medal to be struck, with a menacing inscription, expressing his determination to overturn the power of Rome, which was represented by the title of Babylon on this coin. Several cardinals also, encouraged by the protection of this monarch and the Emperor Maximilian I, endeavored, in this council, to correct and reform the errors and corruptions of a superstitious Church. The decrees that were passed during its sittings at Pisa were so many rays of light

shining through the darkness that then enveloped Italy and the remainder of Europe.

The pope, on the contrary, relying on his own strength and on the power of his allies, beheld these threatening appearances without the least concern, and even treated them with mockery and contempt. He did not neglect, however, the proper methods of rendering ineffectual the efforts of his enemies, and therefore gave orders for a council to meet in the palace of the Lateran at Rome, A. D. 1512, in which the decrees of the Council of Pisa were condemned and annulled in the most injurious and insulting terms. But Julius II could not repress the demand for reform which was made in this assembly. Among the prominent orations were those delivered by Egidio of Viterbo, general of the order of Augustinians, and Gianfrancesco Pico, the learned and pious count of Mirandula; both of whom denounced, with singular freedom and boldness, the abuses which threatened the ruin of the Church and the utter extinction

of religion. The pope, no doubt, would have hurled the most formidable anathemas against Louis and other princes had not death removed him in the midst of his ambitious and vindictive projects.

He was succeeded by Leo X, A. D. 1513, who was of the family of the Medicis. This pontiff was a lover and patron of literature and the arts. A profound scholar himself, he also protected literary men, and devoted his time to conversations with them and to the pursuit of pleasure. He disliked to be burdened with solicitude and care, and exhibited the utmost impatience when duty

imposed severe labor; but he never neglected the grand object, which the most of his predecessors had so much at heart—the promotion and advancement of the papacy in wealth and splendor.



Julius II, during the sitting of the Council of Lateran, had been summoned to appear before a higher tribunal, leaving many important questions to be decided by Leo X, who opposed every measure that had the least tendency to favor the reformation of the Church. He went still further, and in a conference with Francis I, king of France, at Bologna, induced that monarch to abrogate the "Pragmatic Sanction," so long odious to the popes of Rome, and to substitute in its place another body of laws more advantageous to the papacy, which, under the title of the *Concordat*, his subjects were compelled to obey, though with the utmost indignation and reluctance.

(The corruptions prevailing in the Romish Church were condemned, not only by many of the delegates in the general councils, but also by the satirical effusions of the press. The reigning pontiffs, however, in the full enjoyment of wealth and luxury, and conscious of absolute authority, regarded these censures with indifference; but at length complaints were heard in the pulpit, and the people began to murmur. This mode of attack could not be safely tolerated; and, accordingly, Leo X issued a bull, A. D. 1516, in which he reprimanded certain irregularities, and prohibited the discussion of the coming of Antichrist. It was too late. During the following year a cry was raised in the heart of Germany, and the ominous sounds, Antichrist and Babylon, reverberated from every corner of Europe, and awoke the astonished inmates of the Vatican from the security in which they had slumbered for ages. It was not strange that ecclesiastical grievances should call forth such general complaint and remonstrance in Italy, where they existed in an aggravated form. The vices of the clergy, and their neglect of religious instruction, produced their legitimate results. The people remained in ignorance, ecclesiastical offices were sold, and sacred things prostituted to worldly purposes. Popish writers, and persons whose official situations admitted them into all the secrets of the court of Rome, confessed that it had become more corrupt than any of the secular courts of Europe. The popes, in their spirit and character, were merely secular princes, and the Romish hierarchy obtained the degrading reputation of being immoral and unprincipled. Cabals, intrigue, and bribery reigned at Rome. The ministers were united in their efforts to deceive the world; but often their personal interests clashed, and they labored to supplant one another.

The occupants of the papal chair, for some time before the Reformation, openly practiced vices which the increasing knowledge of the age should have condemned. During the pontificate of Sixtus



IV a terrible spectacle was presented to the world. The pope, a cardinal, and an archbishop were associated with a band of ruffians to murder two men who were an honor to their country; and they even agreed to perpetrate this crime during a season of hospitality, within the sanctuary of a Christian church, and at the signal of the elevation of the host. The insatiable avarice and profligate manners of Alexander VI were so notorious that Sanazzaro has compared him to the greatest monsters of antiquity—to Nero, Caligula, and Heliogabalus. Julius II was more ambitious to be distinguished as a soldier than a bishop, and by his turbulence Italy was in a state of continual excitement and warfare. Leo X, though celebrated for his elegant accomplishments and his patronage of literature and the arts, disgraced the papal chair by his voluptuousness and luxury. To gratify his love of pleasure, and his passion for magnificent extravagance, he resorted to such methods in securing money as were a reproach to Christianity.

[The following description of the papal court, by an Italian who lived in the age of the Reformation, is significant: ‘Having raised themselves to earthly power on this basis and by these methods, the popes gradually lost sight of the salvation of souls and divine precepts, and bending their thoughts to worldly grandeur, and making use of their spiritual authority solely as an instrument and tool to advance their temporal, they began to lay aside the appearance of bishops and assume the state of secular princes. Their concern was no longer to maintain sanctity of life, to promote religion, or to show charity to mankind; but to accumulate treasures, to raise armies, to wage war against Christians. The sacred mysteries were celebrated with thoughts and hands stained with blood; and, with the view of drawing money from every quarter, new edicts were issued, new arts invented, new stratagems laid; spiritual censures were fulminated, and all things, sacred and profane, sold without distinction and without shame. [The immense riches amassed in this way, and scattered among the courtiers, were followed by pomp, luxury, licentiousness, and the vilest and most abominable lusts. No care was taken to maintain the dignity of the pontificate; no thought bestowed on the character of those who should succeed to it; the reigning pope sought only how he might raise his sons, nephews, and other relations to immoderate wealth, and even to principalities and kingdoms; and, instead of conferring ecclesiastical dignities and emoluments on the virtuous and deserving, he either sold them to the best bidder or lavished them on those who promised to be most subservient to his

ambition, avarice, and voluptuousness. Though these things had eradicated from the minds of men all that reverence which was once felt for the popes, yet their authority was still sustained to a certain degree by the imposing and potent influence of the name of religion, together with the means which they possessed of gratifying princes and their courtiers by bestowing on them dignities and other ecclesiastical favors. Presuming on the respect which men entertained for their office—aware that any prince who took up arms against them incurred general odium and exposed himself to the attack of other powers, and knowing that if victorious they could make their own terms, and if vanquished they would escape on easy conditions—the pontiffs abandoned themselves to their ruling passion of aggrandizing their friends, and proved for a long time the instruments of exciting wars and spreading conflagrations over the whole of Italy.” The productions of this writer sometimes exhibit a copiousness that reminds us of Livy, and a spirit of indignation against tyranny like that which animates the pages of Tacitus. The censors of the press in Italy would not allow the work to be published until the above extract was stricken out.

At this time there existed in Italy numerous and serious difficulties, which were unfavorable to the reception of divine truth and the cause of ecclesiastical reform. The people were not superstitiously devoted to the Roman See, and the Italian republics during the Middle Ages manifested a degree of religious independence that was remarkable; but this reaction against the papacy introduced a skepticism which was not less hostile to Protestant Christianity. The sagacious Italians had at an early period discovered that the claims of the popes, so long enveloped in mystery, were without foundation, and their esteem for the occupants of the papal chair did not increase after a close inspection of their lives and the motives which actuated them. The people of Italy, by their proximity to the Vatican, had a good opportunity to prosecute this investigation; and the result was the eradication from their minds of those feelings of veneration for the popes which were entertained in other countries. The established forms of the Church continued to receive external respect; but the prevailing corruption produced an indifference concerning religion which, on the revival of letters, became real skepticism. It would seem to be an easy matter to sever a people in this condition from the Romish Church; and yet none are more difficult to impress with the truth than those who practice the external rites of religion, but are ignorant of its inner life. The pride of the

human mind is hostile to the simple and spiritual doctrines of the Gospel; and, though men may be emancipated from prejudices, yet when their hearts are dead to religious feeling they readily support established systems of error, and as bitterly persecute the truth as the most superstitious and bigoted.

If before the sixteenth century there were few heretics in Italy, or if those who deviated from the popular faith were less observed or less severely punished there than in other countries, it was because the people did not trouble themselves about the matter. As a general rule, the Italians were not attached to the Roman Church either by a lively faith or an ardent enthusiasm. The sentiments of their hearts and the convictions of their understandings did not approve its principles. The educated classes felt a higher regard for the writings of Aristotle or Plato than for the Bible or the teachings of the Christian Fathers; while the multitude, always moved by the sensuous and the imaginative, were attracted to the services of the Church, because its temples were magnificent and its religious festivals grand. But while the Italians were without religious principle and devotion, their attachment to the Romish See had been strengthened, for more than a century before the Reformation, by national vanity. The wealth and importance of the city of Rome had been greatly diminished by the removal of the papal court to Avignon; but after the return of the popes to their ancient seat, and the recovery of the pontificate from the serious wound inflicted on it by the schism of the anti-popes, the Romans believed that their former distinction would be restored. The ancient glory of Italy as the mistress of the world had departed, never to return; but, in their opinion, the loss was compensated by the noble position she now occupied as the head of Christendom. The Italians generally shared this patriotic feeling, and while they were conscious of the corrupt state of the Church, their regard for the national interest constrained them to defend it. Accordingly, when the councils of Pisa, Constance, and Basle attacked the corruptions of the Roman court, and endeavored to abridge its extensive authority, the Italians opposed these reformatory movements. The pontiffs were accused of "Italian vices," and the people considered themselves dishonored as a nation by such invectives. It was natural, therefore, that they should seek to palliate these evil practices.

The popes obtained popular favor by fostering this patriotic spirit. They resolved that the power which they had gradually acquired over the nations of the West should be productive; and they adopted



a policy which directed the wealth of Europe through various channels to Rome, from which it was distributed over the entire country. The first year's produce of all ecclesiastical livings after every vacancy, called *annats*, came into their hands, together with large sums of money for the confirmation of bishops, and for the gift of archiepiscopal palls.

---

## CHAPTER IX.

### *ITALY RECEIVING LIGHT FROM GERMANY.*

THE attention of the Italians was directed to the important question of reform in the beginning of the sixteenth century by a controversy which excited a deep interest in Germany for several years, and finally reached the papal court for decision. A baptized Jew of Cologne, named Pfefferkorn, an intimate friend of the Dominican inquisitor, Hochstraten, assisted by the monks of his order, succeeded in persuading the Emperor Maximilian to issue a decree ordaining all Jewish books, with the exception of the Bible, to be burned, because they were filled with blasphemies against Christ. John Reuchlin, or Capnio, a learned man of Suabia and the restorer of Hebrew literature among Christians, labored, both privately and through the press, to prevent the execution of the decree. The emperor requested him to examine the books. After completing the work, Reuchlin indicated what books could be condemned by the imperial order, and, accordingly, these were consigned to the flames; but such as contained no attacks upon Christianity were saved. This enraged the Dominicans, who commenced a fierce war upon him. The resentment of the clergy was so bitter that they ventured to accuse him of heresy, and quoted passages from his writings to prove it. But Reuchlin confounded them, A. D. 1513, in his "Defense against my Detractors in Cologne." His successful opposition to them made his enemies more vindictive, and sentence was pronounced against him, first by the divines of Cologne, and afterwards by the Sorbonne at Paris. Hochstraten assembled a tribunal at Mayence, and had the writings of Reuchlin condemned and burned. The able professor appealed to Pope Leo X, and the friends of learning determined to make his cause a common one.

Erasmus and other distinguished men wrote warmly in their behalf to their friends at Rome, some of whom belonged to the sacred

college; and the monks, with equal zeal, made a strong effort to defeat those whom they both hated and feared. On the one side stood the monks, the most faithful servants of the popes; on the other, the men whose talents and writings had attracted the admiration of Europe. No contest of the kind had, for a long time, awakened such general interest, especially in Italy and Germany, where learned men almost universally defended Reuchlin. The papal court, not wishing to offend either party, protracted this delicate case from time to time, and during the interval the most cutting satires were written on the monks and their supporters. Leo X himself had no deep attachment to this class, and referred the whole matter to the bishop of Spire, who declared Reuchlin innocent, and condemned the monks to pay the cost of the investigation. The ultimate sentence, enjoining silence on both parties, was scarcely ratified when the controversy between Luther and the preachers of indulgences arose, and was brought before the same tribunal for decision. The course pursued by Pfefferkorn, the suspicious convert from Judaism, contributed in no small degree to direct the attention of the Italians to Germany, whose inhabitants they had hitherto regarded with contempt. A more favorable opinion was now entertained, especially since Luther espoused the cause of Reuchlin. The latter was also defended by Ulrich von Hütten, a German scholar, and a mortal enemy of the monks. He was of a noble family of Franconia, and won great distinction both by his pen and his sword. In early life he visited Italy, and was present at the siege of Padua. The abominations of Rome aroused his indignation, and, after his return to Germany, he composed a work against the court of Rome, in which its vices are described in the strongest terms, and the forcible overthrow of its tyranny advocated. "There are," says a traveler, Vadiseus, who figures in that work, "three things one usually brings away with him from Rome: a bad conscience, an impaired stomach, and an empty purse. There are three things which Rome does not believe: the immortality of the soul, the resurrection of the dead, and hell. There are three things of which Rome makes traffic: the grace of Christ, ecclesiastical dignities, and women." To Hütten, surnamed the Demosthenes of Germany, on account of his philippics against popery, has been attributed the famous satire which appeared A. D. 1516, entitled, *Epistolæ Obscurorum Virorum*. But it has been ascertained that his friend, Crotus Robianus, who was a college acquaintance, and other Germans, were the real authors of this production, though Hütten contributed largely to it.

In these "Letters" the adversaries of Reuchlin, the monks, are represented as the writers, and are made to discuss the current affairs of the day, and especially theological subjects, after their own fashion, and in their own barbarous Latin. The most absurd questions are addressed to Eratius, their correspondent at Cologne, revealing their own gross ignorance, superstition, unbelief, fanatical zeal, pride, and vulgar spirit. Worse than all, they expose the excesses and profligacy of the chiefs of their party, and relate several scandalous anecdotes of Hochstraten and Pfefferkorn. There is in these "Letters" a combination of silliness and hypocrisy which renders them very comic, and yet they are so natural that even the Dominicans and Franciscans of England accepted them as a genuine and faithful statement of the principles and conduct of their order. But when the monks in Germany saw the "Letters" they were indignant, and resolved to submit the matter to Leo X. The pope, however, refused to issue a bull against the satirical production, to the chagrin of the monks, and the delight of their enemies. This excitement had some influence in Italy, and no doubt prepared the way for those more important events which were soon to follow.

Luther published his "Theses" A. D. 1517, and in less than two years his writings appeared in Italy. There was nothing to indicate that a dispute, conducted by a friar, in an obscure part of Germany, in opposition to the sale of indulgences would awaken any special interest in other countries. The traffic in which Tetzels engaged had long been sanctioned and practiced by the Roman See, for its pecuniary benefit. It was not so much the evil itself as Luther's boldness in attacking it that startled Italy and other nations. The impudence of his antagonists provoked the reformer to greater perseverance, and gradually led him to censure other abuses, until his name and opinions soon became the topic of conversation beyond the limits of his native land. The favorable reception of his writings by the learned men of Italy must have been exceedingly gratifying to him. John Froben, a celebrated publisher at Basle, sent Luther the following information in a letter addressed to him, and dated February 14, A. D. 1519: "Blasius Salmonius, a bookseller at Leipsic, presented me, at the last Frankfort fair, with certain treatises composed by you, which, being approved by learned men, I immediately put to press, and sent six hundred copies to France and Spain. My friends assure me that they are sold at Paris, and read and approved of, even by the Sorbonnists. Several learned men there have said that they have long wished to see divine things treated with such becoming freedom.



Calvus, a bookseller of Pavia, himself a scholar and addicted to the muses, has carried a great part of the impression into Italy. He promises to send epigrams written in your praise by the most enlightened men in that country; such favor have you gained to yourself and the cause of Christ by your constancy, courage, and dexterity." A letter has also been preserved, written about this time by an individual in Rome, in which the spirit and writings of Luther are applauded.

In A. D. 1520 Burchard Schenk, a German nobleman and a monk, who was residing at Venice, wrote to Spalatin, the chaplain of the elector of Saxony, saying: "According to your request, I have read the books of Martin Luther, and I can assure you that he has been much esteemed in this place for some time past. But the common saying is, 'Let him beware of the pope!' Upwards of two months ago ten copies of his books were brought here, and instantly purchased, before I had even heard of their arrival; but in the beginning of this month (September), a mandate from the pope and the patriarch of Venice, arrived prohibiting them; and a strict search having been instituted among the booksellers, one imperfect copy was found and seized. I had endeavored to obtain that copy, but the bookseller durst not dispose of it." In a letter written during the following year, the same person states that the senate of Venice had at last reluctantly consented to the publication of the papal bull against Luther, but had taken care that it should not be read until the people had left the church.

This correspondence relates two curious circumstances. The one is, that Schenk had received a commission from the elector of Saxony to purchase relics for the collegiate church at Wittenberg; but the commission was now revoked, and the relics sent back to Italy, to be sold at what price they could bring; "for," writes Spalatin, "here even the common people despise them, and think it sufficient (as it certainly is) if they be taught from the Scriptures to have faith and confidence in God, and to love their neighbor." The other circumstance is, that the person whom Schenk employed to collect relics for the elector was Vigerio, who afterwards became bishop of Capo d' Istria, and legate of the pope to the German princes, but who ultimately embraced the doctrines of the Reformation, and became eminently instrumental in their diffusion and elsewhere. His character at this early period of his life deserves consideration, because, after his renunciation of popery, the greatest efforts were made by Romish writers to discredit his authority and tarnish his reputation. He is

described by Schenk as "a most excellent young man, who had distinguished himself among the students of law at Padua, and was desirous of finishing his studies at Wittenberg under the auspices and patronage of the elector Frederick."

The writings of Luther, Melancthon, Zwingli, and Bucer, notwithstanding all the pontifical bulls issued against them, were circulated and read with eagerness and delight in various parts of Italy. Some of them were translated into the Italian language, and were published under fictitious names, so that the inquisitors could not ascertain who were the real authors or what was the subject. With disguised titles they entered Rome and were read in the pope's own palace by some of the bishops and cardinals who praised their sentiments, but were compelled to denounce them as heretical and dangerous when the true authors were discovered. An incident of this kind is related by the elder Scaliger when he was at Rome. "Cardinal Seraphin," says he, "who was at that time counselor of the papal Rota, came to me one day and said: 'We have had a most laughable business before us to-day. The "Common Places" of Philip Melancthon were printed at Venice with this title, *par Messer Ippofilo da Terra Negra*. Being sent to Rome, they were freely bought for the space of a whole year and read with great applause, so that, the copies being exhausted, an order was sent to Venice for a fresh supply; but, in the mean time, a Franciscan friar, who possessed a copy of the original edition, discovered the trick, and denounced the book as a Lutheran production from the pen of Melancthon. It was proposed to punish the poor printer, who probably could not read one word of the original; but at last it was agreed to burn the copies and suppress the whole affair.'"

A similar anecdote is related of Luther's preface to the "Epistle to the Romans" and his treatise on "Justification," which were read with avidity for some time as the productions of Cardinal Fregoso. The works of Zwingli were circulated under the name of Coricius Cogelius; and several editions of Martin Bucer's commentary on the Psalms were sold in Italy and France as the work of Aretius Felinus. The learned author, in a letter to Zwingli, says: "I am employed in an exposition of the Psalms, which, at the urgent request of our brethren in France and Lower Germany, I propose to publish under a foreign name, that the work may be bought by their booksellers; for it is a capital crime to import into these countries books which bear our names. I therefore pretend that I am a Frenchman, and, if I do not change my mind, shall send forth the book as the pro-

duction of *Arctius Felinus*, which, indeed, is my name and surname, the former in Greek and the latter in Latin."

While multitudes in Italy were discovering errors and abuses in the Romish Church, comparatively few advanced far enough to appreciate the spiritual beauty and experience the regenerating influence of a pure Christianity. Many who beheld the corruptions of popery did not fully embrace the doctrines preached by Luther and his associates, but there were some who received the truth "as it is in Jesus." The following extracts indicate the intense thirst for knowledge which pervaded their hearts after they had read the first writings of the reformers. "It is now fourteen years," writes Egidio di Porta, an Augustinian monk on the lake of Como, to Zwingle, "since I, under the impulse of a certain pious feeling, but not according to knowledge, withdrew from my parents and assumed the black cowl. If I did not become learned and devout, I at least appeared to be so, and for seven years discharged the office of a preacher of God's Word, alas! in deep ignorance. I savored not the things of Christ; I ascribed nothing to faith; all to works. But God would not permit his servant to perish forever. He brought me to the dust. I was made to cry out, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? At length my heart heard the delightful voice, Go to Ulric Zwingle, and he will tell thee what thou shouldst do. O ravishing sound; my soul found ineffable peace in that sound. Do not think that I mock you; for you, nay not you, but God, by your means, rescued me from the snare of the fowler. But why do I say *me*? for I trust you have saved others along with me." In these enthusiastic words Porta announced the fact of his enlightenment by the writings of the Swiss reformer, and of the reception of the truth by some of the brethren in the same convent. In another letter he urges Zwingle to write him an epistle, which might be instrumental in the conversion of others belonging to his religious order. "But let it be cautiously written," he continues, "for they are full of pride and self-conceit. Place some passages of Scripture before them by which they may perceive how much God is pleased to have his Word preached purely and without mixture, and how highly he is offended with those who adulterate it and bring forward their own opinions as divine."

Baltasare Fontana, a Carmelite monk of Locarno, addressed a letter to the Evangelical Churches of Switzerland, breathing the same devout spirit. He exclaims, "Hail, faithful in Christ! Think, oh think of Lazarus in the Gospels, and of the lowly woman of Canaan, who was willing to be satisfied with the crumbs which fell from the



table of the Lord. As David came to the priest in a servile dress and unarmed, so do I fly to you for the show-bread and the armor laid up in the sanctuary. Parched with thirst, I seek the fountains of living waters; sitting like the blind man by the way-side, I cry to him that gives sight. With tears and sighs we, who sit here in darkness, humbly entreat you who are acquainted with the titles and authors of the books of knowledge (for to you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God), to send us the writings of such elect teachers as you possess, and particularly the works of the divine Zwingle, the far-famed Luther, the acute Melancthon, the accurate Ecolampade. The prices shall be paid to you through his excellency, Werdmyller. Do your endeavor that a city of Lombardy, enslaved by Babylon, and a stranger to the Gospel of Christ, may be set free."

---

## CHAPTER X.

### *SACRED LITERATURE IN ITALY.*

WHEN the Reformation entered Italy that country was distinguished for its knowledge of sacred literature. Even in the fifteenth century the study of the Hebrew had made much progress, the Psalter having been published in that language, A. D. 1477, and was followed by different parts of the Old Testament in the original, which were issued from the press. A complete Hebrew Bible was printed, A. D. 1488, at Soncinio, a city of the Cremonese, by a family of Jews, who, under the adopted name of Soncinati, established printing presses in various parts of Europe, including Constantinople. The Jews almost entirely engrossed this department of typography until A. D. 1518, when Daniel Bomberg published on the splendid press which he had recently erected at Venice an edition of the Hebrew Scriptures, accompanied with various readings and rabbinical commentaries. A close examination of ancient documents shows that the knowledge of Hebrew was not entirely extinct among Italian Christians anterior to the revival of letters. Occasionally an individual had the curiosity to learn something about it from a Jew, or had the courage to overcome, by his own strength, the difficulties of a language whose very characters appeared formidable to European eyes. Persons like Fra Ricoldo, of Florence, and Ciriaco,

of Ancona, traveled into Turkey, Syria, and adjacent countries and acquired some knowledge of other Oriental languages. Several individuals are mentioned in the literary history of Italy during the early part of the fifteenth century as Hebrew and Arabic scholars, the most distinguished of whom was Giannozzo Manetti, a Florentine, who prepared a triglot Psalter, containing a Latin translation made by himself from the original. But the study of Hebrew in Italy, properly speaking, was coeval with the printing of the Hebrew Bible; and it was facilitated by the severe measures taken by Ferdinand and Isabella, at the instigation of the Inquisition, to oppress the Jews, which induced many of them to emigrate from Spain to Italy, where from lucrative motives they were favorably received by the popes.

Giovanni Pico was one of the earliest students of the Oriental languages in Italy. He was a young man of rank, the son of Gianfrancesco Pico, prince of Mirandula and Concordia. In his youth he had a retentive memory, and seldom forgot any thing which he heard or read. He studied in the most celebrated universities of his native land and France, and came to Rome with the reputation of knowing twenty-two languages. In the twenty-fourth year of his age he published nine hundred propositions relating to dialectics, physics, morals, metaphysics, theology, and natural magic, as treated by the Chaldean, Arabian, Greek, and Latin philosophers, and by the Christian Fathers and schoolmen, declaring that he was ready to dispute with any person upon every one of them. A manuscript copy of the propositions, preserved in the library of Vienna, has, at the end, the following notification in Latin: "The dispute on these conclusions will not take place until after Epiphany. In the mean time they will be published in all the academies of Italy; and, if any philosopher or divine choose to come from the remotest parts of Italy to dispute, his expenses shall be borne." The challenge was not accepted, and a more serious charge than that of vanity was made against Pico. He was accused of heresy, and certain divines, having examined thirteen propositions selected from his work, confirmed the charge.

Pope Innocent VIII, after condemning the propositions as suspicious and dangerous, exempted the author from punishment, because he had declared, on oath, his willingness to submit in all things to the judgment of the Church. In an apology for the offensive articles he displayed great ingenuity in reconciling them to the Romish doctrine; but this aroused a more intense feeling of opposition, and no doubt he would have been severely persecuted had not

death removed Innocent VIII. After remaining for some time at Florence, Pico, through the influence of his friends, obtained a brief of absolution and security from the new pope, Alexander VI. The papal brief is prefixed to the edition of Pico's works published at Basle, A. D. 1572. Among the condemned propositions are the two following: "That Christ did not descend into hell truly, or in respect to real presence; and that neither the cross of Christ nor any other image is to be adored with the worship called *latria*, as taught by Thomas Aquinas." There are other propositions in the work which, it might have been supposed, would have given equal offense, such as, "that the will of God is the sole reason why he reprobates some and elects others; that the true body of Christ is in heaven locally, and on the altar sacramentally; and that the same body can not be made by the power of God to exist in different places at the same time."

While at Florence he became intimately acquainted with Lorenzo de Medici and other literary men, who admired him for his erudition and taste. But a wonderful change in his plans occurred at this time, and having abandoned the pursuit of secular knowledge, and burned a collection of his Italian and Latin poems which Politiano had revised and approved, he devoted himself to sacred studies and the practice of piety. In the midst of these exercises he was prostrated by a fever and was prematurely cut off, A. D. 1494, in the thirty-second year of his age. He had commenced the study of the Oriental languages before entering upon a decidedly religious life. His instructor in Hebrew was a Jew, called Jochana, and in Chaldee, Mithridates, concerning whom he writes in a letter to a friend. "As to your request for the Chaldee alphabet," he says, "you can not obtain it from Mithridates, nor from me, who am always ready to grant you every thing. For this man would not agree to teach me the Chaldee tongue until I had taken an oath, in express words, that I would impart it to nobody. Of this you may be assured by the testimony of our friend, Geronimo Benivieni, who, happening to be present one day when I was about to receive a lesson, Mithridates, in a rage, drove him out of the room. But, not to disappoint you altogether, instead of the Chaldee, you will receive with this packet the Arabic characters, which I copied with my own hands."

The writings of Pico indicate that his knowledge of Hebrew was not inconsiderable, and his confidential letters afford the most satisfactory evidence of his enthusiasm in the study of it and the cognate



languages of the East. Writing to his nephew, he says: "The reason why you have not had an answer to your letter is, that I have met with certain Hebrew books which have occupied me for a whole week, night and day, so that I am nearly blind. They were brought me twenty days ago by a Jew from Sicily, and as I am afraid that they may be recalled, you must not expect to hear a word from me until I have thoroughly examined their contents. When that is done I shall overwhelm you with letters." In a letter to Marsilio Ficino, he writes: "You could not have demanded back your Latin Mahomet at a more convenient time, as I expect shortly to be able to read him in his native tongue. Having labored a whole month in studying the Hebrew language I am about to apply myself to Arabic, and am not afraid but that I shall make as much proficiency in it as I have done in Hebrew, in which I can now write a letter correctly, though not with elegance. You see what resolution, accompanied with labor and diligence, can do, even when the bodily strength is small. Certain books, in both languages, which have come into my hands, not by chance, but by the direction of a kind providence favoring my studies, have encouraged and compelled me to lay aside every thing for the sake of acquiring the knowledge of Arabic and Chaldee. Having obtained these (shall I call them books or treasures?) I was inflamed with the desire of being able to read them without an interpreter—a task at which I am now toiling with all my might. Do not think, however, that I forget your favorite Plotinus."

Designing and covetous men, taking advantage of Pico's enthusiasm, deceived him in regard to certain books. These impostors discovered that he had an ardent desire to demonstrate the truth of the Christian religion by evidences from the Pythagorean and Jewish philosophy, and they interpolated some cabalistic works, of which they sold him seventy volumes at a great price. He was solemnly assured that they were written under the direction of Ezra, and contained that interpretation of the law which the Jews had hitherto religiously concealed from Christians. His contemporary and countryman, Annius, or Nanni, of Viterbo, was induced to publish a number of fabulous works as the authentic productions of Berosus, Manetho, Fabius Pictor, and other ancient writers; and similar impositions have been practiced upon literary men in later and more enlightened times. Pico was certainly one of the most distinguished scholars the world ever saw, and the prodigy of his age for learning. There are many things in his works which show that his mind was imbued with true piety, and that he had a clearer knowledge of the Gospel than

most men of his age. The honor of giving to the world the first elementary work on Hebrew, written by a Christian, or in the Latin language, belongs to Germany. This was the grammar and lexicon of John Reuchlin, printed at Pfortzheim, A. D. 1506; but, as early as A. D. 1490, the "Book of Roots," or lexicon, of the celebrated Jewish grammarian, David Kimchi, was published in the original at Venice. Francesco Stancari of Mantua, who afterwards embraced the Protestant religion, and excited great commotions in Poland, published a Hebrew grammar, A. D. 1525. Felix of Prato, a converted Jew, who printed a Latin translation of the Psalms, A. D. 1515, appears to have been the first Christian in Italy who taught Hebrew, being invited to Rome for this purpose, A. D. 1518, by Leo X. About the same time, Agathias Guidacerio, a native of Catanao, also taught it at Rome, and was called from there to Paris, by Francis I, to be professor of the sacred tongue in the Trilingual College, in which Paolo Paradisi, or Canossa, his countryman, and, like him, the author of a work on Hebrew Grammar, afterwards held the same situation.

As early as A. D. 1514, a collection of prayers was printed in the Arabic language at Fano, in the ecclesiastical states, on a press which had been founded by the warlike pontiff, Julius II. Previous to this Pagnino de Pagninis had commenced an edition of the Koran, in the original language, and a part of it, at least, was published at Venice. But the principal work in this language, so far as Biblical literature is concerned, was produced by Agostino Justiniani, bishop of Nebio in Corsica, in a polyglot Psalter containing the Hebrew, Chaldaic, Arabic, Greek, and Latin, published at Genoa, A. D. 1516, and intended as a specimen of a polyglot Bible, which the author had been long engaged in preparing for the press. This work gave him a wide reputation as a scholar, and Francis I invited him to teach the Oriental tongues at Paris. Many of the Italians were instructed in Arabic by Juan Leon, a native of Elvira, in Spain, better known as a historian by the name of Leo Africanus. Among others was Egidio of Viterbo, who earnestly promoted Oriental studies among his countrymen, both by example and patronage. The master, Leo Africanus, went to Tunis, and relapsed to Mohammedanism; the scholarly prelate, still more celebrated for extensive learning and elegant taste than for rank, was advanced to the purple and sent to Constantinople.

The knowledge of the Ethiopic, or, as they called it, Chaldean, language, was introduced into Europe by deputies sent to Rome

from the Christians of Abyssinia, during the sitting of the Lateran Council, A. D. 1512. These representatives performed the religious service in the Chaldean tongue, and also imparted instruction to private individuals, among whom was John Potken, provost of St. George's at Cologne, who was able to publish at Rome, A. D. 1513, the Psalter and Song of Solomon in Ethiopic, with a short introduction to that language. At a later period, a learned abbot of that country named Tesso-Sionis Malhesini, or, as he called himself in Europe, Peter Sionita, who resided at Rome under the patronage of Cardinal Marcello Cervini, taught his native tongue to Pierpaolo Gualtieri and Mariano Vittorio, afterwards bishop of Rieti; and, with their assistance, and that of two of his own countrymen, he published the New Testament in Ethiopic at Rome, A. D. 1548, and four years after this, Vittorio issued the first grammar in that language.

It may seem strange that no part of the Syriac version of the Scriptures should as yet have come from the press. Bomberg intended to print the Gospel according to Matthew in that language, from a copy of the four Gospels in his possession, but delayed the work in expectation of obtaining additional information. Soon after the election of Leo X to the pontificate Peter, patriarch of the Maronites, sent a deputation to Rome, consisting of Joseph Acurio, a priest; Moses, a deacon, and Elias, a subdeacon. One of these three individuals initiated into the Syriac language Teseo Ambrogio, of the noble family of the Conti d' Albonese, a doctor of laws and canon regular of St. John's of the Lateran, who had received instructions in the Ethiopic tongue from the delegation of Abyssinians who visited Rome A. D. 1512. From that time Ambrogio became passionately fond of these languages, and being appointed to teach them at Bologna, issued from the press a specimen of his qualifications for that task in his Introduction to the Chaldaic, Syriac, Arminian, and ten other languages, with the characters of about forty different alphabets. He was prevented by various unfavorable events from executing his cherished design of publishing the Gospels in Syriac. Ignatius, patriarch of Antioch, A. D. 1552, sent Moses Mardinens as his "orator" to the Roman pontiff to obtain, among other things, the printing of an edition of the Syriac New Testament for the use of the Churches under his inspection. The orator's eloquence was ineffectual at Rome, Venice, and other places in Italy; and, after laboring in vain for nearly three years, he was about to return home in despair when he was advised to apply to Albert Widmanstaedter, the learned chancellor of Eastern Austria, who became interested, and



by whose earnest effort the work was published, A. D. 1555, at Vienna. Thus was Italy deprived of the honor of giving to the world the New Testament in the best and most venerable of all the ancient versions.

The first edition of the Septuagint came from the Aldine press, A. D. 1518, under the direction of Andrew of Asolo. This printing establishment, so famous for the excellent editions of the Latin, Italian, and Greek classic authors which issued from it, was, as is well known to scholars, established in Venice by Aldo Manuzio, a distinguished Italian scholar and printer, about A. D. 1490. It was carried on for more than a century by Aldo Manuzio the elder, his son Paolo, and his grandson Aldo. Nine hundred and eight different editions were issued from it. No other press of the kind has ever been so celebrated. Erasmus had his Greek Testament, accompanied with a Latin translation, printed at Basle, A. D. 1516. The fame of the author gave both these works an extensive circulation in Italy, and learned men became better acquainted with the oracles of God. Sante Pagnini of Lucca published his Latin translation of the whole Bible, A. D. 1527, and it was received with great eagerness by scholars, on account of the writer's reputation as a Hebrew teacher, and also because he had spent more than twenty-five years upon the work.

Not only were the Sacred Scriptures printed in the original languages, and in various versions, but valuable commentaries on them appeared, the productions of gifted minds, which afterwards were very powerful weapons in the hands of those who labored to extend the Reformation in Italy. These commentaries, written by men of prominence in the Roman Catholic Church and indorsed by its highest authorities, were continually appealed to in supporting the doctrines of the Bible, rightly interpreted. The work of Pietro Colonna, commonly called, from his native place, Galatius, was useful to later writers on the Jewish controversy, in supplying important material. The fact, afterwards discovered, that it was a compilation from the unpublished work of another author, did not detract from its real merit. Erasmus edited, not only his own paraphrases, but also the notes of Laurentius Valla on the New Testament, which was recommended to the Italians as the production of one of their countrymen, who had become distinguished as the reviver of letters, but whom Bellarmine subsequently and justly called the precursor of the Lutherans. The commentaries of Cardinal Cajetan and a few others were characterized by a Scriptural simplicity which strikingly con-

trasted with the writings of the scholastic divines, who preceded them. The orator, Cardinal Sadolet, in his commentary on the Epistle to the Romans, labored to correct the barbarisms of the Vulgate and combat the tenets of St. Augustine.

Agostino Steuchi, or Steuco, of Gubbio, published various works, which indicate an extensive knowledge of the three learned languages,



"SEARCH THE SCRIPTURES."

mixed with Cabalistical and Platonic ideas. Isidoro Clario, a Benedictine abbot of Monte Cassino, who was promoted to the bishopric of Foligno, published the Vulgate, corrected from the original Hebrew and Greek, and accompanied with preliminary dissertations and explanatory notes. The work did not appear until A. D. 1542, and, as the prevalence of heresy had alarmed his brethren, the author was compelled to submit it to a rigid examination. The result of the expurgation was the suppression of the prolegomena. He had given



offense by saying in his preface that he corrected the version of the Old Testament by the Hebrew, and of the New by the Greek verity. This writer had also used the notes of the Protestants; but, as Tiraboschi candidly admits, this was an "unpardonable crime" at that period. "Heresy," says another modern writer, "was a pest, the very touch of which created horror; the cordon of separation or precaution was drawn all around; Clario did not dread the contagion for himself, but he dreaded to appear to have braved it, and his prudence excuses his plagiarism."

These studies directed the minds of the learned men of Italy to the Bible, and prepared them for the religious controversy which arose after the commencement of the Reformation. The sacred languages were studied in the palaces of bishops and in the cells of monks, and were mastered by individuals in the conclave, such as Egidio, Fregoso, and Aleander. All did not manifest a strong desire to seek the treasures hid in those books, which they examined by night and by day, and still less were they led by them to abandon a system which afforded them literary leisure, and other secular advantages. Men were not disposed at that period, as they were subsequently, to employ sacred criticism as an art to invent arguments for the support of existing evils. Indeed, there were many, from time to time, whose minds welcomed the truth, or were accessible to conviction. Among the converts to the reformed opinions were men eminent for their literary attainments, whose rank in the Church, and character for piety in the so-called religious orders, were recognized. The reformers appealed from the conflicting and fallible opinions of the doctors of the Church to the infallible dictates of revelation, and from the Vulgate version of the Scriptures to the Hebrew and Greek originals. These appeals were sustained by the translations that had been made by men of acknowledged orthodoxy, and published with the permission and warm recommendations of the head of the Church. The wise arrangements of Providence are revealed in this portion of history, in the actions of monks and bishops, cardinals and popes, who forged and polished those weapons which were soon to be turned against themselves, and which afterwards they desired to blunt, and labored to denounce as unlawful.

The works which have been described were confined to the prominent scholars; but, however useful they were, they probably would not have made any impression on the public mind in Italy, while the people at large were deprived of the means of religious knowledge. As the Romish Church strictly confined her religious service to an



unknown tongue, it is not surprising that she has always viewed with jealous eyes translations of the Scriptures into vulgar languages. According to the statement of a learned Italian, all the sermons preached in churches previous to the sixteenth century were in Latin, and those in Italian were delivered without the consecrated walls, in the piazzas, or some contiguous spot. This statement, however, has been controverted. It is certain that, in the thirteenth century, the sermons were preached in Latin, and afterwards explained in Italian to the common people. A similar practice was observed in the fifteenth century, and so late as the middle of the sixteenth century, Isidoro Clario, bishop of Foligno, preached in Latin to a crowded assembly of men and women. The Romish authorities contended that the dignity of the pulpit and the sacredness of the Word of God were compromised by using a different method, and Passavanti declares that "the Sacred Scriptures were villified by being translated into the vulgar tongue." Notwithstanding this prejudice, translations of the Bible into Italian were undertaken, after Dante, Petrarch, and others, had purified the language; and these works were issued from the press within a few years after the invention of the art of printing.

Jacopo da Voragine, bishop of Genoa, and author of the "Golden Legend," is said to have translated the Scriptures into the Italian language as early as the middle of the thirteenth century; but Le Long and Fontanini deny the existence of such a version. In the fourteenth century more than one individual attempted to perform a similar task, but they executed it, as may be supposed, in a rude and barbarous manner. Fragments of such translations were found in libraries during the fifteenth century. Nicolo Malermi, or Malerbi, a Camaldolese monk, printed an Italian version of the Scriptures at Venice as early as A. D. 1471; and is said to have gone through nine editions in the fifteenth, and twelve editions in the sixteenth century. This indicated that the Italians were addicted to reading in their native tongue, if they did not at that time have a general desire for, the Word of God. There are additional proofs of this in the Italian versions of parts of Scripture which appeared about the same period. The translation of Malermi, like those on which it was founded, was made from the Vulgate, and written in a style unsuited to the sixteenth century. The learned men of Italy long desired a version more faithful to the original and less barbarous in its diction. This was at last executed by Antonio Brucioli, whose Italian version of the New Testament was printed at Venice, A. D. 1530, on the press of his countryman, Luca Antonio Giunti. A copy of this rare

book has been preserved in the Royal Library at Berlin. His version of the whole Bible was issued from the same press A. D. 1532, and was reprinted with greater accuracy A. D. 1541. The translator, in an advertisement prefixed to it, intimates that the whole work appeared A. D. 1530; but he must have referred to the New Testament, because no copy of the Old Testament published in that year has ever been discovered. So great was the success of this translation that other versions rapidly followed. The Roman Catholics resolved to publish translations of their own in order to oppose those which they considered favorable to the Protestant doctrines.

This was the origin of the Italian Bible by Sante Marmochini, printed at Venice, A. D. 1538, which, though professing to be translated from the Hebrew and Greek, is in reality a version of the Vulgate, except when it slavishly copies Brucioli. Fra Zacchario followed Marmochini, A. D. 1542, with his version of the New Testament. Massimo Teofilo translated the New Testament and printed it at Lyons, A. D. 1551, and Filippo Rusticio published a translation of the whole Bible at Geneva, A. D. 1562. Both of them declare their object to be the preservation of the purity of the Italian language, which had been neglected by preceding writers; and in their preparatory and subjoined discourses they defend the reading of the Scriptures in the vulgar tongues, and inculcate Protestant views. It is evident that the deep interest manifested by Italian scholars in the study of Oriental languages and sacred literature prepared the way for the dissemination of the truths of the Gospel in Italy.

---

## CHAPTER XI.

### *THE REFORMATION EXTENDED BY COMMERCE AND WAR.*

NOTHING contributed more to the introduction of the Reformation into Italy and its development there than the increased intercourse between that country and Germany. Merchants passed from the one to the other, often taking with them books which, as we have already seen, came into the hands of those who desired to possess them. The German youth had long been accustomed to finish their education, especially in law and medicine, at Padua, Bologna, and other Italian universities, and the Italian youth commenced to visit the schools of Germany and Switzerland, whose literary reputation was daily advancing. The fame of Melancthon

had reached Italy, and was known to most of the learned, Bembo and Sadoleti even maintaining a friendly correspondence with him. Desiring to hear the great reformer himself, some of the Italian students were attracted to Wittemberg, and they, of course, were likely to return to their native land with minds imbued with the new opinions. The more ardent defenders of the old religion, beholding the effects of this intercourse, repeatedly complained of it. A writer of that age says that "A stop should be put to all commerce and intercourse, epistolary or otherwise, between the Germans and Italians, as the best means of preventing heresy from pervading the whole of Italy." It is certain that epistolary correspondence accomplished much in the diffusion of evangelical truths, as those who had embraced them in Germany and Switzerland wrote freely and fully on the important subject to their friends south of the Alps.

Italy was terribly scourged by war during the first half of the sixteenth century, but this evil was overruled by Providence for disseminating in that country the inestimable blessings of the Gospel. In the armies of Charles V, emperor of Germany, there were many Protestants, and not a few from Switzerland followed the standard of his rival, Francis I. These men, with the freedom peculiar to soldiers, conversed on the religious controversy with the inhabitants among whom they were encamped, spoke openly of the Reformation, and compared the simple and Scriptural doctrines of the reformers with the absurd and debasing superstitions of the Italians. They extolled the liberty which they enjoyed in their countries, contrasted the poverty and humility of Luther and his associates, the purity of their lives, their beneficence, their charity, their untiring devotion to the best interests of the people, with the wealth and licentiousness of their opponents, especially the sumptuous and luxurious living of the cardinals, and other dignitaries of the Romish Church, the ignorance, the indolence, the insolence, and the vices of the priests and monks, and expressed their astonishment that a people of such spirit as the Italians should continue to submit to an unprincipled and corrupt priesthood, which demanded a base and implicit subjection that it might profit by the ignorance and credulity of the multitude.

These representations made a profound impression upon those Italians with whom the foreign Protestant soldiers came in contact. The truth of the charges was daily confirmed by the conduct of the Romish priests and other ecclesiastics; and, besides, the people had before their eyes the anger which the pope, Clement VII, and the emperor, Charles V, openly exhibited in the manifestoes published



against each other. Previous to this war, and during its continuance, the successor of St. Peter and the "First Son of the Church" hurled bulls and proclamations at each other in no small measure, to the great scandal of all the faithful, and indeed to the grief of every sincere Christian. Clement charged the emperor with indifference to religion, and complained that he had enacted many laws in various parts of his dominions which were hostile to the Church and derogatory to the honor of the Holy See. Charles recriminated by accusing the pope of kindling the flames of war, that he might evade what was loudly and universally demanded—the reformation of the Church in its head and members. He wrote to the cardinals to summon a general council for this purpose, and threatened that, if this were not done, he would abolish the jurisdiction of the pope throughout Spain, and convince other nations, by his example, that ecclesiastical abuses might be corrected, and the ancient discipline of the Church restored without the intervention of papal authority.

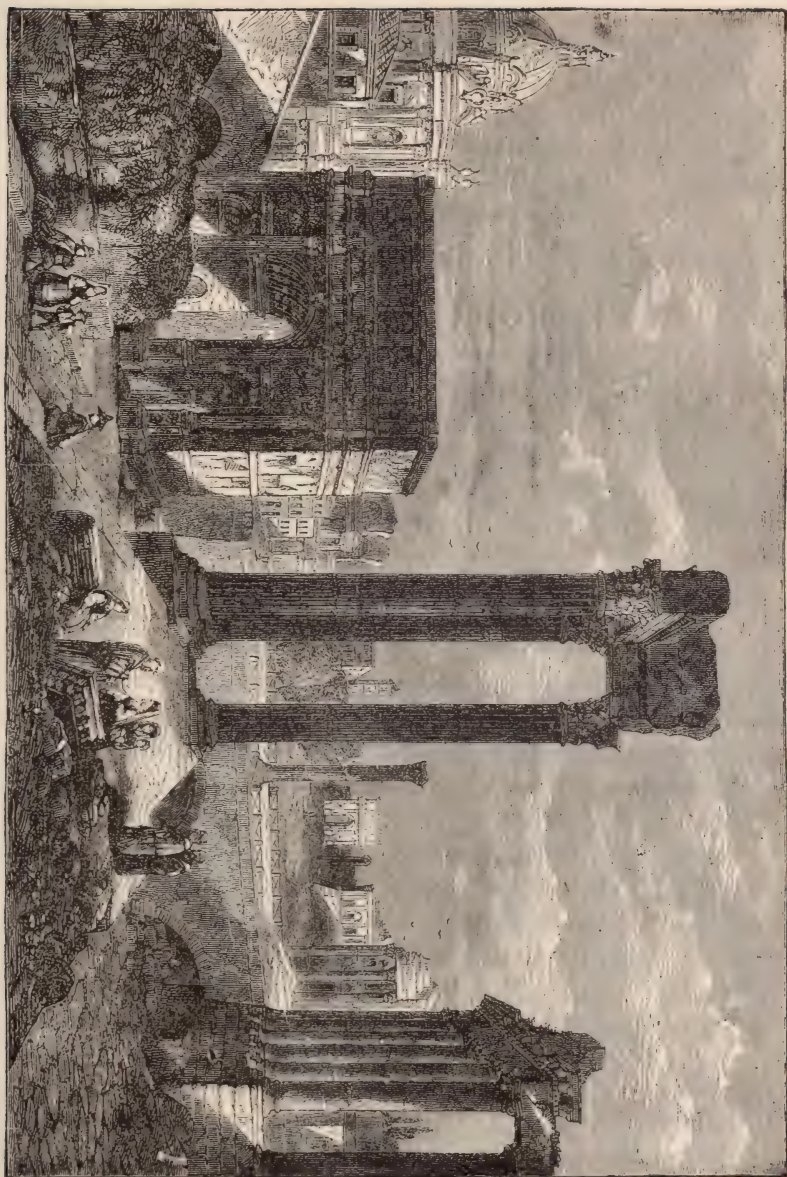
Before having recourse to arms against the "Holy Father," who, contrary to all the probabilities of the case, and contrary also to his own interest, had conspired against his most devoted as well as most powerful son, Charles made trial of his pen. In a letter of September 18th, A. D. 1526, written in the magnificent halls of the Alhambra, he reminded Clement VII of the many services he had rendered him, for which, it appeared, he must now accept as payment the league formed against him at his instigation. "Seeing," said the emperor to the pope, "God hath set us up as two great luminaries, let us endeavor that the world may be enlightened by us, and that no eclipse may happen by our dissensions. But," continued the emperor, having recourse to what has always been the terror of popes, "if you will needs go on as a warrior I protest and appeal to a council." This letter produced no effect in the Vatican, and these "two luminaries"—to use the emperor's metaphor—instead of shedding light on the world, began to scorch it with fire. Charles now resolved to do something more than threaten, and requested his brother, Ferdinand, to take command of the army destined to act against the pope. Ferdinand, however, could not at this crisis be absent from Germany without great inconvenience, and, accordingly, he commissioned Freundsberg, the same valorous knight who addressed the words of encouragement to Luther when he entered the imperial hall at Worms, to raise troops for the emperor's assistance, and lead them across the Alps. Freundsberg was a genuine lover of the Gospel; but the work he had now in hand was no evangelical

service, and he prepared for it with the coolness, the business air, and the resolution of the old soldier. It was in November, A. D. 1526, that the army commenced to march. The snows had already fallen on the Alps, making it doubly hazardous to climb their precipices and pass their summits; but the brave general, with his host of fifteen thousand men, overcame all obstacles, and in three days reached the plains of Italy, and united with the forces of the Constable of Bourbon, the emperor's general. This combined German and Spanish army, now amounting to twenty thousand men, entered the papal territories and advanced toward Rome. The German general carried with him a great iron chain, with which, as he informed his soldiers, he intended to hang the pope. But he was destined not to see Rome, a circumstance more to be regretted by the Romans than by the Germans, for, had he lived, the kind-hearted, though rough, soldier would have restrained the wild license of his army, which made the city a scene of terror. Freundsberg was taken sick and died by the way, but his soldiers hastened forward.

On the evening of May 5, A. D. 1527, the invaders first beheld, through a thin haze, those venerable walls, over which many storms had lowered, but few more terrible than that now gathering round them. The inhabitants of the city, like those of ancient Babylon, were indulging in banquetings and songs, never dreaming that the spoilers were at their gates. On the following morning, under the cover of a dense fog, the soldiers approached the walls, and by means of scaling-ladders entered the city in a few hours. The pope and the cardinals fled to the castle of St. Angelo. The demand to surrender was indignantly refused by Clement, who was expecting deliverance every moment from the "Holy League." The patience of the troops was soon exhausted, and the work of pillage began. Though three hundred and fifty years have rolled away since its occurrence we can not relate the awful tragedy without a shudder. The Constable Bourbon having perished in the first assault, the army was without a leader powerful enough to restrain the indulgence of its passions and appetites.

The sacking of such a city as Rome was a great calamity. There was not, at that period, another such on earth. The ages had laid their choicest gifts at its feet. It was the perfection of beauty. Into it were gathered the most valuable and curious specimens that the world could afford. The priceless monuments of antiquity adorned it, and it was ennobled with the triumphs of modern genius and art. The chisel of Michael Angelo, the pencil of Raphael, and





RUINS AROUND THE FORUM.



the munificence of Leo X had shed upon it a glory which still retained its original luster. The riches of all Christendom, flowing for many centuries through a hundred avenues—dispensations, pardons, jubilees, pilgrimages, annats, palls, and innumerable contrivances—had filled it to overflowing. But to her “that spoiled and was not spoiled” the hour of retribution had now come. The hungry troops rushed upon the prey. In a moment a fearful tempest of lust and vengeance, greed and rage, burst upon the “seven-hilled city.”

The pillage was not only unsparing, but pitiless. The plunderers opened and ransacked the most secret places, even employing torture in some cases to make prelates and princes disgorge their wealth. The bullion of the banker, the stores of the merchant, and the hoards of the usurer were robbed. They stripped the altars of their vessels and the churches of their votive offerings and tapestries. The sepulchers were invaded and plundered, the relics of canonized saints carried away, and the very corpses of the popes rifled of their rings and ornaments. All these stolen articles—gold and silver cups, sacks of coin, jewels, pyxes, rich vestments—were heaped up in the market-places and gambled for by the soldiers, who, having an abundance of wine and meat, reveled in the midst of the stricken and bleeding city. There was a strange and hideous mixture of robbery, carnage, and grim pleasantries. The soldiers delighted in exposing to ridicule, mockery, and outrage those persons and things which the Romans called sacred. The pontifical ceremonial was performed in mimic pomp, camp-boys being arrayed in cope and stole and chasuble, as if they were going to consecrate. Bishops and cardinals—in some cases entirely nude, in others, attired in fantastic dress—were placed on mules, with their faces turned to the animal’s *croupe*, and led through the streets, while the unwelcome dignity to which they had been promoted was recognized in the ironical cheers of the multitude.

A scene which was exhibited during the siege of the castle of St. Angelo will convey an idea of the indignity shown toward the Roman See. One day a party of German soldiers, mounted on horses and mules, assembled in the streets of Rome. A man named Grünwald, remarkable for his noble countenance and lofty bearing, being attired like the pope, and wearing a triple crown, was placed on a richly caparisoned horse. Others were arrayed like cardinals, bishops, and friars, some wearing miters, and others clothed in scarlet or white, according to the rank of those whom they personated. With all the pomp and ceremony which usually belong to a

pontifical procession, they marched through the principal streets of Rome, amid the sound of drums and fifes, and followed by a vast concourse of people. When they passed a house in which any of the cardinals were confined the procession halted, and Grünwald blessed the people by stretching out his fingers in the manner practiced by the pope on such occasions. Then he was taken from his horse and carried on the shoulders of one of his companions, a special seat being prepared for that purpose. Arriving at length at the "Castle," he drank from a large cup to the safe custody of Clement, in which he was pledged by his attendants. After this ceremony he administered an oath to his own cardinals, binding them to yield due obedience and faithful allegiance to the emperor, as their lawful and only prince, and not to disturb the peace of the state by intrigues; but, according to the precepts of the Bible and the example of Christ and his apostles, to be subject to the civil powers. After a speech, in which he reviewed the sacrilegious, parricidal, and civil wars excited by the popes, and declared the Emperor Charles V an instrument whom God had raised up to revenge these crimes and restrain the rage of corrupt priests, the pretended pontiff solemnly promised to transfer all his power and authority to Martin Luther, in order that he might purify the Church, and completely refit the ship of St. Peter, which had been so long the sport of the winds and the waves, while the unskillful and negligent crew were engaged in drinking and debauchery. Then, raising his voice, he exclaimed, "All who agree to these things, and would see them carried into execution, let them signify this by lifting up their hands;" and immediately the whole band of soldiers raised their hands, and shouted, "Long live Pope Luther! Long live Pope Luther!" All this occurred under the eye of Clement VII. "Never," says D'Aubigné, "had pontiff been proclaimed with such unanimity."

According to the statements of such Roman Catholic historians as Cochlaeus, Spondanus, and Guiciardini, the Germans in the emperor's army behaved with great moderation towards the inhabitants of Rome after the first day's pillage, and contented themselves with testifying their opposition to the prevailing idolatry; but the Spaniards never relented in their rapacity and cruelty, torturing the prisoners, and delighting in the sufferings of Church dignitaries, some of whom expired in the hands of the brutal soldiers, in the midst of cruel tortures. Not content with robbing their victims of their wealth, these bloodthirsty Spaniards compelled many to yield their lives; while the animosity of the Germans, their Tramontane

comrades, evaporated in grim humor and drollery. The Spanish troops spared no age, rank, or sex. "Most piteous," says Guiciardini, "were the shrieks and lamentations of the women of Rome, and no less worthy of compassion the deplorable condition of nuns and novices, whom the soldiers drove along by troops out of their convents, that they might satiate their brutal lust. . . . Amid this female wail were mingled the hoarser clamors and groans of unhappy men, whom the soldiers subjected to torture, partly to wrest from them unreasonable ransom, and partly to compel the disclosure of the goods which they had concealed."

The sack of Rome continued ten days. "It was reported," says Guiciardini, "that the booty taken might be estimated at a million of ducats; but the ransoms of the prisoners amounted to a far larger sum." The number of victims is estimated at from five thousand to ten thousand. According to the testimony of their own historians, the population thus terribly afflicted were weakened beyond measure by effeminacy and vice. They are described by Vettori as "proud, avaricious, murderous, envious, luxurious, and hypocritical." The "Memoirs of Benvenuto Cellini," a Roman of the early part of the sixteenth century, give a dark picture of the sacerdotal city at that period. Ranke declares that it contained "thirty thousand inhabitants capable of bearing arms," and that "many of these had seen service." But of what use were arms when there was neither bravery nor manhood in their breasts? If a spark of courage had lingered in their hearts they could have prevented the advance of the enemy to their city, or driven him from the walls after he appeared.

This stroke fell on Rome in the meridian of her mediæval glory, and in a few days almost annihilated a splendor which centuries had produced, and which the centuries that have since followed have not been able to restore. Such a great calamity, under other circumstances, would have been regarded as the unrestrained excesses of a licentious soldiery, and might have excited compassion for the captive pope; but the Italians at this time were not in sympathy with the Romish hierarchy. There was a general conviction that the wars which had so long desolated Italy were chiefly to be ascribed to the resentment and ambition of the reigning pontiffs. The conduct of Clement was considered by the people as a natural result of that judicial blindness which God sends upon wicked rulers to hasten their overthrow. The disasters that afflicted the papal See and the city of Rome were interpreted as marks of the divine displeasure, and the invaders who insulted and plundered them were regarded as heralds employed to



pronounce the judgments of Heaven against an incorrigible court and a city defiled and desecrated by wickedness of every kind.

The misfortunes of the fallen pope did not excite much commiseration for him, because the prevailing opinion was that he had been punished, not only for his sins, but also for his folly in provoking a powerful enemy whom he could not resist, and in precipitating a war for which he was not prepared. These were not merely the sentiments of the vulgar, or of such as had already embraced the doctrines of the Reformation; they were also entertained by dignitaries of the Romish Church, and uttered within the walls of the Vatican. A remarkable instance of this occurred at the first meeting of the "Apostolical Rota" held after Rome was delivered from the army of Charles V. The *Rota*, or *Rota Romana*, is the highest papal court of appeals, consisting of twelve members, and holding a session twice a week. It derives its name (which signifies a *wheel*), according to some, from the fact that the room in the pope's palace in which this court meets has a floor in which are inlaid marble slabs having the shape of a wheel. According to others, it is so named because in ancient Rome a round public building stood on the spot where this tribunal was first established. Other supreme courts, as, for example, that of Genoa, have borne the same name.

In this memorable meeting of the *Rota*, soon after the disappearance of the foreign army, Staphylo, bishop of Sibari, made a speech, in which he described the devastations committed by the enemy, and then proceeded in the following strain: "But whence, I pray, have these things proceeded? and why have such calamities befallen us? Because all flesh have corrupted their ways; because we are citizens, not of the holy city of Rome, but of Babylon, the wicked city. The word of the Lord, spoken by Isaiah, is accomplished in our times—'How is the faithful city become an harlot!' It was full of judgment and holiness; righteousness formerly dwelt in it; now sacrilegious persons and murderers! Formerly it was inhabited by a holy nation, a peculiar people; but now by the people of Gomorrah, a depraved seed, wicked children, unfaithful priests, the companions of thieves. Lest any should suppose," continued the bishop, "that this prophetic oracle was fulfilled long ago in the overthrow of the Babylonish Jerusalem by the Roman emperors, Vespasian and Titus, seeing the words appear to refer to the time in which the prophet lived, I think it proper to observe, agreeably to ecclesiastical verity, that future things were set before the eyes of the prophet's mind as present. This is evident from the sacred writings throughout. 'The

daughter of Zion shall be forsaken and made desolate by the violence of the enemy.' This daughter of Zion the apostle John, in the book of Revelation, explains as meaning, not Jerusalem, but the city of Rome, as appears from looking into his description. For John, or rather the angel, explaining to John the vision concerning the judgment of the whore, represents this city as meant by Babylon. 'The woman which thou sawest is that great city which reigns [he refers to a spiritual reign] over the kings of the earth.' Again, John says, 'She sits on seven hills;' which applies properly to Rome, called from ancient times *the seven-hilled city*. She is also said to 'sit on many waters;' which signify people, nations, and various languages, of which, as we see, this city is composed more than any other city of the Christian world. He says, also, 'She is full of names of blasphemy, the mother of uncleanness, fornications, and abominations of the earth.' This supersedes the necessity of any more specific proof that Rome is the city referred to; seeing these vices, though they prevail every-where, have fixed their seat and empire with us."

If the mind of a bishop was so deeply impressed by the event which had occurred, and such sentiments uttered within the hearing of the sovereign pontiff, what must have been the feelings and language of those who were less interested in the maintenance of the ecclesiastical monarchy, and who were still greater sufferers from the tyranny and ambition of those who administered its affairs? The minds of the people had been long overawed by the mysterious veil of sanctity; but this had been removed, and they beheld the real character of the priesthood. They professed to be the teachers and guardians of the religion of Christ; but their conduct was inconsistent with its precepts, and their claims to superior piety were arrogant and unfounded. The names "heretic" and "Lutheran," which had thrilled the Italians with horror, were now heard with complacency, and the minds of the people were even prepared to listen to the teachers of the reformed doctrine, who were emboldened to preach and make proselytes in a more public manner than they had hitherto ventured to do. "In Italy, also," says Fra Paolo, the historian of the Council of Trent, speaking of this period, "as there had neither been pope nor papal court at Rome for nearly two years, and as most men looked on the calamities which had fallen on both as the execution of a divine judgment on account of the corruptions of its government, many listened with avidity to the Reformation; in several cities, and particularly at Faenza, which was situated within

the territories of the pope, sermons were delivered in private houses against the Church of Rome; and the number of those named Lutherans, or, as they called themselves, Evangelicals, increased every day."

That these sermons were not confined to private houses, and that the reformed doctrine was publicly preached in Italy before A. D. 1530, is evident from the highest authority. "From the report made to us," says Pope Clement VII, "we have learned with great grief of heart that, in different parts of Italy, the pestiferous heresy of Luther prevails to a high degree, not only among secular persons but also among ecclesiastics and the regular clergy, both mendicant and non-mendicant, so that some, by their discourses and conversation, and what is worse, by their public preaching, infect numbers with this disease, greatly scandalize faithful Christians, who live under the obedience of the Roman Church and observe its laws, and contribute to the increase of heresies, the stumbling of the weak, and the no small injury of the Catholic faith." These indications, while they alarmed the friends of the papacy, encouraged those who had espoused the cause of the Reformation. The latter built their hopes upon the national character of the Italians, whose ardent minds would naturally lead them to propagate the new opinions with more than ordinary zeal.

---

## CHAPTER XII.

### *THE REFORMATION IN VENICE.*

IT is natural to suppose that the northern portions of Italy, owing to their proximity to Switzerland and Germany, the countries of Zwingli, Bucer, Œcolampadius, Luther, and Melancthon, would be the first to receive the truths of the Reformation. Such is the historical fact, and it will be proper, therefore, in relating the progress of the reform movement in Italy, to commence at the north, especially when the geographical and the chronological so nearly coincide.

Of all the states of Italy Venice afforded the best facilities for the dissemination of the new doctrines, and the safest asylum for those who suffered in the defense of them. In no other part was there so much liberty of religious opinion. That sea-girt city had risen to opulence and power; and, in order to encourage strangers to visit her



ports and markets, she conceded more than ordinary freedom of speech and action. She was truly the head of a powerful commercial republic, whose ships did business in all seas, and whose trade extended to almost every seaport in the civilized world. Extensive intercourse with others always generates a tolerant spirit. It was not strange, therefore, that the rich and proud aristocracy, who had control of the government, were liberal and enlightened. The senate, fully aware of the ambitious and encroaching spirit of the Romish See, uniformly opposed every effort to establish the Inquisition, and manifested great caution in permitting the edicts of the Vatican to be published or carried into effect within the Venetian territories. In fact, the republic of Venice, among Roman Catholic governments, in its policy of religious toleration somewhat resembled that of Holland among the Protestant states. She was distinguished, too, for the number of her printing-presses, and, while letters were cultivated elsewhere for mere literary entertainment or to gratify the vanity of their patrons, the Venetians encouraged them from the additional consideration of their forming an important, and not unproductive, branch of manufacture and merchandise. The books of the German and Swiss Protestants were consigned to merchants at Venice, from which they were circulated to the different parts of Italy; and it was in this city, as we indicated in a previous chapter, that versions of the Bible and other religious books, in the vulgar tongue, were chiefly printed.

We have already stated that the first writings of Luther were read in Venice soon after they were published. In a letter written A. D. 1528 the reformer says to a friend, "You give me joy by what you write of the Venetians receiving the Word of God. To him be the thanks and the glory!" During the following year he corresponded with James Ziegler, a learned man, celebrated for his skill in mathematics, geography, and natural history, and a publisher of the principal works of the ancients on these subjects. He had great authority at Venice, and was favorable to the Reformation, though he never publicly enlisted under its banner. His adopted brother, Theodore Veit, was sent by him to Wittenburg, and was for some time the secretary or amanuensis of Luther. This is the individual so often mentioned under the name of Theodorus Vitus in the letters of Melancthon, and through whom these leaders of the Reformation in Germany chiefly received their intelligence respecting the Protestant cause in Italy. An incident occurred, A. D. 1530, indicating that many in Venice at that time were deeply interested in the good

work. It was widely reported that Cardinal Campeggio, who was the papal legate to the imperial diet at Augsburg, had persuaded Melancthon to submit to the judgment of the pope. This produced great excitement and uneasiness among those Venetians who advocated reform, one of whom, Lucio Paolo Rosselli, addressed a letter to Melancthon, expressing the highest regard for his character, and the delight which his writings had afforded him. In respectful language, but with an honest freedom, he exhorted him to remain a firm and fearless defender of that faith to which he had been the honored instrument of winning so many.

"In this cause," continues Rosselli, "you ought to regard neither emperor nor pope, nor any other mortal, but the immortal God only. If there be any truth in what the papists circulate about you, the worst consequences must accrue to the Gospel and to those who have been led to embrace it through your instrumentality and that of Luther. Be assured that all Italy waits with anxiety for the result of your assembly at Augsburg. Whatever is determined by it will be embraced by Christians in other countries through the authority of the emperor. It behooves you others, who are there for the purpose of defending the Gospel, to be firm, and not to suffer yourselves to be either frightened from the standard of Christ by threats, or drawn from it by entreaties and promises. I implore and obtest you, as the head and leader of the whole evangelical army, to regard the salvation of every individual. Though you should be called to suffer death for the glory of Christ, fear not, I beseech you; it is better to die with honor than to live in disgrace. You shall secure a glorious triumph from Jesus Christ if you defend his righteous cause; and, in doing this, you may depend on the aid of the prayers and supplications of many who, day and night, entreat Almighty God to prosper the cause of the Gospel, and to preserve you and its other champions through the blood of his Son. Farewell, and desert not the cause of Christ." This zealous Venetian Protestant wrote a second time to Melancthon, and inclosed a copy of the letter which the latter was said to have addressed to the papal legate, exhorting him, if he had unhappily been induced to express sentiments unworthy of his character, to exhibit the greater courage and constancy in the future; but, if the report had been fabricated, as many of his friends declared, then he should immediately expose the malicious calumny, and henceforth openly and boldly attack an enemy which employed stratagem and falsehood to accomplish its ends.

Pietro Carnesecchi, Baldo Lupetino, and Baltassare Altieri, were among the most active in promoting the doctrines of the Reformation at Venice. The first was a patrician of Florence, and also a former secretary of Clement VII, and his name was finally enrolled among the martyrs of Italy. The second, who likewise obtained the crown of martyrdom, was a native of Albona, of noble extraction, and highly esteemed for his learning and worth. As provincial of the Franciscans within the Venetian territories, he had the most favorable opportunities of imparting religious instruction and of protecting those who had received it. He persuaded Matteo Flacio, a kinsman of his, to abandon his resolution of assuming the monastic garb, and induced him to retire into Germany, where he became distinguished for his learned writings, and the active though intemperate part which he took in the internal disputes that agitated the Lutheran Church. Altieri, though a native of Aquila in Naples, resided in Venice, and for some time acted as the secretary of the English ambassador and afterwards as agent for the Protestant princes of Germany. He was ardently devoted to the Protestant cause, and his official station enabled him to promote it by introducing books into Italy, holding epistolary correspondence with foreign courts, and both advising and assisting those of his countrymen who had embraced or were inquiring after the truth.

So great was the progress of evangelical religion in Venice between A. D. 1530 and A. D. 1542 that its numerous friends, who had held their meetings in private for mutual instruction and religious exercises, began to consider the propriety of organizing themselves into regular congregations, and of assembling in public. As several members of the senate were favorable to it, hopes were entertained at one time that the government would sanction the measure. In the beginning of A. D. 1538, Michele Bracchioli went from Italy to Wittemberg to have a religious interview with Melancthon, who greatly admired his elegant taste and refined manners. Having received information that his brother was in danger of proscription, he returned home to Germany unexpectedly within a year, and delivered a message to Melancthon from the friends of the Reformation in Venice.

This communication encouraged him to address a letter to the senate, in which he expressed the great pleasure that he had experienced when hearing of the favorable opinion entertained by many honorable persons among them, concerning the reform of ecclesiastical abuses which had been made in Germany. He declared in a few words, how cautiously the leaders of the Reformation had proceeded



by avoiding dangerous innovations and repressing popular tumults. After showing that various corruptions had been introduced into the Church, Melancthon adds: "Such slavery surely ought not to be established, as that we should be obliged, for peace's sake, to approve of all the errors of those who govern the Church; and learned men especially ought to be protected in the liberty of expressing their opinions and of teaching. As your city is the only one in the world which enjoys a genuine aristocracy, preserved through many ages and always hostile to tyranny, it becomes it to protect good men in freedom of thinking, and to discourage that unjust cruelty which is exercised in other places. Wherefore I can not refrain from exhorting you to employ your care and authority for advancing the divine glory, a service which is most acceptable to God."

It is evident that if Venice had then received the same treatment from the court of Rome that it did at the commencement of the seventeenth century the republic probably would have declared in favor of the Reformation; and, if such an event had occurred, how different might have been its history, as well as that of other portions of Italy! It might at that day have enjoyed its political independence, if not also regained its ancient glory.

Not only did the Protestant cause advance in the metropolis, but it spread also in many cities of the Venetian territories. At *Padua* it was embraced by many of the students and some of the professors of the university, which was celebrated at that period as a medical school. At *Verona* and at *Brescia* there were converts to the reformed faith, while the bishop of Bergamo, Vittore Soranzo, was favorable to evangelical doctrine, and exerted himself in reforming his clergy. But *Vicenza* and *Treviso*, situated in the neighborhood of Venice, contained the greatest number of Protestants. A German, named Sigismund, was delivered up to the vicar-general of Vicenza, A. D. 1535, by the doge, to be punished for disseminating the Lutheran heresy in that diocese, and Paul III, in a pontifical brief, formally thanked his excellency for this act of filial obedience. But such severe measures only created the more sympathy for the reformed opinions, which were patronized, or at least protected, by the local magistrates. Ten years later (A. D. 1545), the reigning pontiff informed the doge and senate that he had repeatedly notified them, by letters and nuncios, of the existence of heresy in their city of Vicenza, and that the governor and magistrates of that place, though instructed to co-operate with their bishop in extirpating it, had refused to render that assistance which was necessary to accomplish this holy work.

so that the heretics were encouraged, and would spread the pestilence in surrounding cities, unless promptly arrested and punished.

Altieri addressed a letter to Luther, A. D. 1542, "In the name of the brethren of the Church of Venice, Vicenza, and Treviso," confessing their neglect in not acknowledging their deep obligations to him who had brought them to the knowledge of salvation. He said that they were ashamed, and could not account for their silence, unless it was that their sudden emancipation had astounded their minds, or timidity and dread had deterred them from addressing so grave and holy a personage. But now they were driven by necessity and the urgency of their circumstances to do that which culpable negligence and ingratitude had hitherto prevented them from performing. He presented a dark picture of their situation. Antichrist had commenced to rage against them. Some of their brethren had been compelled to leave the country, others were cast into prison, and the rest were in a state of constant alarm. As members of the same body, they expected to receive sympathy and assistance from their German brethren, who had persuaded them to renounce popery and espouse that cause for the sake of which they were now exposed to such imminent danger. They entreated him to use his influence with the evangelical princes of Germany to write in their behalf to the senate of Venice, requesting it to abstain from that violence which the ministers of the pope urged it to employ against the poor flock of Christ, and to permit them to enjoy their own manner of worship, at least until the assembling of a general council, in the way of adopting measures to prevent all sedition and disturbance of the public peace. "If God grant," continues Altieri, "that we obtain a truce of this kind, what accessions will be made to the kingdom of Christ in point of faith and charity! How many preachers will appear to announce Christ faithfully to the people! How many prophets, who now lurk in corners, exanimated with undue fears, will come forth to expound the Scriptures! The harvest is truly great, but there are no laborers. You know what a great increase your Churches had, and what a wide door was opened for the Gospel, by the truce which, as we understand, you have enjoyed for three years. Exert yourselves to procure the same favor for us; cherish the common cause; do your endeavor, that by this means the consolation which is by Christ may be imparted to us, who daily suffer for Christ; for it is our fervent desire that the Word of God may be spread abroad, but we have none to feed us, unless our want be supplied out of your abundance."

## CHAPTER XIII.

*MILAN RECEIVING THE GOSPEL.*

THE duchy of Milan was in a favorable state for receiving the Reformation. Several causes contributed to its propagation in this interesting portion of Italy. The people were not ignorant of the resistance which that diocese had made to the arrogant claims of the bishops of Rome during the first ten centuries. The struggle which Milan, the capital of Lombardy, had anciently maintained for its ecclesiastical independence, continued to be remembered long after its submission to the Roman See. This circumstance, together with the natural advantages of the country, attracted to it those who dissented from the doctrines or declined the communion of the Romish Church. As the Milanese bordered on Switzerland, the writings of Zwingle and Bucer were early circulated among them and widely diffused. Their proximity to Piedmont (the residence of the Waldenses for centuries) also enabled them to be acquainted with evangelical truth. To these causes may be added the political state of the duchy. A protracted contest for its control was carried on between Francis I and Charles V, and it was alternately occupied by the armies of the contending monarchs, in which were many Protestant soldiers, who extensively spread the reformed doctrines among the people. Paul III addressed a brief to the bishop of Modena, A. D. 1536, stating that he was informed of the recent discovery, in the religious and illustrious duchy of Milan, of conventicles, consisting of noble persons of both sexes, belonging to a sect holding and observing the tenets of one friar Batista de Crema, by which many heresies, condemned by the ancient Church, were fostered. The pope, therefore, commanded the bishop, who was then at Milan, to make inquisition after these conventicles and heretics, and to see that condign punishment was inflicted on the guilty, so that "the corrupt seed sown by the devil might be extirpated before it had time to shoot up and strengthen." Though the "impure tenets of ancient heretics" are imputed to these wicked "innovators," according to the usual language of the Church of Rome, there can be little doubt that they held the common opinions of Luther and Zwingle.

This part of Italian history is closely connected with some inter-



esting facts in the life of Celio Secundo Curio, the most distinguished propagator of the evangelical faith, whose career was altogether more remarkable than that of any of those who embraced the doctrines of the Reformation in Italy. He was born at Turin, A. D. 1503, and was the youngest of twenty-three children. At the early age of nine years he was left an orphan, but being connected with several noble families in Piedmont, he received a liberal education at the university of his native city. In his youth he lost his father, who bequeathed to him the best of legacies—a copy of the Bible, beautifully bound; and the reading of the sacred volume made a deep impression upon his mind. When he reached his twentieth year he obtained the writings of the reformers, by means of Jeronimo Negri, of Fossano, who with some others in the Augustinian monastery of Turin, had come to the knowledge of the truth. This awakened in him an ardent desire to visit Germany, and, accordingly, he started in company with Giacomo Cornello and Francesco Guarino, who afterwards became distinguished ministers of the Reformed Church.

During their journey they injudiciously engaged in a religious controversy, and, having been reported to the proper authorities, they were arrested by the spies of the cardinal bishop of Ivree, and thrown into separate prisons. Through the solicitations of his relations Curio was released, and the cardinal, admiring his talents, endeavored to attach him to himself by offering him pecuniary assistance in his studies, and by placing him in the neighboring priory of St. Benigno, with the administration of which he had been intrusted by the late Pope Leo X. While in this situation Curio was diligently employed in instructing the monks and delivering them from the bondage of superstition. He one day opened a box, placed on the altar of the chapel, and having abstracted the relics from it, substituted a copy of the Bible, with the following inscription: "This is the ark of the covenant which contains the oracles of God, the true relics of the saints." When the relics were needed on the next solemn festival the trick was discovered, and Curio, being suspected, fled and escaped to Milan, A. D. 1530. He visited Rome and several other Italian cities and then returned to Milan, where he married a lady belonging to the illustrious family of the Isacii, and by devoting himself to the teaching of polite letters acquired a great reputation in the city and vicinity of Milan. The Spanish troops having committed ravages, Curio was compelled to leave Milan, and accepted an invitation from the count of Montferrat, under whose protection he resided some years in peace at Casale.

Desiring to recover his patrimony, he resolved to visit his native country; but, on his arrival, he found that one of his sisters and her husband had seized it, and, in order to defeat his legal claims the most effectually, they preferred a charge of heresy against him. Curio, rather than engage in litigation, retired to a village in the territories of the duke of Savoy, where he was employed in teaching the children of the neighboring gentlemen. In company with some of his patrons, he went one day to hear a Dominican monk from Turin, who, in the course of his sermon, presented a terrible picture of the character of the German reformers, and, in proof of his accusations, he read false quotations from a work published by Luther. After the sermon Curio, who happened to have in his possession the book, showed it to the friar, and then read the passages referred to in the presence of the most respectable part of the congregation, who were so indignant at the misrepresentations of the impudent and dishonest monk that they drove him, in disgrace, from the town. The inquisitor was immediately notified, and, having arrested Curio, he sent him to his native city. His enemies, resolving to magnify his crime and secure his conviction, rehearsed his proposed journey to Germany and his abstracting of the relics at St. Benigno. As his friends were numerous and influential, the administrator of the bishopric of Turin went to Rome to secure his condemnation. To prevent any attempt at rescue, a brother of Cardinal Cibo, who had charge of him, removed him to an inner room of the prison, and ordered his feet to be made fast in the stocks. Any other person of less ingenuity and fortitude in such a situation would have abandoned all hope; but Curio, in his youth, had resided in the vicinity of the jail, and he believed a method of escape could be devised. In a short time the plan was matured, and, through the favor of Providence, was effectual.

The prisoner's feet being swollen by confinement, he persuaded his keeper to release his right foot for a day or two, and then, by taking his shoe, together with a reed and a quantity of rags, which were within his reach, he constructed an artificial leg, which he attached to his right knee so adroitly that he could move it with ease and without detection. Having obtained permission to have his other foot relieved, he inserted the artificial limb into the stocks. Both his feet were now at liberty, and during the following night he forced the door of his apartment, felt his way through the dark passages, dropped from a window, and having scaled the walls of his prison with difficulty, escaped into Italy. He had extracted the

fictitious limb from the stocks and taken it to pieces before leaving the prison, so that his persecutors might not understand the method of his deliverance. They attributed it to magic, but he dispelled the mystery by publishing an account of the whole circumstance in the form of a dialogue, which contains some humorous and satirical strictures upon certain papal errors. It was first issued without date or place of publication; but was reprinted at Geneva, A. D. 1667. After remaining some months with his family at Sale, a remote village in the territory of Milan, he was persuaded by his former friends to abandon his seclusion and enter the University of Pavia. When the inquisitors received this information, orders were sent from Rome to arrest him; but they could not be executed. The principal inhabitants of the town and the students, many of whom had come from other seminaries to attend his lectures, esteemed Curio so highly that they protected him for nearly three years, a guard composed of his scholars accompanying him to and from his residence every day during a greater part of that time. At last, when the pope threatened the senate of Pavia with excommunication if he was not delivered up, he retired to Venice, from which he removed to Ferrara.

---

## CHAPTER XIV.

### *MANTUA—LOCARNO—ISTRIA—FERRARA.*

**M**ANTUA, which in the sixteenth century gave birth to several persons of distinguished talents, did not shut out the light of the Reformation. At an early period warm friends of the evangelical faith were found there, not only in the capital, but throughout the duchy. Many groaned under the tyranny which oppressed the human mind, and made a generous effort to break asunder their chains. Among these was Gianbattista Folengo, a pious and liberal Benedictine, who earnestly desired to heal the schism which afflicted the Church by an extensive reformation among both secular and regular clergy. Cardinal Gonzaga, bishop of Mantua, manifested the same disposition to correct existing evils, and even protected those who denounced the errors of the Romish hierarchy. He was severely reprimanded by the pope; and, as late as A. D. 1545, Paul III addressed him a fervent epistle to stimulate his slumbering zeal, stating that he had heard of certain ignorant clergymen and artisans



in the city of Mantua, who had ruined their own souls, and brought great scandal on others, by rashly daring to dispute, and even to doubt, of matters belonging to the Roman Catholic doctrine, its articles of belief, and its holy rites. He then exhorts the bishop to proceed personally, or through his deputies, against all persons suspected of heresy, including the clergy, secular and regular, of every order in the city of Mantua, and throughout the whole diocese; to ascertain whether they have read or possess any heretical books, or if they have taught any opinion condemned by the Church; to take the depositions of witnesses, seize the persons of the accused or suspected, examine them by the torture, and, having brought the processes as far as the definitive sentence, to transmit the whole in authentic shape to Rome for judgment. For some time the reigning duke shielded his subjects from this persecuting edict, and incurred the displeasure of the pope.

Locarno is a city of Italy, and the capital of a province or bailiwick of the same name, situated on Lake Maggiore, in the southern confines of the Alps. It, with three other provinces, was given by Maximilian Sforza, duke of Milan, A. D. 1513, to the Swiss cantons for the military aid they had rendered him, and was governed by a prefect whom the cantons sent by turns every two years. The territory was small, but its inhabitants had considerable wealth, derived from the advantages of their location, as they were carriers in the trade maintained between Italy and Switzerland. As early as A. D. 1526 the truths of the Reformation were introduced into Locarno by Baldassare Fontana. For several years the number of converts was small. "There are but three of us here," says that devoted servant of Christ, in a letter to Zwingli, "who have enlisted and confederated in the cause of propagating the truth. But Midian was not vanquished by the multitudes of brave men who flocked to the standard of Gideon, but by a few selected for that purpose by God. Who knows but what he may kindle a great fire out of this inconsiderable smoke? It is our duty to sow and plant; the Lord must give the increase."

Twenty years later the fruit of the prayers and labors of these good men appeared, perhaps, long after they had received the heavenly crown. The work commenced by them was taken up by Benedetto Locarno, A. D. 1546, who returned to his native place, after he had been employed in preaching the Gospel in various parts of Italy and in the island of Sicily. His efforts to enlighten his townsmen were earnestly seconded by Giovanni Beccaria, commonly

called the apostle of Locarno, who was a man of good character and excellent talents. He had discovered the principal errors and corruptions of the Church of Rome by studying the Bible, without the aid of a teacher or any human writings. In a short time he was assisted by four prominent individuals, who had the true spirit of confessors, and actively labored in the noble cause. Varnerio Castiglione spared neither time nor effort in promoting the truth; Ludovico Runcho, a citizen of great respectability, nobly defended the evangelical doctrines. Taddeo de Dunis, a physician, and, like Runcho, a young man of courage and genius, and Martino de Muralto, a doctor of laws, and of aristocratic descent, contributed to the success of the reform movement by their influence in the province. In the course of four years the Protestants of Locarno had become a strong Church, were regularly organized, and received the sacraments at the hands of a pastor whom they called from the Church of Chiavenna. The daily increase of the membership excited the chagrin and envy of the clergy, who were earnestly supported by the prefect appointed, A. D. 1549, by the popish canton of Underwald. The Locarnese Protestants were slandered by a priest residing in the neighboring province of Lugano, who was not only employed to denounce them from the pulpit, but also to challenge their preacher to a public discussion of the questions in controversy between the Churches. On the day of trial he was completely silenced; and to revenge his defeat the prefect ordered Beccaria into prison. This persecution aroused such a feeling of indignation in the city that the prisoner was immediately discharged, and the enemies of Protestantism were compelled to wait for a more favorable opportunity of attack.

The truths of Protestant Christianity were late in penetrating Istria, a peninsular district on the Adriatic Sea, then under the government of the Venetian republic; but their dissemination, after a commencement had been made, was rapid. The chief instruments in the good work were Pierpaolo Vergerio and Gianbattista, two brothers, both of whom were bishops in the Roman Catholic Church, and one of them a papal legate. They were natives of Capo d'Istria, and belonged to a family which was distinguished for its literary reputation in the fifteenth century. We have already referred to Vergerio as a young man of excellent character and promising talents, who desired to visit Wittenberg to complete his studies. After acquiring a knowledge of law, he received the degree of doctor from the University of Padua, in which he served for a time as professor

and as vicar to the podesta. He subsequently located at Venice, where he became celebrated as an advocate. His fame for eloquence and address was such that Pope Clement VII sent him into Germany as legate to Ferdinand, king of the Romans, at whose court he remained for some years, laboring to promote the interests of the Romish See, and opposing the progress of Lutheranism. When Clement died his successor, Paul III, recalled Vergerio; but, after hearing a statement of his embassy, sent him back to Germany, where he treated with the German princes, and had more than one interview with Luther concerning the proposed general council. Returning to Italy, A. D. 1536, he was appointed bishop of Modrusium, in Croatia, an episcopal district under the patronage of Ferdinand, and afterwards held a similar position in Capo d'Istria, his native place. He went to France, and appeared at the conference of Worms, A. D. 1541, in the name of his Christian Majesty, but, as some believed, with secret instructions from the pope. It is certain that he prepared at this time an oration on the unity of the Church, in opposition to the idea of a national council, which was desired by the Protestants.

During his residence in Germany Vergerio was favorably impressed with the doctrines of the Reformation, but did not openly embrace them, because suspicions of his heresy were, as he had learned, entertained at Rome. It is asserted by Protestant writers that the pope intended to confer a cardinal's hat on him at his return, but the alleged unsoundness of his faith prevented its bestowment. This statement is denied by Pallavicini and Tiraboschi, Romish historians; but they admit that his holiness was aware of Vergerio's familiarity with the German heretics, and that on this account he was summoned to Italy, where he became more fully convinced of the fact that he had displeased his superiors. Cardinal Bembo, in a letter to his nephew, who appears to have occupied a high official position in the Istrian government, declares that the bishop of Capo d'Istria had urged him "to intercede for some of his relations, who had been unjustly thrown into prison." This was on the 24th of September, A. D. 1541, and on the 1st of February following Bembo expresses his satisfaction that this request had not been granted, adding: "I hear some things of that bishop, which, if true, are very bad—that he not only has portraits of Lutherans in his house, but that also in the causes which come before him he is eager to favor in any way the one party, whether right or wrong, and to bear down the other."



It was not easy for a person in Vergerio's circumstances to retire from the honorable situation which he held, and to sacrifice the bright prospects of promotion which he had long cherished. Besides, he did not have clear and steady views of the truth. After he had first abandoned the excitement of public life, and entered upon his episcopal duties, he resolved to complete a work which he had commenced "against the apostates of Germany," expecting by its publication to remove the suspicions against his loyalty to the court of Rome. While writing this book, and examining those of the reformers, he was so impressed with the force of the objections which he was endeavoring to answer that he threw away the pen, and relinquished the undertaking in despair. With a burdened heart, and in hope of relief, he revealed his feelings to his brother, Giambattista, bishop of Pola, in the same district, who was distressed by the communication. He conversed with his brother, and, after hearing the reason of his change of views, especially concerning justification, he became himself a convert to the Protestant doctrine. The two brothers had emerged from the valley of darkness and doubt, and a light from heaven shone into their understandings. They had been ignorant of the simple truth of salvation by faith, and, like the "blind leading the blind," directed their hearers along the thorny paths of austerities and penances, which inflicted suffering, but afforded no peace. Having found the true and living way, they resolved to bring their flocks into it, by imparting instruction to them on the principal doctrines of the Gospel, and withdrawing their attention from those ceremonial services and bodily exercises which they regarded as the whole of religion. These converted bishops, by their own personal labors, and the assistance of others who had previously obtained pardon from the great "High-priest," were successful in inaugurating this reform. The sound of the old Gospel ravished the ears of the people as the silver trumpets of the "Day of Jubilee" delighted God's ancient children, so that before A. D. 1546 the greater part of the inhabitants of that district had cast off the yoke of ceremonies, embraced the truths of the Reformation, and made considerable progress in the knowledge of the Christian doctrines.

In many respects the history of the dissemination of evangelical opinions at Ferrara is the most interesting of any that has been written in connection with the Reformation in Italy. This city, at an early period, afforded protection to those Protestants who fled from various parts of that country and from foreign lands. Under

the government of its dukes, of the illustrious house of Este, it had for some time rivaled Florence in the encouragement of learning and the fine arts. Its natural advantages never could compare with those of Florence, or even Bologna, because it is situated in a plain, monotonous, insalubrious country. But this unfavorable circumstance did not prevent the court of Ferrara from being the resort of literary men, who delighted to enjoy the society of its wise dukes. Ariosto and Bernardo Tasso lived at the court of Alfonso I, and subsequently his more illustrious son, the author of "*Jerusalem Delivered*," at the court of Ercole II, and consequently the genealogy and achievements of the dukes of Ferrara have been transmitted to posterity by the most prominent poets of that age. While contemporary princes yielded patronage to men of letters out of regard to their own fame, and as a tribute to fashion, Hercules, who had received a good education, was actuated by personal judgment and feeling in his respect for them.

The house of Este had been devoted to the Romish See, and labored to advance its interests; but recently, in several instances, had not been treated with proper regard by it. This sense of injury, however, was overcome, because there was an important reason why the Italian princes should be attached to the pope. Ippolito, a younger son of Duke Alfonso, and afterwards his nephew, Ludovico, were cardinals; and from time immemorial a branch of the family had been represented in the sacred college. Accordingly, Alfonso had faithfully sustained Clement during his humiliation and calamity; and his successor, though more liberal in his religious views than his father, carefully avoided offending the supreme pontiff.

Hercules II (as he is more commonly called by English writers), duke of Ferrara, married the celebrated Renée, or Renata, daughter of Louis XII of France. This noble princess had been instructed in the reformed doctrine before leaving her native country by some of those learned persons who were frequent visitors at the court of the distinguished Margaret, queen of Navarre; and she was anxious to have the evangelical religion introduced into the land to which she had removed. For some time she secretly entertained Protestants as literary men, her husband encouraging, or at least permitting, it. The first persons to whom she extended her protection and hospitality on this principle were her own countrymen, whom the violence of persecution had driven out of France.

It was under her auspices that for several years Ferrara was a "City of Refuge" to unfortunate scholars and persecuted Protestants,

not only of France, but also of Italy. Several men of letters had been introduced into the court of France during the late reign by Madame de Soubise, the governess of the duchess. She now resided at the court of Ferrara with her son, Jean de Parthenai, Sieur de Soubise, afterwards a principal leader of the Protestant party in France; her daughter, Anne de Parthenai, celebrated for her elegant taste; and Antoine de Pons, count de Marennnes, the future husband of this young lady, and a warm friend of the reformed cause until the death of his wife. The distinguished French poet, Clement Marot, fled from his native country, A. D. 1534, because the affair of the *placards* had excited persecution, and, after residing for a short time at the court of the queen of Navarre, in Bearn, came to Ferrara. He was recommended by Madame de Soubise to the duchess, who made him her secretary; and his friend, Lyon Jamet, finding it necessary soon after to follow him, met with a reception equally cordial.

About the same time the great reformer, John Calvin, visited Ferrara, where he spent several months under the assumed name of Charles Hepeville. The duchess was confirmed in the Protestant faith by his instructions, and ever after retained the highest respect for his character and talents. The duke of Ferrara, though a Roman Catholic, did not yet manifest any opposition to the course pursued by his wife in entertaining the friends of the Reformation. Indeed, the hospitality of the court attracted many from various countries, embracing almost all the prominent Protestants of Italy, among whom may be mentioned Fulvio Peregrino Morata, from Mantua, the father of the celebrated Olympia Morata, of whom we shall speak more fully hereafter, and Celio Secundo Curio, of Turin, of whom we have spoken already. The most of the distinguished Protestants who spent a considerable length of time at Ferrara were either connected with the university, which was then in the zenith of its fame, having recovered from the disasters inflicted upon it by the civil wars of the family of Este, or employed as tutors in the household of the duke. These learned men, who educated his children, were the chief instruments in propagating the Protestant faith. While imparting instruction in every branch of polite letters and arts, they did not neglect to inculcate the "truth as it is in Jesus." Among the enlightened men who adorned the court of Ferrara were Celio Calcaquini, Lilio Giraldi, Bartolomeo Riccio, Marzello Palingenio, and Marcantonio Flaminio—all of whom were elevated above the superstitions of their age, if they were not converts to the reformed religion.



Paul III visited Ferrara A. D. 1543, and was present at a classical performance when the "Adelphi" of Terence was acted by the youth of the family and the three daughters of the duke, the eldest of whom was only twelve and the youngest five years of age. While the pope was being amused by the juvenile princesses, he was not aware then of the religious sentiments of their teachers. Two brothers from Germany, Chilian and John Sinapi, instructed them in Greek, and, being Protestants, also taught them correct views of religion. Fulvio Peregrino Morata had been a successful teacher of youth in various parts of Italy, and was tutor to the two younger brothers of the duke. During the first part of his life the mind of Morata, like that of many of his learned countrymen, had been engrossed with secular studies; but meeting with Celio Secundo Curio, a refugee from Piedmont, he received from him the knowledge of evangelical truth and a profound conviction of the reality of religion. Morata calls Curio his "divine teacher—one sent of God to instruct him, as Ananias was sent to Paul." While Morata was highly esteemed for his integrity and culture, he became still more distinguished as the father of Olympia Morata, the most enlightened woman of the age, whom he educated with all the zeal that parental love and professional enthusiasm could excite. The duchess, having observed her early proficiency in letters, selected her to be the companion of her eldest daughter, Anne, with whom she improved in every elegant and useful accomplishment. Olympia soon discovered that the blandishments and confusions of a court are not favorable for the cultivation of personal piety; yet during her residence in the ducal palace she first obtained that knowledge of the Gospel which supported her under the trials and privations which she afterwards had to endure.

It is impossible to ascertain the number of those in Ferrara who embraced the Protestant doctrines, but it probably varied at different times, according to the fluctuating politics of the duke and the measures of religious constraint or toleration which were alternately adopted by the other states of Italy. It is said that they had several preachers as early as A. D. 1528; but whether they were permitted to preach publicly in churches or chapels, or hold their assemblies in private houses, we are not informed. They probably adopted the latter course; but it is certain that their labors were successful, because such a large number of distinguished Protestants at Ferrara indicated it. Whatever progress the Gospel had made there was, however, owing to the decided patronage and encourage-

ment of the duchess Renée. Indeed, the most eminent Italians who accepted the new opinions, and were confirmed in their attachment to them, were indebted in one way or other to this noble woman. She was the second daughter of Louis XII, who may be considered, on many accounts, one of the best monarchs France has ever had; who, when urged to renew the crusades against the poor Waldenses in Dauphiny, refused to do it, saying, "*They are better Christians than we are.*" Renée was born at Blois, A. D. 1510. Her mother was Anne of Brittany, widow of Charles VIII. Scarcely had she reached the age of three years when she was bereft of her mother, and at five she lost her father. She then had to depend upon the care of her brother-in-law, Francis I, who ascended the throne A. D. 1515. At an early age she was affianced to one prince, and then another, as policy dictated; first to Ferdinand of Austria, then to Charles (afterwards Charles V, emperor of Germany), then to the king of England, then to Joachim, marquis of Brandenburg, and, lastly, to Ercole, or Hercules, whom, as we have stated, she married, A. D. 1527.

It is said by historians that personally she was not beautiful; but she possessed that which was far more valuable—"a strong intellect, a sound judgment, and great nobleness of soul, united with much tenderness of heart, and a remarkably amiable spirit." In her youth she manifested a striking fondness for those studies which are elevating in their character. She made rapid advancement in both the exact and moral sciences, and had a thorough knowledge of the Greek and Latin languages. She conversed in the Italian with the same elegance and purity that she did in the French. Such a woman was Renée of France, whom God raised up to protect for a season the persecuted Protestants in Italy; and when she was prevented by her enemies from assisting the prostrate and bleeding cause of evangelical religion in that country she was permitted to return to her native land, and there offer an asylum to such of the poor persecuted Protestants of France as gathered around the walls of the castle in which she spent her declining years.

This excellent woman unfortunately married a man who was in every respect unworthy of her. Ercole, or Hercules, was a bigoted Roman Catholic, and destitute of an independent spirit. The court of Rome had inflicted upon his father indignities and injuries, compelling him to wander for years as an exile, and serve in foreign armies as a soldier, in order to sustain existence. Before he could recover the estates belonging to him he was forced to ask pardon of

the infamous Alexander VI, and to marry the worthless Lucretia Borgia, his daughter. And yet this son had neither the desire nor the ability to extricate his neck from the yoke which his house had so long worn, but was ever ready to cringe at the feet of the pope. During the first years of his marriage he seemed to have some affection for his amiable wife; but after the death of his father and his own accession to the ducal throne he manifested a different disposition toward her. He complied with the first solicitation from the pope and emperor, and entered into a league with them, by which he bound himself to remove from his court all the French who were suspected of heresy. The adoption of this league, A. D. 1536, was followed by the retirement of Madame de Soubise and her family, whose departure was deeply regretted by the duchess. Marot went to Venice, but soon after obtained permission to return to his native land. Lyon Jamet was allowed to remain with Renée, probably because he was less known than Marot, and she appointed him her secretary after the departure of his friend. Morata returned to Ferrara A. D. 1539, and was readmitted to his professorship in the university. Concerning the movements of Hubert Lanquet, an accomplished scholar, and one of the first, or at least soundest, politicians of his age, who became a Protestant while residing at Ferrara, nothing definite has been recorded.

Ancona deserves to be mentioned in connection with the Italian Reformation, because Matteo Gentilis and his two accomplished sons were born there. The father was compelled to leave his native country on account of his Protestant opinions, and settled in Carniola, where he followed his profession as a physician. The two sons, Alberic and Scipio, became eminent civilians. The former went to England, and was made professor of laws at Oxford. His brother held the same situation at Altorf, and, in addition to his legal knowledge, was celebrated for his poetical talents and skill in Biblical criticism.



## CHAPTER XV.

*THE PROTESTANT CAUSE IN MODENA.*

AS Modena was under the government of the house of Este it is probable that its first acquaintance with the evangelical doctrines was owing to the same cause which introduced them into Ferrara. Among the early correspondents of Luther were several Modenese. One of these was Giovanni Francesco Virginio, a native of Brescia, and author of a paraphrase on the Epistles of Paul to the Galatians and Hebrews, printed at Lyons, A. D. 1565: Sadolet and three other members of the sacred college were citizens of Modena, as were also Sigonio, the celebrated antiquary; Castelvetro, a critic of great acuteness, and many others whose names often appear in the history of Italian literature. This city also possessed one of those academies which originated in such large numbers in Italy during the sixteenth century, and surpassed the old and well-endowed seminaries of science. Its founder was Giovanni Grillenzzone, an enlightened physician, in whose house it assembled. Those who attended desired to promote their mutual improvement by conversation and the reading of papers on scientific and literary subjects. Afterwards lectures were introduced and became so famous, especially those of Franciscus Portus, a learned Greek, as to attract young men from all parts of Italy to Modena.

At an early period it was believed that the academy was under the influence of Protestant opinions. Tiraboschi, in his history of Italian literature, states that the proceedings against this society had their origin in one of those quarrels in which the literati of that age were often involved with the religious orders, and in the resentment of Annibale Caro against Castelvetro, a member of the academy, who had written a severe criticism on one of his poems. It is evident, however, that this opposition rested on a deeper foundation. According to the "*Biblioteca Modenese*," another work of Tiraboschi, which contains more ample details supported by the most authentic documents, the priests regarded the academy, from its beginning, as the source of heresy in Modena, while the academicians did not hesitate to express their contempt of the priests, and especially of the monks, on account of their ignorance and hypocrisy. Grillenzzone,

the originator of the academy, in a letter to Sadolet, accounts for the charges made against him by the monks, in these words: "My nature is such that I could never conceal my displeasure at the conduct of the idle, ignorant, and hypocritical." It is not strange that intelligent men employed these terms when a friar, preaching in the cathedral of Modena during Lent, A. D. 1530, committed the sacrilegious act of producing and reading to his audience a pretended letter from Jesus Christ, drawn up in the style of a papal brief, beginning with "Jesus Episcopus."

Serafina, a canon regular of St. Augustine, preached in the cathedral church in December, A. D. 1537, and declared to his audience that the Lutheran errors had begun to spread in Modena, and in proof of his statement referred to a heretical book which he had obtained, saying that he had found it in the chamber of Lucrezia Pica, widow of Count Claudio Rangone. He, along with the inquisitor of heretical pravity and the vicar of the diocese, examined it, and then endeavored to ascertain the author and also the individual who had brought it into the city. They traced it without much difficulty to Gadaldino, a printer and bookseller, but the author could not be discovered. It was generally believed that he was one of the members of the academy, several of whom boldly approved the book, and pronounced its doctrine both orthodox and edifying. It was publicly burnt at Rome, and every copy of it destroyed. At the marriage of a daughter of Niccolo Machelli, which soon after occurred, two masked persons entered the residence of the bride's father, who was a member of the academy, and, in the place of entertainment, recited a lengthy satire on the preacher Serafina. At the same time similar pasquinades were placarded on the pillars of the cathedral, the gate of the Dominican convent, and other public places in the city. The Countess Lucrezia, considering herself scandalized by the event, persuaded the duke to have two persons arrested, both tutors to two of the prominent families of the city, and thrown into prison, as the authors of this insult to the clergy. They were soon after released, because it could not be shown that any individual had been named as the object of the satire.

While the clergy persevered in denouncing the new doctrines, the academicians resorted to their favorite method of retaliation, and often when annoyed by the ignorant harangues to which they were compelled to listen, they would arise in the congregation, criticise the sermon, and expose the preacher to the derision of the audience. Fra Serafina, having been absent for some time, ventured to return,

A. D. 1539, but was driven from the pulpit in disgrace. The monks could neither arrest the progress of the truth among the people nor prevent it from entering their own cloisters. A friar named Antoniodella Catellina preached a sermon with great applause during the feast of Pentecost, and though accused of heresy did not retract, but appeared again in the pulpit and defended the doctrine which he had taught. This alarmed the clergy and called forth a papal rescript commanding the inquisitor to strictly investigate the opinions of the religious orders established in the city.

Such was the state of the public mind when Paolo Ricio came to Modena, A. D. 1540. He was born in Sicily, obtained the degree of doctor of theology at Naples, and belonged to the order of Minor Conventuals; but in order that he might proclaim the Gospel with greater freedom, he abandoned the cowl and assumed the name of Lisea Fileno. The members of the academy cordially welcomed him, and he earnestly labored to find the friends of the Reformation in the city, whom he persuaded to meet for worship in a private house. His instructions confirmed them in the true faith, and attracted others to their standard. These results produced a great sensation in Modena; the Bible was the common topic of conversation, and the people freely and eagerly discussed the questions in controversy between the Roman Catholic Church and the Protestants. "Persons of all classes," says a contemporary popish historian, "not only the learned, but also the illiterate, and even women, whenever they met, in the streets, in shops, or in churches, disputed about faith and the doctrine of Christ, and all promiscuously tortured the sacred Scriptures, quoting Paul, Matthew, John, the Apocalypse, and all the doctors whose writings they never saw."

The news of the progress of the Gospel in Italy reached Germany, and moved Bucer to write a letter of congratulation and advice to the disciples at Modena. The priests, beholding the effects of this religious revolution, complained to the pope, and he remonstrated with the duke. Ricio, foreseeing the danger, had departed from Modena, but was arrested at the neighboring village of Staggio, and taken as a prisoner to Ferrara. There he made a public recantation of his opinions rather than be sent to Rome, where he expected no mercy. But this defection could not prevent the seed sown by him from germinating, because it had already taken deep root. The duke resolved that these contentions should not be renewed, and therefore issued orders that the pulpit should not be occupied by any one without the permission of the vicar of the diocese; but so great was the



desire of the people to hear the Gospel preached that some of the clergy violated the rule, and were supported by the local magistrates, who wrote to the ducal court in their favor. The celebrated Ochino, whose career we shall describe in the proper place, visited Modena, A. D. 1540, and preached in the cathedral church to such a large audience that, according to the testimony of one who was present, "there was scarcely room to stand." The academicians urged him to remain during Lent, promising that he should have an opportunity to conduct the services, as the preacher who had been engaged for that season could be induced to yield his place to him; but Ochino declined. At this time his defection from the Roman Catholic faith was not known, but the priests were displeased at his method of preaching, so different from their own, and at the applause which it elicited, especially from their adversaries of the academy.

One of the most obnoxious of these was Giovanni di Politiano, called also de' Berettari. In his youth he had secured the esteem of Cardinals Bembo and Bibbiena for his poetical talent, and was at this period a tutor to Camillo, a son of the distinguished Francesco Molza. As he was in priests' orders he preached in the house of his patron, and the citizens in large numbers attended the service after the departure of Riccio. A spy having reported that he presented three erroneous propositions in his exposition of Paul's Epistles, Politiano was accused of disloyalty to the papal Church. One of these propositions was that prayers in an unknown tongue were not acceptable to God. The offender waited upon the inquisitors, and explained his words; but they were not satisfied, and summoned him to appear for trial. Declining to attend, he was excommunicated for contumacy. He immediately appealed to the pope, and through the influence of Molza, with Cardinal Farnese, the nephew of Paul III, the inquisitor was called to Rome. After a delay of several months a decision was rendered acquitting Politiano, or Berettari, who, on the 1st of October, A. D. 1541, returned, along with his pupil, in triumph to Modena; but his enemies were vindictive, and, having commenced a new process against him at Rome, they obtained a verdict of "guilty." He was then sentenced to do penance privately in the presence of a few select individuals.

During the progress of these events Cardinal Morone, bishop of Modena, was chiefly absent in Germany on missions from the pope. He had repeatedly heard of the spread of heresy in his diocese, and the reports made him the more uneasy, because he was aware of the corruptions in the Church, and cherished a deep regard for several

of the Modenese, who were accused. In a letter to the duke of Ferrara, dated the 21st of November, A. D. 1541, he says: "Eight days ago I came to Modena to make residence at my Church, and to endeavor with the divine assistance to do all in my power, consistently with charity, to remove the bad fame which this city of your excellency has incurred, not only in Italy, but abroad, in reference to the modern novelties of opinion. I had proceeded so far in this affair, and brought it to some issue, when I received an order from his holiness to repair to Rome." While making another visit to his diocese, he writes on the 20th of May, A. D. 1542, to his friend, Cardinal Contarini: "I have found things which infinitely distress me, and while I perceive the danger, am quite at a loss as to the means by which I can extricate myself in the affairs of this flock which, with my blood, I would willingly secure to Christ and clear from public infamy. Wherever I go, and from all quarters, I hear that the city is become Lutheran. Your suspicions are not without foundation, for it can not be denied that much ignorance, joined with great audacity and little charity, reigns among the monks; but against the other side are many violent suspicions and even some proofs, which I mean to verify, with the view of adopting the remedies which God may direct." And, on the 30th of July, he writes to the same person: "Yesterday a minister of that order frankly told me that their preachers would no longer go to Modena on account of the persecution to which they were exposed from the academy, it being everywhere spread abroad that the city is Lutheran."

---

## CHAPTER XVI.

### *THE REFORMATION IN CENTRAL AND SOUTHERN ITALY.*

FLORENCE, the capital of Tuscany, became greatly distinguished at the era of the revival of letters. No other Italian city contained so many enlightened citizens and such flourishing academies, while its university was not excelled in the number of its scholars and the encouragement which it gave to every branch of science and liberal art. But these studies did not promote either pure religion or genuine liberty. The cultivation of the fine arts in the "Middle Ages," by appealing chiefly to the senses, was intimately associated with superstition, and the first introduction of letters into Europe





FLORENCE.



contributed in many cases to the growth of extravagance and corruption both among the patrons and their clients because munificent gifts for their support were recklessly spent. The luxury which prevailed among the rich, combined with the ignorance and bigotry of the masses, ever under the influence of a numerous train of priests and monks, constituted a serious barrier to the progress of evangelical truth in Florence. Besides, the celebrated family of the Medici, after expending vast sums in adorning and exalting their native city, finished by overthrowing its liberties; and so true is the maxim "men will praise thee when thou dost well to thyself," that their ambition has found apologists among those who have extolled their early patriotism. In the course of a few years Florence had considered herself honored by the elevation of two of her sons to the chair of St. Peter under the respective titles of Leo X and Clement VII, and therefore was strongly attached to the Romish See.

In view of all these obstacles it was to be expected that the Reformation would encounter the most powerful resistance in that city, yet we are assured that many of its citizens had accepted the Protestant doctrines before A. D. 1525. It is a significant fact that the Scriptures were translated about this time into Italian by no less than three natives of Florence—Brucioli, Marmochini, and Teofilo. Antonio Brucioli has been already mentioned in a preceding chapter of this work, but deserves more particular notice on account of the invaluable services which he rendered to Italy by his writings. He was born about the close of the fifteenth century, and in the early part of his life was a distinguished member of the Platonic Academy in his native city. Ardently attached to popular liberty, and full of youthful zeal, he was persuaded to embark in a conspiracy to expel the house of the Medici from Florence; but the project having been discovered he was compelled to fly. After spending some time in Venice, he traveled in France and Germany. The five years of his exile infused a spirit of religious liberty into his soul and softened his political feelings. Applying himself to the study of Hebrew at Venice, he became very proficient, and afterwards obtained great distinction for his knowledge of that language; and while in Germany he had the best facilities for understanding the Scriptures.

After the emperor, Charles V, had humbled Pope Clement VII, and the authority of the Medici was suspended in Florence, Brucioli returned to his native city, A. D. 1527; but his recent intercourse with Lutherans had brought upon him the suspicion of heresy. He talked freely concerning the clergy, and thereby rendered himself

still more unpopular. His friends having warned him to be more careful in his conversation, he replied, "If I speak truth I can not speak wrong." The Dominicans of St. Marco were particularly indignant at his censures, and one of them, Fojano, who was then a popular preacher in Florence, denounced him from the pulpit as a heretic, and, alluding to the meaning of his name, which, in Italian, signifies *twigs, or shavings of wood*, exclaimed, "Brucioli is fit for nothing but to be burned." Soon after he was cast into prison, and, in addition to the charge of heresy, was accused of corresponding with France. An examination of his papers, however, revealed nothing suspicious or prejudicial to Italy, but only some specimens of a translation of a Bible, and a cipher which he had employed in writing to his friend Alamanno. The monks demanded the infliction of capital punishment, and Brucioli, by the boldness of his defense, irritated the judge before whom he was tried, and, no doubt, aggravated his case; but, through the influence of friends his sentence was restricted to banishment for two years.

It is probable that Brucioli never entertained thoughts of returning to Florence, but in dedicating one of his works to Cosmo de Medici he addressed him in a respectful manner and praised the mild character of his administration. Without soliciting any personal favors he exhorted him to encourage the reading of the Bible by his people as the best means of making devout men and dutiful subjects. For his own safety Brucioli prudently wrote his letters and dedications without dating them from any place; but it is generally believed that he retired to Venice again, and there spent the remainder of his life engaged in literary labors. At first he was compelled to endure the privations of an exile, but, refusing to become dependent on the bounty of a rich patron, he preferred to live in obscurity and to support himself by the productions of his pen. For some years he was chiefly employed as a corrector of the press, which, at that time, was an important position. At length he and his brothers, or, as some say, his cousins, Francesco and Alessandro Brucioli, succeeded in establishing a printing-office of their own. From A. D. 1530 to A. D. 1556, the probable year of his death, he published many of his own works, including translations of the classics, but his Biblical labors were the most valuable. A specimen of his hymns, in connection with a list of his writings, was published by Schelhorn.

In addition to his version of the Scriptures, already mentioned, Brucioli wrote a commentary on the whole Bible, extending to seven volumes in folio, a work of great value, and abounding in evangelical

views. Father Simon admits that he translated from the original, and not, like the Roman Catholics, from the Vulgate, but says that he, having an imperfect knowledge of Hebrew, committed many errors by following Pagnini. This charge was not sustained by satisfactory proof, but was one of those indiscreet statements so frequently and hastily uttered by this ingenious critic. His remark that Brucioli's version often offends against the purity of the Italian tongue and abounds with Hebraisms, is more correct; but such a fault is inevitable in giving a literal translation. The Roman Catholics have endeavored to detract from the literary fame of the great author, because they disliked his religious opinions. Some of their writers were cautious in their commendations of his talents and erudition. "He was well acquainted," says one of them, "with Greek, Hebrew, and Latin, and endowed by nature with rare talents; but, trusting to his genius, he plunged into grievous errors, which are scattered over many of his writings; and he died without making any recantation." Another writer, Poccianti, gives a similar representation of his character.

The Romish authorities not only placed his translations of the Bible into the first class of forbidden books, but also strictly prohibited all his works on whatever subject, whether "published or to be published," together with all the books which were issued from his press, even after his death. Schelhorn, a foreign writer, who examined Brucioli's commentary and was competent to pronounce a correct opinion, declares that it contains numerous and decisive proofs of the author's attachment to evangelical truth. "Though Italy be the fortress and strength of the papal empire," say the Lucchees refugees at Geneva, "because the authority of the pope is most firmly established over the people of that country, this could not prevent the light from penetrating it in different quarters; in consequence of which the scales fell from the eyes and the shackles from the hands of many who sat in darkness and captivity. This was effected by means of an Italian translation of the Bible by Brucioli, which was published at that time, and which it was not judged prudent to stifle in its birth by those violent measures which were afterwards employed for its suppression." If the influence of a man's writings is estimated in the bestowment of the title of "reformer," surely Brucioli deserves it.

In no Italian city did the truths of the Reformation spread more rapidly or more extensively than in Bologna, which in the sixteenth century belonged to the kingdom of the pope. From it the various



pontiffs issued some of the severest of their edicts against heresy; but this did not prevent the light, which was shining around, from penetrating that city. Its university was one of the earliest and greatest schools of Europe, and its members enjoyed extensive privileges. They were accustomed to hear the essential principles of liberty boldly proclaimed in public discussions in the halls of learning. The students, therefore, imbibed liberal sentiments, and the new opinions in religion were rapidly propagated in Bologna, while they had become unpopular in those states of Italy which had been deprived to a great extent of their former freedom. The principal instrument, under the blessing of God, of promoting the Gospel in that city, was John Mollio, a native of Montalcino, in the territory of Sienna. He had belonged to the order of Minorites from his youth, but he was more industrious than the most of his brethren, devoting himself to the study of polite literature and theology, and wasting no time in superstition or idleness. By a close examination of the Bible and the works of the reformers he obtained clear views of evangelical truth, and, having a reputation for culture and piety, possessed great influence, which, as a professor and preacher, he exerted in favor of reform. After acquiring considerable celebrity in the universities of Brescia, Milan, and Pavia, he came to Bologna about A. D. 1533. In his lectures he presented certain propositions relating to justification by faith, and other questions then in controversy, and was opposed by Cornelio, a professor of metaphysics, who, being discomfited in a public discussion with Mollio, accused him of heresy, and caused him to be summoned to Rome. He defended himself with such eloquence and ability that the judges, appointed by Paul III to try the cause, were compelled to acquit him, declaring that his doctrines were true, but should not be publicly taught, because they might at that time create prejudice against the "Apostolical See." The papal authorities sent him back to Bologna, and admonished him to abstain from explaining the Epistles of St. Paul. This prohibition, however, did not prevent him from preaching the same doctrine as formerly, which was received by his hearers with increasing interest. At length the pope commanded him to be removed from the university.

The progress which the Reformation had made at Bologna is indicated by a letter, peculiar in its style and matter, which some of the inhabitants of that city addressed, A. D. 1533, to John Planitz, ambassador from the elector of Saxony to Charles V, who was then in Italy. After having alluded to the report that he had been sent

to entreat the emperor to induce the pope to convene a general council for the reformation of the abuses of the Church, they expressed their thanks that Germany had "thrown off the tyrannical yoke of Antichrist," and now demanded a council. In concluding their earnest letter they entreated the ambassador to "obtain this most desirable and necessary assembly."

The number of persons favorable to Protestantism in Bologna continued to increase many years after this period. Bucer, in a letter written A. D. 1541, congratulates them on their increasing numbers and knowledge; and Baldassare Altieri, A. D. 1545, informed an acquaintance in Germany that a nobleman in that city was ready to raise six thousand soldiers in favor of the evangelical party if it was found necessary to make war against the pope. The court of Rome adopted a measure at this time which confirmed the letter of the Bolognese Protestants concerning the strong and almost universal desire for ecclesiastical reform in Italy. Paul III would not convene a general council, and yet he could not evade the importunities of those who demanded it, and therefore he appointed, A. D. 1537, four cardinals—Contarini, Caraffa, Sadolet, and Pole; and five prelates—Fregoso, Archbishop of Salerno; Aleander, of Brindisi; Gibert, of Verona; Cortese, Abbot of St. George of Venice; and Badia, master of the Sacred Palace, to meet at Bologna, and charged them, after due deliberation, to suggest to him the best method of reforming the abuses of the Church. This commission included some of the most respectable dignitaries of the Church, and the result of its meeting was some wholesome recommendations to the pope. They acknowledged that both the head and members of the ecclesiastical body "labored under a pestiferous malady, which if not cured, would prove fatal." Among the evils which demanded a speedy remedy, they named the admission of improper persons to the priesthood, the sale of benefices, the disposition of them by testaments, the granting of dispensations and exemptions, and the union of bishoprics, including "the incompatible offices of cardinal and bishop."

Addressing the pope they say: "Some of your predecessors in the pontifical chair, having itching ears, have heaped to themselves teachers according to their own lusts, who, instead of instructing them what to do, were expert in finding out reasons to justify what they wished to do, and encouraged them in their simoniacal practices by maintaining their right to dispose, at their pleasure, of all ecclesiastical property." The proposal of the court of Rome to reform these abuses was evidently not sincere. Paul III approved the

"Advice" and ordered it to be printed; but, instead of obeying its injunctions, he openly violated them in various instances. Even the advisers themselves neglected to exemplify their own rules. The cardinals retained their bishoprics; Pole did not remove the purple when he became primate of all England; and Caraffa, when he afterwards ascended the papal throne under the title of Paul IV, placed the "Advice" which he had given to his predecessor in the list of prohibited books. This document, however, was not overlooked by the Protestants, a copy having been sent to Germany and published in Latin with a prefatory epistle by Sturmius, rector of the Academy of Strasburg. It was also issued in German by Luther, accompanied with satirical remarks from his pen, accusing the cardinals of contenting themselves with removing the small twigs, while they allowed the trunk of corruption to remain unmolested, and, like the Pharisees of old, strained at gnats and swallowed camels. To present this forcibly to his readers he prefixed to the book an engraving representing the pope, seated on a high throne, surrounded by his cardinals, who were all busy sweeping the room, each with a broom made of a long pole with a fox's tail fastened to the end. Pallavicini was displeased with this measure of the pope, who, by ordering a reformation of manners, acknowledged the existence of corruptions and countenanced the detracting speeches which heretics circulated among the vulgar.

The doctrines of the glorious Reformation penetrated even the distant provinces of Naples and Sicily, or the southern part of Italy, and the adjacent island, which were then governed by separate viceroys, under Charles V, the emperor of Spain. As to Calabria, or the southern extremity of the Italian peninsula, we have spoken already of a colony of Vaudois, or Waldenses from the valleys of Piedmont, as having existed two centuries in that department of the kingdom of Naples, and as being in existence at the commencement of the Reformation. In the city of Naples there were many who early embraced evangelical truth, which they probably first received from the German soldiers of Charles V, who, after the sack of Rome, compelled Lautrec, the French general, to raise the siege of Naples, and continued to garrison that city for some time. Determined to destroy the seeds which had been sown by these foreigners, Charles V issued a rigorous edict, A. D. 1536, commanding Don Pedro de Toledo, his viceroy at Naples, to punish all who were infected with heresy, or who were inclined to it.

According to a contemporary Romish historian, Caraccioli, the





BAY OF NAPLES.

Germans were succeeded by an individual who "caused a far greater slaughter of souls than all the thousands of heretical soldiery." This was Juan di Valdez, or, as he is sometimes called, Valdesso, a distinguished Spaniard, who had been forced to leave the court of Charles V, and his native land, for the sake of the Gospel. He accompanied his sovereign into Germany, and, having been knighted, was sent to Naples, where he acted as secretary of the viceroy, Don Pedro de Toledo. His character was admirably adapted to promote the Protestant cause. In him were combined learning, refinement, gentleness, politeness, eloquence in conversation, and fervent piety, and he soon became a great favorite with the nobility, and all the intelligent men who at a certain season of the year resorted in large numbers to the Neapolitan metropolis. His villa stood on the western arm of the Bay of Naples, near the tomb of Virgil, having a magnificent view of the calm sea and the picturesque island of Capri, with the opposite shore, on which Vesuvius, with its crown of flame, kept watch over the cities which fourteen hundred years before it had wrapped in a winding-sheet of ashes and buried in a tomb of lava. There the friends of Valdez often assembled to discuss the articles of the Protestant creed and confirm one another in their adherence to the Gospel.

Among these were Peter Martyr Vermigli, as he is commonly called by English writers. His Italian name is *Pietro Martire Vermigli*, and sometimes is designated *Petrus Martyr Vermilius*, to distinguish him from Petrus Martyr *Mediolanensis*, a martyr after whom he is named, in consequence of a vow of his parents; and also to distinguish him from an enlightened countryman and contemporary of his own, Petrus Martyr *Anglerius* (of Anghiera), "whose epistles," says Dr. M'Crie, "are known to the learned as throwing great light on the history of the early part of the sixteenth century." Vermigli was born at Florence, A. D. 1500, of an honorable family, and received a liberal education. In his youth he was taught Latin by his mother; and when he arrived at the age of sixteen he entered, in opposition to the will of his parents, the canons regular of St. Augustine, and passed his novitiate in their convent at Ficcoli, which, by the liberality of the Medici, contained an extensive library. He was then sent to the University of Padua, where he obtained a thorough knowledge of the Greek language and philosophy; and afterwards visited the most celebrated academies of Italy. While at Vercelli he was persuaded by Cusano, his intimate friend, to interpret Homer; and at Bologna he was instructed in Hebrew by a Jewish physician, named



Isaac. The Augustinians having appointed him one of their public preachers, he became noted for the solidity and eloquence of his sermons in their churches at Rome, Bologna, Fermo, Pisa, Venice Mantua, Bergamo, and Montferrat, during Lent, and on other great occasions. The members of his order were favorably impressed with his talents and labors, and he was unanimously elected abbot of Spoleto. Soon after he was appointed provost of the College of St. Pietro *ad aram*, in the city of Naples, a position of dignity and emolument. This occurred about A. D. 1530, when he was in the thirtieth year of his age.

It was not long after this, when he had bright prospects of sure and rapid promotion in the Romish Church, that his religious sentiments were completely changed. From his youth, as he himself declares, he was deeply interested in sacred studies, and, having obtained a copy of the Bible in the convent to which he belonged, he read it with great care, and not without profit to himself and others. The treatises of Zwingle on "True and False Religion" and on "Providence," and some of Bucer's commentaries on Scripture, subsequently came into his hands, and the perusal of them made a profound impression on his mind. This conviction of the truth was confirmed and deepened by the conversation of Valdez, Flaminio, and others, with whom he became acquainted at Naples. In the wilderness of Romanism Peter Martyr was parched with spiritual thirst, because he could not find the "water of life" to refresh his soul; but Valdez led him to a fountain, whereat he drank, and thirsted no more.

Another member of that Protestant band was Caserta, a Neapolitan nobleman, who had a young relative, then wholly absorbed in the gayeties and splendors of Naples. This was Galeazzo Caraccioli, whom Caserta introduced to Valdez. He was the only son of the marquis of Vico, and possessed some excellent traits of character. After his conversion to the truth he served Christ with his whole heart, and, when the tempest of persecution dispersed the brilliant company to which he belonged, he abandoned his noble palace, his rich patrimony, his affectionate wife, his dear children, and all his honors, clinging to the cross, and repairing to Geneva, where, in the words of Calvin, "he was content with our littleness, and lives frugally, according to the habits of the commonality—neither more nor less than any one of us."

This select society received another member, A. D. 1536. Bernardino Ochino, or, as he is sometimes called, Ocello, came at that time



to Naples to preach the Lent sermons. He was born, A. D. 1487, at Sienna, in Tuscany, of poor and obscure parents. From his earliest years he was deeply moved by religious impressions, and, according to the opinions of that age, devoted himself to a monastic life, entering the convent of Franciscan Observantines, the strictest of all the orders of the regular clergy. For a similar reason he went from them to the Capuchin brotherhood, A. D. 1534, recently established with the most rigid rules of holy living. In the work which he wrote after leaving Italy he acknowledges that during his monastic retirement he escaped many vices which he might not have avoided in his intercourse with a sinful world, and that even from the barren and unprofitable studies of the cloister he obtained some knowledge that was useful; but he confesses his complete failure in possessing what he anticipated when he chose that unnatural and painful mode of life, with its voluntary humility and mortification. Ochino did not find peace of mind and assurance of salvation.

“When I was a young man,” he says, “I was under the dominion of the common error by which the minds of all who live under the yoke of the wicked Antichrist are enthralled; so that I believed that we were to be saved by our own works—fastings, prayers, abstinence, watchings, and other things of the same kind, by which we were to make satisfaction for our sins, and purchase heaven through the concurring grace of God. Wherefore, being anxious to be saved, I deliberated with myself what manner of life I should follow; and believing that those modes of religion were holy which were approved by the Roman Church, which I regarded as infallible, and judging that the life of the friars of St. Francis, called *de observantia*, was above all others severe, austere, and rigid, and on that account more perfect and conformable to the life of Christ, I entered their society. Although I did not find what I expected, yet no better way presenting itself to my blinded judgment, I continued among them until the Capuchin friars made their appearance, when, being struck with the still greater austerity of their mode of living, I assumed their habit, in spite of the resistance made by my sensuality and carnal prudence.

“Being now persuaded that I had found what I was seeking I said to Christ, ‘Lord, if I am not saved now, I know nothing more that I can do.’ In the course of my meditations I was often perplexed, and felt at a loss to reconcile the views on which I acted with what the Scriptures said about salvation being the gift of God

through the redemption wrought by Christ; but the authority of the Church silenced these scruples, and in proportion as concern for my soul became more intense I applied myself with greater diligence and ardor to those bodily exercises and mortifications which were prescribed by the doctrine of the Church and by the rules of the order to which I had submitted. Still, however, I remained a stranger to true peace of mind, which at last I found by searching the Scriptures and such helps for understanding them as I had access to. I now came to be satisfied of the three following truths: *First*, that Christ, by his obedience and death, has made a plenary satisfaction and merited heaven for the elect, which is the only righteousness and ground of salvation; *secondly*, that religious vows of human invention are not only useless, but hurtful and wicked; and, *thirdly*, that the Roman Church, though calculated to fascinate the senses by her external pomp and splendor, is unscriptural and abominable in the sight of God."

In Italy it was customary for the secular clergy to perform general duties, but not to preach, as this devolved exclusively upon the monks and friars. Those who had the best pulpit talents were selected by the chapters of the different orders to visit the principal cities and preach during the time of Lent, which was almost the only season of the year in which the people enjoyed religious instruction. Ochino attained the highest position as a pulpit orator. He possessed original talents, but was not an erudite scholar. The fervor of his piety and the sanctity of his life rendered his discourses very impressive. The hearts of his hearers were charmed by his extraordinary eloquence, which was accompanied with emotion and unction. His external appearance, too, after he had passed the middle period of life, was exceedingly imposing. A snow-white head, and beard of the same color flowing down to his girdle, together with a pale countenance, made his aspect venerable and impressive. He never rode on horseback or in a carriage, but always traveled on foot, even when he was advanced in years. Princes and bishops welcomed him to their palaces with all the honors due to one of superior rank, and when he departed bestowed upon him the same marks of distinction; yet he, amid all the elegance and luxury that often surrounded him, retained the austerity and simplicity of the religious order to which he belonged. The intelligent and the ignorant, the nobility and the commonalty, equally followed him and admired his eloquence. "In such reputation was he held," says the annalist of the Capuchins, after Ochino had brought on them the stigma of

heresy, "that he was esteemed incomparably the best preacher of Italy; his powers of elocution, accompanied with the most admirable action, giving him the complete command of his audience, and the more so that his life corresponded to his doctrine." Charles V, when in Italy, listened with delight to his sermons, and said, "That man would make the stones weep!" Sadolet and Bembo, who were better judges than the emperor, pronounced Ochino the greatest of living orators.

By his discourses, he persuaded the inhabitants of Perugia to bury all their animosities and amicably settle their lawsuits; and in Naples he preached to such a large audience, and with such popular eloquence, that he collected at one time for a charitable purpose the almost incredible sum of five thousand crowns. The most respectable inhabitants of Venice, A. D. 1538, employed Cardinal Bembo to secure the services of the eloquent and devout Capuchin for the ensuing Lent. Bembo addressed a letter to Vittoria Colonna, marchioness of Pescara, urging her to intercede with Ochino, over whom she had considerable influence, to visit Venice, whose inhabitants, having heard of his fame, were intensely eager to listen to his sermons. He accepted the invitation, and, on his arrival at the seagirt city, received a perfect ovation. The elegant pen of Bembo describes, in a letter to the marchioness, dated from Venice, the 23d of February, A. D. 1539, the nature and effects of Ochino's preaching: "I send your highness the extracts of our very reverend Frate Bernardino, to whom I have listened during the small part of this Lent, which is over, with a pleasure which I can not sufficiently express. Assuredly, I never heard so edifying and holy a preacher, and do not wonder that your highness esteems him as you do. He discourses very differently from any other that has mounted the pulpit in my day, and in a more Christian manner; bringing forth truths of superior excellence and usefulness, and enforcing them with the most affectionate ardor. He pleases every body above measure, and will carry the hearts of all with him when he leaves this place. From the whole city I send your highness immortal thanks for the favor you have done us, and I especially will ever feel obliged to you."

In another letter to the same lady, dated the 15th of March, Bembo says: "I talk with your highness as I talked this morning with the reverend father, Frate Bernardino, to whom I have laid open my whole heart and soul, as I would have done to Jesus Christ, to whom I am persuaded he is acceptable and dear. Never have I had the pleasure to speak to a holier man than he. I should have



been now at Padua, both on account of a business which has engaged me for a whole year, and also to shun the applications with which I am incessantly assailed in consequence of this blessed cardinalate; but I was unwilling to deprive myself of the opportunity of hearing his most excellent, holy, and edifying sermons." On the 14th of April he writes: "Our Frate Bernardino, whom I desire henceforth to call mine as well as yours, is at present adored in this city. There is not a man or woman who does not extol him to the skies. Oh, what pleasure! Oh, what delight! Oh, what joy has he given! But I reserve his praises until I meet your highness, and, in the mean time, supplicate our Lord to order his life so as that it may endure longer to the honor and the profit of men, than it can endure according to the way in which he now treats himself." Cardinal Bembo also addressed the following letter to the parson of the Church of the Apostles, expressing the deep interest which was felt in Venice for Ochino: "I pray you to entreat and oblige the reverend father, Frate Bernardino, to eat flesh, not for the gratification and benefit of his body, about which he is indifferent, but for the comfort of our souls, that he may be able to preach the Gospel to the praise of our blessed Savior. For he can not continue his present exercises, nor bear up under them during the present Lent, unless he leave off the diet of the season, which, as experience proves, always brings on him a catarrh." While Bembo extolled the character of Ochino for piety and eloquence, he did not suspect that he was a Protestant, though he uttered evangelical sentiments; but the future conduct of the cardinal indicates that he would have felt and spoken very differently had he been informed that the doctrine to which he had listened with such delight was the same that Luther preached. Names exert a controlling influence, often exciting prejudice and causing men to reject the truth. How unreliable sometimes are the warmest feelings which the preaching of the Gospel may awaken, but which afterwards may be chilled by the atmosphere of bigotry.

Ochino was unanimously chosen general or chief director of the Capuchins in a general chapter of the order, held at Florence, A. D. 1538; and, in another chapter, which convened in the city of Naples, at Whitsunside, A. D. 1541, he, notwithstanding his earnest protest, was re-elected to the same office. The change in his religious sentiments had occurred before he had obtained such extensive popularity as a preacher, or was the recipient of these honors. His hearers realized that his sermons were different in their letter and spirit from those he had once preached, but they could not assign the cause.

In support of the doctrines which he advocated he appealed directly to the Bible, exhorting the people to rest their faith on the infallible authority of the Word of God, and to build their hopes of salvation on the obedience and death of Christ alone. His great prudence enabled him for years to preach the Gospel to the delight of its friends and without giving open offense to its enemies, by simply proclaiming the truth and not attacking corresponding errors. Believing that he should regard his own safety, and consulting the welfare of his hearers, whose minds were not prepared to accept all the Protestant doctrines, he refrained from exposing the superstitions and corruptions of the Romish Church. When he came to preach at Naples, the penetrating eye of Valdez quickly detected the Protestant under the "patched rocket and sharp-horned cowl" of the Capuchin, and, having gained his confidence, he introduced him to the private meetings held by the converts to the Protestant faith in that city.

The preaching of Ochino attracted large crowds to the church of St. Giovanni Maggiore; and his accession to the select society which gathered around Valdez greatly increased its strength. He scattered the seeds of divine truth among the common people, and not only these, but persons of all ranks were delighted with his discourses. Among his audience might be seen Giulia de Gonzaga, widow of the duke of ~~F~~rajetto, who was considered the most beautiful woman in Italy, and what was still higher praise, one of the most sincere and humble of its Christians. And there was Vittoria Colonna, marchioness of Pescara, also renowned for the loveliness of her person as well as for her talents and virtues. And there was Pietro Carnesecchi, a patrician of Florence, and a former secretary of Clement VII, now a disciple of Christ, and afterwards to be a martyr to the Gospel. These were some of the illustrious men and noble women that constituted this Protestant propaganda in Naples. It seemed that in such a galaxy of rank, oratory, talent, genius, and tact there were elements of power, which promised brilliant results in the future, even the triumph, in due time, of the Reformation in Italy.

The ravages which the Gothic nations had inflicted, and the still more devastating ravages of the papacy, were about to be repaired, and the physical beauty which Italy had possessed in her first days, and a moral beauty greater than she had ever known, were about to be restored to her. The flower of an ancient nation was assembling on its own soil to engage in the noble work of developing, for the second time, those mighty energies which had long slumbered, but were not dead, in the bosom of a race that had given arts and letters

and civilization to the West. This phalanx of devoted Protestant champions, gathered on the shore of Naples, had every necessary gift for the glorious enterprise. Though small in numbers, this little host was great in names, including men of ancient lineage, of great wealth, of noble birth, of accomplished scholarship, of popular eloquence, and of poetical genius. With pride they could appeal to a brilliant past, the traditions of which had not yet perished, and the recollection of which might strengthen them in the effort to release themselves from the yoke of the present. Viewed from a human stand-point, the evangelical movement at Naples had all the elements of success; but history has often repeated the lesson, that it is the truth of principles and not the grandeur of names that gives assurance of victory. The young vine planted beneath the towers of the ancient Parthenope, and which was shooting forth so hopefully in the golden air of that classic region, was destined to wither and die.

By the blessing of God on the labors of Martyr and Ochino a reformed Church was established in Naples, including persons of the first rank in the kingdom, both male and female. Martyr excelled as much in judgment and learning as Ochino did in popular eloquence; and, in their efforts to disseminate evangelical truth, they were aided by Mollio, formerly mentioned, who, at that time, was lecturer to the monastery of St. Lorenzo, in Naples. While Ochino employed his persuasive powers in the pulpit, Martyr and Mollio read lectures, chiefly on Paul's epistles, which were attended by the monks of different convents, by individuals of the episcopal order, and by many of the nobility. The advocates of the established religion, supported by the authority of the viceroy, opposed the reform which these three devoted men were inaugurating; but the latter, by their prudence, and the encouragement extended to them by prominent citizens, maintained their position, and for a time triumphed over their adversaries. Justification by faith in Christ was a favorite doctrine of Ochino, and his printed sermons indicate that he perfectly understood it, because his explanations of it are characterized by great Scriptural simplicity. Purgatory, penances, and papal pardons fell before the preaching of this doctrine, as Dagon before the ark of God.

Ochino and his colleagues were challenged to a discussion of these points by an Augustinian monk of Trevigio, who desired to recommend himself to his superiors; but, possessing only ordinary talent and a limited knowledge of the Bible, he was discomfited and silenced by the champions of the evangelical cause. The Romish Church has



always regarded the thirteenth, fourteenth, and fifteenth verses of the third chapter of the First Epistle to the Corinthians as the strongest passage in the Bible in support of the lucrative doctrine of purgatory. Martyr did not directly attack the doctrine; but, taking the words of Paul, from which Romanists have been accustomed to draw their most popular arguments in its favor, he gave a different interpretation of them, and confirmed it by reference to the text and context, and also by extracts from the writings of the most judicious and learned among the Fathers. This view of that favorite passage caused considerable speculation, and, as the monks thought, destroyed one of the main pillars of purgatory. Alarmed at the popularity of this heresy among the people, and dreading the closing up of the most profitable channel of their income, they exerted themselves to the utmost to silence the daring innovator. By their own representations, and through the influence of the viceroy, they succeeded in obtaining an order which interdicted him from lecturing and preaching. Gonzago, Cardinal of Mantua, and protector of his order, favored Martyr, who was also intimately acquainted with Cardinals Contarini, Pole, Bembo, and Fregoso, all men of learning, and some of them the friends of ecclesiastical reform. Depending upon their influence, he appealed his cause to Rome, and obtained a removal of the interdict. In addition to the eminent individuals already mentioned as having embraced the Protestant faith in Naples, there were two who merit special consideration. One of them, Bernardino Bonifacio, marquis of Oria, was a nobleman equally celebrated for his learning and his piety, who, after traveling through various countries, settled at last in Nuremberg. The other was Antonio Caraccioli, a son of the prince of Melphi, and who was usually known by his father's title. This Neapolitan nobleman secretly accepted the truths of the Reformation, but did not openly profess them until after his departure from Italy. Having gone to France, he was appointed abbot of St. Victor, in Paris, and afterwards bishop of Troyes, in Champagne. He had thoroughly read the writings of the reformers, especially those of Calvin, and when he became a bishop, A. D. 1551, he boldly and eloquently denounced the abuses of the Romish Church. His sermons attracted multitudes, who, through curiosity, flocked to hear a bishop preach, or perhaps by love to the truth. The papal authorities soon summoned him to answer for his conduct, and, yielding to the strong pressure against him, he made a public recantation in his own cathedral, thereby dishonoring himself and disappointing the hopes of many.

On his return from a visit to Italy, A. D. 1557, he had an interview with Calvin and Beza, at Geneva, which rekindled his zeal for the reformed faith. He was at the conference between the Catholics and Protestants at Poissy, A. D. 1560, and after its adjournment returned to Troyes in company with his countryman, Peter Martyr, to whom he expressed his determination, at all hazards, to proclaim and abide by the truth, of which he was now completely convinced in his conscience. He demonstrated his sincerity by meeting with the Protestants in Troyes, professing his faith, and even stating his doubts as to the validity of his episcopal orders. Having declared his willingness to serve them, they gave him a call to the pastoral office, and then unanimously selected him to be their minister. He was pronounced a heretic by the papal clergy, and degraded from the position he had occupied. At a subsequent period the reformed bishop offended his new friends by deserting his Church and attaching himself to the court; but he did not cease to preach, and persevered in the Protestant religion until the close of his life.

The death of Valdez occurred A. D. 1540, and while the Church at Naples was enjoying peace, and daily increasing in numbers, it was afflicted by the loss of this great man, to whom it chiefly owed its existence. He was also deeply lamented by many distinguished individuals, who called him their spiritual father. "I wish we were again at Naples," says Bonfadio, in a letter to Carnesecchi. But when I consider the matter in another point of view, to what purpose should we go there now, when Valdez is dead? His death is truly a great loss to us, and to the world; for Valdez was one of the rarest men in Europe, as the writings left by him on the epistles of St. Paul and the psalms of David abundantly demonstrate. He was beyond all doubt a most accomplished man in all his words, actions, and counsels. Life scarcely supported his infirm and spare body; but his nobler part and pure intellect, as if it had been placed without the body, was wholly occupied with the contemplation of truth and divine things. I condole with Marco Antonio [Flaminio], for, above all others, he greatly loved and admired him." His deep piety and purity of life are universally admitted. After his death, the report that he had entertained heterodox sentiments was extensively circulated; but it rested principally on the circumstance that some of his intimate friends ultimately inclined to the Socinians. The tenets of this sect are not found in his writings, though they contained some other opinions which are either untenable or unguardedly expressed. Beza declares that while he could not indorse some things in the

“Divine Considerations” of Valdez, he discovered nothing contrary to the regular orthodox standard.

Not only were the doctrines of the Gospel received in the capital, but they spread also in all parts of the kingdom of Naples, and even reached Sicily, which was, at that period, an appendage to the crown of Spain. The viceroys, who governed that island under Charles V, being engaged in defending their coasts against the Turks, had not time to study the intrigues of Italian policy; but, on the other hand, exhibited a mild and tolerant spirit, which encouraged those who fled from persecution on the Continent to seek protection from them. Benedetti, surnamed Locarno, from the place of his birth, a minister of great sanctity, having obtained the favor of the viceroy, preached the Gospel under his patronage to crowded audiences in Palermo, and other parts of that island, widely scattering the seeds of divine truth. An abundant harvest was soon produced, giving to the inquisitors ample employment in extirpating heresy. For many years persons accused of being Lutherans were sacrificed in the public and private *autos-da-fe* celebrated in Sicily.

Lucca, the capital of a small but flourishing republic on the east coast of the Gulf of Genoa, enjoyed the honor of having among its inhabitants a greater number of converts to the Protestant faith than perhaps any other city in Italy. This was chiefly the result of Peter Martyr's labors in that place. After a trial of several years he discovered that the climate of Naples was injurious to his health, and, leaving there with the consent of his superiors, he was appointed visitor-general of the Augustinians in Italy. His earnest efforts to introduce reform into the monasteries, encouraged by Cardinal Gonzaga, and his rigid inspection of the internal condition of the order, alarmed the monks, who determined to get rid of their troublesome visitor. This was accomplished by having him appointed prior of St. Fridiano, at Lucca, an honorable position which invested him with episcopal powers. There was an ancient feud between the inhabitants of Lucca and Florence, and the enemies of Martyr hoped that he, as a Florentine, would be unpopular in his new situation; but he conducted himself so prudently that he was as much esteemed as if he had been a native of Lucca. He devoted himself particularly to the education of the novices in the priory, whose minds he desired to imbue with the love of sacred literature. Having established a private college, or seminary, he employed teachers who were both learned men and lovers of divine truth. Paolo Lacisio, a native of Verona, taught the Latin language; Celso Martinengho, of the noble



family of the counts of that name, taught Greek ; and Emanuel Tremellio, of Ferrara, who afterwards became celebrated as an Oriental scholar, gave instructions in Hebrew. Martyr himself applied the literary knowledge which the young men obtained from these sources to the exposition of the Bible, by reading lectures to them on the New Testament and the Psalter, which were attended by all the educated men, and many of the patricians of Lucca. He also preached publicly to the people, confining himself to the Gospels during Advent and Lent, according to the usual custom of the monks ; but selecting his subjects from the Epistles during the rest of the year.

As the result of these labors a Church was organized in that city, of which Martyr became pastor, and many, including individuals of prominence, embraced the reformed faith, and, by the most positive proofs, manifested genuine piety and ardent devotion to the truth. At that time Pope Paul III visited Lucca, accompanied by the emperor, Charles V, who was then in Italy. The friends of Martyr feared that his enemies, taking advantage of the opportunity, would make accusations against him, and that his life would be endangered ; but he was not molested, probably because they considered it impolitic to attack a teacher of his reputation and authority. His popularity with the inhabitants was so great that any attempt to persecute him would have been premature and ineffectual. About the same time he was visited by Cardinal Contarni, who passed through Lucca on his return from Germany, where he had been in the character of a papal legate. They conversed confidentially on the state of the Church and on the sentiments of the German reformers. Besides Peter Martyr, the evangelical cause at Lucca was favored with the presence and counsel of Celio Secundo Curio, who taught in the university, having been recommended to the senators by the duchess of Ferrara.

There were many converts to the Gospel at Sienna, through Ochino, who, as we have already stated, was a native of that city, which he often visited in his preaching tours. But the inhabitants were mainly indebted to Aonio Paleario, a native of Veroli, in Campagna di Roma, for the knowledge of evangelical truth. He was first a tutor in the house of Belanti, and about A. D. 1534 was nominated public teacher of Greek and Latin by the senate of Sienna, where he afterwards read lectures on "Philosophy" and "Belles-lettres." His study of the Bible and the writings of the German reformers imparted a liberal tone to his lectures on "Moral Philosophy," which were different from those of his colleagues. While the students were delighted with his advanced ideas, the advocates of the old school of

thought were offended. Cardinal Sadolet, in the name of his friends, warned him of the danger of yielding to novelties, and advised him, in view of the times, to confine himself to the "safer task of clothing the peripatetic ideas in elegant language." The liberal mind of Paleario, strong in its devotion to the truth, did not relish this prudential advice. Regarding it his duty freely and even severely to censure vain pretenders to scholarship and piety, he did not hesitate to perform it. This irritated that class of men who scruple at no means to oppress and destroy an adversary, and, accordingly, they adopted the popular method of those days, and accused him of heresy. They watched his private conduct and circulated to his prejudice expressions uttered unsuspectingly in private conversation. He committed an offense by laughing at a rich priest, who was seen every morning kneeling at the shrine of a saint, but who refused to pay his debts. "Cotta asserts," says Paleario in one of his letters, "that if I am allowed to live there will not be a vestige of religion left in the city. Why? Because, being asked one day what was the first ground on which men should rest their salvation, I replied, Christ; being asked what was the second, I replied, Christ; and being asked what was the third, I still replied, Christ."

But Paleario's gravest offense in the estimation of his enemies was the publication of his book on the "Benefit of the Death of Christ," concerning which he made the following statement in the defense of himself before the senate of Sienna: "There are some persons so sour, so morose, so censorious, as to be displeased when we give the highest praise to the author and God of our salvation, Christ, the king of all nations and people. When I wrote a treatise this very year in the Tuscan language, to show what great benefits accrue to mankind from his death, this was made the ground of a criminal accusation against me. Is it possible to utter or conceive any thing more shameful? I had said that since he, in whom the divinity resided, has poured out his life's blood so lovingly for our salvation, we ought not to doubt of the good will of heaven, but might promise ourselves the greatest tranquillity and peace. I had affirmed, agreeably, to the most unquestionable monuments of antiquity, that those who turn with their souls to Christ crucified commit themselves to him by faith, acquiesce in the promises, and cleave with assured confidence to him, are delivered from all evil and enjoy a plenary pardon of their sins. These things appeared so grievous, so detestable, so execrable to the twelve—I can not call them men, but—inhuman beasts, that they judged the author worthy of being

committed to the flames. If I must undergo this punishment for the foresaid testimony (for I deem it a testimony rather than a libel), then, senators, nothing more happy can befall me. In such a time as this I do not think a Christian ought to die in his bed. I am not only willing to be accused, to be dragged to prison, to be scourged, to be hung up by the neck, to be sewed up in a sack, to be exposed to wild beasts, let me be roasted before a fire, provided only the truth be brought to light by such a death."

Addressing his accuser, Paleario says: "You accuse me of being of the same sentiments with the Germans. Good God, what an illiberal charge! Do you mean to bind up all the Germans in one bundle? Are they all bad? Though you should restrict your charge to their divines, still it is ridiculous. Are there not many excellent divines in Germany? But your accusation, though full of trifling, has nevertheless a sting which, as proceeding from you, is charged with poison. By Germans you mean Ecolampade, Erasmus, Melancthon, Luther, Pomeran, Bucer, and others, who have incurred suspicion. But surely there is not a divine among us so stupid as not to perceive and confess that the writings of these men contain many things worthy of the highest praise, many things gravely, accurately, and faithfully stated, repeated from the early Fathers, who have left us the institutes, and also from the later commentaries of the Greeks and Latins who, though not to be compared with those pillars, are still of use for interpretation. 'But do not you approve of all that the Germans have done?' This, Otho, is like the rest of your questions; yet I will answer it. I approve of some things; of others I disapprove. To pass by many things, I praise the Germans and consider them as entitled to public thanks for their exertions in restoring the purity of the Latin language, which, till of late, was oppressed by barbarism and poverty of speech. Formerly sacred studies lay neglected in the cells of idlers, who retired from the world to enjoy their repose (and yet, amidst their snoring, they contrived to hear what we said in cities and villages); now these studies are, in a great measure, revived in Germany. Chaldaic, Greek, and Latin libraries are erected; books are beautifully printed, and honorable stipends are assigned to divines. What can be more illustrious than these things? What more glorious? What more deserving of perpetual praise? Afterwards arose civil discords, intestine wars, commotions, seditions, and other evils, which, for the sake of charity and brotherly love among Christians, I deplore. Who does not praise the former? Who is not displeased with the latter?"



In this eloquent defense of Paleario, boldness and candor were tempered by prudence and address, and he achieved a victory over the violence and intrigues of his enemies. He was, however, compelled soon after to leave Sienna; but this change in the place of his residence did not relieve him from the odium which he had incurred. From Lucca he went to Milan at the request of the authorities of that city, and spent seven years there as professor of eloquence, handsomely supported and greatly honored. It appears from his published letters that he enjoyed the friendship and correspondence of the most distinguished men of his time, both in the religious and literary world. Among the former were Cardinals Sadolet, Bembo, Pole, Maffei, Badia, Filonardi, Sfondrati, and among the latter Flaminio, Riccio, Alciati, Vittorio, Lampridio, and Buonamici. He was, indeed, a profound scholar. His poem on the immortality of the soul elicited the highest praise from the learned, and his admirable works, "Letter on the Council of Trent," addressed to the reformers, and "Testimony and Plea against the Roman Pontiffs," evince a thorough knowledge of the Bible and great soundness of judgment. But no production of his exerted as wide an influence as the book which was published, A. D. 1543, in Italian, under the title, *Il Beneficio di Christo*, and was afterwards translated into Spanish and French. Vergerio says of it: "Many are of opinion that there is scarcely a book of this age, or at least in the Italian language, so sweet, so pious, so simple, so well fitted to instruct the ignorant and weak, especially in the doctrine of justification. I will say more: Reginald Pole, the British cardinal, and the intimate friend of Morone, was esteemed the author of that book, or partly so; at least it is known that he, with Flaminio, Priuli, and his other friends, defended and circulated it."

This treatise was eminently useful in diffusing evangelical doctrine in Italy upon a subject of vital importance. Forty thousand copies were sold in six years. Cardinal Morone was imprisoned and Caronesecchi consigned to the flames for their active efforts in circulating it. There is evidence to show that it was translated into English and read in Scotland. This and other works of Paleario, no doubt, largely contributed to the spread of the reformed opinions in Sienna, and some idea of the progress of the Gospel there may be formed from the number of individuals who subsequently submitted to a voluntary exile for the sake of the truth, among whom were Lanctantio Ragnoni, Mino Celso, and the Socini, who obtained celebrity by giving their name to a new sect.

## CHAPTER XVII.

*THE INQUISITION AT VENICE, MODENA, AND FERRARA.*

THE rapid progress of the Reformation in Italy seriously alarmed the court of Rome. The pope and his counselors had been engrossed by foreign politics, and believed that whatever heresy prevailed in their midst could at any time be easily suppressed. Many statements of the growth of this evil had been made to them; but the papal authorities either regarded them as exaggerated, or contented themselves with issuing prohibitory bulls and addressing letters of warning to the bishops of suspected places. But during A. D. 1542 the clergy, and particularly the friars, from all parts of the country complained that the Roman Catholic faith was exposed to great danger from the boldness of the reformers, the increase of conventicles, and the lukewarmness of local magistrates in enforcing the mandates of bishops. It was not only the voice of the inferior priests and monks that called for vengeance upon those who held and propagated Protestant opinions, but some occupying high positions breathed out "threatenings and slaughter," and attained infamous notoriety in the bloody field of persecution. Among these was Pietro Caraffa, a prelate, who made great pretensions to sanctity, but became more celebrated by his ambition and violence when he afterwards ascended the pontifical throne under the name of Paul IV. He was commonly called the "Theatine Cardinal," because he founded a religious order to which the title *Theatine* was given, Caraffa being at that time bishop of Civita di Chieti, a city in Naples. In his youth he was a patron of learning; and Erasmus, in dedicating his edition of the works of Jerome to him, extolled him in a manner wholly unworthy his polished pen—a service which Caraffa requited when he became Pope Paul IV by placing this very edition of Jerome and the other works of Erasmus in the "Index of Forbidden Books." The record in that work is as follows: "Desiderius Erasmus of Rotterdam, with all his commentaries, annotations, scholia, dialogues, epistles, critiques, translations, books, and manuscripts; even if they contain nothing at all against religion, or concerning religion." He laid before the Sacred College the discoveries he had made respecting the extent to which heresy prevailed in Na-

ples and various parts of Italy, and convinced them of the necessity of adopting the speediest and most vigorous measures for its extermination.

The Inquisition resolved to proceed, in the first place, against such of the ecclesiastics as were known to favor the Reformation. Among these Ochino and Martyr were the most distinguished; but as they were very popular, and had not yet renounced the Roman Catholic faith, spies were employed to watch their movements and report their words, while their past conduct was secretly investigated for the purpose of obtaining direct evidence of their heretical opinions. Ochino had many enemies among the friars of the Capuchin order, to which he belonged, because he, as their superior, had introduced reforms into monastic establishments. His sermons had made such an impression on the minds of the citizens of Venice that they united in an application to the pope to grant them an opportunity of hearing him a second time. Accordingly, the cardinal of Carpi, who was protector of the order of Capuchins, was directed by the pope to send him to Venice during Lent, A. D. 1542, with instructions to observe his conduct. The whole city rushed to hear their favorite preacher, who did not appear to use greater freedom on that occasion than he had on the former; but he was soon accused of having advanced doctrines not in harmony with the teachings of the Roman Catholic Church, particularly on the subject of justification. When summoned before the papal nuncio, however, he defended himself with such ability that his accusers could not find a plausible pretext for proceeding against him. Perceiving that he was closely watched by spies, he was more careful in his pulpit expressions; but having heard that Julio Terentiano, a convert of Valdez, with whom he had been intimate at Naples, was thrown into prison, he could no longer remain silent. In a sermon preached to the senators and prominent men of the city he introduced that subject, and exclaimed: "What remains for us to do, my lords? And to what purpose do we fatigue and exhaust ourselves, if those men, O noble Venice, queen of the Adriatic,—if those men who preach to you the truth are to be thrown into prison, thrust into cells, and loaded with chains and fetters? What place will be left to us? what field will remain open to the truth? Oh, that we had but liberty to preach the truth! How many blind, who now grope their way in the dark, would be restored to light!"

When the papal nuncio heard that Ochino had made this bold appeal he immediately interdicted him from preaching, and reported



the circumstance to the pope. But the Venetians, by their importunity, succeeded in having the interdict removed within three days, and the fearless orator again appeared in the pulpit.

At the close of Lent he went to Verona, and called together those of his order who were engaged in studies preparatory to the work of the ministry. Desiring to increase their Biblical knowledge, he inaugurated a course of lectures on the "Epistles of Paul," but was soon summoned to appear at Rome, to answer certain charges based upon his lectures, and made by the nuncio at Venice. Ochino started for Rome, but spent a short time at Bologna, where he had an interview with Cardinal Contarini, who was then on his death-bed, and is said to have expressed himself as agreeing with the Protestants on the article of justification, though he was opposed to them on the other points of controversy. This fact has been denied by Cardinal Quirini, Boverio, and Baccatello, but has not been disproved. In the month of August Ochino went to Florence; and receiving the information that the papal court had resolved to take his life he hastened to Ferrara, and being assisted in his flight by the Duchess Renée, escaped from Italy and reached Geneva in safety. Armed men had been sent to arrest him; but, fortunately, he had eluded them. In his answer to Muzio, which is reprinted at the end of the second volume of "*Prediche*," he has himself given an account of his departure from Italy, and the reasons of it. His countrymen, in proportion as they admired him, were amazed at his defection and flight. Claudio Tolomeo, regarded as the best epistolary writer of his age, says, in a letter which he addressed to him, that the news of his renunciation of the Roman Catholic faith and his acceptance of the Lutheran heresy had completely stunned him, and seemed utterly incredible and untrue.

Caraffa, the "Theatine Cardinal" and friend of Ochino, poured forth his lamentations in the most tragical manner. The following quotation is a specimen of that mystical devotion which at this period was combined with a spirit of bigotry and ambition in a certain class of papal teachers: "What has befallen thee, Bernardino? What evil spirit has seized thee, like the reprobate king of Israel of old? My father, my father! the chariot and the charioteer of Israel! whom a little while ago we with admiration beheld ascending to heaven in the spirit and power of Elias, must we now bewail thy descent to hell with the chariots and horsemen of Pharaoh? All Italy flocked to thee; they hung upon thy breast. Thou hast betrayed the land; thou hast slain the inhabitants. O doting old man, who

has bewitched thee to feign to thyself another Christ than thou wert taught by the Catholic Church? Ah, Bernardino, how great wert thou in the eyes of all men! Oh, how beautiful and fair! Thy coarse but sacred cap excelled the cardinal's hat and the pope's miter; thy nakedness, the most gorgeous apparel; thy bed of wattles, the softest and most delicious couch; thy deep poverty, the riches of the world. Thou wert the herald of the highest, the trumpet sounding far and wide; thou wert full of wisdom, and adorned with knowledge. The Lord placed thee in the garden of Eden, in his holy mount, as a light above the candlestick, as the sun of the people, as a pillar in his temple, as a watchman in his vineyard, as a shepherd to feed his flock. Still thy eloquent discourses sound in our ears; still we see thy unshod feet. Where now are all thy magnificent words concerning contempt of the world? Where thy invectives against covetousness? Thou that didst teach that a man should not steal, dost thou steal?"

Caraffa proceeded in this inflated state, which Cardinal Quirini calls "elegant and vehement," until he had exhausted all the metaphors in the "flowers of the saints." Ochino was not indifferent to the attacks made upon him by such writers as Girolamo Muzio and Ambrogio Catarino, who were hired to refute and defame him, but addressed an apologetical letter to the magistrates of his native city of Sienna and another to Tolomeo. Besides these, he published a large collection of his sermons and various polemical treatises against the Church of Rome, which being written in the Italian language, and in a popular style, produced a great effect upon his countrymen. After his flight, some of his most intimate friends were arrested, and a strict investigation into the sentiments of his religious order instituted. Some of the members escaped, and others saved their lives by recanting their opinions. The apostasy of Ochino, and the number of Capuchins who were infected with heresy, so incensed the pope, that he proposed at one time to suppress the whole order.

In the mean time Martyr, finding himself in danger, prepared to escape also to Switzerland. The monks of the Augustinian order, to which he belonged, had acted as spies to scrutinize his conduct, and, because he, as visitor-general, had endeavored to introduce a reformation of manners among them, they became his bitter enemies, and were the most prominent in accusing him. For a whole year they secretly opposed and openly slandered him, and would have crushed him if he had not received protection from the Lucchese. For the purpose of ascertaining the feelings of the citizens, his enemies

obtained an order from Rome to arrest Terentiano, one of his friends, who was confessor to the Augustinian convent, but rested under the suspicion of heresy. Some noblemen, admiring the confessor's piety, and believing that he was innocent, forced the doors of his prison and liberated him; but, having fallen and broken a limb in his flight, he was again taken and carried to Rome in triumph. This successful movement encouraged them to make a formal charge against Martyr before the papal court. Messengers were sent to the different convents, exhorting the monks not to neglect the opportunity of recovering "their ancient liberty" by punishing their adversary. A general congregation of the order was convened at Genoa, and he was immediately summoned to attend. Convinced of the fact that great prejudice existed against him and, warned by his friends that snares were laid for his life, he determined, after careful deliberation, to avoid the impending danger by placing himself beyond the rage and craft of his enemies. Giving up a part of his library to the convent, over which he had presided, and committing the rest to Cristoforo Trenata, a nobleman of Lucca, and his intimate friend, he requested it to be sent after him to Germany. He also arranged the affairs of the institution, and, leaving it in charge of his vicar, secretly retired from the city accompanied by Paolo Lacisio, Theodosio Trebellio, and Julio Terentiano, who had been released from prison.

After his arrival at Pisa, Martyr wrote letters to Cardinal Pole and to the brethren of the monastery at Lucca, which he gave to reliable persons, and instructed them not to deliver until a month after his departure. In these he described the errors and abuses of the papal religion generally, and particularly of the monastic life, which he could not any longer conscientiously encourage. As additional reasons for abandoning it, he referred to the odium which he had incurred, and the plots formed against his life. Fearing that he might be accused of appropriating even the smallest part of the convent property to his private use, he sent back the ring which he had been accustomed to wear as the badge of his office. At Florence he met Ochino, and, after arranging their respective routes, he, along with his three companions, traveled rapidly and cautiously by way of Bologna, Ferrara, and Verona, and safely reached Zurich. In a short time they were invited by Bucer to visit Strasburg, where they obtained situations as professors in the academy. From that city Martyr wrote to the Reformed Church of Lucca, of which he had been pastor, giving his reasons for leaving his native land, and exhorting them to perseverance in the service of God.





After the discovery of Martyr's flight, the papal authorities ordered an examination of the monastery over which he had presided, to ascertain the extent to which his heretical opinions had corrupted its inmates. Many of the monks were imprisoned, and, within less than a year, eighteen of them escaped to Switzerland. The Protestant Church in Lucca, which he had established, though

discouraged by the loss of its founder, and threatened with persecution by its adversaries, was not dispersed. It was protected by some of the prominent individuals of the state, continued to hold its private meetings, enjoyed the instruction of regular pastors, and increased both in knowledge and numbers. Martyr, in a letter written to them more than twelve years after his departure from Lucca, and subsequent to a disastrous change in their situation, says: "Such progress have you made for many years in the Gospel of Jesus Christ that it was unnecessary for me to excite you by my letters; and all that remained for me to do was to make honorable mention of you every-where, and to give thanks to our heavenly Father for the spiritual blessings with which he had crowned you. To this I had an additional motive from reflecting that my hand was honored to lay the foundations of this good work, in weakness I confess, but still, by the grace of Christ, to your no small profit. My joy was increased by learning that, after my labors among you were over, God provided you with other and abler teachers, by whose prudent care and salutary instructions the work begun in you was advanced."

One of the teachers to whom he refers was Celio Secundo Curio, who was employed in the university. After Martyr's departure he remained at Lucca more than a year, officiating as a religious teacher among the Protestants, and holding his position as a professor in the school. Notwithstanding the clamor of the priests the senate protected him for some time, but the pope having written to the magistrates of that city, demanding his arrest and appearance at Rome to answer the charges which had been brought against him by various parties, his friends, finding that they could no longer protect him, advised him to make his escape privately. Accordingly he retired to Ferrara, whence he went to Zurich and Berne with letters of recommendation from the Duchess Renée to the magistrates of those cities. Afterwards he went to Lausanne and resided there. During the same year, he returned for his wife and children, whom he had left in Italy, and while there made a narrow escape, which, though well authenticated, invests the narrative of his life with an air of romance. From the time he entered Italy Curio's route was discovered by the inquisitors, who were scattered over the country, and, deeming it unsafe to visit Lucca, he stopped at the neighboring town of Pessa, and waited for his family. His enemies had tracked him, and while he was sitting at dinner in the inn a captain of the papal band, called in Italy *barisello*, suddenly made his appearance, and entering the room commanded him, in the pope's name, to yield



himself as a prisoner. Curio, abandoning all hope of escape, rose to deliver himself up, and unconsciously held in his hand the knife which he had used in carving his food. When the *barisello* beheld an athletic man approaching him with a large knife, he was seized with a sudden panic, and retreated to a corner of the room trembling like a convict. Curio, who had great presence of mind, walked deliberately out of the door, and, passing without interruption through the armed band, who were awaiting their leader, went instantly to his stable, mounted a horse, and made good his flight.

A bull, dated the 1st of April, A. D. 1543, was issued by Paul III, proclaiming the establishment, at Rome, of the "Congregation of the Holy Office." By this edict six cardinals were invested with the title and rights of inquisitors-general of the faith, with all the necessary authority on both sides of the Alps to try all cases of heresy, with the power of arresting and imprisoning suspected persons and their abettors, of whatever estate, rank, or order, of nominating officers under them, and of appointing inferior affiliated tribunals of equal or inferior power, in all places. This court immediately commenced operations in the ecclesiastical states, and during the remainder of this century the popes made great efforts to extend its power over other parts of Italy. The strongest resistance to it was manifested in Venice, whose government insisted upon the condition that a certain number of magistrates and lawyers should be present at the examination of accused persons, and that a definitive sentence should not be pronounced, at least, in the case of the laity, without having been first submitted to the senate.

In Tuscany, three commissioners, elected by the congregation at Rome, along with the local inquisitor, were designated as the judges of all causes of religion, and were required to inform the duke of their sentence, who was appointed to carry it into execution. The popes found less opposition in the other states and cities of Italy. These provisions, which the authorities of Venice, Tuscany, and other places had adopted, should have satisfied the "Holy Office," but, in addition, it continually urged the local governments to send the accused, especially if they were either ecclesiastical persons, or strangers, to be tried by the Inquisition at Rome. Even the senate of Venice, though opposed to any interference with its authority, yielded, in some instances, to such requests. As soon as the Inquisition, thus remodeled, was erected throughout Italy, those who expressed sentiments favorable to the Reformation were persecuted, and fled in great numbers.



The pope, having taken the precaution of gaining over Ercole, duke of Ferrara, secured his co-operation in persecuting the Protestants of his dominions, many of whom were found in Modena. It has already been stated that there was a strong leaven of evangelical doctrine in the academy of that city, which Pope Paul III and his successors, Pius III, Marcellus II, and especially Paul IV, labored for years to extirpate. As Ercole was a bigoted Roman Catholic, and willing to be the merest tool of the pope, the members of the academy and others in Modena were exposed to great danger. Consultations relative to the growth of heretical opinions in that city were repeatedly held at Rome; and Paul III would have severely censured the suspected academicians had not some of their personal friends in the conclave interfered, and averted the papal anathema. In June, A. D. 1542, it was proposed in the Vatican to summon some of the most influential persons among them to Rome or Bologna; but Cardinal Sadolet suggested that, first of all, a friendly letter should be addressed to them. Accordingly, he wrote in the most conciliatory spirit to Ludovico Castelvetro, stating what had occurred in the consistory, and urging him and his colleagues to give assurances of their attachment to the Roman Catholic faith, and abstain from every practice which might cast suspicion upon them. Castelvetro and his companions, Grillenzoni, Portus, and Alessandro Milano, answered this letter to the satisfaction of Sadolet, who insisted, however, that they should write to the pope himself, declaring that they were faithful sons of the Roman Catholic Church. They declined to do this, and thereby incurred anew the displeasure of the papal hierarchy. It was now resolved to propose or submit certain articles of faith to the members of the academy for their acceptance or rejection.

The report of this created a great sensation in Modena. Portus, the Greek lecturer, and two of his companions left the city on different pretexts, and those who remained loudly complained of the treatment which they received, declaring that if the proposed measure should be carried into effect freedom of investigation would be at an end. They likewise insisted that no honorable man would consent to think or write under such restrictions, and might as well sell his books and renounce the study of the Bible. The excitement was so intense that Cardinal Morone, who was deeply concerned for the peace of his see and the honor of the academy, regretted that he had sanctioned, though he did not originate, the measure. It is said that he wrote to the pope, praying him to suspend the subscription of

the formulary, because the academicians had given sufficient pledges of their loyalty to the Church, and simply declined to subscribe, because the world would then believe that they had been justly suspected of heresy.

But the court of Rome was determined to enforce the obnoxious measure. Considerable light is shed upon these transactions by a document preserved in the ducal archives at Ferrara, which contains the secret instructions given by the governor of Modena to his chancellor, whom he sent, on the 2d of August, A. D. 1542, to consult with Hercules on this perplexing affair. It states that the academicians were opposed to subscription, and that, though they were willing to indorse some of the articles of the formulary, such matters should be referred to the determination of a council. This document also asserts that the bishop had proceeded in the matter with all possible haste, and acted in concert with the governor, whom he had reminded that through the severity of Cardinal Cajetan, the papal legate to the Lutherans, a small spark had burst into a conflagration which continued still to rage, and that he feared lest God, for the sins of the world, should permit so many men of genius, spirit, and subtlety to be driven to despair, and thereby enkindle another such flame in Italy. In this same document it is also stated that the pope, believing Morone's administration to be lacking in firmness, had employed six cardinals in Rome to manage this affair at Modena, one of whom had already come to that city to see what could be done with the heretics, and that the bishop, being offended at this step, declared his intention to withdraw from the whole business, but was persuaded by the governor to aid in accomodating the parties and in receiving the subscriptions.

In the beginning of September, 1542, Cardinals Sadolet and Cartese went to Modena to meet the bishop of that city, and endeavor to effect a reconciliation. Through the exertions of these commissioners from the pope a formulary of doctrines, drawn up with singular moderation by Contarini, at the request of Morone, was reluctantly subscribed by the suspected academicians. They refused, when first solicited, and demanded that the conservators of the city should set the example. It was with difficulty that three of them were induced to affix their names; and to encourage them still more, the cardinals consented to add their own signatures. But the members of the academy continued to demur, and, had it not been for the efforts of Morone, the negotiation would have failed. During interviews which he had with them, individually, he learned their objections, and he had list-

ened with special candor and forbearance to the scruples of Berettaïri on the subject of the mass, and collateral topics. Having assembled them together, he spoke so earnestly and affectionately, that they complied with his request. A friendly invitation was extended to the brethren who had withdrawn, and, on their return, the whole body, together with the official men of the city, accepted the formula, to the great joy of the commissioners.

This arrangement, so eagerly urged by one party and so reluctantly acceded to by the other, did not produce real or permanent peace. The members of the academy retained their former sentiments and embraced every opportunity of humiliating the priests, whom they regarded as the chief instigators of the late proceedings against their body. On the first Sunday of Advent, A. D. 1543, no sermon was preached in Modena, because, as one who lived in the city at that time expresses it in his journal, "every preacher, how excellent soever, was criticised by certain literati, and none would come to contest with them on their own ground." In the following year the bishop sent a minor-conventual friar, named Bartolomeo della Pergala, whose preaching the journalist just quoted describes in the following quaint manner: "All the members of the academy went to hear him, to the number of more than twenty-five, including the bookseller, Antonio, who first introduced the prohibited books in the vulgar language, which were afterwards burnt at Rome as heretical. The said friar did not preach the Gospel,"—meaning that he selected his text from the Epistles, and not from the Gospels—"nor did he make mention of any saint, male or female, nor of any doctor of the Church, nor of Lent or fasting. This was to the taste of the academicians. Many believed that they would go to paradise in their stocking soles; for, said they, Christ has paid for us." The bishop, discovering that he had sent the wrong preacher, ordered the arrest of Pergala, who was delivered over to the Inquisition. This tribunal condemned forty-six propositions in his doctrine, and commanded him to retract them publicly in the church in which he had preached. He complied by retracting in a formal manner; but immediately after, an address was presented to him signed by the most respectable citizens, and testifying in the highest terms to his talents and character. Pontremolo, another monk of the same order, who preached at Modena during the same year, was condemned for teaching heretical doctrines.

The persecution against the academicians was renewed, A. D. 1545, and a strong effort made to seize Filippo Valentino, a young man of great intellectual precocity and versatile genius. Castelvetro says



that, at seven years of age, Valentino composed letters in a style worthy of Cicero, and sonnets and canzoni which would have done honor to a poet of mature age. He could repeat, verbatim, sermons or lectures which he had heard only once; and had the principal poets in Latin and Italian by heart. Pellegrino Erri, or Heri, a member of the academy, was insulted by some of his colleagues, and, having resolved to inform against them, he went to the "Holy Office" at Rome and accused the literati of Modena of disaffection to the Roman Catholic Church. He also asserted that some of them were actively engaged in disseminating heresy in private. After hearing this statement, the pope addressed a letter to the duke of Ferrara, in which he referred to the information communicated by Erri, that the Lutheran heresy was daily increasing in Modena, and that Filippo Valentino was the author of the Protestant movement. He declared that such a condition of affairs must be a source of grief to a person of the duke's piety, and, therefore, exhorted him to arrest Filippo without delay, examine his papers and books, and destroy those which contained heretical sentiments. Erri, having been appointed apostolical commissary, returned to Modena to suppress the alarming evil, by seizing the leader, and thus more effectually reduce his accomplices to submission. With an armed force, which he obtained from the civil authorities, he surrounded the residence of Filippo one night; but the latter had been warned and escaped, leaving behind his book and papers, which were taken by the Inquisition. On the following morning a ducal edict was issued, prohibiting all persons from having heretical books, or from disputing in public or private on any religious subject, under the penalty, for the first offense, of a hundred crowns of gold, or of being subjected to the strap-pado if unable to pay that sum; for the second offense, two thousand pounds, or banishment from the state; and, for the third offense, confiscation of goods, or death. The proclamation of this severe edict caused great consternation in the city, and resulted in the overthrow of the academy.

The duke, however, was persuaded to relent, and permitted Filippo to return to Modena. During the pontificates of Julius III and Marcellus II the Protestants were not disturbed; but when Paul IV commenced his reign violent measures were adopted. There were still many persons in the city who were deeply attached to the evangelical cause; and accordingly orders were sent from Rome that a secret investigation should be instituted to ascertain the sentiments of some of the prominent citizens. As this arrangement

was made without the knowledge either of the governor or of Foscarari, who was now bishop of Modena, both of these dignitaries were offended at a movement which appeared to them unnecessary, and, besides, was an encroachment upon their authority. When the duke was informed of the proposed scheme he endeavored, through his minister at Rome, to defeat it, and thus prevent the enkindling of a fire which had cost so much to be extinguished; but he was compelled to yield to the pope. He reluctantly consented to the public enforcement of the order on the 6th of July, A. D. 1556, and Castelvetro, Filippo Valentino, his cousin Bonifacio, at that time provost of the cathedral church, and Gadaldino, the printer and bookseller, were summoned to appear before the Inquisition at Rome. This event produced great excitement in Modena, and the conservators, at a meeting held on the 17th of July, prepared a strong remonstrance to the duke, in which they declared that it was unusual to summon laymen to Rome, thereby subjecting them to expense and inconvenience; and that the charge of heresy would tarnish the good name of their city, which, the officials asserted, was then noted for its tranquillity. The address also stated that the revival of buried suspicions and the prosecution of individuals upon vague rumors would only add scandal to scandal; and that the persons who were about to be arraigned before the court of Rome were virtuous men, very respectable, and universally esteemed. Why, then, should they be disgraced? The conservators reminded his excellency of a fact, known to himself, that there were many men who, under the pretense of defending the faith, sought to gratify their personal revenge; and that there was reason to believe that the prosecution had originated in prejudice or hatred. The duke was exhorted to remember the past, how that numerous expedients had already been tried without pacifying the authorities at Rome; how that the whole city was compelled by the cardinals to submit to the test of subscription; and how that his excellency had interposed his authority, and the local inquisitors had been diligent in their labors. What could they discover in Rome that had not been discovered at Modena?

After waiting a proper time for an answer, the conservators appointed one of their number to visit the duke and urge him to protect the interests of their fellow-citizens. The governor also addressed a letter to him in support of their application. The duke could not resist these appeals, and therefore requested the pope either to suspend the trial or, if this could not be granted, permit it to take place at Modena. Paul IV refused both of these requests. The

duke, desiring to conciliate the stern pontiff, informed him in another communication that he had imprisoned the bookseller, Gadaldino, who, on account of decrepitude, could not be safely conveyed to Bologna; yet he should be sent if his holiness demanded it. The vice-legate of Bologna, however, soon after appeared at the court of Ferrara, and in the name of his master commanded the three Modenese gentlemen and the accused bookseller to be taken to Rome. The duke consented to send the provost, Filippo Valentino, because, being a priest, he was under greater obligations than his companions to obey the pope. The vice-legate promised that the trial should be so conducted that the prisoner would not be injured in his person or honor; but the promise was disregarded. He was detained a whole year in prison, and then compelled to make public recantation of the errors imputed to him in the church of Minerva at Rome, and afterwards to repeat the ceremony in his own church at Modena, on the 28th of May, A. D. 1558. Although more than eighty years of age, Gadaldino, the poor printer, was carried to Rome, and detained in prison for a still longer period than Filippo had spent there. The latter, like Castelvetro, did not appear before the Inquisition at the appointed time, and both were excommunicated for contumacy. Orders were sent to the bishop that he should cause the sentence to be intimated at Modena, and he consulted the duke, who, indignant on account of previous treatment, forbade the intimation.

It is not known where Filippo Valentino sought refuge from the fury of the relentless pontiff; but his friend Castelvetro appears to have lived secretly in Ferrara. Pope Paul IV and Hercules II, duke of Ferrara, died A. D. 1559, and their successors were respectively Pius IV and Alfonso II. The new duke, hoping to find the new pontiff more conciliatory, applied for a commission to try the cause of Castelvetro within his territories. The request was not granted; and Castelvetro, having received assurances of protection from the duke and persons belonging to the papal court, was induced to go to Rome. At first he was treated with great courtesy, and, instead of being thrust into prison, was invited to reside in the convent of *Santa Maria in Via*, with permission to receive his friends; but after his third appearance before the inquisitors he learned that they had obtained strong evidence against him, and, fearing that they would torture him, he suddenly left Rome, along with his brother Giammaria. The cardinals of the congregation published their final sentence on the 26th of November, A. D. 1560, pronouncing him a fugitive and impenitent heretic, who had incurred all the pains, spiritual and



temporal, decreed against such criminals, and urging every person who might have it in his power to arrest him and send him as a prisoner to Rome. He was publicly burned in effigy, and earnest letters were written to the duke of Ferrara to seize the fugitive brothers and confiscate their property.\*

One of the principal charges against Castelvetro was that he had translated into Italian a work of Melanchthon on the "Authority of the Church and the Fathers," a copy of which, said to be in his own handwriting, was produced on his trial. The charge was mentioned by Pallavicini, but the name of the book was not given. Fontanini assumed that it was the "Common Places" of Melanchthon which led Muratori to call in question the truth of the whole charge. But, as Dr. M'Crie declares, "the book—the indetical *corpus delicti*, which was verified before the Inquisition—has since been discovered in the archives of St. Angelo." In a short epistle to the reader the translator states that he had added a few notes, chiefly explanatory of certain Greek words used in "this noble little work." Tiraboschi expresses the opinion that the style of this book corresponds perfectly with that of the undoubted works of Castelvetro.

Ferrara was regarded by the Romish hierarchy as the nursery of heresy in Italy, and therefore, while making vigorous efforts to crush the reform movement in Modena, its enemies seemed to be more determined to extirpate it in the city of Renée. Paul III instructed the ecclesiastical authorities there to be diligent in investigating the conduct of persons of every rank and order who were suspected of entertaining erroneous sentiments. The usual method of procedure was urged—the taking of depositions, the use of the torture, the definitive sentence, and the transmission to Rome for final judgment. The execution of this edict produced great distress, which was increased by the adoption of new but dishonorable expedients for detecting those who wavered in their attachment to the Romish Church. At this time, A. D. 1545, commissioned spies were sent forth into all parts of Italy, and, having been supplied with recommendations, were admitted to private families, insinuated themselves into the company and the confidence of all classes, and then conveyed to the Vatican the information thus secretly collected. By assuming a variety of characters they could associate with the learned and ignorant, and were to be found equally in courts and cloisters. By this means many excellent persons were entrapped in Ferrara. These pests of society succeeded in alienating the mind of the duke from the accomplished Olympia Morata, who, on the death of her

father, A. D. 1548, left the palace, to take charge of her widowed mother and the younger members of the family. The court treated her in a harsh and ungrateful manner; and she would have passed through a severer ordeal had not a German student, named Andrew Grunthler, who was preparing himself for the medical profession, married her, and carried her along with him to his native country.

Paul III died A. D. 1550, and was succeeded by Cardinal De Monte, under the title of Julius III. This pontiff was indolent and voluptuous, but personal indulgence did not entirely divert his attention from current events, and he signed without any remorse the cruel orders dictated by those whom he had appointed to manage public affairs. In the same year of his elevation to the papal throne the Protestant Church at Ferrara was dispersed; many were cast into prison, and one of their preachers, distinguished for piety, was put to death. Olympia Morata writes to Celio Secundo Curio on this subject: "We did not come here with the intention of returning to Italy; for you are not ignorant how dangerous it is to profess Christianity in that country where Antichrist has his throne. I hear that the rage against the saints is at present so violent that former severities were but child's play compared with those which are practiced by the new pope, who can not, like his predecessor, be moved by entreaties and intercession." And in another letter she says: "I learn, from letters which I have lately received out of Italy, that the Christians are treated with great cruelty at Ferrara; neither high nor low are spared; some are imprisoned, others banished, and others obliged to save their lives by flight."

While the Romish authorities were successful in abolishing the Protestant Church at Ferrara, they were not entirely satisfied so long as a prominent member of the ducal family refused obedience to their authority. The clergy were aggravated by Renée's opposition to them, because her high rank and great accomplishments gave her influence, which she used for the promotion of the evangelical movement. Not having the power to subdue her firmness, they resolved to humble her pride; but she did not waver. Instead of concealing her partiality to the Protestant doctrines, she openly expressed her disapproval of the late persecutions, and did all within her power to protect those who were exposed to the fury of the Inquisition. The pope, therefore, earnestly and repeatedly remonstrated with her husband concerning the corrupt influences that were perverting the minds of his children and servants, and the pernicious example that was presented to his subjects. He also reminded the duke that the house

of Este, which had been so long celebrated for the purity of its faith and its devotion to the Holy See, was in danger of being stained with heresy, and that, if he did not speedily suppress the evil, he would personally incur the censures of the Church and forfeit the friendship of all Catholic princes. These remonstrances moved the duke, and led him to importune the duchess to avert the displeasure of the pope by renouncing the Protestant doctrines, and engaging in the rites of the established worship. As she persistently refused to yield, the Inquisition resolved to employ foreign influence. It is probable that the duke disliked to resort to extreme measures, and, accordingly, permitted the pope to take the responsibility. He procured the assistance of the king of France, who was Renée's nephew.

The French monarch, Henry II, sent Oritz, his inquisitor, to the court of Ferrara. He appears to have been the same individual of whom we read at an earlier period of the history of France. "Notre Maitre Oris," the inquisitor of the faith, was appointed, A. D. 1534, to search for heretics in Sancerre; but the inhabitants, discovering his fondness for good living, treated him with such hospitality that he reported them to be an excellent class of people. His deputy, Rocheli, on his return, made a similar statement concerning them. The *Lieutenant Criminel* was indignant because his prey had escaped, and declared that "good wine would at any time make all these fellows quiet." But "Notre Maitre" was then young, and had not yet tasted blood. When appointed to visit the court of Ferrara, he was instructed to ascertain to what extent Renée had imbibed error, and then to request a personal interview with her, at the same time stating to her how deeply grieved his most "Christian Majesty" felt when he heard that "his only aunt," whom he had always loved so tenderly and esteemed so highly, had embraced these detestable and heretical doctrines.

Oritz was also commanded, should gentle means, such as arguments and remonstrances, be unsuccessful, to employ severe measures to reduce her to submission, and, in the mean time, he was to preach a series of discourses on those principal points, concerning which she had erred, and compel her and all the family to attend the service, "whatever refusal or objection she might think proper to make." If all these efforts should fail to reclaim her, he was next required to entreat the duke in her presence, and, in his majesty's name, to "sequester her from all society and conversation," that she might not have the opportunity of contaminating the minds of others, to remove her children from her and not permit any of the family, of



whatever nation they might be, who were accused or strongly suspected of heresy, to approach her. In fact, he was even empowered to bring them to trial and to pronounce a sentence of exemplary punishment on those who were found guilty, the duke reserving the right to indicate such a mode of process and of inflicting punishment that would promote justice without causing scandal or disgracing the duchess and her dependents.

---

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### *PERSECUTION IN NORTHERN ITALY.*

THE daughter of Louis XII was neither to be persuaded nor frightened into an abandonment of what she conscientiously believed to be the truth. Combined with her fervent piety was an independent spirit which spurned these conditions. When she refused to violate her conscience her children were taken away from her, charges of heresy preferred against her confidential servants, and she herself detained as a prisoner in the palace. She could have patiently endured the insolence of Ortiz, but she keenly felt the upbraidings of her husband, who, disregarding her explanations, commanded her immediately and unconditionally to conform herself to the Roman Catholic Church. The pope subsequently rewarded the duke for his zeal by depriving his grandson of the dukedom of Ferrara, and adding it to the possessions of the Church. The duchess bravely submitted to the harsh treatment of her husband for some time, aggravated as it was by a life of shameful intrigues and criminality, but when that truculent pontiff, Paul IV, began his reign, A. D. 1555, the persecution commenced to rage with greater violence. It seems that Renée was more bitterly assailed than ever, and, desiring to be restored to the society of her children, she at last was induced to make some unimportant concessions. Ercole, or Hercules II, duke of Ferrara, died A. D. 1558, and, notwithstanding his immoralities, he was honored by Paul IV with the title of "Defender of the Church." After the death of her husband Renée returned to France, where her nephew, Henry II, was still on the throne, and took up her abode in the Castle of Montargis, a small and ancient city some forty miles south-east of Paris. There she spent the remainder of her life and made an open profession of the Protestant religion.

During the sixteen years which she lived after her return from Italy Renée devoted all her energies and resources to the relief of the poor, persecuted Protestants of her native land. In this work of benevolence she was compelled, of course, to encounter the hatred of the fanatical priest-party of the kingdom, at the head of which stood the Guises, one of whom was the husband of her daughter, Anne. Francis II, the son and the successor on the throne of Henry II, was a mere youth without experience, and entirely under the control of a bigoted faction when he commenced the persecution of the Protestants. The houses of those whose names appeared on the lists of the proscribed were pillaged and torn down, and many persons were put to death. The prince of Condé, a distinguished Protestant, was cast into prison at Orleans, and his sister-in-law, the countess of Royé, was thrown into that of St. Germain-en-Laye. Renée hastened to Orleans to save Condé. She met the duke of Guise, her son-in-law, and, in denouncing his perfidy, boldly said that, "if she had been there she would have prevented what had been done; whoever gave the king such advice has deceived him; this wound will bleed a long time hereafter, and so much the more as no one has ever become fond of shedding the blood of France without finding evil in so doing."

The duke of Guise subsequently sent an armed force to Montargis, under the conduct of Jean de Souches-Malicorne, to arrest the unfortunate Protestants who were being protected by the duchess Renée. During the struggle a number of these people were killed, their houses were burned, and then razed to the ground. The duchess retired to the castle, into which all fled that could. De Souches threatened to advance his cannon and demolish the fortress. But he received this bold answer from the courageous Renée: "Consider well what you do; know that no one has the right to command me but the king himself; and that, if you come hither, I will be the first to mount the breach, where I shall see if you have the audacity to kill the daughter of a king who desires only to protect her subjects, and whose death heaven and earth will be bound to avenge upon you and all your line, even to your children who are in their cradles." When this noble answer was reported to the duke of Guise, he ceased to threaten the Protestants. His death, by the hand of a fanatical Protestant named Poltrot, occurred soon after, and caused Renée the deepest sorrow. She deplored the civil war which the Roman Catholics, supported by the government, had inaugurated to destroy by force the new religion.

The only crime of which Protestants were guilty was their belief in a religion founded on the Gospel, which inculcated the practice of good works instead of vain superstitions, and taught men to rely for salvation upon the merit of a once crucified but now exalted Savior. The Romish Church urged the necessity of penances, pilgrimages, and other human inventions, and breathed out



DUCHESS RENÉE.

“threatenings and slaughter” against all who believed in the doctrine of salvation by faith, and trusted in the merits of Christ alone, without the mediation of priests and confessors. Renée had experienced the power of divine grace in her own heart, and labored to bring others into the ways of righteousness and holiness, which she had herself found. She desired this religion to be propagated by reason and persuasion, and not by force. But the voice of humanity was not likely to be heard in those days, and all that this noble woman could do was to labor in behalf of the Protestant cause, and,



as far as her influence extended, to shield the pastors. She maintained a constant correspondence with the principal men among them until her death, which occurred at Montargis, on the 12th of June, 1575. To the close of her life she was a consistent and devoted Protestant, and by her opposition to Romanism showed that she was a worthy daughter of him who caused to be inscribed on the medal which was struck on the occasion of the council of Lyons—the council which proclaimed the liberties of the Gallican Church—“*Destruam Babylonem*,” or, “*I will destroy Babylon*,” meaning Rome.

The Protestants of France to this day revere the memory of this noble princess, who was an ornament to the religion which they profess. Renée had five children: two sons, Alfonso, who became duke of Ferrara, celebrated as the patron, and afterwards the enemy of Torquato Tasso; Louis, Cardinal d’Este; and three daughters, Anne, who married first, Francis of Lorraine, called the duke of Guise, and afterwards the duke of Savoy; Lucretia, duchess of Urbino, and the Princess Elenora, who died unmarried. For the latter poor Tasso entertained a strong affection, which has been considered the cause of the misfortunes which overshadowed and embittered the closing years of his life. The eldest daughter, Anne of Este, “whose integrity of understanding and sensibility of heart were worthy of a better age,” did not, like her mother, openly avow her attachment to the Protestant cause, but she exerted all her influence to moderate the violence of her bigoted husbands, Francis, duke of Guise, and James of Savoy, duke of Nemours, who were two of the most ardent Roman Catholics in France. In her youth, the example and instructions of Olympia Morata were of inestimable value to her. She was the only one of Renée’s children that resembled her, either in goodness of heart or vigor of intellect. Condorcet, De Thou, Riccio, Paleario, Calcagnini, and other French and Italian authors, have extolled this amiable princess. In the published works of Olympia Morata, there is a beautiful letter, addressed to “Annæ Estensi, Principi Guisianæ.”

While the Romish hierarchy was anxious to suppress the Reformation in the dominions of the duke of Ferrara, its desire to extirpate heresy within the territories of the Venetian republic was not less strong. The flight of Ochino caused a searching investigation to be made for the purpose of ascertaining the sentiments of the Capuchins residing in that part of Italy. For several years after this the pope sent letters and nuncios to the senate, urging the suppression of the Lutheran doctrines, which had been embraced by many prominent citizens, especially in Vicenza. At that time Cardinal Rodolfo

was administrator of the bishopric of Vicenza, and manifested great zeal in opposing the Protestant movement; but the local magistrates would not permit the secular power to be employed against it. It may be that they disliked to interfere, or perhaps they knew that the superiors, who publicly issued the orders, did not wish them to be enforced. When the pope became acquainted with the situation of affairs, he wrote a long and earnest letter to the senate, first complimenting them on their former religious zeal and devotion to the court of Rome, and then informing them that innovation in religion would result in civil dissensions and sedition among them, as it had done elsewhere. In this letter, written A. D. 1546, Paul III complains that the podesta and capitano of Vicenza had disobeyed the commands so often given to them, and permitted the Lutheran heresy to be openly professed before their masters of the Œcumenical Council, which had been called and was now in session at Trent, chiefly for the purpose of suppressing this evil. The pontiff, therefore, earnestly exhorts the doge and senators that they should compel these magistrates to seize and punish the heretics, and thus, by assisting the vicars of the diocese, compensate for their past negligence. The senate complied with this request, and promulgated orders which resulted in the dispersion of the Protestant Church at Vicenza, A. D. 1547.

The senate adopted similar measures throughout their dominions. An edict was issued, A. D. 1548, ordering all who possessed books which contained any thing contrary to the Roman Catholic faith to deliver them up within eight days, or be proceeded against as heretics. This was followed by great severities against the Protestants, not only in the city of Venice but in all its territories. The excellent Altieri, who was one of the most steadfast friends of the truth in Venice, gives affecting accounts in his letters to Bullinger and other Protestants in Switzerland of the state of things around him. He writes: "The persecution here increases every day. Many are seized, of whom some have been sent to the galleys, others condemned to perpetual imprisonment, and some, alas, have been induced by fear of punishment to recant. Many have been banished along with their wives and children, while still greater numbers have fled for their lives. Matters are brought to that pass that I begin to fear for myself; for, though I have frequently been able to protect others in this storm, there is reason to apprehend that the same hard terms will be proposed to me; but it is the will of God that his people be tried by such afflictions." Altieri continued to exert his influence

with unwearied and commendable zeal in behalf of his brethren, procuring letters favorable to them from the elector of Saxony and other German princes, for whom he acted as agent with the Venetian republic. He also visited Switzerland to persuade the Protestant cantons to espouse the cause of his persecuted countrymen, and when on his homeward journey he attended an assembly of the deputies of the Grison Confederation at Coire, where he made an earnest plea in behalf of the Venetian Protestants.

Altieri was successful in both places in obtaining letters to the senate of Venice, imploring lenient treatment of the Protestants; but he was much disappointed because he failed to procure a public commission to act for these states. If his expectations in this matter could have been realized, he would have possessed greater influence with the authorities at Venice. It may be that the civil rulers of Switzerland and the Grisons had sufficient reasons for not complying with his request; but, after reading his letters to Bullinger, a distinguished minister of Zurich, we sympathize with this good man in his bitter disappointment and sad repinings, and admire his rare example of disinterested devotion to the cause of Christ and the best interests of his country at a period when comparatively few either knew or cared for them. In a letter written to Bullinger from Coire he says: "I have delivered your letter and that of Myconius to the ministers of this Church; I have also conversed with them on my business, but find them rather lukewarm, either because this is their natural disposition, or because they think the matter too difficult to be obtained, especially after your friends in Switzerland have refused it. They, however, give me some hopes of success. In another letter to the same correspondent, he writes: "From the assembly of the Grison states, which has been held here, I have only been able to obtain commendatory letters; had it not been for the opposition made by some enemies of religion, I would have also obtained a public commission. They have concluded a treaty with France; the emperor's ambassador was present, but could do nothing."

After mentioning the discouragements he had met with from those of whom he had expected better things, Altieri exclaims: "Thus do the minds of men now cleave to the world! If the spirit of the Lord had not long ago taken possession of my heart, I would have followed the common example, and, hiding myself in some secret corner, attended to my own private affairs instead of taking an active part in the cause of Christ. But God forbid that I should entertain the blasphemous thought of desisting to labor for him, who



never ceased to labor in my cause until he had endured the reproach of the cross. Therefore, I return to Italy ready, as before, to encounter whatever may befall me, and willing to be bound for the name of Christ." Before leaving the Grisons he received the information that the persecution was daily becoming more severe at Venice. "It is not, therefore, without danger that I return," says he, in another letter, "for you know how much I am hated by the papists and wicked. I do not undertake the journey rashly; God will preserve me from all evil; do you pray for me." On his arrival at Venice he discovered that his enemies had arrayed the magistrates against him, and he was commanded either to renounce the Protestant faith or immediately leave the territories of the republic. Without hesitation he chose the latter alternative; but, not despairing of the reformation of his native land, and desiring to aid his persecuted brethren, he wandered with his wife and child from city to city—now staying a short time at Ferrara, then at Bologna, and again at Florence.

At length, when he could no longer appear in public, he sought an asylum for himself and his family in a retired place near Brescia. Soon after his banishment from Venice he wrote to Bullinger, saying: "Take the following particulars concerning my return to Italy. I am well, with my wife and little child. As to other things, all the effect of my commendatory letters was an offer on the part of the senate that I should be allowed to remain in safety among them, provided I would yield conformity to their religion—that is, the Roman; otherwise it behooved me to withdraw without delay from their dominions. Having devoted myself to Christ, I chose exile rather than the enjoyment of pleasant Venice, with its execrable religion. I departed accordingly; and went first to Ferrara, and afterwards to Florence." In another letter, written to Bullinger from his place of retirement, he says: "Know that I am in great trouble and danger of my life, nor is there a place in Italy where I can be safe with my wife and boy. My fears for myself increase daily; for I know the wicked will never rest till they have swallowed me up alive. I entreat a share in your prayers." This is the last intelligence that was ever heard of that noble man. It is probable that he never escaped from Italy; and his fate will no doubt remain a secret until the mysteries and crimes of the Romish Inquisition shall be disclosed.

If the Protestants of the capital received such treatment, it is not surprising that the magistrates of Venice permitted the severest measures to be employed against them in the more distant provinces.

Dreadful scenes of suffering were witnessed in the beautiful peninsula of Capo d'Istria. The agents of the papal court were greatly irritated by the more than suspected defection of the two Vergerii, of whom we have already spoken as the bishops, respectively, of Capo d'Istria and Pola. The Romish inquisitor, Annibale Grisone, was sent into these dioceses, A. D. 1546, and by his activity and cruelty spread alarm and distress among the inhabitants. The papal bull was read by him from all the pulpits, and was, as usual, full of threatenings. It required all, under the pain of excommunication, to inform against those whom they suspected of heresy, and to deliver up the prohibited books which might be in their possession. He promised to forgive the penitent when they confessed and supplicated mercy; but those who, concealing their crimes, should be convicted on information, would be consigned to the flames. Not content with public denunciations, he visited every house in search of heretical books. Whoever confessed that they had read the New Testament in the vulgar tongue were commanded, under the severest pains, to abstain from that dangerous practice in the future. The rich were allowed to perform private penance, but the poor were compelled to make a public recantation. At first only a few persons of weaker minds were induced to inform against themselves or their acquaintances; but at last every one feared that his neighbor would get the start of him, and a reign of terror was inaugurated. The wife informed against her husband, the son against his father, the client against his patron. Grisone, taking advantage of the excited state of the public mind, ascended the pulpit in the cathedral of Capo d'Istria on a great festive day, and, after celebrating mass, addressed the crowd. "You see," said he, "the calamities which have befallen you for some years past. At one time your fields, at another your olive-trees, at another your vines, have failed; you have been afflicted in your cattle, and in the whole of your substance. To what are all these evils to be ascribed? To your bishop, and the heretics whom he protects; nor can you expect any alleviation of your distress until they are punished. Why do you not rise up and stone them?" This harangue so inflamed the ignorant and alarmed multitude that Vergerio was compelled to conceal himself.

Amid this excitement the bishop of Pola suddenly died, and many believed that he had been poisoned. His brother, leaving his diocese, took refuge at Mantua with his patron, Cardinal Gonzaga, who soon dismissed him because the celebrated Della Casa, the papal nuncio at Venice, communicated to him certain facts concerning the

bishop's course. Vergerio then visited the Council of Trent for the purpose of vindicating himself, or, as some assert, of demanding his seat in that assembly. The pope would have issued an order for his arrest, but he feared that the impression might be made upon the minds of the German Protestants that the council was not free. As he professed to be anxious to have them present, he deemed it prudent not to molest Vergerio. The papal legates, desiring to remove such a dangerous person from Trent, resolved to change the summons which ordered him to appear at Rome, and remit the trial of the charges brought against him to the nuncio and patriarch of Venice. Vergerio conducted his defense with such ability and tact that the trial was protracted for two years, at the end of which he was prohibited from returning to his diocese. Francesco Spira, a lawyer of Padua, died about this time in a state of great mental anguish, because, dreading the terrors of the Inquisition, he had recanted the Protestant faith. Vergerio, who had come from Venice to Padua, was present when he died, and united with some other learned and pious persons in endeavoring to comfort the miserable penitent.

Such a deep and solemn impression was made upon the mind of Vergerio by this death-bed scene that he determined to abandon his bishopric and native country, and to select a place of refuge where he could publicly and safely profess the truth which he had embraced. "To tell the truth," says he, "I felt such a flame in my breast that I could scarcely restrain myself at times from going to the chamber-door of the legate at Venice and crying out: 'Here I am; where are your prisons and your fires? Satisfy your utmost desire upon me; burn me for the cause of Christ, I beseech you, since I have had an opportunity of comforting the miserable Spira, and of publishing what it was the will of God should be published.'" The history of Spira was compiled by Vergerio, with the assistance of letters from Celio Secundo Curio and other writers. In a letter to Bullinger, dated the 15th of August, A. D. 1549, Calvin refers to a recent letter which he received from Vergerio, who sent him the history of Spira, saying that the chief cause of his exile from Italy was this book, and requesting him to write a preface to it. Calvin consented, and the work was printed A. D. 1550. Two years previously Vergerio, to the surprise equally of those whom he had deserted and of those whom he joined, retired into the Grisons.

The inquisitor Grisone was succeeded by Tomasso de Santa Stella, who, after annoying the inhabitants by his outrageous proceedings, endeavored to persuade the senate of Venice to place garrisons in



their principal cities, under the pretext that Vergerio intended to invade Istria. The latter published a defense of his conduct, addressed to the doge and senate, and containing his views of the secret and violent methods employed by the persecutors throughout Italy. After complaining of their cruelties, he states several facts relative to their conduct in the Venetian dominions. "Nothing," says he, "can be more shameful than what this pope has done. He has conferred honors and rewards on such of your prelates as are unprofitable and godless; but the bishop of Bergamo, your countryman of the house of Soranzo, he has thrown into prison, for no other reason than that he opposed non-residence and superstition, and testified a regard for the doctrine of the Gospel. What is it to exercise oppression and tyranny over you if this is not? Is it possible that this should not awaken you?" The papal agents, having encroached on criminal jurisdiction, were about this time resisted by the senate, which manifested a disposition to check their violent proceedings. "The news from Italy is," says Vergerio, "that the senate of Venice have made a decree that no papal legate nor bishop nor inquisitor shall proceed against any subject except in the presence of a civil magistrate, and that the pope, enraged at this, has fulminated a bull, interdicting under the heaviest pains any secular prince from interposing the least hinderance to trials for heresy. It remains to be seen whether the Venetians will obey."

The court of Rome, however, by its perseverance and intrigues, finally achieved a victory over patrician jealousy. The Inquisition even arrested and detained foreigners who visited the republic to transact business. Frederic de Salice, who had been sent to Venice from the republic of the Grisons to demand the release of some of its subjects, wrote, A. D. 1557, the following account of matters there: "In this commonwealth, and in general throughout Italy, where the pope possesses what they call spiritual jurisdiction, the faithful are subjected to the severest inquisition. Ample authority is given to the inquisitors, on the smallest information, to seize any one at their pleasure, to put him to the torture, and (what is worse than death) to send him to Rome; which was not wont to be the case until the time of the reigning pontiff. I am detained here longer than I could wish, and know not when I shall be able to extricate myself from this labyrinth." This ambassador had scarcely returned home, after accomplishing his object, when another of his countrymen, a merchant, was cast into prison by the Inquisition at Vicenza.

Hercules de Salice, late governor of the Grisons, was sent to procure his release; but the remonstrances of this prominent man, seconded by the influence of the French ambassador, were for some time disregarded by the senate. This body endeavored to evade the terms of the treaty between the two countries, and the concessions which they had made during the preceding year. The ambassador from the Grisons, having secured a public audience, denounced the intolerable arrogance of the papal claims with such boldness and eloquence that, though the elder patricians murmured, a majority of the senate voted for an immediate discharge of the prisoner. Several of the senators afterwards thanked Hercules de Salice for his courage, which enabled him, as a foreigner, and formerly in the military service of Venice, to declare what would have cost a patrician his life. The pope rewarded the zeal which the senate of Venice had manifested against the Lutheran heresy by conferring on that assembly, A. D. 1559, the perpetual right of electing their own patriarch.

Notwithstanding all that was done to suppress the Protestant religion in Venice, there continued to be a considerable remnant who faithfully adhered to it. Those who professed this faith met regularly in a private house for the worship of God, and called a minister, A. D. 1560, to organize them into a Church, and administer to them the Lord's-supper. The papal court, by means of its spies, soon ascertained that the heretics were holding meetings, and ordered the attendants to be arrested. Those who failed in making their escape were thrown into prison. Many fled to the province of Istria, and, after remaining in concealment there for some time, twenty-three of them purchased a vessel to transport them to a foreign country. When they were about to sail, an avaricious foreigner, who had been informed of their project, arraigned three of them before the local magistrates to secure the payment of a debt, which he claimed they owed him. Failing to extort money from them, he accused them of being heretics, who had fled from justice. Accordingly they were arrested, taken to Venice, and thrown into the same prisons with their brethren. The senate had refused all previous requests for the infliction of capital punishment on the Protestants, though, in the remoter provinces, the local magistrates, in some instances, yielded to the demand of the inquisitors, and condemned some to death. But at this period the senators obeyed the counsels of the Inquisition, which they had so long resisted, and the reign of cruelty was inaugurated, disgracing, during its continuance, the criminal jurisdiction of the republic. Drowning was the mode of capital

punishment adopted by the Venetian authorities, either because it was less cruel and odious than that of burning, or because it was in accordance with the customs of Venice. While the *autos-da-fe* of the "Queen of the Adriatic" were not so barbarous as those of Spain, yet they were accompanied with a terrible silence and solitude, which rendered them appalling. The prisoner was taken from his cell at the hour of midnight, and placed in a gondola, as the small and swiftly gliding boat of Venice is called, with no other attendants but the rowers, and a priest to act as a confessor. After being rowed out into the sea, beyond the Two Castles, another boat approached, and came alongside of them. The prisoner was then laid on a plank whose ends rested on the two boats. His body was chained, and a heavy stone was attached to his feet. A signal being given, the gondolas separated, and the victim was plunged into the deep, to rise no more "till the sea gives up her dead."

The first person who suffered martyrdom in the city of Venice, was Julio Guirlanda, a native of the Trevisano. When set on the plank, he cheerfully said, "Farewell," to the captain, and sank into the deep, calling on the Lord Jesus. He passed away on the 19th of October, A. D. 1562, in the fortieth year of his age. Antonio Ricetto, of Vicenza, a most honorable man, was the next martyr. After he had been convicted, so highly was he esteemed that the senators promised to restore to him, not only his liberty, but also the whole of his property, part of which had been sold, and the rest promised away, provided he would renounce the Protestant faith. His firmness was more severely tried by his son, a boy of twelve years of age, who, when admitted into the prison, fell at his feet, beseeching him, in the most pathetic manner, to accept the conditions of deliverance made to him, and not leave his child an orphan. When informed, one day by the keeper of the prison, that one of his companions had recanted, he merely replied, "What is that to me?" He retained his courage in the gondola and on the plank, praying for those who ignorantly put him to death, and commending his soul to his Savior. His death occurred on the 15th of February, A. D. 1566. Francesco Segà, a native of Rovigo, composed several religious works during his confinement, for the comfort of his fellow-prisoners, part of which was preserved after his death. He was drowned on the 25th of February, A. D. 1566. Francesco Spinula, a native of Milan, being a priest, was more closely questioned than his brethren. He was arraigned thrice before the judges, and the papal legate, together with many of the chief clergy, attended, on



one of these occasions. They threatened him with a fiery death; but he openly professed the Protestant faith, and fearlessly denounced the usurpations of the pope, the doctrine of purgatory, and the invocation of saints. The length and severity of his confinement prostrated him, and, taking advantage of his sickness, his enemies extorted some concessions from him; but when he recovered he immediately retracted them. He was then formally degraded from the priesthood, and, on the 31st of January, A. D. 1567, was consigned to a watery grave.

But the most distinguished of all the martyrs of Venice was the venerable Fra Baldo Lupetino. The following account of him by his nephew, in a book now become very rare, deserves to be preserved entire: "The reverend Baldus Lupetinus sprung from a noble and ancient family was a learned monk and provincial of the order to which he belonged. After having long preached the Word of God in both the vulgar languages (the Italian and Sclavonian) in many cities, and defended it by public disputation in several places of celebrity, with great applause, he was at last thrown into close prison at Venice by the inquisitor and papal legate. In this condition he continued, during nearly twenty years, to bear an undaunted testimony to the Gospel of Christ; so that his bonds and doctrine were made known, not only to that city, but to the whole of Italy, and even to Europe at large, by which means evangelical truth was more widely spread. Two things among many others, may be mentioned as marks of the singular providence of God toward this person during his imprisonment. In the first place, the princes of Germany often interceded for his liberation, but without success. And, secondly, on the other hand, the papal legate, the inquisitor, and even the pope himself, labored with all their might, and by repeated applications, to have him, from the very first, committed to the flames as a noted heresiarch. This was refused by the doge and senate, who, when he was at last condemned, freed him from the punishment of fire by an express decree. It was the will of God that he should bear his testimony to the truth for so long a time; and that, like a person affixed to a cross, he should, as from an eminence, proclaim to all the world the restoration of Christianity and the revelation of Antichrist. At last, this pious and excellent man, whom neither threatenings nor promises could move, sealed his doctrine by an undaunted martyrdom, and exchanged the filth and protracted tortures of a prison for a watery grave."

There is reason to believe that many others suffered the same

death in Venice, of whose names history makes no mention. Besides, many died in prison, or of diseases contracted during a tedious and unhealthy confinement. Among the latter was Jeronimo Galateo, who manifested his devotion to the true faith by enduring a severe imprisonment of ten years. A large number of persecuted Protestants escaped to other lands. It would seem that such violent measures were sufficient to extirpate the Protestants in Venice, and yet we learn that they had secret meetings for worship in the seventeenth century, distinct from those which the ambassadors of Protestant states were permitted to hold. During this period, the same cruelty which the Inquisition practiced in the Venetian territories was visited upon all who were suspected of heresy throughout Italy. Its terrible proceedings in the interior states, whose political and commercial relations with Protestant countries were not intimate, can be ascertained only from incidental references and collateral circumstances, since the papal archives are not open to investigation. As for Cremona, the Inquisition was worked with remarkable energy and success in that city and its territories. The same thing may be said of Parma, whose duke entered into a treaty with that violent pontiff, Paul IV, by which he surrendered the properties and lives of his subjects to the Inquisition. At Faenza, a nobleman of distinguished virtues, having fallen under the suspicion of favoring the Lutheran doctrine, was thrown into a foul prison, confined for a long time, and then put to the torture. The inquisitors, not being able to extort from him what they hoped, ordered the operation to be repeated, during which the prisoner expired in their hands. The report of this barbarous deed spread through the city and excited such a tumult that the house of the Inquisition was attacked, its altars and images torn down, and some of the priests trodden to death by the enraged multitude.

## CHAPTER XIX.

*THE CRUELITIES OF THE PAPAL INQUISITION.*

THE existence of a flourishing Protestant Church at Locarno, a small city on Lake Maggiore, and within the limits of Italy, but under the government of the cantons of Switzerland, was a source of regret and annoyance to the pope. Its distance from Rome did not exempt it from persecution; but, as it included persons of respectability and wealth, and as the sovereignty of the city belonged to the Swiss cantons, some of which were Protestant, and all of them jealous of their authority, the papal court was compelled to proceed cautiously in its efforts to suppress the heresy there. Since the discussion formerly mentioned, which occurred A. D. 1549, the Roman Catholics employed every means to excite prejudice in the minds of the people against the Protestants, and to involve them in a quarrel with the inhabitants of the surrounding districts and the government of Milan. As the Protestants were but a small minority, it was not difficult to render their position extremely uncomfortable through the annoyance which they suffered from their Roman Catholic neighbors under a government which took part with the oppressor against the oppressed. Several years of these intestine troubles and persecutions passed on, during which the excellent Beccaria, the most earnest advocate of the evangelical cause, though dismissed from prison, was exposed to such personal danger that he deemed it prudent, by the advice of his friends, to banish himself and retire to Chiavenna in the Grisons. Taddeo de Dunis was another Protestant whose talents and zeal rendered him obnoxious to the court of Rome. His fame as a physician extended into the adjacent country, and many desired to avail themselves of his medical advice. Believing that he should reside in a more central locality, he moved to a place within the territory of Milan. When his old antagonist, the priest of Lugano, ascertained that he was beyond the jurisdiction of the Swiss Confederacy, he informed the inquisitor at Milan that the leader of the heretics was in Italy, and immediately a party was sent to intercept and arrest him on one of his professional journeys; but, being warned of his danger, he retreated hastily to the mountains, and escaped. Conscious of his innocence, and depending upon the influence of the



families who employed him, he appeared voluntarily before the inquisitor, and was fortunately dismissed on condition that he would leave the territory of Milan and confine his medical practice to his native district.

During four years the Protestants of Locarno, though not subjected to open violence, were outrageously treated. For some time they had not employed the priests to confess their sick and bury their dead according to the Romish custom, with torches and the cross; and, when they had no pastor of their own, they brought ministers from Chiavenna to baptize their children. The mercenary priesthood, deprived of their gains by the increase of the Protestants, denounced them as dangerous innovators, whose conduct was both unnatural and sacrilegious. Determined to crush them, the Romish clergy circulated the base report that the Protestants were guilty of the most licentious practices in their private meetings. The ignorant and superstitious multitude believed these rumors, and even some of the more intelligent, who knew their falsity, pretended to credit them. In the mean time a man named Walther, a native of the popish canton of Uri, who was at that time town-clerk of Locarno, and who, some years after, was banished for holding a treasonable correspondence with the duke of Alva, governor of Milan, concocted a deep plot. He forged a deed purporting that the senators, citizens, and other inhabitants of the town and bailiwick of Locarno had bound themselves, by oath, to the seven papal cantons, that they would adhere to the pope and the Roman Catholic religion until the meeting of a "General Council." Having dated this paper several years back, he sent it as a genuine document to an assembly of the Seven Cantons, held in March, A. D. 1554. Without any investigation they immediately decreed that all the Locarnese should, in accordance with their bond, confess to the priests during the ensuing Lent; that they should give their names to the superior of the Church, and that the rites of burial should be denied to those who had not received the mass on their death-beds.

When this decree was promulgated at Locarno, the Protestants were astounded, and they immediately sent a commissioner to the Protestant cantons to declare the utter falsehood of the allegation upon which the decree proceeded. They were also entreated, as professors of the same faith, and as their joint temporal superiors, to strive, by their influence, to avert the ruin which threatened two hundred heads of families who had always been faithful in their allegiance, and who had never been accused, except concerning the law

of their God. After hearing this representation the deputies of the Protestant cantons assembled at Arau, and wrote to those of the popish persuasion, requesting them not to take any further action in the Locarno matter until the meeting of the next diet of the confederacy. They were also requested not to take any step which would infringe the rights of the Protestant cantons in that territory. The enemies of the persecuted Locarnese, desiring to defeat this effort in their behalf, actively circulated the report through Switzerland that they were not entitled to the protection of the Protestant cantons, because they were infected with Servetianism, anabaptism, and other fanatical opinions. Being apprised of this by their commissioner, they sent to Zurich a confession of their faith, in which they avowed their agreement with the Reformed Churches concerning the Trinity, the incarnation, the mediatory work of Christ, justification, and the sacraments. This statement of their belief silenced the slander of their opponents. Two "General Diets" for the discussion of this subject assembled A. D. 1554, and they unanimously set aside the false bond. When they came to the main point, however, the Romish party insisted that it should be decided by the majority of votes in the diet, contrary to the rule usually observed concerning religious questions.

But the court of Rome, having resolved to adopt a bolder policy, sent Riverda, bishop of Terracina, as a papal nuncio to the diet of Switzerland, to excite the Romish deputies to violent measures, while those of the Protestant cantons were influenced, partly by jealousy of one another, and partly by dread of disturbing the peace of the confederacy. Riverda desired to secure the passage of a decree compelling the Protestants of Locarno to abandon that city. The district including it, as well as several other small districts in its vicinity, was governed by the Swiss cantons, which, in rotation, sent a prefect or governor to this province, who held his office for two years. As the Roman Catholic cantons were more numerous than the Protestant—though far inferior in population, education, wealth, and all other resources—the vote by cantons was certain to be unfavorable to the cause of the Protestants in Locarno. The question was referred at last to arbiters chosen from the two mixed cantons, in which the two parties were nearly equally divided. Their decision was what the pope's legate desired; namely, that the inhabitants of Locarno, who were free from crime, should either embrace the Roman Catholic religion or leave their native land, taking with them their families and property; that they should not return thither nor be per-

mitted to settle within the seven Catholic cantons; and that those who had spoken reproachfully of the Virgin Mary, and were chargeable with anabaptism or other opinions contrary to both confessions, should be punished. It was determined also that this sentence should be intimated to the prefect of Locarno, and carried into effect by deputies sent by the seven Catholic cantons if those from the four Protestant ones refused to take part in the affair or absented themselves. The deputies of Zurich protested against this decision, declaring that, while they would abide by the league and not excite any disturbance, they would not consent to have this sentence intimated in their name, and still less to assist in carrying it into execution. Their constituents afterwards sanctioned this protest. At this time Locarno was under the government of Isaiah Reuchlin, the prefect appointed by the canton of Zurich. The Roman Catholics had repeatedly annoyed him in the discharge of his duties, but this excellent man was still more perplexed when he was informed that the diet had promulgated a decree hostile to the Protestants. In this emergency he was relieved by instructions from home to adopt a policy in accordance with the protest taken by the deputies of his native city.

The Roman Catholic cantons desired an immediate enforcement of their edict, and, fearing that something would occur to prevent it, they sent their deputies across the Alps in the depth of Winter. On their arrival at Locarno they assembled the people and addressed them in a threatening manner, declaring that they justly deserved exemplary punishment, because they had been rebellious and introduced pernicious innovations into the true religion, besides disturbing the peace and almost destroying the union of the Helvetic body. The deputies announced to them, however, that the diet had generously pardoned their past faults and had enacted a law for the regulation of their future conduct. The decree was then read and immediately ratified by the subscriptions of the municipal authorities. As the inhabitants were divided in sentiment, they were allowed another day in which to prepare an answer. On the following morning those who had decided to adhere to the papal Church appeared before the deputies, and, imploring pardon for whatever was offensive in their past conduct, promised entire submission and conformity to the laws for the future. In the afternoon the Protestants, marching in regular order, two men, followed by their wives, walking abreast, the women carrying their infants in their arms, the men leading their children, and those highest in rank taking the lead, proceeded to the



council-room, and the deputies, instead of receiving them with that respect and sympathy to which their appearance and prospects entitled them, treated them with levity. One of the Protestants, in the name of his brethren, addressed the deputies, stating that, as they had been accused of believing novel doctrines and dangerous opinions, he humbly desired to express their real views.

The speaker then made a full statement of their faith, declaring it to be the same as that prefigured under the Old Testament, and more clearly revealed by Christ and his apostles; and, that after carefully searching the Bible, with prayer for the illumination of the Holy Spirit, they had accepted the doctrine summarily contained in the Apostle's Creed, and rejected all human traditions contrary to the Word of God. He also asserted that they disclaimed Novatianism and all novel opinions, and abhorred every thing that would produce licentiousness of manners, as they had often protested to the seven papal and four Protestant cantons; and moreover, that, trusting in the Lord, they were ready to endure any suffering rather than stir up strife, or be the occasion of war in the confederacy. He then referred to the fact that they had always maintained inviolate their allegiance to the confederate cantons, and were willing to shed their blood and spend their treasure in their defense. In conclusion, he made an appeal, in behalf of his fellow-Protestants, to the mercy and generosity of the lords of the seven cantons, beseeching them, in the name of Jesus Christ, to have compassion on such a large number of persons, including delicate females and helpless infants, who, if driven from their native land, would suffer great privations. He requested the deputies, whatever action they might take, to institute a rigid investigation into the crimes with which the Protestants had been charged, and that, if any of them were found guilty, they should be punished according to their demerit, with the utmost severity.

The deputies, with hearts as obdurate as the Alps, which they had recently crossed, replied to this magnanimous and touching appeal, saying: "We are not come here to listen to your faith. The lords of the seven cantons have, by the deed now made known to you, declared what their religion is, and they will not suffer it to be called in question or disputed. Say, in one word, are you ready to quit your faith or are you not?" To this the Protestants, with one voice, replied: "We will live in it, we will die in it;" while the exclamations, "We will never renounce it;" "It is the only true faith;" "It is the only holy faith;" "It is the only saving faith,"

continued for a considerable time to resound from different parts of the assembly, like the reverberations that follow the loud peal in a thunder-storm. Before leaving the room, each of them was required to give his or her name to the clerk, and two hundred persons immediately came forward, rejoicing in having the privilege of enrolling themselves as confessors of "the truth as it is in Jesus."

The deputies having sternly refused to allow the Protestants to remain until the severity of Winter was over, the latter made preparations for an immediate departure, and sent Taddeo de Dunis before them to request an asylum from the magistrates of Zurich. But greater trials awaited them. The infamous Riverda, the papal nuncio, following up his success at the diet of Switzerland, came to Locarno to secure a literal enforcement of the decree. At a meeting of the deputies, he thanked them, in the pope's name, for their defense of the Roman Catholic faith, and urged them to compel the Grison league to deliver up the fugitive preacher, Beccaria, that he might be punished for the daring crime of corrupting the faith of his countrymen. Riverda's second request was, that the Locarnese emigrants should not be permitted to take with them their children and property, but that the former should be retained and educated in the Roman Catholic Church, and the latter forfeited. The deputies readily consented to the first proposition, but desired to be excused from officially indorsing the second, because their instructions did not warrant such extreme measures. They urged Riverda, however, to invest the priests of Locarno with authority to receive such Protestants as might be persuaded to return to the bosom of the "Mother Church." The papal nuncio not only granted this power, but also offered his own services and those of two Dominican doctors of theology, whom he had brought along with him to convince the deluded heretics. The faithful followers of Christ, though compelled to hear the unprofitable harangues of monks, and to hold conferences with Riverda, submitted to the arrangement without opposition, but not a single convert was made to Romanism.

There were three prominent ladies—Catarina Rosalina, Lucia di Orello, and Barbara di Montalto, all devoted Protestants, whom the papal nuncio earnestly desired to bring under Romish influence, but in his controversy with them his arguments were promptly and effectually answered. His female antagonists so fully exposed the idolatry and abuses of the Romish Church, that his eminence was mortified and irritated. By the boldness and keenness of her replies and the severity of her retorts Barbara di Montalto, the wife of the principal

physician of the place, greatly provoked him and incurred his resentment. He therefore determined to have her arrested, and persuaded the deputies to issue an order charging her with uttering blasphemous sentiments against the sacrifice of the mass. The house of her husband had been built as a place of defense on the banks of Lake Maggiore, during the violent feuds which prevailed between the Guelfs and Ghibellines, and in it was a concealed door which required six men to move it. At the place where it opened upon the water, a boat was kept in waiting, when a sudden alarm was given, to convey the inmates of the house to a safe locality. Her husband had an alarming dream which led him to apprehend danger, not to his wife indeed, but to himself. Hence, on that night, he ordered the servants to open that door. At an early hour on the next morning the officers entered the house, and, bursting into the room where the lady was dressing herself, presented a warrant from the deputies to take her to prison. With great presence of mind she entreated them, with an air of feminine delicacy, to allow her to retire for a moment to an adjoining apartment for the purpose of putting on some article of clothing. This request being granted, she hastily descended the stairs, and, leaping into the boat, was rowed off in safety before the eyes of her enemies, who were assembled in the court-room to receive her.

Riverda and the deputies, enraged at this disappointment, wreaked their vengeance upon the husband of the lady, whom they deprived of all his property. Not satisfied with this act of robbery, they compelled two members of the Reformed Church to pay large sums of money, because they refused to have their children baptized according to the popish ritual. But a poor tradesman, named Nicolas, suffered the severest punishment. In conversing with some of his neighbors, he used certain expressions, which were considered disrespectful to the Virgin Mary, in honor of whom a celebrated chapel had been erected and called *Madonna del Sasso*. As this sacred shrine was in the vicinity of Locarno, the priests of that city were deeply incensed against Nicolas, and, to silence their clamors, the prefect Reuchlin had punished his imprudence by condemning him to an imprisonment of sixteen weeks. He was brought a second time to trial, and, after being put to the torture, had the sentence of death passed upon him. The Roman Catholic citizens interceded in his behalf, but the deputies were unrelenting, and the order was executed.

The Protestants had selected the third day of March, A. D. 1555,



as the day of their departure for Switzerland and, though they loved their native city, they anticipated with joy the hour which would witness the commencement of their journey. But before they started the priests persuaded the government of Milan to issue an edict prohibiting the Locarnese exiles from remaining more than three days within the Milanese territory under pain of death, and imposing a fine on those who should afford them any assistance or enter into conversation with them on any religious subject. As they could not pass through the territory of Milan to the easiest passage across the Alps, they were compelled to take a north-eastern route, sailing to the northern point of Lake Maggiore, thence to the Helvetian bailiages by way of Bellinzone, until they reached Rogoreto, a town subject to the Grison league. At this point the Alps presented an impassable barrier of ice and snow, compelling them to take up their Winter-quarters; and, in view of their numbers, their sojourn among strangers was necessarily attended with many inconveniences. After remaining there two months, they started, the May thaw having opened a passage for them, and soon arrived at the canton of the Grisons, where they received a joyful welcome from brethren of the same faith. Almost the half of their number accepted the invitation of the magistrates to become permanent citizens of that mountainous but to them happy republic. The remainder, amounting to one hundred and thirty three, went forward as the Summer advanced to Zurich, whose inhabitants came out to meet them at their approach, and extended such a kind and fraternal welcome that the hearts of the sad and weary exiles were revived and consoled.

If a plague had been removed from the city the inhabitants of Locarno could not have been more rejoiced than they were at the banishment of these Protestant families; but their exultation was of short duration. The most peaceable and industrious of their citizens had moved away. Trade declined, and with it the prosperity of the community. During the succeeding year their lands were laid waste by a violent tempest, and this was followed by a destructive pestilence. To fill up the cup of their calamity and misery, intestine commotions and feuds arrayed the people in hostile parties, by which the peace of the city was disturbed. The two powerful families of the Buchi-achi and Rinaldi, who had formed a league against the Protestants, were soon striving for the superiority of the neighboring village of Brisago, rendered vacant by the expulsion of the Orelli, and to enforce their claims these competitors raised bands of armed men, attacked each other, and committed such depredations on the peace-

able citizens that the Swiss government was compelled to maintain, at great expense, a garrison in Locarno.

While the fate of the Locarnese Protestants was hard, yet when compared with that of their brethren in the interior of Italy it was mild. The latter had no friendly power to protect them from the vengeance of the Inquisition, and no convenient asylum to which they could flee when their own governments refused to shelter them. As it was impossible for them to retire in a body they were compelled to fly singly; and when they ventured to return, for the purpose of removing their families or recovering their property, they were often seized by the inquisitors and cast into the same prisons with their brethren whom they had left behind. It is not strange that so many recanted when we consider the perils and hardships to which they were exposed by professing the truth. Still greater numbers outwardly favored the Romish form of worship, though they inwardly detested it as superstitious and idolatrous, because they desired either to avoid or allay suspicion. This was the condition of affairs at Lucca. The Protestants in that republic became secure, and commenced to boast of their superior courage in maintaining their ground, while many of their brethren had abandoned it through cowardice, and permitted the banner of truth, which had been unfurled in different parts of Italy, to fall to the ground. They disliked to leave their native land and to relinquish their possessions and honors. Trusting in their numbers and influence, they apprehended no danger from the open opposition of the Romish Church; but had they known how actively its agents had for many years worked secretly in their private meetings they would have been less confident. Their bright hopes, which had been inspired by self-confidence and false security, were soon to be dissipated. Soon after the accession of Paul IV to the papal throne the Lucchese conventicle was ordered to be suppressed, and in accordance with a preconcerted plan its principal members were in one day cast into the dungeons of the Inquisition. At the sight of the instruments of torture some, who had been the most courageous, were glad to escape from the dreadful persecutions of the papal power by pretending to accept its teachings. They could scarcely apologize for the flight of Peter Martyr, whose example they had refused to follow when it was in their power, but now he reminds them of their own timidity, expressing his sorrow at the overthrow of a Church in which he was deeply interested, and at the sudden recantation and defection of so many persons whom he had warmly praised.

In a letter which Martyr addressed to them on this occasion he says: "How can I refrain from lamentations when I think that such a pleasant garden, as the Reformed Church at Lucca presented to the view, has been so completely laid waste by the cruel tempest as scarcely to retain a vestige of its former cultivation. Those who did not know you might have entertained fears that you would not be able to resist the storm; it never could have entered into my mind that you would fall so foully. After the knowledge you had of the fury of Antichrist, and of the danger which hung over your heads when you did not choose to retire, by availing yourselves of what some call the common remedy of the weak, but which in certain circumstances I deem a wise precaution, your friends were disposed to say, 'These tried and brave soldiers of Christ will not fly, because they are determined by their martyrdom and blood to open the way for the progress of the Gospel in their native country, emulating the noble examples which are given every day by their brethren in France, Belgium, and England.' Ah, how much have these hopes been disappointed! What matter of boasting has been given to our antichristian oppressors! But this confounding catastrophe is to be deplored with tears rather than words."

These severities did not entirely suppress the evangelical reform in Lucca, but they caused some of the best families in that city to transfer themselves and their wealth to Switzerland and France, with the view of exercising freedom of opinion and action in religious matters. Many of them reached Geneva, A. D. 1556, where their descendants are to be found at this day, including the Micheli, Turretini, Calendrini, Balbani, Diodati, Burlamacchi, and Minutoli, some of whom have attained great distinction in both Church and state in that ancient commonwealth. The authorities of Lucca were so enraged at their departure that they offered a reward of three hundred crowns to any person who would kill one of them in Italy, France, and Flanders! The council of Geneva wrote to Lucca, requesting the authorities to revoke this barbarous proclamation, but they refused to do so. The only effect which it produced was to keep the refugees in a state of constant alarm for their safety. The Romish writers complained, A. D. 1562, that the heretics in Lucca maintained a regular correspondence with their countrymen in foreign countries, and procured Protestant books from merchants who came from Lyons and Geneva. More families from Lucca arrived at Geneva A. D. 1556, and in the following year the authorities of Lucca passed a severe ordinance, prohibiting all intercourse by speech or letters with those



who had been denounced as "rebels for the cause of religion." Among the persons named in this ordinance as rebels is "Messer Simoni Somone, Medico." This ingenious but versatile man resided at Geneva, Heidelberg, Leipsic, Prague, and Cracow; and was as unsettled in his religious creed as in his place of residence, having been successively a Calvinist, Lutheran, Arian, Jesuit, and (if we may believe his countryman, Squarcialupo) atheist.

The refugees from Lucca were not forgotten in the land of their fathers, as will appear from a curious circumstance which occurred more than one hundred years after the first exiles reached Geneva. Cardinal Spinola, then bishop of Lucca, addressed a letter, A. D. 1679, to the descendants of these Lucchese Protestants, in which he expressed his paternal solicitude for the diocese over which Innocent XI had placed him. He stated that he had learned with sorrow that during the dissensions of the past century multitudes, remarkable for their nobility and intelligence, had abandoned a city in which they occupied the highest offices, and had gone to Geneva. The bishop further declared that his affection for the descendants of these illustrious men would not permit him to rest until he had invited them to return to the bosom of the "Mother Church;" that he had ordered a public supplication in their behalf throughout the whole of his diocese, and hoped they would realize how glorious and how essential to their safety it would be to obey God by returning to the only sanctuary of truth. After reading the cardinal's letter the refugees at first concluded not to reply, because they might be compelled by convictions of duty to write unpleasant things to a prelate who had complimented their ancestors in such flattering terms. There were other considerations, however, that made it necessary for them to proclaim to the world their real sentiments. They had learned that at this time the Roman Catholic powers were united in their efforts to proselyte Protestants, that reports of their own inconstancy had been circulated abroad, and that Cardinal Spinola had actually applied to the pope for their absolution. In view of these facts the refugees sent him a respectful and able answer, which was written by the pastors Burlamacchi and Turretini, worthy grandsons of those noble sires who had forsaken Italy for Christ. After giving a sketch of the progress which the Protestant religion had made at Lucca in the preceding century, they examined the propositions contained in the cardinal's letter, and pronounced them inadmissible. In closing their reply to him they made an earnest and affectionate appeal to their "kinsmen according to the flesh," who were still

groping in the darkness of popish Lucca. When the cardinal received this answer he sent one copy of it to the pope, and another to the "Congregation of the Holy Office," who ordered the executioners to burn all the copies which came into Italy.

At Mantua, also, the inquisitors boldly prosecuted their mission of extirpating heresy. The severity of the persecution in this duchy is indicated by two facts. Guglielmo, the reigning duke, A. D. 1566, was a man of humane feelings, respecting the rights of his subjects as well as his own authority. He deeply offended the pope by refusing to send to Rome for trial certain persons suspected of heresy. Full of indignation, Pius V not only threatened him with excommunication, but war also, declaring that he had made Mantua a "nest of heretics." He would have executed his threats had it not been for the interference of the princes of Italy, who persuaded him to pardon the duke on his submission. Two years after, the chief inquisitor seized a friend of the duke, on suspicion of heresy, and cast him into prison. The duke commanded him to be released; but the haughty monk refused, saying that while he acknowledged him as his temporal lord, yet, in the present case, he was the pope's agent, and his power was paramount to that of any secular prince. Some days after the duke sent a second message, urging his former request, when the arrogant inquisitor, holding out the keys of the dungeon, insolently informed the messengers that they might release the prisoner at their peril.

In no part of Italy did persecution rage more violently than in the duchy of Milan, especially after it fell into the hands of Philip, king of Spain. Galeazzo Trezio, a young nobleman of Lodi, had embraced the doctrines of the Reformation from Maynardi, an Augustinian monk, while attending the university of Pavia, and was afterwards confirmed in the truth by the instructions of Curio. Finding him guilty of heresy, the Inquisition, A. D. 1551, sentenced him to be burned alive, a punishment which he endured with the greatest fortitude. But the persecution became more cruel and dreadful when the duke of Alva was made governor. Two persons were committed alive to the flames, A. D. 1558. One of them, a monk, was forced by an attending priest into a sort of pulpit placed near the stake, in order that he might make his recantation; but, instead of doing this, he used the opportunity to proclaim the Gospel with boldness, and, while thus engaged was driven into the fire with blows and curses. During the following year scarcely a week passed without some one being compelled to suffer as a heretic, and eleven per-

sons of rank were thrown into prison, A. D. 1563, because they sympathized with the reform movement. The execution of a young priest, A. D. 1569, was an event of peculiar barbarity. He was condemned to be hanged and dragged to the gibbet, to suffer that penalty, at a horse's tail. The last part of the sentence was dispensed with at the earnest intercession of his friends; but, after being half strangled, he was cut down, and, refusing to recant, was literally roasted to death, and his body thrown to the dogs.

The spirit of persecution early manifested itself within the territories of Tuscany. A law was proclaimed at Florence, A. D. 1547, calling upon all who had heretical books, particularly those of Oclino and Martyr, to deliver them up within fifteen days, under a penalty of a hundred ducats and ten years' confinement in the galleys. The houses of those who were suspected of having them were searched at the expiration of the fifteen days, and the publication of any more prohibited under heavy penalties. After the establishment of the Inquisition more decisive measures were adopted by the "Commissioners of the Holy Office," the vicar of the archbishop, the provost of the metropolitan Church, and the *spadalingo*, or director of the hospital of Sante Maria Nuova. An *auto-da-fe* was celebrated in the city of Florence, in December, A. D. 1554, in which twenty-five persons walked in procession as penitents, among whom was Bartolommeo Panchiarichi, a wealthy citizen, and former ambassador to France. They were clothed in caps and cloaks painted with crosses and devils, and were publicly reconciled in the cathedral church, while the heretical books found in their possession were burned in the piazza.

A native of Piacenza, who visited Florence, A. D. 1547, dedicated to the duke a translation of Xenophon. The record, which is still preserved, says that "Ludovico Domenichi, a learned man of about thirty years of age, had translated the Nicodemiana of Calvin from Latin into Italian, corrected and published the dishonest book in Florence, not at Basle, as it falsely pretended, on which account he was suspected of heresy, though he strongly denied having ever held any dangerous opinions: that he should therefore abjure as one violently suspected, having a copy of the book translated by him hung from his neck, and be afterwards condemned to the galleys for ten years, less or more, for transgressing the laws which regulated the press." These severities were increased at a subsequent period, when Pius V altered the constitution of the Inquisition in Tuscany, by dispensing with the commissaries of the state, under the pretext



that the secrets of this tribunal should not be divulged to a number of persons, and assigning the whole work to one inquisitor. This change was considered by the pontiff more simple, convenient, and satisfactory, but it excited terror and discontent in the city.

The appointment of one individual to conduct trials for heresy was simply transferring the power to the congregation at Rome, and this despotic act, together with the facility with which Cosmo delivered up to the pope the excellent Carnesecchi, whose fate will hereafter be recorded, alarmed the people. Many fled, and others were sent to Rome. The inquisitor was anxious to display his power, and render himself popular by his activity. He annoyed the inhabitants incessantly, by interrogating the ignorant on the deepest mysteries of religion, and then accusing them of heresy, because they used expressions which were ambiguous. A remonstrance against the conduct of the inquisitor was sent to the pope, A. D. 1567, by the regent, who insisted that the archbishop and nuncio should also be consulted in the trials of heretics; but this request was not granted. The pope, however, removed the inquisitor, and appointed one who was less ignorant and indiscreet. The result of this proscriptive policy was that Florence, so long renowned for its literature, its science, and its refinement, was avoided by foreigners, and ceased to be the resort of enlightened men from all parts of the world. Visitors from Germany and Switzerland were suspected of disseminating heretical opinions in Italy, and, unless they had good testimonials, were exposed to a rigorous examination and surveillance.

These proceedings drove many persons distinguished for their rank and talents from Tuscany into foreign countries. Among these we may mention Michael Angelo Florio, a popular preacher in his own country, subsequently pastor of a Protestant Church among the Grisons, and afterwards at London, and celebrated as the author of a rare and curious book, including a life of the unfortunate and accomplished Lady Jane Grey; Nardi, so eminent in Italian literature; Pietro Gelido, a native of Samminiato, an ecclesiastic of great learning, educated at the court of Clement VII, and finally a resident of Florence. He had served the duke as secretary at the court of France, and acted as his agent in Venice from A. D. 1552 to A. D. 1562, during which period he reflected honor both on his prince and the republic by the faithful discharge of duty. During his visits to Ferrara he had imbibed the Protestant doctrines, and greatly offended the Romish clergy, not only by the intercourse which he held with the Germans, but also by the protection which he extended to those

who were suspected of heresy. This opposition induced him to retire to France, and to take up his abode with the Duchess Renée, of Ferrara. But he was not permitted to enjoy this retirement. A spy of his former master falsely accused him to the Florentines, who surrounded the court of Catherine, and he was compelled to retreat to Geneva, where he united with the Italian congregation, already organized in that city. From that place he addressed a letter to Cosmo, defending his own conduct, and urging the duke to use his influence with the pope to convene a council in the heart of Germany, and to attend it in person. The example of Gelido was followed at a later period by Antonio Albizio, who belonged to one of the noblest families in Tuscany. He was the founder of the academy of Alterati, at Florence, and had been sent by the Grand Duke as ambassador to the Emperor Maximilian II; but having become acquainted with the truth by reading the Bible, he voluntarily sacrificed his honors and retired to Kempten, in Suabia, where he divided his time between devotional exercises and literary studies until his death, A. D. 1626. His friends endeavored to win him back to the Romish Church, but were not successful; and his process was going on before the Inquisition at Rome when he died.

At Sienna, which about this time was annexed to the duchy of Tuscany, similar proceedings occurred. During a number of years after the discovery of the defection of Ochino, the Soccini, and Paleario from the Romish faith, the inquisitors alarmed the government by circulating reports of the spread of heresy in the city and territories of Sienna. The bishop of Bologna was sent, A. D. 1560, to conduct a process against Cornelio Soccini, who was accused of having adopted the peculiar opinions of his relation, Faustus Socinus. All that he confessed during the examination was, that he believed every thing contained in the Bible. As this was not entirely satisfactory, he was, with the consent of the duke, transferred to Rome. The persecution became severer, A. D. 1567; many fled, others were subjected to trial on the spot, and not a few were delivered up to the "Holy Office" at Rome.

The Spanish government endeavored for several years to introduce the Inquisition as it existed in Spain into Naples, but was compelled to yield to the repugnance of the people, apparently sustained by the pope. The dissensions which characterized the discussion of this question for some time saved the Protestants from open persecution. Lorenzo Romano, a native of Sicily, had, at a former period instilled the doctrine of Zwingle into the minds of many of

the inhabitants of Caserta, a town lying about fifteen miles north of Naples. Having visited Germany, where he was more fully instructed in the truth, he returned to Italy A. D. 1549, and opened a class in logic, to the members of which he preached the Gospel. The Romish clergy were informed of his course, and proceeded to arraign him before the Inquisition. Romano, not possessing the firmness of a martyr, was alarmed at the danger which threatened him, and sought an interview with the Theatine cardinal. He not only recanted by confessing his own errors, but also betrayed many of the most distinguished of his brethren by giving the names of all, male and female, who professed the Protestant faith both in the capital and in other parts of the kingdom. After abjuring his opinions publicly in the cathedral churches of Naples and Caserta, and enduring certain other penances at Rome, he obtained his liberty. Acting upon Romano's information, the pope sent inquisitors to find the heretics. Many were thrown into prison, and not a few were carried to Rome to undergo death by being burned. These severities continued several years and produced great distress. Two noblemen, Giovan Francesco d'Alois, of Caserta, and Giovanni Bernardino di Gargano, of Aversa, having been convicted of heresy, were beheaded in the market-place on the twenty-fourth of March, A. D. 1564, and their bodies consumed to ashes in the sight of the people.

The prosecutions for heresy, and the dread of the inhabitants in anticipation of the introduction of the Inquisition, seriously affected the interests both of trade and literature. In the city of Naples whole streets were deserted by the people. The academies of the Sireni, Ardeni, and Incogniti, which had been recently erected for the cultivation of poetry, rhetoric, and astronomy, were closed by the viceroy under the pretext that the members neglected to study the branches of secular learning, and devoted their attention to the discussion of the Bible. Besides this violence, already mentioned, two things contributed to the overthrow of the Protestant cause in Naples. The first was the efforts of certain adherents of Anabaptism and Arianism, who entered the secret meetings of the Protestants and made disciples to their peculiar doctrines. The spirit of speculation diverted men's minds from the simple Gospel, and when the true source of spiritual life is abandoned, sooner or later, even the form of religion will disappear. The second thing which assisted in the ruin of the reform movement was the practice indulged by some of attending Romish worship, partaking of mass and conducting themselves publicly in every respect as if they were Roman Catholics.



Some writers called these individuals Valdesians, because they justified their conduct by appealing to the example of Valdez, and to the advice which he gave those whom he had instructed in the doctrine of justification, but whose minds were yet fettered by prejudices in favor of the Romish Church and the ancient ceremonies. As the persecution increased this practice became more general, and was not only offensive to those conscientious persons who shunned Romish worship as idolatrous, but gradually eradicated from the minds of those who conformed to it the impressions of that faith which they had embraced, and prepared them to abandon it on the slightest temptation. The course pursued by this class destroyed all true decision of character, all courage in the cause and service of Christ, and all proper sensibility of conscience. Even many of these, being suspected of believing the evangelical doctrines, were arrested, and had to purchase their lives by denying their convictions. Others had incurred the hatred of the inquisitors or the jealousy of informers, and were arrested a second time and subjected to tortures and a cruel death as relapsed heretics. To avoid these persecutions, or actuated by a desire to enjoy the pure worship of God, many of the Protestants started to make their homes in other countries, and, while some of them certainly persevered in the determination to abandon forever their native land, others, it is said, upon reaching the Alps, looked back from their summits to take a last view of their beloved Italy, and, beholding its beauties, and recalling the friends and comforts they were forsaking, burst into tears and had not the courage to proceed. Like Lot's wife, they turned back, and most of them, soon after their return to Naples, were thrust into prison, and, having submitted to do penance, spent the remainder of their lives, shunned by all good men, and rendered miserable by a feeling of remorse and self-degradation.

When the Protestant cause had been suppressed in the capital, the Neapolitan government allowed the inquisitors to roam through the country like wild beasts unrestrained, and to devour its innocent citizens. While the Romish hierarchy was guilty at this period of many barbarous crimes, none was more atrocious than that committed against the descendants of the ancient Waldenses. It seemed as if the papal authorities were determined to exceed the cruelties which Simon de Montfort, of bloody memory, inflicted during the Dark Ages upon the ancestors of that people under the holy banners of the Church. As we have already stated, this Waldensian colony in Calabria Citeriore was planted in the fourteenth century by emigrants

chiefly from the Valley of Pragela, in Piedmont. They brought with them little except the simple piety which their fathers had maintained from the primitive ages of Christianity. They asked for lands in Calabria and obtained them in the neighborhood of Consenza. For two hundred years they cultivated the ground in peace and lived on good terms with their Roman Catholic neighbors. At first the priest annoyed them because they neither came to the mass nor to the confessional, but held their own meetings in private houses. But the proprietors of the lands upon which they had settled, finding them peaceable and industrious tenants, and punctual in paying their rents, protected them from molestation. Even the priests were compelled to admit that these excellent people were exemplary in rendering the tithes and in meeting all the other claims of the Church.

In the course of time, however, they lost to some extent the abhorrence of the doctrines and services of the Roman Catholic Church which their fathers entertained, for, at the commencement of the Reformation in Germany and Switzerland, they were in the habit of attending mass in the Romish churches. Cut off from intercourse with their brethren of the same faith, and destitute of the means of education for their pastors, this simple people, though not relinquishing their own forms of worship, gradually conformed to the Romish ceremonies, and were thus enabled to maintain friendly relations with the original inhabitants. As they had few schools, and no facilities for educating their pastors, they had to look for ministers of the Gospel to the Churches which held the same faith in the valleys of Piedmont. But at that time it was dangerous for Waldensian teachers to travel from their homes to Calabria, and therefore the Churches of that community were frequently, and for considerable periods, very poorly supplied with pastors. Indeed, they were sometimes entirely destitute of spiritual leaders.

Having heard of the progress of a religion in other parts of Italy, strongly resembling that of their fathers, the curiosity of the Calabrian Waldenses was awakened, and they eagerly desired to become acquainted with it. Feeling the need of more ministers of the Gospel, and conscious of their past error in conforming to the Romish worship, they applied to their brethren in the valleys of Pragela and to the ministers of Geneva to procure pastors who should instruct them more fully and organize their Churches on a Scriptural basis. Their application was not in vain. Devoted missionaries came, and by diligent preaching and catechising revived the spirit of true piety, and promoted the knowledge of the truth, not only among the Cala-

brian Waldenses, but also among the few who had embraced it in the neighboring towns in the province of Basilicata. Great success attended their efforts. But at length Rome was aroused, like a lioness greedy for the prey. Her emissaries, the inquisitors, while searching for victims in every part of Italy, did not pass by the villages occupied by these inoffensive people. These cruel agents of the Vatican had already tasted blood, and were accustomed to behold the most distressing scenes. When the Sacred College ascertained that Protestant ministers had been sent from Geneva to the Waldenses in Calabria, the inquisitor-general and two Dominican monks, Valerio Malvicino and Alfonso Urbino, were appointed to reduce the heretical Churches to the obedience of the Papal See, or entirely suppress them. This delegation, which has won for itself an imperishable infamy, started with alacrity from the "Eternal City" on the bloody errand. On their first arrival at Santo Sisto, or San Sexto, the monks were gentle and kind in their manners. Having assembled the inhabitants, they assured them that no harm was intended, if they would only dismiss their Lutheran teachers and come to mass. After disclaiming any design to injure the people, these representatives of the Inquisition declared that they were sent as friends to warn them against false prophets who had led them away from the truth, and, that if they would consent to listen only to those who were appointed by their ordinary, and live according to the rules of the Roman Catholic Church, all would be well, but that, if they refused, they would be in danger of losing their lives and property, the punishment inflicted upon heretics.

The visiting monks then appointed a time for the celebration of mass, which they required all present to attend. The bell was rung, but the citizens, instead of complying with the injunction by attending the service, left the town in a body, and retired to a neighboring wood. Such was the result of the first movement to persuade the Waldenses of San Sexto, one of the two chief places occupied by that people. Concealing their chagrin, the monks immediately went to La Guardia, the other prominent Waldensian town, situated on the seashore, and, after entering it, locked the gates behind them to prevent a second flight. Assembling the inhabitants, who had not yet heard of the proceedings at San Sexto, they told them that their brethren there had renounced their erroneous opinions and dutifully attended mass, at the same time exhorting them to imitate their wise and good example and return to the fold of the Roman shepherd. The poor people, taken unawares, credited the report of the monks,



and, intimidated by the probable consequences of refusal, went to the Romish church and partook of the mass; but no sooner was the ceremony ended, and the gates of the town opened, than they learned the deception which had been practiced upon them. Indignant, and also ashamed of their own weakness, they resolved instantly to leave the place with their wives and children and join their brethren, who had taken refuge in the woods—a resolution from which they were with difficulty diverted by the persuasion and promises of Salvator Spinello, the feudatory superior of the town.

The inquisitor-general, Alexandrini, now made request for two companies of men-at-arms to enable him to execute his mission. The soldiers were sent to him, and he directed them to the woods, with instructions to pursue and murder the inhabitants of San Sexto. Tracking them like beasts of prey to their hiding-places in the thickets and the caves of the mountains, they fell upon them with cries of "*Amazzi! amazzi!* Murder them! murder them!" Many of them were slain on the spot; others, who escaped, were pursued with blood-hounds as if they had been wild beasts. Some of these fugitives scaled the craggy summits of the Apennines. Having secured themselves among the rocks, they demanded an interview with the captain of the soldiers. After beseeching him to have compassion on them, their wives, and children, they said that they and their fathers had inhabited that country for several ages without any complaint concerning their conduct; that if they could not be permitted to remain in it any longer without renouncing their faith, they hoped to be allowed the privilege of retiring to some other country. They expressed a willingness to go by sea or land to any place which their superiors might select; promised not to return; and solemnly declared that they would take no more with them than what was necessary for their support on the journey, as they were ready to sacrifice their property rather than violate their consciences by practicing idolatry. They implored him to withdraw his men, to spare the effusion of blood, and not compel them reluctantly to defend themselves, as, in their desperation, they might resort to extreme measures. Instead of listening to this reasonable offer, and reporting it to his superiors, the captain ordered his men to advance by a defile, and when they had reached a certain point, the Waldenses, stationed on the summits, hurled down the stones upon them, killing the greater part and putting the rest to flight.

Alexandrini, the inquisitor-general, resolved to avenge on the whole body this unpremeditated act of resistance on the part of the

few. He wrote to Naples, stating that the country was in a tumult, resulting from the rebellion of the Vaudois, and asking for more troops to suppress it. On the arrival of the messenger, the viceroy dispatched several companies of soldiers to Calabria. To gratify the pope, and to see that the bloody work was effectually done, he accompanied the army in person. Following the advice of the inquisitors, he issued a proclamation delivering up San Sexto to fire and sword, which compelled the inhabitants to remain in their retreats. He attempted to storm them while they were strongly intrenched in the great mountains, whose summits of splintered rocks, towering high above the pine forests that clothe their sides, presented to the fugitives an almost inaccessible place of concealment. The Waldenses offered to emigrate, but the viceroy refused to accept any terms but their return to the papal Church. They replied that they would rather yield their lives than accept peace on such conditions. The viceroy now commanded his men to attack them; but, as they advanced, a shower of rocks hurled them to the bottom a discomfited mass, in which the bruised, the maimed, and the dying were confusedly mingled with the corpses of the killed. The viceroy, seeing the difficulty of the enterprise, issued a proclamation promising a free pardon to the *bannitti*, or persons proscribed for crimes, who formed a numerous class in Naples, who might be willing to undertake the task of scaling the mountains and attacking the stronghold of the Waldenses. In obedience to the summons a mob of bandits, outlaws, and other criminals assembled to commence the war of extermination. They were acquainted with the secret paths of the Apennines, and tracked the fugitives through the recesses of the forest. Clambering over the great rocks, these assassins rushed from every side on the barricades on the summit, and butchered the poor Vaudois. The greater part of them were slaughtered, while the remainder of these poor wretched people took refuge in the caverns of the high rocks, where many of them died of hunger. Thus were the inhabitants of San Sexto exterminated, some dying by the sword, some by fire, while others were torn by blood-hounds or perished by famine.

But worse things, if possible, remained for the inhabitants of La Guardia. While the desperadoes of the Neapolitan viceroy were busy in the mountains butchering the flying Vaudois of San Sexto, the inquisitor-general and his monks were pursuing their work of blood at La Guardia. The military force at their command not enabling them to take summary measures with the inhabitants, they

resorted to stratagem. Pretending to be displeased with the severity of military execution, the inquisitors retired to some distance from the place, and kindly invited the people to come out and hold a conference with them. Encouraged by the report which they had heard, the Vaudois complied; but no sooner had they made their appearance outside the gates than the soldiers, who had been placed in ambush, seized, according to Monastier's statement, sixteen hundred persons. Of these, seventy were sent in chains to the neighboring village of Montalto, and tortured by the orders of the inquisitor, Panza, to induce them not only to renounce their faith, but also to accuse themselves and their brethren of practicing shameful crimes in their religious assemblies.

To accomplish this some of them were compelled to endure the most dreadful agonies, but no such confession could be wrung from them. "Stefano Carlino," says the historian M'Crie, "was tortured until his bowels gushed out." Another prisoner, named Verminel, in the extremity of pain, promised to attend mass, and the inquisitor, encouraged at this evidence of reform, thought that by increasing the violence of the torture he could extort a confession of the charge which he was anxious to fasten upon them. The exhausted sufferer was kept during eight hours on the horrid instrument called *the hell*; but notwithstanding this prolonged torture he persisted in denying the atrocious calumny. Another man, named Marzone, was stripped naked, beaten with iron rods, dragged through the streets, and then knocked down with the blows of torches. One of his sons, a mere boy, having refused to become a Romanist and embrace the crucifix, was thrown headlong, by order of the inquisitors, from the top of a tower. Bernardino Conte, on his way to the stake, threw away a crucifix which the executioner had forced into his hands, for which act Panza remanded him to prison until a more dreadful mode of punishment should be devised. He was conveyed to Cozenza, where his body was covered with pitch, in which he was burned to death in the presence of a vast multitude of people. A priest, named Anania, who had taken an active part in these persecutions, wrote an account of it in Latin verse. The treatment of the women, by order of the brutal inquisitor, is too disgusting to be described. Sixty tender females were put to the torture, the greater part of whom died in prison in consequence of their wounds remaining undressed. When Panza returned to Naples he delivered a large number of Protestants to the secular arm at St. Agata, where he excited terror in the hearts of the people; for whoever attempted to



intercede in behalf of the prisoners was immediately put to the torture as a heretic.

But these horrors are not to be compared with the barbarous and bloody tragedy enacted among the same people at Monalto, A. D. 1560, under the government of the marquis di Buccianici, whose zeal was quickened, it is said, by the promise of a cardinal's hat to his brother, if he would clear Calabria of heresy. It was witnessed by a servant to Ascanio Caraccioli, himself a Roman Catholic, and described by him in a letter, which was published in Italy along with other accounts of the horrible transaction. The following is a principal part of it, as quoted by M'Crie: "Most Illustrious Sir,—Having written you from time to time what has been done here in the affair of heresy, I have now to inform you of the dreadful justice which began to be executed on these Lutherans early this morning, being the 11th of June. And, to tell you the truth, I can compare it to nothing but the slaughter of so many sheep. They were all shut up in one house, as in a sheep-fold. The executioner went, and, bringing out one of them, covered his face with a napkin, or *benda*, as we call it, led him out to a field near the house, and causing him to kneel down, cut his throat with a knife. Then, taking off the bloody napkin, he went and brought out another, whom he put to death after the same manner. In this way the whole number, amounting to eighty-eight men, were butchered. I leave you to figure to yourself the lamentable spectacle, for I can scarcely refrain from tears while I write; nor was there any person who, after witnessing the execution of one, could stand to look on a second. The meekness and patience with which they went to martyrdom and death are incredible. Some of them at their death professed themselves of the same faith with us, but the greater part died in their cursed obstinacy. All the old men met their death with cheerfulness, but the young men exhibited symptoms of fear. I still shudder while I think of the executioner, with the bloody knife in his teeth, the dripping napkin in his hand, and his arms besmeared with gore, going to the house, and taking out one victim after another, just as the butcher does the sheep which he means to kill.

"According to others, wagons are already come to carry away the dead bodies, which are appointed to be quartered and hung up on the public roads from one end of Calabria to the other. Unless his holiness and the viceroy of Naples command the marquis di Buccianici, the governor of this province, to stay his hand and leave off, he will go on to put others to the torture and multiply the

executions, until he has destroyed the whole. Even to-day a decree has passed that a hundred grown-up women shall be put to the question, and afterwards executed, in order that there may be a complete mixture, and we may be able to say in well-sounding language that so many persons were punished, partly men and partly women. This is all I have to say of this act of justice. It is now eight o'clock, and I shall presently hear accounts of what was said by these obstinate people as they were led to execution. Some have testified such obstinacy and stubbornness as to refuse to look on a crucifix or confess to a priest, and they are to be burnt alive. The heretics taken in Calabria amount to sixteen hundred, all of whom are condemned; but only eighty-eight have as yet been put to death. This people came originally from the valley of Angrogna, near Savoy, and in Calabria are called Ultramontani. Four other places in the kingdom of Naples are inhabited by the same race, but I do not know that they behave ill; for they are a simple, unlettered people, entirely occupied with the spade and plow, and, I am told, show themselves sufficiently religious at the hour of death."

Should the reader doubt the simple statement of these terrible atrocities given by an intelligent servant, let him take the following summary account of them by a Neapolitan historian of that age, who is not likely to have exaggerated any thing that relates to the treatment of these poor people: "Some had their throats cut, others were sawn through the middle, and others thrown from the top of a high cliff; all were cruelly but deservedly put to death. It was strange to hear of their obstinacy; for, while the father saw his son put to death, and the son his father, they not only exhibited no symptoms of grief, but said joyfully that they would be angels of God—so much had the devil, to whom they had given themselves up as a prey, deceived them." The remaining portion of the history of the Waldensian colony in Calabria may be told in a few words. When their persecutors were satiated with blood it was not difficult to dispose of the rest of the prisoners. The men were sent to the Spanish galleys, the women and children were sold for slaves; and, with the exception of a few who renounced their faith, this whole colony, which at the commencement of the sixteenth century comprised a population of four thousand souls, was exterminated. "Many a time have they afflicted me from my youth," may the race of the Waldenses say—"many a time have they afflicted me from my youth. My blood—the violence done to me and to my flesh—be upon" Rome!

## CHAPTER XX.

## ITALIAN MARTYRS.

WHILE the popes were actively engaged in suppressing the Protestant movement in other parts of Italy they were not idle in the territories of the Church. Some writers have stated that the procedure of the Inquisition was milder in Italy than in Spain; but it is necessary to qualify both the statement of the fact and the reasons by which it is usually accounted for. One of the reasons is that the Italians, including the popes, have always consulted their pecuniary interests, to which all other considerations must yield. The second reason, which is not less significant, is, that the popes, being temporal princes in the States of the Church, had no occasion to employ the Inquisition to undermine the rights of the secular authorities among them, as in other countries. This is unquestionably true, and it accounts for the fact that the court of Inquisition, long after its operations had been suspended in Italy, continued to be warmly supported by papal influence in Spain. But during the latter part of the sixteenth century it was fully and constantly employed, and the popes were enabled to accomplish by it what they as secular rulers could not do. The principal difference between the Italian and Spanish Inquisitions at that period consisted in their policy respecting the mode of punishment. The latter endeavored to inspire terror by the solemn spectacle of a public act of justice, in which the scaffold was crowded with criminals. The former, except in the case of the remote and friendless Calabrians, avoided all unnecessary publicity and *éclat*. Hence the mode of punishment usual at Venice was adopted at Rome, as in the case of Bartolommeo Fonzio. In other instances the victims were brought to the stake singly or in small numbers, and often strangled before being committed to the flames. The report of the *autos-da-fe* of Seville and Valladolid was immediately spread over Europe; but the executions at Rome created less excitement in the city, because they were less splendid as well as more frequent, and the rumor of them died away before it could reach the ear of foreigners.

Paul III cast many of the Protestants into the prisons of Rome; they were brought forth to execution by Julius III; and Paul IV



followed in the bloody footsteps of his predecessor. \ During the reign of the latter pontiff the Inquisition spread consternation everywhere, and produced the very evils it labored to remove. Princes and princesses, clergy and laity, bishops and friars, entire academies, the sacred college, and even the "Holy Office" itself, were suspected of heresy. The conclave was subjected to an expurgatory process. Cardinals Morono and Pole, with Foscarari, bishop of Modena, Luighi, Priuli, and other eminent persons, were prosecuted as heretics. It was at last found necessary to introduce laymen into the Inquisition, because (to use the words of a contemporary writer) "not only many bishops and vicars and friars, but also many of the inquisitors themselves, were tainted with heresy." The personal fanaticism and jealousy of the pontiff caused much of the extravagance which prevailed at this time. Such was the "frenzied zeal of this infallible dotard" that he summoned some of his cardinals to his death-bed, and with his latest breath urged them to sustain the Inquisition. If his life had been spared a little longer the poet's description of the effects of superstition would have been realized, "and one capacious curse enveloped all." The inhabitants of Rome were irritated by his violence, extortion, and rapine, and when the tidings of his death reached them they gathered in tumultuous crowds, burned the house of the Inquisition to the ground, and after liberating all the prisoners, and breaking down the statue which Paul III had erected for himself, they dragged its members with ropes through the streets and threw them into the Tiber.

As Paul IV was naturally of a mild disposition, he would not permit the violent and arbitrary policy of his predecessor to be continued; but, being unable to control the cardinal who was at the head of the Inquisition, he was powerless to prevent the massacres which disgraced his pontificate in Calabria and various parts of Italy. The house of the Inquisition having been demolished in the tumult, an edifice belonging to one of the cardinals, and situated beyond the Tiber, was used by the inquisitors, and cells were added to it for the reception of prisoners. It was commonly called the Lutheran prison, and is said to have been built on the site of the ancient "Circus of Nero," in which so many Christians were delivered to the wild beasts. Philip, the son of the learned Joachim Camerarius, and Peter Rieter de Kornburg, a Bavarian gentleman, were confined in this prison for two months, A. D. 1565, having been arrested, when visiting Rome on their travels, through the information of a Jew, who mistook Rieter for another German with whom he had quarreled. The in-

former acknowledged his mistake, but the prisoners were still detained as heretics, and obtained their liberty only through the interposition of the imperial ambassador, accompanied with a threat from the Protestant princes, that the agents of Rome should receive the same treatment when traveling through Germany. Pompeo di Monti, a Neapolitan nobleman, was seized by the familiars of the Inquisition, as he was crossing the bridge of St. Angelo on horseback, in company with his relation, Marcantonio Colonna, and lodged in the same apartment with Camerarius, who derived from his conversation great religious consolation, and also wise counsel to avoid the snares which the inquisitors generally laid for their prisoners. They shared together the use of a Latin Bible which the baron had procured and kept concealed in his bed. Camerarius having applied for a Psalter to assist him in his devotions, the noted Jesuit, Petrus Canisius, by whom he was visited, pressed on him the "Office of the Holy Virgin," as more conducive to edification; and, when it was declined, sent him "Amadis de Gaul," and Cæsar's "Commentaries." During the following year Di Monti was sentenced to be burned alive; but in consideration of a sum of seven thousand crowns being advanced by his friends he was only strangled, and his body afterwards committed to the flames.

Under Pius V, who ascended the papal chair, A. D. 1566, persecution raged again in the States of the Church. The name of this infamous pontiff was Michele Ghisleri, who had been president of the Inquisition, a position which he had held under the designation of the Alexandrian cardinal since the late establishment of that tribunal. The cruelties committed during the two preceding pontificates were in no small degree attributable to his influence. Persecution in its most violent forms prevailed in Bologna, where "persons of all ranks were promiscuously subjected to the same imprisonments and tortures and death." A writer of that period says: "Three persons have lately been burnt alive in that city, and two brothers of the noble family of Ercolani seized on suspicion of heresy, and sent bound to Rome. At the same time many of the German students in the university were imprisoned or obliged to fly. The following description of the state of affairs is from the pen of one who resided, A. D. 1568, on the borders of Italy: "At Rome some are every day burnt, hanged, or beheaded: all the prisons and places of confinement are filled, and they are obliged to build new ones. That large city can not furnish gaols for the numbers of pious persons who are continually apprehended. A distinguished person named Carnesecchi, for-

merly ambassador to the duke of Tuscany, has been committed to the flames. Two persons of still greater distinction, Baron Bernardo di Angole and Count di Petigliano, a genuine and brave Roman, are in prison. After long resistance they were, at last, induced to recant, on a promise that they should be set at liberty. But what was the consequence? The one was condemned to pay a fine of eighty thousand crowns and to suffer perpetual imprisonment; and the other to pay one thousand crowns, and be confined for life in the convent of the Jesuits. Thus have they, by a dishonorable defec-tion, purchased a life worse than death." The following anecdote is related by the same writer, and shows the base stratagems which the Roman Inquisition employed to get hold of its victims: "A letter from Genoa to Messere Bonetti states that a rich nobleman at Modena, in the duchy of Ferrara, was lately informed against as a here-tic to the pope, who adopted a dishonorable method to secure his arrest. The nobleman had a cousin at Rome, who was sent for to the castle of St. Angelo, and told, 'Either you must die, or write to your cousin at Modena, desiring him to meet you in Bologna at a certain hour, as if you wished to speak to him on important business.' The letter was dispatched, and the nobleman, having ridden in haste to Bologna, was seized as soon as he had dismounted from his horse. His friend was then set at liberty. This is dragon's game."

Speaking of the rigor of the Inquisition in Italy, and the sudden-ness of executions at this period, Muretus said to De Thou: "We know not what becomes of people here: I am terrified every morn-ing when I rise, lest I should be told that such and such a one is no more; and if it should be so, we durst not say a word." But the despotism of the popes was beginning to wane. While Pius V was brave, he was sometimes compelled to yield. Galeas de San Seve-rino, count of Caiazzo, a favorite of Charles IX of France, and an officer of high rank in his army, having visited Italy on private busi-ness, A. D. 1568, was thrown into the prison of the Inquisition at Rome, because he was suspected of being a Huguenot. Charles immediately sent the marquis de Pisano to demand the liberation of the count as a French subject. The pope requested time for delib-eration. After repeated delays, the marquis demanded the release of the prisoner within eight days; and, that time having elapsed, he had an interview with the pope, and told him that, if the count was not delivered to him next day, the ambassador of France should be instantly recalled, and all the ordinary intercourse with Rome as to ecclesiastical benefices in the kingdom should cease. By the advice



of the cardinals, Pius V gave him up very reluctantly, saying that the king had sent him *imbria cone*, or drunken fool. De Thou received this anecdote from the marquis himself. It was this same nobleman who, when ordered by Sixtus V to quit his territories within eight days, replied, "Your territories are not so large, but that I can quit them within twenty-four hours."

According to Scaliger, a man named Jacobini was the first Protestant martyr in Italy. But the civilian Cujas, who was present at his execution, denies that he was a Protestant, and affirms that he only differed from the Romish Church in some things, remarking that in those days they burned men for a small matter. Others assert that Faventino Fannio, or Fannio, a native of Faenza, a town in the States of the Church, was the first who suffered death for the Protestant faith in that country. But this is not an essential question. Whether the first martyr or not, it is certain that Faventino Fannio, who became acquainted with the truth by reading the Bible, and other religious books, in his native tongue, was very active in its propagation. He went from place to place, in the province of Romagna, instructing in each a few persons in the Gospel, and enjoining upon them to communicate to others the knowledge which they had acquired. He was arrested by the inquisitors and thrown into prison; but through the persuasions of his friends he obtained his liberty by recantation. This act greatly distressed him, and when he had recovered from his despondency, he resolved to labor more zealously than before in showing his countrymen the way of salvation. Having attained more knowledge of the grace of God, and greater strength in the principles of the Gospel, he was successful within a short time of disseminating extensively the evangelical doctrines.

While at Bagnacavallo he was arrested a second time, and conducted in chains to Ferrara. He could not now be moved either by threats or solicitations to deny his attachment to the Protestant cause. Olympia Morata, Lavinia della Rovere, and other distinguished persons visited him in prison and were greatly edified by his conversation and prayers. To the lamentations of his wife and sister, who came to see him, he replied, "Let it suffice you, that for your sakes I have once denied my Savior. Had I then had the knowledge which, by the grace of God, I have acquired since my fall, I would not have yielded to your entreaties. Go home in peace." Of Fannio's imprisonment, which lasted two years, it may be said that it fell out to the furtherance of the Gospel, so that "his bonds in Christ were manifest in all the palace." When orders were issued to pre-

vent strangers from having access to him, he employed himself in teaching his fellow-prisoners, including several persons of rank, who were confined for state crimes. His piety, combined with his remarkable modesty and meekness, so deeply impressed them, that they acknowledged, after their enlargement, that they never experienced true happiness and liberty until they came within the walls of the prison. Orders were then given to place him in solitary confinement, where he spent his time in writing religious letters and essays, which were circulated among his friends, and some of which were published after his death. The priests, fearing that he might exert a pernicious influence over those who approached him, frequently changed his prison and his keeper. Pope Julius III disregarded every intercession made for his life, and ordered him to be executed, A. D. 1550. He was accordingly brought out to the stake at an early hour in the morning, to prevent the people from witnessing the scene, and, being first strangled, was burned.

About the same time and in the same manner did Domenico della Casa Bianca suffer death. He was a native of Bassano in the Venetian territories and became acquainted with the truth in Germany when a soldier in the army of Charles V. With the zeal of a young convert he returned to Italy and labored to promote the Gospel wherever he went. After a successful tour to Naples and other places he was arrested, thrown into prison at Piacenza, and refusing to recant received the crown of martyrdom in the thirtieth year of his age.

Among the Italian martyrs and reformers, Mollio, the Bologna professor, ranks deservedly high for his talents and holy life. For several years after the flight of his brethren Ochino and Martyr, A. D. 1542, he was greatly exposed to danger, and more than once was seized, thrust into prison, from which he had always providentially escaped. But soon after the accession of Pope Julius III Mollio was eagerly pursued, and being arrested at Ravenna was conducted under a strong guard to Rome and lodged in a strait prison. During his confinement he composed a commentary on Genesis which is praised by Rabus, the German martyrologist. A public assembly of the Inquisition was held on the 5th of September, A. D. 1553, with great ceremony, which was attended by the six cardinals and their episcopal assessors. Before this dread tribunal a number of prisoners were made to appear with torches in their hands, all of whom recanted and performed penance, except Mollio and a native of Perugia, named Tisserano. When the articles of accusation against Mollio

were read he was permitted to speak. He defended with great ability the doctrines of justification by faith, the merit of good works, auricular confession, and also the sacraments. He pronounced the power claimed by the pope and his clergy to be usurped and contrary to the spirit of Christianity, and denounced in the severest terms their avarice, their tyranny, and their other vices.

"As for you, cardinals and bishops," said he "if I were satisfied that you had justly obtained that power which you assume to yourselves and that you had risen to your eminence by virtuous deeds and not by blind ambition and the arts of profligacy, I would not say a word to you. But since I know on the best grounds that you have set moderation and modesty and honor and virtue at defiance, I am constrained to treat you without ceremony, and to declare that your power is not from God but the devil. If it were apostolical, as you would make the poor world believe, then your manner of life would resemble that of the apostles.

"But when I perceive," continued Mollio, "the filth and falsehood and profaneness with which it is overspread, what can I think or say of your Church but that it is a receptacle of thieves and a den of robbers? What is your doctrine but a dream—a lie forged by hypocrites? Your very countenances proclaim that your belly is your god. Your great object is to seize and amass wealth by every species of injustice and cruelty. You thirst without ceasing for the blood of the saints. Can you be the successors of the holy apostles and vicars of Jesus Christ, you who despise Christ and his Word, you who act as if you did not believe that there is a God in heaven, you who persecute to the death his faithful ministers, make his commandments of no effect and tyrannize over the consciences of his saints. Wherefore I appeal from your sentence and summon you cruel tyrants and murderers to answer before the judgment-seat of Christ at the last day, where your pompous titles and gorgeous trappings will not dazzle, nor your guards and torturing apparatus terrify, us. And, in testimony of this, take back that which you have given me."

So saying he threw the flaming torch which he held in his hand on the ground and extinguished it. This bold and fervid address silenced the judges, and, at the same time, chained them to their seats; but its withering invective, which at first appalled them, finally caused the inquisitors to gnash upon Mollio with their teeth like the persecutors of the first Christian martyr. The cardinals immediately ordered him and his companions to be executed, and they were conveyed accordingly to the Campo del Fior, where they died with the



most pious fortitude. Zanchi, in writing to Bullinger, says of this Mollio: "I will relate what Mollio di Montalcino, the monk who was afterwards burned at Rome for the Gospel, once said to me respecting your book, *De Origine Erroris*. As I had not read or seen the work at that time, he exhorted me to purchase it; 'and,' said he, 'if you have not money, pluck out your right eye to enable you to buy it, and read it with the left.' By the favor of Providence I soon after found the book, without losing my eye, for I bought it for a crown, and abridged it in such a character as that not even an inquisitor could read it; and in such a form that, if he did read it, he could not have discovered what my sentiments were."

Pomponio Algieri, a native of Nola, in the kingdom of Naples, but, at the time of his arrest, a student at the University of Padua, was one of the most interesting of all the Italian martyrs. His answers when examined before the podesta, or the chief civil magistrate of Padua, were remarkable for clear views of truth, and form one of the ablest refutations of the principal articles of popery that can be found. As a result his fame was spread through Italy. After his examination he was sent bound to Venice, and the senate, from regard to his learning and youth, were anxious to liberate him; but as he utterly refused to abandon his sentiments, they condemned him to the galleys. Yet yielding to the importunities of the nuncio, they afterwards sent him to Rome as an acceptable present to the newly elected Pope Paul IV, who sentenced him to be burned alive in the twenty-fourth year of his age. He endured the dreadful sufferings with a magnanimity which terrified the cardinals and others who beheld the cruel scene. While he was in prison in Venice he wrote a letter to a friend describing in remarkable language the abundant consolation by which he was sustained and cheered. The autograph of this letter, together with the facts respecting the writer, were communicated by Curio to the historian Henry Pantaleon.

Similar constancy, supported by similar internal peace and joy, was displayed by Francesco Gamba, a native of Como, who, having visited Geneva, became acquainted with the Protestants there, and on one occasion had partaken of the Lord's-supper with them. The news of this fact reached home before him, and he was seized on Lake Como, thrown into prison, and condemned to be burned. The imperial ambassador and some of the Milanese nobility, by their interposition, prevented his execution for some days, and during the interval his integrity was assailed by the sophistry of the monks, the entreaties of his friends, and the interest taken by many of his towns-

men of the Romish faith who desired to save him. He resisted all these efforts to convert him from the Protestant religion, and when the hour for his execution arrived he modestly declined the last services of the friars, expressed his gratitude to those who labored to deliver him, and assured the judge who lamented the necessity of enforcing the law, that he forgave him and prayed God to do the same. His tongue was perforated to prevent him from addressing the spectators. After kneeling down and praying he arose and looked upon the vast assembly, composed of several thousand persons. He recognized a particular friend in the crowd, and waved his right hand to him as the appointed signal that he died in confidence and peace. Stretching out his neck to the executioner, who had been authorized to favor him by strangling him, he calmly met death on the 21st of July, A. D. 1554, and his body was committed to the fire.

Godfredo Varaglia, a native of Piedmont, was a distinguished preacher of the Order of Capuchins. Inheriting from his ancestors a bitter feeling against the Waldenses, and receiving in his younger years an appointment to labor as a missionary among them, he went into the "Valleys." As he was zealous and eloquent, his friends had great expectations of his success; but he soon became a convert to the Waldensian doctrines, and, like another Paul, began to preach the faith which he had sought to destroy. From that time he acted in concert with Ochino, who belonged, as has been already stated, to the same order. Not long after the flight of the latter from Italy, Varaglia and twelve others were arrested and sent to Rome. The suspicions against them being slight, or their friends influential, they were permitted to abjure their heresy in general terms, and were also required to remain in the capital on their parole for five years. At the end of that period Varaglia was persuaded to lay aside the cowl and enter into secular orders. A dignitary of the Church, admiring his talents, became a personal friend, and for some time bestowed upon him a pension. Having been appointed papal legate to the king of France, A. D. 1556, he invited Varaglia to accompany him to that country. But his conscience would not permit him any longer to conceal his sentiments, and separating from the legate at Lyons, he went to Geneva, where he accepted an appointment to preach the Gospel to the Waldenses in the Valley of Angrogna. After laboring a few months among that people he was arrested, conveyed to Turin, and condemned to death, which he endured with great fortitude on the 29th of March, A. D. 1558, in the fiftieth year of his age. During his trial the judges asked him who his companions

were, and he replied that he had recently been in company with twenty-four preachers, who were mostly from Geneva. Varaglia also declared that these servants of Christ had so many followers that the inquisitors would not find wood enough to burn them. The papal nuncio, Visconti, wrote to Cardinal Borromeo (A. D. 1563) that more than the half of the Piedmontese were Huguenots.

Another illustrious martyr was Ludovico Paschali, or John Louis Paschale, a native of Coni, in the plain of Piedmont. By birth he was a Roman Catholic, and while young entered the army; but having acquired a taste for evangelical doctrine at Nice he abandoned the military profession, resolving to be no longer a "knight of the sword," but, like Loyola, a "knight of the cross," yet in a truer sense. He had just completed his theological studies at Lausanne when the Waldenses of Calabria applied to the Italian Church at Geneva for preachers. This young minister was designated as one eminently qualified for the perilous but honorable position. He was betrothed to a Piedmontese lady, Camilla Guerina, who belonged to a Protestant family. "Alas!" she sorrowfully exclaimed, when he intimated to her his departure for Calabria, "so near to Rome and so far from me." She consented, and they separated, never to meet again on earth. Paschale, accompanied by Stefano Negrino, started for Calabria, and, on their arrival, they found the country greatly agitated. The young evangelist preached with such energy and power that the zeal and courage of the Calabrian flock revived, and the light formerly concealed under a bushel now appeared to all.

The marquis of Spinello had been the protector of the colonists. He ceded lands on his own vast and fertile estates to induce the Waldenses to build cities and plant vineyards, and he soon discovered that it was a profitable investment. Peace and prosperity reigned throughout Calabria; but the marquis was compelled by the Inquisition to persecute his loyal and industrious subjects. He summoned Paschale and his flock before him, and, after dismissing the latter with a sharp reprimand, threw the young pastor into the dungeons of Foscaldà. Negrino was also imprisoned and perished with hunger in his cell. The bishop of the diocese ordered Paschale to be removed to the prison of Cosenza, where he was confined eight months. The pope's attention was directed to the case, and he delegated the infamous Cardinal Alexandrini, inquisitor-general, to extirpate heresy in the kingdom of Naples. By his order Paschale was taken from the Castle of Cosenza and conveyed to Naples. "On the journey," says Dr. Wylie, "he was subjected to terrible sufferings.



Chained to a gang of prisoners—the handcuffs so tight that they entered the flesh—he spent nine days on the road, sleeping at night on the bare earth, which was exchanged, on his arrival at Naples, for a deep, damp dungeon, the stench of which almost suffocated him.” On the 16th of May, A. D. 1560, he was conducted in chains to Rome, and imprisoned in the Torre di Nona, where he was thrust into a cell as offensive as that in Naples.

His brother Bartolomeo, who had come from Coni with letters of recommendation to procure, if possible, some mitigation of his fate, gives an interesting account of the first interview which, after great difficulty, he obtained with him at Rome, in the presence of a judge of the Inquisition. “It was quite hideous to see him,” says he, “with his bare head and his arms and hands lacerated by the small cords with which he was bound, like one about to be led to the gibbet. On advancing to embrace him I sank to the ground. ‘My brother,’ said he, ‘if you are a Christian, why do you distress yourself thus? Do you not know that a leaf can not fall to the earth without the will of God? Comfort yourself in Christ Jesus, for the present troubles are not worthy to be compared with the glory to come.’ ‘No more of that talk,’ exclaimed the inquisitor. When we were about to part, my brother begged the judge to remove him to a less horrid prison. ‘There is no other prison for you than this,’ was the answer. ‘At least show me a little pity in my last days, and God will show it to you.’ ‘There is no pity for such obstinate criminals as you,’ replied the hardened wretch. A Piedmontese doctor, who was present, joined me in entreating the judge to grant this favor; but he remained inflexible. ‘He will do it for the love of God,’ said my brother, in a melting tone. ‘All the other prisons are full,’ replied the judge, evasively. ‘They are not so full but that a small corner can be spared for me.’ ‘You would infect all who were near you by your smooth speeches.’ ‘I will speak to none who does not speak to me.’ ‘Be content; you can not have another place.’ ‘I must then have patience,’ replied my brother, meekly.”

Paschale did not forget his flock in Calabria, but addressed them a letter saying, “My state is this: I feel my joy increase every day, as I approach nearer to the hour in which I shall be offered as a sweet-smelling sacrifice to the Lord Jesus Christ, my faithful Savior; yea, so inexpressible is my joy that I seem to myself to be free from captivity, and I am prepared to die for Christ, not only once, but ten thousand times, if it were possible; nevertheless I persevere in imploring the divine assistance by prayer, for I am convinced that

man is a miserable creature when left to himself; and not upheld and directed by God." He wrote to his affianced bride, freely expressing his deep affection for her, which "grows," said he, "with that I feel for God." A short time before his death he said to his brother: "I give thanks to my God, that, in the midst of my long-continued and severe affliction, I have found some kind friends; and I thank you, my dearest brother, for the tender interest you have taken in my welfare. But as for me, God has bestowed on me that knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ which assures me that I am not in an error, and I know that I must go by the narrow way of the cross, and seal my testimony with my blood. I do not dread death, and still less the loss of my earthly goods; for I am certain of eternal life and a celestial inheritance, and my heart is united to my Lord and Savior." When his brother offered him half his fortune if only he would recant and save his life, he replied: "Oh! my brother, the danger in which you are involved gives me more distress than all I suffer, or have the prospect of suffering, for I perceive that your mind is so addicted to earthly things as to be indifferent to heaven."

Extensive preparations had been made for the trial of Paschale, and on the 8th of September, A. D. 1560, he was brought out of his prison, conducted to the Convent della Minerva, and cited before the papal tribunal. He confessed Christ, and listened to the sentence of death pronounced upon him with a serenity of countenance that must have surprised his judges. On the following day Rome presented an animated appearance. The ringing of the bells and the shouts of the multitude indicated some unusual event. From every street and piazza eager crowds rushed forth and increased the surging stream of humanity which rolled across the bridge of St. Angelo into the gates of the old fortress. In the center of the court-yard stood an emblazoned chair, in which was seated Pius IV, who desired to behold the martyrdom of Paschale. Behind the pontiff were his cardinals and counselors, arrayed in scarlet robes, and other dignitaries in mitres and cowls, ranged in circles according to their place in the papal body. Behind the ecclesiastics sat the beauty and nobility of Rome, whose waving plumes and glittering stars made the assemblage still more imposing. The court of St. Angelo was densely crowded with the excited populace, who impatiently awaited the beginning of the tragedy. Rising above the sea of human heads appeared a scaffold, an iron stake, and a bundle of fagots. At the appointed time the gate opened, and the prisoner entered amid a "storm of hissing and execration." Paschale moved forward on the stone floor of the court,

and at each step the clank of irons could be heard, indicating how heavily his limbs were burdened with fetters. Although pale and haggard with suffering, his young face was irradiated by the "serene light of deep, untroubled peace." Lifting his eyes, he surveyed the vast crowd, and, with countenance undismayed, beheld the terrible apparatus of the Inquisition before him.

The Christian hero, with courage stamped on his brow, calmly mounted the scaffold, and stood beside the stake. Forgetting the wearer of the papal tiara, every one looked eagerly upon the humble victim clad in the *sanbenito*. "Good people," exclaimed the martyr, amid the silence which then reigned, "I am come here to die for confessing the doctrine of my divine Master and Savior, Jesus Christ." Then addressing Pius IV, he arraigned him as the "enemy of Christ, the persecutor of his people, and the Antichrist of Scripture," and concluded by "summoning him and all his cardinals to answer for their cruelties and murders before the throne of the Lamb." "At his words," says the historian Crespín, "the people were deeply moved, and the pope and the cardinals gnashed their teeth." The signal was then given by the inquisitors; the executioners seized Paschale, and, having strangled him, they kindled the fagots whose blazing flames soon reduced his body to ashes. "For once," says Dr. Wylie, "the pope had performed his function. With his key of fire, which he may truly claim to carry, he had opened the celestial doors, and had sent his poor prisoner from the dark dungeons of the Inquisition to dwell in the palace of the sky." The ashes of the preacher-martyr were collected and thrown into the Tiber, and by it carried to the Mediterranean. Even the marble shaft will crumble under the desolating hand of time, and the grandest monumental pile may fall beneath the blows of violence or war, but the tomb of the far-sounding sea, to which the ashes of Paschale were committed by his enemies, is indeed a nobler mausoleum than ever Rome raised to any of her pontiffs, and it will remain through all the ages until time shall be no more.

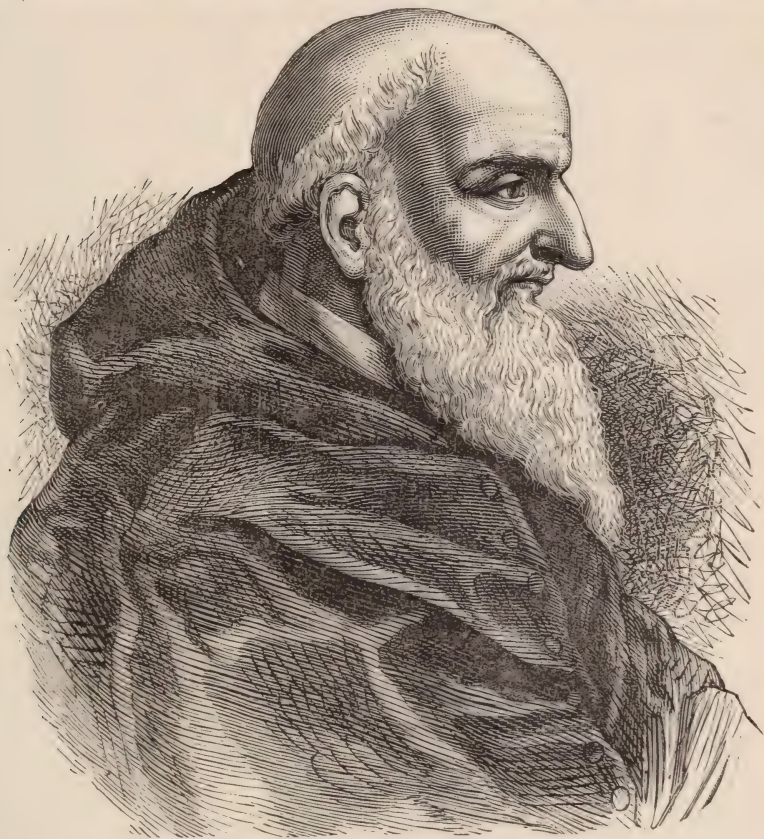
Perhaps the most illustrious of all the Italian martyrs, for natural talent and endowments, for noble person and manners, and for rich acquirements and liberal accomplishments, was Pietro Carnesecchi, a native of Florence. He is spoken of in the highest terms by both Sadolet and Bembo, and was an intimate friend of the Medici. His connection with this powerful family gave him great influence with Pope Clement VII, whose secretary and protonotary he was for several years. This pontiff also bestowed upon him two abbacies, one



in Naples and the other in France, and it was commonly said "that the Church was governed by Carnesecchi rather than by Clement." The latter died, A. D. 1534, after a reign of eleven years, and the former, having lost his patron and friend, traveled through the different cities of Italy, conversing with the learned and greatly enjoying their society. Besides having a thorough knowledge of Greek and Roman literature, he was distinguished for his eloquence in speaking and elegance in writing. At Naples he became acquainted with Valdez, and from him imbibed a love for the evangelical doctrines, which was daily augmented by the reading of the Scriptures, meditation, and intercourse with several learned men, who held in reality some of the most important of the new opinions; such, for instance, as justification by faith. During the better days of Cardinal Pole he was one of the select party which met in that prelate's house in Viterbo and spent the time in religious exercises. When his friend Flaminio, startled at the thought of abandoning the Romish Church, suddenly ceased his inquiries, Carnesecchi displayed great mental courage in welcoming truth, despite strong prejudices. After the flight of Ochino and Martyr, Carnesecchi was suspected of not only favoring heresy and its abettors, but of holding it himself. He was summoned to Rome, where Cardinal de Burgos, one of the inquisitors, was ordered to investigate the charges brought against him. Paul III was, however, his warm friend, and through the favor of this mild pontiff the matter was accommodated. But Carnesecchi deemed it prudent to leave Italy for a season, and after spending some time with Margaret, duchess of Savoy, who was not unfriendly to the reformed doctrines, he went to France, where he was kindly and honorably received by the new monarch, Henry II, and his queen, Catharine de Medicis. He returned to Italy, A. D. 1552, strongly confirmed in his opinions by his intercourse with foreign Protestants, and took up his residence mainly at Padua, within the Venetian territories. On the 25th of October, A. D. 1557, or about two years after Paul IV began to reign, a criminal process was commenced against Carnesecchi; but, not wishing to place himself at the mercy of that furious pontiff, he refused to appear within the prescribed term, and was therefore excommunicated as a contumacious heretic. Before he was actually delivered over to the secular power to be punished Giovanni Angelo de Medici ascended the papal throne under the name of Pius IV (A. D. 1560), and, being a member of the house of Medici, and a friend to Carnesecchi, he removed the sentence of excommunication, without exacting a recantation of

any of his opinions. Galluzzi, in his history of the "Grand Duchy of Tuscany," says that Cosmo, "by means of letters of commendation, prorogations, and attestations of infirmity," succeeded in averting the sentence during the life of that pontiff.

When Pius V commenced his cruel reign, A. D. 1566, Carnesecchi, justly fearing the vengeance of the new pope, retired to Florence



PIUS V.

to seek the protection of Cosmo, then duke of Tuscany. But he was betrayed by him, and, being carried to Rome, was tried before the Inquisition on thirty-four articles, which comprehended all the peculiar doctrines of the Protestants in opposition to the Romish Church. The articles were proved by witnesses and by the letters of the prisoner, who, after defending himself for some time, admitted the truth of the main charges. The papal historian, Laderchius, in his "Annals," gathered from the records of the "Holy Office," refers to the firmness and constancy of the accused in the avowal of



his sentiments. On the 16th of August, A. D. 1567, sentence was pronounced against him, and on the 21st of September it was publicly read in the church of St. Mary, near Minerva, along with those of other heretics. He was condemned as an "incorrigible heretic, deprived of all honors, dignities, and benefices, and delivered over to the secular arm; after which he was degraded, and clothed with a *sanbenito* painted with flames and devils." The execution of the sentence was delayed for ten days, either at the request of the duke, or because it was hoped that the prisoner would be penitent on the scaffold. Hence a Capuchin of Pistoia was incarcerated along with him, with the view of inducing him to recant, but his efforts were fruitless. On the 3d of October, A. D. 1567, Carnesecchi was brought forth for punishment, and, being beheaded, his body was consumed by fire. "His fanaticism," says Galuzzi, "sustained him to the very last moment. He went to execution as to a triumph, and appeared with new linen and gloves, as his inflamed *sanbenito* did not admit of his wearing any other piece of apparel."

One of the greatest ornaments of the Italian Reformation was Aonio Paleario, or Antonio della Paglia, which was his original name. After leaving Sienna, A. D. 1543, he accepted an invitation from the senate of Lucca, and remained there ten years, teaching the Latin classics and acting as orator to the republic on solemn occasions. From Lucca he went to Milan, at the request of the authorities of that city, and spent seven years there as professor of eloquence, handsomely supported and greatly honored. As he was suspected of heresy, and therefore exposed to great peril he resolved to leave Milan and go to Bologna; but he fell a prey to the violent persecution which broke out at the accession of Pius V, and which was fatal to so many learned and excellent men in Italy. He was arrested by Frate Angelo de Cremona, the inquisitor, and sent to Rome, where he was closely confined for three years in the Torre Nona. The principal charges against him were four—namely: that he denied purgatory; disapproved of burying the dead in churches, preferring the ancient Roman method of sepulture without the walls of cities; ridiculed the monastic life; and ascribed justification solely to confidence in the mercy of God, who will for Christ's sake forgive our sins. But it is probable that his intimacy with Ochino and other prominent men who believed the Protestant doctrines, his defense of himself before the senate of Sienna, and, above all, his book on the "Benefit of Christ's Death," had much weight against him in the deliberation of his judges. At length he was condemned to be exe-



cuted on a gibbet and his body to be burned. Before leaving his cell, on the 3d of July, A. D. 1570, he was permitted by his attendants to write two letters, one to his wife, the other to his two sons, Lampridio and Fedro. They are short, but affectionate, indicating that the author was sustained by pious fortitude and ready to meet his fate. He died in the seventieth year of his age, strong in the Protestant faith. An official document of the Dominicans, but which has neither names nor signatures, affirms that Paleario recanted. The following extract from the "Annals" of Laderchius is a sufficient refutation of the falsehood: "When it appeared that this son of Belial was obstinate and refractory, and could by no means be recovered from the darkness of error to the light of truth, he was deservedly delivered to the fire, that after suffering its momentary pains here he might be bound in everlasting pains hereafter."

It appears from Paleario's published letters that he enjoyed the friendship and correspondence of the most celebrated men of his time, both in the Church and the "Republic of Letters." Among the former were Cardinals Sadolet, Bembo, Pole, Maffei, Filonardi, Sfondrati; and among the latter Flaminio, Riccio, Alciati, Vittorio, Lampridio, and Buonamici. His poem on the immortality of the soul was received with great approbation by literary men. He was, indeed, a profound scholar, and his orations were Ciceronian in spirit and elegance of style. His "Letter on the Council of Trent," addressed to the reformers, and his "Testimony and Plea against the Roman Pontiffs," are admirable works, and evince great Biblical knowledge, sound faith, and fervent zeal. His treatise on the "Benefit of Christ's Death" produced considerable excitement, and was eminently useful in diffusing evangelical doctrine in Italy upon a subject of vital importance. Forty thousand copies were sold in six years. It is said that Cardinal Pole had a share in writing, and that Flaminio wrote in defense of it. Activity in circulating it was one of the charges upon which Cardinal Morone was imprisoned and Carnesecchi consigned to the flames. Paleario, before he was arrested, had taken care to place his writings in the hands of friends in whom he could confide. They have been often published in Protestant countries, and thus have escaped the mutilations which those of so many other Italian Protestants have suffered.

Several other excellent men were put to death about the same time, among whom were Julio Zannetti and Bartolommeo Bartoccio. The latter was a son of a wealthy citizen of Castello, a city in the duchy of Spoleto. He had received some knowledge of the new

opinions from Fabrizio Tommassi, of Gubbio, an educated young man who was his companion at the siege of Sienna, A. D. 1555. On returning home he earnestly labored to propagate the truth, and several of his relatives were converted. During a dangerous sickness he refused the services of the family confessor, and resisted the arguments of the bishop of the diocese to win him back to the Roman Catholic faith. He was, therefore, summoned before the governor, Paolo Vitelli; but, though physically weak, he was able to escape during the night by surmounting the wall of the city. He fled first to Sienna, and afterwards settled in Venice. Having no means of support, and his father disowning him, he retired to Geneva, where he married and became a manufacturer of silk. While visiting Genoa, A. D. 1567, on business, he imprudently gave his true name to a merchant, and was apprehended by the Inquisition. The governments of Geneva and Berne sent an envoy to the republic of Genoa to demand his liberation, but he had been taken to Rome upon the requisition of the pope. After an imprisonment of nearly two years he was condemned to be burned alive. With a firm step and unaltered countenance he went to the place of execution, and, while the flames were enveloping his body, the words "*Vittoria! vittoria!—victory! victory!*"—were distinctly heard from his dying lips.

During the remainder of the sixteenth century the prisons of the Inquisition in Italy, and particularly at Rome, were filled with victims, including persons of noble birth, male and female, men of letters, and mechanics. Some recanted and did penance, others were condemned to long imprisonment, and some to worse sufferings. Several foreigners, who visited Italy on business or for pleasure, were arrested and cruelly treated. Among these were some Englishmen, one of whom was Dr. Thomas Wilson, afterwards secretary of Queen Elizabeth. He was accused of heresy and thrown into prison at Rome, on account of some things which were contained in his books on logic and rhetoric. He made his escape in consequence of his prison doors being broken open during the tumult which occurred at the death of Paul IV. Another prisoner, who fled at the same time, was John Craig, a Scotchman, who became one of the most active of the fellow-laborers of John Knox, and lived to draw up the "National Covenant," in which Scotland solemnly abjured the Roman Catholic faith. Dr. Thomas Reynolds was less fortunate. He resided for some time at Naples, and being accused of heresy was sent by the bishop to Rome, along with three Neapolitan gentlemen, who were also suspected. Refusing to depose against his fellow-prisoners, he

was subjected to the torture called by the Italians *la tratta di corda*, and by the Spaniards, *l'astrapado*; and, in consequence of this and similar treatment, he died in prison in November, A. D. 1566. Two persons were burned alive at Rome, A. D. 1595, one a native of Silesia, and the other an Englishman, who indiscreetly snatched the host from the hand of the priest who was carrying it in procession. Before he was committed to the flames the offending hand was cut off, and the sacrilegious act thereby condemned.

Clement VIII, who ascended the papal throne, A. D. 1572, possessed the same persecuting spirit which characterized his immediate predecessors. When heretics could not be found and sacrificed for the glory of the "Mother Church," this pontiff was diligently employed in filling up her coffers. Among the large estates which he resolved to seize were those of the Cenci. Count Francesco Cenci was the head of the family (A. D. 1585), and a prominent citizen of Rome, but a man of ungovernable passions. He was truly a second edition of Cæsar Borgia, and would commit any crime to accomplish his purpose. He poisoned his first wife, the Princess Santa Croce, in order to marry the beautiful Lucrezia. There were four sons and two daughters, the youngest of whom was Beatrice, the most beautiful girl in Rome at the time. The father was so cruel to the children that they and the step-mother petitioned the pope to shield them; but he refused, and commanded them to obey the head of the family. The other daughter, Marguerite, was given by the pope in marriage to Signor Gabreilli; and it is believed that Christoforo and Racco, two of his sons, were assassinated at the instigation of the father.

Lucrezia, finding that her husband was the basest of men, was unwilling to trust the beautiful Beatrice in his hands, and therefore petitioned the pope to give her in marriage to Guerra, a young nobleman who was deeply attached to her. The count intercepted the petition and moved his entire family to a castle-fortress in the solitudes of the Apennines. His cruel treatment was resumed, and Beatrice was immured and tortured in a dungeon, where her shrieks of terror were heard by the family and servants, who could afford no relief. The step-mother and eldest son now resolved to remove the tyrant, and easily secured the services of Olympio, an assassin, and Marzio, a soldier, to carry out their plan. The latter desired to avenge the murder of his betrothed, whom the count had endeavored to ruin before he put her to death. While sleeping one night in his chamber he was slain by these hired men. The family were arrested



as accomplices, and tortured by repeated applications of the wheel, the pulley, and the rack of the Inquisition. Giacomo, Bernardo, and Lucrezia, unable to endure the suffering, confessed, but Beatrice refused because, while aware of the plot, she had not consented to it. Clement gave her into the hands of the cruel Luciani, who applied a variety of tortures. The beautiful sufferer swooned after making the dungeon resound with her shrieks; then she was revived with cordials and the cruel process repeated. The *tortura capillorum*, or the twisting of the hair into a rope, and the suspension of the whole body from the ceiling by it, the *taxilla*, or the placing of heated blocks of wood on the bare feet, and other fiendish tortures were resorted to. The promise was made that if she confessed her life would be spared, and the entire family released. The latter begged her to yield for their sake; and finally she exclaimed: "Be it as you wish; I am content to die if it will save you."

The pope was informed that Beatrice had confessed, and as this was what he wanted in order to possess their estates, he violated his promise, and ordered the whole family to be executed. The bodies, after being beheaded, were placed on biers near the statue of St. Paul, upon which four torches shed their light, and thousands came to strew flowers and drop tears of sympathy while beholding the lovely face and form of the martyr-maiden. In the Barberini palace at Rome is the world-renowned portrait of this young victim, which is said to have been painted by Guido Reni, while she was in prison. There is a peculiarity about the head-dress which is rather trying to an artist's power of color; consisting of heavy folds of white cloth wound around the head, from which a few locks of yellowish brown hair escape. The eyes are large, soft, and lustrous, and have a deep expression of pensive sorrow, looking as if they had wept away all their power of tears. The lips are delicate, full of sensibility, but rigid from intense suffering. The outline of the face is fine, and the features regular. Hillard compares her to a lily in the garden crushed by the fall of an aerolite; and he might have added, that Clement, like another Ahab, took possession of the garden or the estates of the Cenci, leaving the palace, which yet stands, to the descendants.

While the Inquisition was engaged in destroying heretics, it also adopted rigorous measures to suppress and annihilate all books which savored of heresy. Paul IV framed a catalogue, A. D. 1559, and made its observance universal. This *Index* was arranged in three divisions. The first contained the names of the authors whose

whole works were interdicted. The second embraced the names of those authors, some of whose whole works only were specified and forbidden. The third pointed out certain anonymous publications which were unlawful to be read. To the whole was added a list of more than sixty printers whose publications were all condemned, no matter in what language they were printed, or what subjects they treated. This was the origin and foundation of the famous *Index Expurgatorius*, by which Rome has striven to reduce the world to the darkness of the Middle Ages. The heretical books were doomed to the flames, and severe penalties were decreed against those who should neglect to give them up. The promulgation of this barbarous decree awakened a feeling of consternation throughout Italy, especially in Tuscany, whose dukes of the celebrated family of the Medici had been proud of the patronage which they had afforded to literature and literary men. Cosmo, who then occupied the ducal throne, pleaded for some restrictions upon the operation of the decree, in order to prevent the devastation which it threatened. Venice temporized, and Milan and Naples referred the matter to their lord, Philip II, who was then in Flanders. The work of destruction proceeded until all libraries, public and private, felt the expurgating process. An immense number of books were consumed, and the trade of the printers and booksellers was ruined. The disastrous effects were experienced not only at Venice, but also in the prominent cities of surrounding countries. Prohibited books were buried under ground or walled up in houses, and in tearing down old houses in Italy valuable books, condemned by the *Index*, have been discovered.

---

## CHAPTER XXI.

### ITALIAN RULERS AND POETS.

WHEN we study the history of the suppression and ultimate destruction of the Italian Reformation in the sixteenth century we shall discover that the effective cause was the establishment, or, to speak more correctly, the reorganization, of the Inquisition in that country. It appeared at the opportune moment for the papacy. The dawn of the Protestant day shone upon the very throne of the Roman pontiff. From the city of Ferrara in the north where René

sheltered in her palace the disciples of the Gospel to the ancient Parthenope, which looks down from its fig and aloe covered heights upon the calm waters of the bay of Naples, the light was dispelling the darkness of centuries. Italy had become celebrated as the land of the *Renaissance*, and it now seemed that greater distinction would crown it as the land of Protestantism. In Florence, Padua, Bologna, Lucca, Modena, Rome, and other cities of classic fame, some of the most prominent families had embraced the Gospel. Men of rank in the state and of eminence in the Church, noted individuals in the republic of letters, orators, poets, and some noble ladies as distinguished for their talents as for their birth, were not ashamed to be enrolled among the disciples of that faith which the Lutheran princes had confessed at Augsburg.

An effort had been made at the Ratisbon Conference in January, A. D. 1541, to find a basis of conciliation between the Protestant and Roman Catholic Churches. The papal authorities at Rome had prepared the way for the attempted reconciliation of the two creeds by infusing new blood into the College of Cardinals. Gaspar Contarini, a senator of Venice, and a believer in some of the Protestant doctrines, was made a cardinal. The chair of the doge almost within his reach, he was persuaded to come to Rome and consecrate his great talents and influence to the doubtful experiment of reforming the papacy. By his advice several ecclesiastics, whose sentiments were similar to his own were added to the Sacred College, among others Sadolet, Gioberto Caraffa, and Reginald Pole. The deputies to the Ratisbon Conference having returned to Rome, and reported the failure of all the efforts to frame a basis of agreement between the two faiths, the pope, alarmed at the spread of Protestantism in Italy and elsewhere, exclaimed, "What, then, is to be done?" Cardinal Caraffa and John Alvarez de Toledo, bishop of Burgos, to whom the question was addressed, immediately answered, "Re-establish the Inquisition." (The preceding chapters describe the terrible results of that tribunal in the peninsula; but, while the Italian Reformation had been suppressed, it had many secret friends even as late as the close of the sixteenth century.

The prominent events in the civil and literary history of Italy during the sixteenth century deserve special consideration. When Lorenzo de Medici died, A. D. 1492, his son, Pietro, succeeded him in the government of Florence. In the following year (A. D. 1493), the death of Pope Innocent VIII occurred, and Roderigo Borgia, who bought his election of the Sacred College, became the pontiff under



the name of Alexander VI. He was a man of great ability, but notoriously corrupt, constantly seeking to advance the ambitious schemes of his children, of whom Cæsar and Lucrezia Borgia are the most celebrated. Pietro de Medici formed a close alliance with Ferdinand of Naples, and labored to defeat the plans of Ludovico Sforza, duke of Milan, and the pope. Ludovico, whose nephew was the son-in-law of Ferdinand, feared that the Neapolitan king would seek to restore the dispossessed duke to the throne of Milan, and he made an offensive and defensive alliance with the pope and the Venetians. Distrusting both his allies, he invited Charles VIII, of France, to enter Italy and take possession of the kingdom of Naples. The French monarch, who had a pretended claim to the crown of Naples, which he had inherited from the house of Anjou, accepted the offer and invaded Italy with a powerful army in August, A. D. 1494. At Pavia he visited the dispossessed duke of Milan, who, with his wife, was kept by Ludovico in a castle. Soon afterward the duke died, poisoned, as it is generally believed, by his uncle, Ludovico, who, under the protection of the French, assumed the title of Duke of Milan.

Charles secured the friendship of the Florentines, but they were indignant because Pietro de Medici made an unfortunate treaty with him, and they expelled their ruler from the city, to which he never returned. The French monarch marched to Rome, dictated terms to the people, received the homage of the pope, and then proceeded to Naples, where he was cordially welcomed, the young king, Alfonso, having fled to Sicily. But Charles afterwards met with reverses, his allies abandoned him, and he retreated from Italy. Louis XII mounted the French throne, A. D. 1499, and in August of that year entered Italy, captured Milan, and drove Ludovico from the city. He also became master of Genoa; but the people, disliking his arbitrary rule, attempted to revolt, A. D. 1507, but were compelled to submit. The Genoese republic, like the Venetian, avoided entangling alliances with Italian politics. From its earliest history the government was conducted entirely by the nobles in their own interest; but a check was placed upon their power, A. D. 1039, by the choice of a doge. During the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries Genoa and Venice were engaged in hostilities. The war which was closed by the treaty of Turin, A. D. 1381, was disastrous to both; but Venice recovered and became as powerful as ever, yet Genoa never rallied. The republic was so weakened by internal dissensions that, in order to save themselves from being absorbed by Milan, the Genoese conferred the Signoria on Charles VI, of France, A. D. 1396.

After a series of battles extending through a period of fourteen years, Louis XII gladly consented to terms of peace, A. D. 1513. He was removed by death two years afterwards, and Francis I became his successor. The latter revived the French claim to the duchy of Milan and prepared to maintain it. Venice and Genoa embraced the French cause, but the pope, the Spanish viceroy, the Florentines, and the Swiss were opposed to the French rule in Italy. Ferdinand, of Spain, died A. D. 1516, and was succeeded by his grandson, Charles, Archduke of Austria. In Italy he was the rival of the king of France, and the natural ally of the pope, and consequently a treaty was negotiated between them, A. D. 1521, for the expulsion of the French. The latter were soon driven out of the duchy of Milan, and it is said that Leo X was so overcome with joy at the news that he died. Venice now abandoned the French alliance and joined the party of Charles; and Genoa was captured from the French by the imperial army, A. D. 1522. Thus the power of Spain was supreme throughout Italy.

On the 6th of May, A. D. 1527, the army of Charles, passing by Florence, came to Rome, carried it by storm, and compelled Clement VII to take refuge in the Castle of St. Angelo. The Florentines, taking advantage of the absence of the imperial army, drove out the Medici, and, placing themselves under the protection of France, restored their republican form of government. Genoa also threw off the Spanish yoke, and, under the lead of Andrea Doria, declared for the French. The Genoese fleet assisted that of France in blockading Naples, and the city must have fallen had not Francis I seriously offended the Dorias by his unjust treatment. Andrea Doria withdrew his fleet, and Genoa abandoned the French alliance and went over to Charles, whose power was now riveted upon Italy more firmly than ever. He was crowned king of Italy and emperor by Pope Clement, A. D. 1530. The double coronation occurred at Bologna, instead of at Milan and Rome. He was absolute in Italy, and in the truest sense king of that country; but becoming weary in the discharge of official duties he abdicated the throne A. D. 1555, and was succeeded in the empire by his brother, Ferdinand.

Thus, during the sixteenth century, Italy was the battle-field of France and Spain, and her republics favored the one or the other of these powerful rivals as their respective interests suggested. The Roman hierarchy also displayed its usual sagacity in managing its affairs, the reigning pontiffs consulting the welfare of their relatives and special friends in every act of diplomacy. All these contend-

ing parties, however, were unanimous in their opposition to the Italian Reformation, and succeeded in extinguishing for a time that light which relieved while it shone the surrounding papal darkness. But now Italy was tranquil; all her states either belonged to or were in amity and alliance with Spain. She had no disturbances to dread; her ancient spirit declined, and she sank into luxury, occupied in the enjoyment of her arts and natural advantages. The name of Andrea Doria is a bright star in her national sky. He sought neither power nor reward for himself, and was never elected doge of Genoa, though he was its defender. This noble patriot died, honored and lamented, A. D. 1560, in the ninety-fourth year of his age.

The history of Italian art and literature in the sixteenth century rivals the ages of Pericles and Augustus in the number of distinguished names, each of which might form an epoch. Leo X was the most illustrious of a series of papal patrons, bestowing liberal rewards not only on authors, but also on the celebrated artists, Raphael and Michael Angelo. Cosmo de Medici commanded Varchi, a historian of Florence, to write a faithful narrative of that republic, so that the crimes, by which his own family attained the sovereignty, might not be concealed. From the beginning of his reign, A. D. 1537, until its close—a period of thirty-eight years—he encouraged the study and practice of all the fine arts; and under his son, Francesco, the learned institutions already in existence were advanced, and the academy, *Della Crusca*, was founded. The court of the Estes in Ferrara entertained Ariosto and Tasso, and many of the other courts, great and small, as those of the Gonzagas in Mantua, of the dukes of Urbino, and of Emmanuel Philibert of Savoy, were hospitable to scholars and poets, and numerous literary academies were instituted.

Pre-eminent among the poets of this century was Ludovico Ariosto, who was born on the 8th of September, A. D. 1474, at Reggio, of which place his father was the governor. He was a man of the world and of society, possessed wit and good sense, and during his busy life manifested no poetic melancholy. His great poem, “*Orlando Furioso*,” occupied him eleven years. It consists of forty-six cantos and contains more than thirty-eight thousand lines. Ariosto sang the adventures and misfortunes of those paladins of Charlemagne, who fought in the pass of Roncesvalles, and defended Europe against the Moors. Orlando, the hero, becomes mad through love for Angelica, and hence the title of the poem. The loves and exploits of Bradamante and Ruggiero, imaginary ancestors of the house of Este,



form the basis of this romantic epic, and hence the author was called the Ferrarese Homer. The courtesies and heroisms of knights, the loves of ladies, and the madness of Orlando, give occasion for most various and always natural pictures, all the passions being delineated in appropriate colors, so that Tasso affirmed the excellence of Ariosto not only in versatility of invention, but in propriety of treatment. This great poem abounds in striking adventures, and shows that its composer had been a diligent student of the *fabliaux of trouvères*, and the lyrics of the Provençal poets. Ariosto, however, is allowed to have possessed a fertility of fancy almost unequaled, and a rare originality. Many of his similes are unsurpassed in simplicity and grace. Besides his masterpiece he wrote satires on the politics and the rulers of his time, and his *Negromante* and *Zanotti* almost entitle him to be called the father of Italian comedy. He died A. D. 1533.

Bernardo Tasso was the author of the *Amadigi* and other esteemed poems; but when Torquato, his renowned son, began to write, the father recognized in him a superior. The latter was born at Sorrento, in the kingdom of Naples, A. D. 1544, and derives his celebrity from his "Jerusalem Delivered" (*Gerusalemme Liberata*), an epic poem of great merit. In its form he strictly followed Virgil and Homer, and, like the works of these illustrious authors, his production has gained the palm of immortality. It imparts to the classical mythology the marvels of enchantment and magic, and reflects the romantic spirit of the times. Its superiority has caused the "Rinaldo" and the pastoral drama of "Aminta" to fall into undeserved neglect. Some of Tasso's sonnets also, and other minor pieces, possess a rare beauty; and his prose letters and moral dialogues are remarkable for their eloquence and philosophical tone. He was the most unhappy of authors, and spent a life of great and varied suffering. His mind was always seriously impaired, and he injured his health, which was naturally delicate, by an incessant use of medicine. Among other calamities, he was confined by the duke of Ferrara, who had been his patron until he committed the imprudent act of embracing, in the midst of a crowded assembly, the Princess Eleonora, the duke's sister, with whom he had unfortunately fallen in love. For this offense he was consigned to a hospital for a long time under the pretense that he was insane. After mourning his disappointment in a tedious solitude, rendered more afflictive by a lingering disease and occasional lunacy, he was at last released. His merits as a poet now attracted the attention of the nation, and just as he was on the point of receiving the laurel crown from Pope Clement VIII, he suddenly

expired, A. D. 1595, and that which was to have been, on the next day, his coronation, proved to be the melancholy procession of his funeral.

Among the Italian poets of less distinction were Rucellai, Valva-gone, Trissino, Speroni, Anguillara, Martelli, Aretino, Molza, Casa, Bentivoglio, Nelli, Filicaia, Andreini, Guarini, and Alamanni. Guarini was the author of a pastoral poem which was considered almost equal in merit to the "*Aminta*" of Tasso, and Alamanni excelled in satire. The most eminent poetess of the century was Vittoria Colonna, highly applauded by Ariosto. Berni was the head of a school of burlesque poetry, called from him the Bernesca rhyme. The best of his pieces, the "*Orlando Innamorato*," possesses grace, elegance, and originality. At this period the Italians developed the dramatic art by the union of music with poetry. The new and brilliant invention of the opera belongs to the Florentines, the first having been the "*Daphne*," the words of which were by Rinuccini, and the music by Peri, and which was represented, A. D. 1597. According to Muratori, the modern opera began with the melodramas which Orazio Vecchio, of Modena, produced; and this new style became so popular in Italy, that authors and musicians immediately devoted themselves to it, and it was soon introduced into Germany and France. Pietro Bembo, who died A. D. 1547, restored elegance and correctness to the native language, and thus revived its popularity among the learned. Annibale Caro, who was born A. D. 1507, and died A. D. 1566, translated many of the classics into Italian, and some critics regard his compositions superior in style even to those of Petrarch. His versions are characterized by great originality, and it has been said that Virgil himself would hesitate whether to give the palm to his own work or to that of his translator. The original writings of this author also received the highest commendation for elegance.

An important place in Italian literature is held by political writers, foremost among whom was Niccola Macchiavelli, who was born, A. D. 1469, at Florence. His father, Bernardo, was a lawyer, who traced his ancestry to Hugo, marquis of Tuscany. Niccola received instruction from the celebrated scholar, Marcello Virgilio, and engaged in public affairs at an early age. From a subordinate post in the office of the chancellor of Florence, which he held at the critical period of the republic, which succeeded the expulsion of the Medici, A. D. 1493, he was promoted, A. D. 1498, to the place of secretary of the 'Ten,' which, in the Florentine constitution of that day, may

be regarded as the ministry of foreign affairs. His duties were almost entirely diplomatic: he was employed in a great variety of missions, the instructions and correspondence connected with which may almost be said to contain the secret political history of Italy during his time. The culminating point of his reputation as a diplomatist was his mission to the great master of treachery and dissimulation, Cæsar Borgia, duke of Valentino, A. D. 1502, of which an account is preserved in fifty-two letters, written during the course of the negotiation, not surpassed in dramatic interest by any series of state papers which ever appeared in the history of any nation.

In the complicated external relations which Italy had now assumed Macchiavelli is found in communication with all the great foreign powers, as he had hitherto been with the Italian principalities. He was sent, A. D. 1507, to the Emperor Maximilian, and undertook a mission to France, A. D. 1510. This was his third visit to that country in a diplomatic capacity, and its important bearing on the relation of France with Italy may be seen by comparing the League of Cambray with the subsequent alliance for the expulsion of the French out of Italy. On the restoration of the Medici, A. D. 1512, he was involved in the downfall of his patron, the Gonfaloniere Soderini, and was arrested on a charge of conspiracy, A. D. 1513. When put to the torture he disclaimed all knowledge of the alleged conspiracy; and, though pardoned in virtue of the amnesty ordered by Leo X, he was compelled for several years to withdraw from public life, during which period he devoted himself to literature. It was not until the death of Lorenzo de Medici, A. D. 1519, that he began to recover favor. He was commissioned in that year, by Leo X, to draw up his report on a reform of the state of Florence, and he resumed his old official occupation A. D. 1521, being employed in various diplomatic service to several of the states of Italy. On his return to Florence, in May, A. D. 1527, he was taken ill, and having trusted to his own treatment of himself, the malady assumed a very formidable character, and in the end proved fatal, on the 22d of June, A. D. 1527, just as he had completed his fifty-eighth year. Some difference of opinion has existed as to his religious belief, and as to his sentiments during his last hours; but it seems certain that he died trusting in the promises of the Gospel, and consoled with the ordinary ministrations of his Church. He was buried in the family vault in the church of Santa Croce, at Florence; but not until A. D. 1787, and then through the munificence of a foreigner, the Earl Cowper, was a monument raised to his memory.



The literary works of Macchiavelli are numerous, consisting of ten volumes, issued at Florence, A. D. 1783. Besides his letters and state papers of the highest interest, he was the author of comedies, of an essay on the Italian language, and of several minor compositions. His historical writings comprise a discourse on Livy, histories of Florence, extending from A. D. 1215 to A. D. 1492, with a fragmentary continuation to A. D. 1499; a history of the affairs of Lucca, and a biography of Castruccio Castracani, which was not completed. He also wrote several books on the art of war, which have been much admired by the learned in military science. But the great source of his reputation for good, or for evil, is the celebrated book, *De Principatibus*, or, as it has since been called, *Del Principe*, written, A. D. 1514, and published, A. D. 1532. The main question discussed in this famous book is, "How can principalities be governed and maintained?" In resolving this question, various cases are supposed, for each of which appropriate rules, principles, and suggestions are laid down, and all are illustrated both by contemporary examples and by a wealth of historical learning which it is difficult to overestimate. The seventh chapter, in which he details, with evident admiration, the system of Cæsar Borgia, and the eighteenth, in which he discusses the duty of princes as to the obligation of keeping faith, are those which, no doubt, have contributed to make the name of the author the symbol of every thing that is odious.

Conflicting opinions, however, are entertained concerning the design of the Florentine statesman and diplomatist in writing "The Prince." Some maintain the position that the researches of modern Italian scholars, and a better consideration of the political state of Italy in the days of Macchiavelli, have at length vindicated in some measure his name, and placed him in a different light. The advocates of this theory assert that the work is a calm and forcible exposition of the means by which tyranny may be established and sustained; and if it be a guide to princes desiring to become despotic, it also weakens despotism by exposing its most subtle secrets. These defenders of Macchiavelli refer to the fact that he was an ardent friend of liberty, and that, consequently, *Il Principe* was intended to be a satire upon absolutism, thereby promoting the cause of freedom. This theory, that the design of the work was to make arbitrary power odious and contemptible, is rejected by the old school of critics, who declare that the broad scheme, revealed in every chapter, though more distinct in the seventh and eighteenth, is that, for the establishment and maintenance of authority, all means may be resorted to,

and that the worst and most treacherous acts of the ruler, however unlawful in themselves, are justified by the wickedness and treachery of the governed. Not only the general tone of the book is referred to as a proof of its aim, but also a letter written A. D. 1513, and only discovered in 1810, by Macchiavelli to his friend Vettori, from which it appears that the author wrote "The Prince" to gratify the Medici, for whose private perusal it was designed, and not for publication. Whichever theory is accepted, it can not be denied that this profound and philosophical statesman desired the liberation of Italy from foreign rule, and believing that strong native governments, even though absolute, must be endured, he favored that of the Medici for Florence, not hesitating to advocate the use of all means for its security and consolidation. "The Prince" called forth many criticisms and rejoinders, the most remarkable being from the pen of Frederick the Great, A. D. 1740. This manual of government was constantly in the hands of such sovereigns as Charles V and Sixtus V, and the author was recognized as a master in the art of diplomacy. During his life he was employed in twenty-three foreign embassies. He was also a dramatist, and excelled as a writer, his style being marked by simplicity, strength, thought, and a rare but felicitous use of ornament.

Among other political writers were Botero and Giannotti; but nearer to Macchiavelli in merit was Paruta, who was born A. D. 1540, and died A. D. 1598. Paolo Giovio wrote in Latin a partisan history of his own time, and general histories were written by Giambullari and Adriani. The historians of Venice were Bembo, Paruta, and Contarini; of Genoa Giustiniani, Bonfadio, and Foglietta; of Ferrara, Ciuzio, and Falletti; of Florence, Nardi, Varchi, Nerli, Segni, Capponi, and Scipione Ammirato; and of Naples, Costanzo, Porzio, and Summonte. Vasari was the most prominent of the historians of art, and recorded the lives of the most excellent painters, sculptors, and architects of Italy.

## CHAPTER XXII.

*SYNOD IN THE WALDENSIAN VALLEYS.*

THE promise made to the Waldenses by the duke of Savoy, A. D. 1489, that they should not again be persecuted, was, no doubt, sincere, but he could not altogether protect them from the secret plottings of the priesthood, though he had the power to prevent the invasion of their "Valleys" by such armies as that which Cataneo commanded. While unmolested by organized bands of crusaders, they were assailed by the papal missionary and inquisitor, who proselyted some and kidnaped others. Many outwardly conformed to the Romish Church rather than be annoyed by their enemies. Monastier says, "In order to be shielded from all interruption in their journeys on business, they obtained from the priests, who were settled in the valleys, certificates or testimonials of their being papists." Before obtaining this credential the applicant was required to show that he had attended the Romish chapel, practiced confession, received the mass, and had his children baptized by the priest. It is said that to atone for this wicked dissimulation they muttered to themselves, when entering the Romish temples, "Cave of robbers, may God confound thee!" While professing to be Romanists they continued to attend the Waldensian services, and to submit to the censures of the Vaudois pastors. It was evident that both the members who practiced such deception and the Church that permitted it had greatly declined in piety. The old vine, planted in apostolic days, and so long covered with the shadow of the mountains, appeared to be dying.

But He who had planted it "looked down from heaven and visited it." The Reformation now dawned upon Europe. The river of the "Water of Life," which for twelve centuries seemed to flow only through the Alpine valleys, began to spread through Christendom, and the old and now declining Vaudois Church drank anew of the celestial stream that imparted new life and covered the branches of this ancient vine with blossoms and fruit. The Reformation had already moved most of the countries of Europe to their depths before the inhabitants of these secluded mountains had heard of the wonderful event. When the intelligence reached them, they "were as men



who dreamed," and became anxious to have a confirmation of the glorious news. In order to ascertain to what extent the nations of Europe had cast off the yoke of Rome the Waldenses selected pastor Martin, of the valley of Lucerna, to go forth on an investigating tour. In A. D. 1526 he returned with the astonishing information that the light of apostolic Christianity was shining on Germany, Switzerland, and France, and that multitudes were every day openly professing the same doctrines that the Waldenses had preached from the earliest centuries of the Christian era. In attestation of his statement he showed books that he had brought from Germany, containing the views of the reformers.

The remnant of the Vaudois on the north of the Alps were also surprised and gladdened by this great spiritual revolution, and sent forth men to collect all the facts concerning it. In A. D. 1530, George Morel, of Merindol, and Pierre Masson, of Burgundy, were commissioned by the Churches of Provence and Dauphiné to visit the reformers of Switzerland and Germany, and learn what they could respecting their doctrine and manner of life. These deputies assembled in conference with the members of the Protestant Churches of Berne, Morat, and Neuchatel, and also held interviews with Berthold Haller and William Farel. They went on to Basle, and presented to Œcolampadius, in October, A. D. 1530, a document in Latin, which contained a full account of their ecclesiastical discipline, doctrine, worship, and manners. Œcolampadius was urged to express his opinion, favorable or otherwise, relative to the doctrine and order of the Vaudois Church, and to suggest any modifications he deemed necessary. This submission of the elder Church to the younger was a beautiful illustration of the humility that characterized the Vaudois.

The reformer of Basle experienced unspeakable joy from the visit of these two pastors of this primitive Church. Their testimony was to him the voice of the ancient and apostolic Church addressing the Christians of the sixteenth century, and extending to them a cordial welcome within the gates of the City of God. To him it was a miracle that this "little flock had been for ages in the fires, but was not consumed." This was encouraging to those who were about to suffer persecutions not less terrific. "We render thanks," said Œcolampadius, in his letter of the 13th of October, A. D. 1530, to the Churches of Provence, "to our most gracious Father, that he has called you into such marvelous light during the ages in which such thick darkness has covered almost the whole world under the empire of Antichrist. We love you as brethren." But his affection

for them did not blind him to their spiritual declension, nor deter him from giving such admonitions as he regarded necessary. "As we approve of many things among you," he wrote, "so there are several which we wish to see amended. We are informed that the fear of persecution has caused you to dissemble and to conceal your faith. . . . There is no concord between Christ and Belial. You commune with unbelievers; you take part in their abominable masses, in which the death and passion of Christ are blasphemed. . . . I know your weakness; but it becomes those who have been redeemed by the blood of Christ to be more courageous. It is better for us to die than to be overcome by temptation." Thus *Æcolampadius*, speaking in the name of the Church of the Reformation, repaid the Church of the Alps for the services she had rendered to the world in former ages. By this sharp but brotherly rebuke he endeavored to restore to her the purity and glory which she had lost.

The deputies, after their interview with *Æcolampadius*, went to Strasburg, and made a similar statement of their faith to Bucer, Capito, and other reformers of that city, eliciting similar congratulations and counsels. The Church of the Reformation, in the clear light of her morning, beheld many things which had become dim in the evening of the Vaudois Church, and the former gladly imparted to her elder sister the knowledge obtained from wider observation. If the Protestants of the sixteenth century recognized the voice of apostolic Christianity speaking in the Waldenses, the latter heard the voice of the Bible—or, rather, of God himself—speaking in the reformers, and therefore modestly received their reproofs. This was, indeed, an illustration of the Savior's words, "The last shall be first."

The meeting of the representatives of these two Churches was truly a memorable occasion. Each was a miracle to the other. The Church of the sixteenth century beheld with wonder the preservation of the Vaudois Church for ages amid the fires of persecution; and the resurrection of the former was a yet greater mystery to the Church of the first century. By comparing their respective creeds they were astonished to find them one. When blended, the tones of both instruments made perfect harmony, and sent forth the same Gospel music. In tracing the streams of evidence, to ascertain the sources of their knowledge, they discovered that both issued from the same fountain—the Word of God. They were not two Churches, but one, the elder and younger members of the same glorious family, the children of the same Father. As Dr. Wylie eloquently

remarks, "What a magnificent monument of the true antiquity and genuine catholicity of Protestantism!"

Of the two Provence deputies who visited the reformers of Switzerland, only one returned. While proceeding homeward they came to Dijon, and there, from some cause or other, Pierre Masson was suspected, thrown into prison, condemned, and finally burned. His fellow-deputy, George Morel, was not disturbed, but, conveying the answers of the reformers, especially the letters of Œcolampadius, continued on his journey, and arrived in safety in Provence. The documents he brought were fully discussed, their contents causing these two ancient Churches mingled joy and sorrow—the former, however, being in the ascendancy. The confessors of the Alps considered themselves alone in the world; every successive century beheld a diminution of their numbers, and they were becoming less determined; their ancient enemy, on the other hand, gradually extended her dominion and strengthened her power. Indeed, the Waldenses imagined that soon the public profession of the Gospel would cease. They were, therefore, astonished to hear that in many lands there was a numerous body of Christians, distinguished for their knowledge, faith, and courage. The news that at that moment a new army of Christian soldiers were in the field to maintain the old battle literally astounded them; but the intelligence solved a problem belonging to the past. Their fathers had shed their blood, and not until now were its fruits visible. While they had fought the battles of truth, the honor of the victory was reserved for those combatants who more recently appeared upon the scene of action. The Waldenses painfully realized that by their departure from the "old paths" they had forfeited this reward; hence the regret that mingled with their joy.

The communications which their deputies brought back from the Swiss and German Reformers were carefully considered, and especially the reforms which were urged upon them. The great majority of the Vaudois *barbes* favored the adoption of the measures proposed by the Churches of the Protestant faith, but a small minority opposed it because they, as old disciples, would not permit dictation from the new, or because they themselves were secretly inclined to the Romish superstitions. They again sought advice from the Reformers, and after repeated interviews and expressions of opinions, it was finally decided to convene a synod in the "Valleys," at which all the questions between the two churches might be debated, and the future relations of each determined. It would be necessary for the Church



of the Alps to show that great and radical differences in doctrine existed between herself and the newly organized Church before she could justify herself in remaining independent of it, as she was previous to the Reformation. If no such differences existed, she dared not continue apart but must unite with the others.

It was resolved that the approaching synod should possess a truly œcumenical character—a general assembly of all the children of the Protestant faith. A cordial invitation was extended, and was generally responded to. There were in the synod representatives of all the Waldensian Churches in the bosom of the Alps. The Albigenian communities on the north of the chain and the Vaudois Churches in Calabria sent deputies to it. The Churches of French Switzerland appointed William Farel and Anthony Saunier to attend it. Delegates from more distant lands, such as Bohemia, came to deliberate and vote in this famous convention. It assembled on the 12th of October, A. D. 1552, two years after the adoption of the Augsburg Confession, which marked the culmination of the German Reformation, and one year after the death of Zwingli on the field of Cappel. In France the Reformation was illustrating the power of its faith by the heroic deaths of its children. Calvin had already enlisted under the Protestant banner; and the princes of the Schmalkald league were standing at bay in the presence of Charles V. This assembly convened at a critical yet glorious era in the history of Protestantism. It met at the town of Chamforans, in the heart of the Valley of Angrogna, which occupied a strong and beautiful position. The summits of Roccomaneot and La Serre stood as sentinels before it, and the approach to it was flanked by defiles, which alternately widen and contract, but are every-where overhung by great rocks and mighty chestnut trees, behind and above which rise the taller peaks, some of them snow-clad. The plateau on which the town stood is located a short distance beyond La Serre and overlooks the grassy bottom of the valley, which is watered by a crystal torrent, and dotted with numerous *chalôts*. This extends about two miles beyond, and is then shut in by the steep, naked precipices of the Barricade, which, stretching from side to side of Angrogna, leaves only the long dark chasm we have already described as the pathway to the Pra del Tor, whose majestic mountains here burst upon the vision of the traveler, suggesting the idea that he is approaching some city of celestial magnificence. The town of Chamforans has long since passed away, its only representative at this day being a solitary farm-house.

The synod was in session six consecutive days. The assembled

*barbes* and elders freely discussed the various points raised in the documents which were sent to them by the Protestant Churches, and the result of their deliberations was embodied in a "Short Confession of Faith," which Monastier says "may be considered as a supplement to the ancient Confession of Faith of the year 1120, which it does not contradict in any point." It is entitled, says Leger, "A Brief Confession of Faith made by the Pastors and Heads of Families of the Valleys of Piedmont;" and "is preserved," he adds, "with other documents in the library of the University of Cambridge." It consists of seventeen articles, the chief of which are the moral inability of man; election to eternal life; the will of God, as made known in the Bible, the only rule of duty; and the doctrine of two sacraments only, baptism and the Lord's-supper.

After the adjournment of the synod, the primitive spirit of the Waldenses revived. The fear of persecution, which had caused them to deny their faith, was now removed, and they began to confess Christ publicly instead of practicing cowardly concealments. Henceforward they were never seen at mass or in the popish churches, refusing to recognize the priests of Rome as ministers of Christ, and under no circumstances would they receive any spiritual benefit or service at their hands. Indeed, the lamp of truth, which had almost expired, commenced to burn with its former brightness, and the radiance infused a new life into the Vaudois, who, without delay, entered upon the work of rebuilding their churches. For fifty years previous there was really no public worship in their "Valleys." The inquisitor had razed their churches, and they feared to rebuild them, lest another storm of violence and blood should sweep them away. Often they gathered in a cave, and in more peaceful times converted the house of their *barbe* or of some of their chief men into a place of meeting. Then, again, when the weather was pleasant, they would assemble on the mountain-side, under the great boughs of their ancestral trees. But they dared not rebuild their old sanctuaries. In the language of of the ancient Jews they could exclaim, "The holy and beautiful house in which our fathers praised thee is burned with fire, and all our pleasant things are laid waste." The counsels and fellowship of their Protestant brethren encouraged them to erect churches and restore the worship of God. At Lorenzo, close to the place where the synod met, the first of these post-Reformation edifices was built; others speedily followed in other valleys; pastors were multiplied; crowds flocked to their preaching, and many came from the plains of Piedmont, and from remote parts of their valleys.

Another indication that a vigorous life was animating the old Church was its translation of the Bible into the French language. The synod adopted a resolution to translate and print both the Old and New Testaments, and, as the work was entirely performed by the Vaudois, it was properly regarded as their gift to the Churches of the Reformation. It was truly a most appropriate and noble gift. They had placed in the hands of the reformers that Book which their fathers had received from the early Church, and preserved with their blood, and which their *barbes* had industriously transcribed and circulated. They, by this generous act, honored the Protestants of Germany and France in constituting them, along with themselves, the custodians of this, the ark of the world's hopes. Robert Olivetan, a near relative of Calvin, was requested to undertake the translation; and he executed it, receiving assistance, as many believe, from his great kinsman. It was printed in folio, in black letter, at Neuchâtel, A. D. 1535, by Pierre de Wingle, commonly called Picard. The Waldenses defrayed the entire expense, and collected for this object fifteen hundred crowns of gold, a large sum for that poor people. Thus at the beginning of this new era in her history, the Vaudois Church proclaimed that the Word of God was her only foundation.

As we have previously stated, the Churches of French Switzerland sent Farel and Saunier as a commission to the synod. Their zeal and courage were exhibited in making such a pilgrimage of toil and peril. It is difficult for one who crosses the Alps so easily at the present time to conceive the great labor and danger that attended the journey then. Fearing pursuit, the deputies could not travel the ordinary paths across the mountains, but were compelled to follow those but little known, which often led by the edge of precipices and abysses, up steep and dangerous ascents, and across fields of frozen snow. They were exposed to death from the blinding drifts and tempests of the mountains, enemies more to be dreaded than Romish pursuers. In the providence of God they were preserved and reached the "Valleys" in safety, contributing by their presence and advice to the dignity and influence of this, the first great ecclesiastical assembly of modern times. Three years thereafter a Vaudois, Jean Peyrel, of Angrogna, being cast into prison, deposed on his trial that he had "kept guard for the ministers who taught the good law, who were assembled in the town of Chamforans, in the center of Angrogna; and that, amongst others present, there was one called Farel, who had a red beard and a beautiful white horse; and two others accom-



panied him, one of whom had a horse almost black, and the other was very tall and rather lame."

For twenty-eight years the Church of the Alps had peace and great spiritual prosperity. In all her "Valleys" sanctuaries arose; and, not having a sufficient number of pastors and teachers, she enlisted in her service men of learning and zeal, some of whom were from foreign lands. Her faith was embraced by individuals and families in the cities on the plain of Piedmont; and her worship was attended by constantly increasing crowds. In fact, this venerable Church had a second youth. George Morel states in his *Memoirs*, that, at this time, there were more than eight hundred thousand persons of the religion of the Vaudois. He includes, of course, in this estimate the Vaudois in the "Valleys," on the plain of Piedmont, in Naples and Calabria, in the south of France, and in the countries of Germany. This ancient body of believers retrimmed its lamp, and it burned with a brightness that justified its time-honored motto: "A light shining in darkness." The darkness was not then so dense as it had been, because the hours of morning were approaching. The Vaudois were not the only source of light to Christendom at that period. Their Church was one of a constellation of lights which already irradiated the skies of Europe with an effulgence which no former age had known.

---

## CHAPTER XXIII.

### *THE WALDENSIAN REMONSTRANCES.*

THE king of France made a demand upon the duke of Savoy, Charles III, that he would permit him to march an army through his territories. He refused to comply; but Francis I determined to have a road into Italy. Accordingly he took possession of Piedmont by force, and it, together with the Waldensian Valleys, for twenty-three years, was held by him. The Waldenses found the sway of Francis I more tolerant than that of their own princes, for, though he hated heretics, the necessities of his policy often compelled him to court them, and, therefore, while he was burning Lutherans in Paris, he spared them in the "Valleys." But the general peace of Château Cambrésis, April 3, A. D. 1559, restored Piedmont, with the exception of Turin, to its former rulers of the House of Savoy.

Charles III had been succeeded, A. D. 1553, by Emmanuel Philibert. The latter was a prince of superior talents and humane disposition, and the Vaudois cherished the hope that he would permit them to live in peace, and to worship as their fathers had done. Their expectations were greatly strengthened by the fact that Philibert had married a sister of the king of France, Henry II, who had been carefully instructed in the Protestant faith by her illustrious relations, Margaret, Queen of Navarre, and Renée, of France, daughter of Louis XII. But unfortunately the treaty, which restored Emmanuel Philibert to the throne of his ancestors, contained a clause binding the contracting parties to extinguish heresy.

The king, moved by the counsels of his Protestant queen, had resolved to treat his subjects, the Vaudois, humanely; but he allowed himself to be ruled by men of stronger wills and more determined purposes. He was reminded of the terms of the agreement in the treaty of peace by the inquisitors of his kingdom, the nuncio of the pope, and the ambassadors of Spain and France, who united in urging upon him the purgation of his dominions. The unhappy monarch, unable to resist these powerful appeals, issued an edict on the 15th of February, A. D. 1560, forbidding his subjects hearing the Protestant preachers in the valley of Lucerna or anywhere else, under a penalty of a fine of one hundred dollars of gold for the first offense, and of the galleys for life for the second. This proclamation had reference principally to the Protestants on the plain of Piedmont, who in crowds visited the "Valleys" to attend Protestant services. In a short time, however, a severer edict followed, commanding attendance at mass under penalty of death. To enforce this cruel decree a commission was given to a prince of the blood, Philip of Savoy, count de Raconis, and with him were associated George Costa, count de la Trinita, and Thomas Jacomel, the inquisitor-general, who was both cruel in disposition and licentious in manners. Counselor Corbis was added to the commission, but, after beholding a few initial scenes of barbarity and horror, he concluded that he was not qualified for such bloody work and accordingly resigned.

The tempest of persecution first discharged its fury upon the town called Carignano, which sweetly reposes on one of the spurs of the Apennines, about twenty miles to the west of Turin. It contained many Protestants, some of whom occupied high social positions. The wealthiest were selected and dragged to the burning pile in order to terrify the rest. The result was satisfactory to the Inquisition. The professors of the Protestant faith in Carignano were scattered;

some fled to Turin, then under the domination of France, some to other places, and some, alas! frightened by the tempest in front, turned back and sought refuge in the darkness behind them. While they desired "the better country," yet they could not enter in at the cost of exile and death. After desolating Carignano, the storm of human passion advanced across the plain of Piedmont towards those great mountains, which were the ancient fortress of the truth, leaving in its track through the villages and country communes, terror, pillage, and blood. It moved on like one of those thunder-clouds which the traveler on the Alps may often behold beneath him, traversing the same plain, and shooting its lightnings earthwards as it advances. This cloud of wrath descended upon every Vaudois congregation until, at last, it reached the foot of the Waldensian Alps, at the entrance of the "Valleys," within whose mighty natural bulwarks crowds of fugitives from the towns and villages on the plains have already found an asylum. Before the appearance of the crusaders at the entrance of the "Valleys," rumors of the arrests, confiscations, cruel tortures, and horrible deaths which had befallen the Churches at the foot of the mountains came to the Vaudois in the Alps. As a calamity was impending over them, the pastors and prominent laymen assembled to deliberate on the steps to be taken. After fasting and humbling themselves before God they sought, by earnest prayer, the direction of the Holy Spirit.

These noble people in the bosom of the Alps resolved to approach the throne of their prince, and by humble petition and remonstrance present the justice of their cause. Their first claim was to be heard before being condemned—a right always granted to the accused, however criminal. They next solemnly denied the principal charge made against them, that of renouncing the true faith and of adopting doctrines contrary to the Bible and the early ages of the Church. They declared that their faith was that which Christ himself had taught; which the apostles, following their Great Master, had preached; which the Fathers had vindicated with their pens and the martyrs with their blood, and which the first four councils had ratified and proclaimed to be the faith of the Christian world. They appealed to the Bible and all antiquity as witnesses to the fact that they had not abandoned the "old paths," but, from father to son, had continued for fifteen centuries to walk therein. They affirmed that no religious novelties lurked in their mountains; that they had not bowed the knee to strange gods; and that, if they were heretics, so, too, were the first four councils, and so, too, the apostles them-



selves. If they had erred, they believed that they were in the company of the confessors and martyrs of the early ages. They also expressed a willingness to appeal their cause at any moment to a general council, provided it would decide the question by the Bible, which was the only infallible standard. If on this evidence they should be convicted of even one heresy, they declared their readiness to surrender it. As this was the main point of their indictment, they asked what more they could promise. Show us, they said, what the errors are which you demand us to renounce under the penalty of death, and we will comply without any delay. The following eloquent statement of their orthodoxy appears in Leger's account of the Vaudois Church at that time: "First, we do protest before the Almighty and all-just God, before whose tribunal we must all one day appear, that we intend to live and die in the holy faith, piety, and religion of our Lord Jesus Christ, and that we do abhor all heresies that have been and are condemned by the Word of God. We do embrace the most holy doctrine of the prophets and apostles, as likewise of the Nicene and Athanasian creeds; we do subscribe to the four councils, and to all the ancient Fathers, in all such things as are not repugnant to the analogy of faith."

The Vaudois in their remonstrance also assured the prince that their duty to God did not weaken their allegiance to him. Combining loyalty and piety, they stood before his throne among the most faithful and devoted of his subjects. They asked him when they had ever plotted treason or opposed lawful authority? They informed him that the more they feared God the more they honored him, their earthly king, to whom belonged their services, their substance, and, in a certain sense, their life. While they were ready to employ all these in defending the prerogative of their sovereign, yet one thing they could not surrender—their conscience. Concerning their Roman Catholic fellow-subjects of Piedmont, they appealed to the prince whether they had not lived peaceably with them. They desired to know whom they had ever injured, robbed, or defrauded, and whether they had not been kind, courteous, and honest. If their hills had been as fertile as the naturally richer plains at their feet, and, if their mountain-homes had been filled with an abundance of corn, oil, and wine, not always found in Piedmontese dwellings, they suggested that this, owing to their superior industry, frugality, and skill should not expose them to persecution. After directing the attention of the prince to the fact that no marauding expedition had ever descended from their hills to take the goods of their neighbors,

or to inflict retaliation for the many murders and robberies which they had not power to prevent, they asked why efforts were made to exterminate them, as if they were a horde of evil-doers and the terror of the community in which they lived. In conclusion, they desired to know why their sovereign should unsheathe the sword against those who had never disturbed his kingdom, nor plotted against his government, but who, on the contrary, had ever striven to maintain the authority of his law and the honor of his throne. "It is certain, most serene prince," said they, "that the Word of God will not perish, but will abide forever. If, then, our religion is the pure Word of God, as we are persuaded it is, and not a human invention, no human power will be able to abolish it."

There never was a more solemn, just, and respectful remonstrance presented to any throne. They were about to suffer a great wrong, yet the Vaudois did not utter an angry word or a single accusation against their enemies. But this solemn protest and triumphant vindication accomplished nothing except to make more manifest the gross injustice and flagrant wrong of the house of Savoy. The more completely and conclusively the Vaudois vindicated their true position the more the Romish Church appeared condemned; but nevertheless it determined the more resolutely to destroy the former. The remonstrance, which was addressed to "The Serene and most Mighty Prince, Philibert Emmanuel, Duke of Savoy, Prince of Piedmont, our most Gracious Lord," was accompanied by two others, one to the queen, and one to the council. The one to the queen was differently conceived from that to the prince. They offered no apology for their faith, because the queen herself accepted it. In a few touching terms they alluded to the sufferings which they had already experienced, and to the yet greater that were impending. This was sufficient, they knew, to awaken all her sympathies, and secure her as their advocate with the king, after the example of Esther, and other noble women of former times, who did not use their lofty station to promote their own happiness and honor, but to protect the persecuted followers of the truth. In their address to the queen, the Vaudois call it "The petition of her poor and humble subjects, the inhabitants of the valleys of Lucerna and Angrogna and Perosa and San Martino, and all those of the plain who call purely upon the name of the Lord Jesus."

The remonstrance presented to the council was written in terms more plain and direct, yet still respectful. The counselors of the king were warned against extreme measures, and notified that they would

have to answer for every drop of innocent blood they should spill, being reminded of the fact that the blood of Abel, though only that of one man, cried with a voice so loud that God heard it in heaven, and came down to reckon with the murderer. If this be true, declared the petitions, how much mightier would be the cry that would arise from the blood of a whole nation, and how much more terrible the vengeance with which it would be visited! In a word, they stated to the council, that what they asked was not an unknown privilege in Piedmont, nor would they be the first or the only persons who had enjoyed that indulgence, if it should be extended to them. The Jew and the Saracen lived unmolested in their cities, the former building his synagogue, and the latter reading his Koran without annoyance or restraint. They appealed to the council to say whether the faith of the Bible should be placed on the same level in this respect with that of the Crescent, and whether the descendants of the men who for generations had been the subjects of the house of Savoy, and who had enriched the kingdom with their virtues and defended it with their blood, should be treated with the same humanity that was shown to the alien and the unbeliever.

---

## CHAPTER XXIV.

### *THE PAPAL CRUSADE IN THE VALLEYS.*

THE confessors of the Alps resolved to send these petitions without delay to the proper quarter, and to wait for an answer with eyes lifted up to heaven! If it should be one of peace, they would hail it with gratitude to God and to their prince. If the answer should be otherwise, they were prepared to accept that alternative, too, and yield themselves as a sacrifice for the truth. But who among them would undertake this dangerous service of taking the remonstrance to the duke? M. Gilles, pastor of Bricherasio, a devoted and courageous man, volunteered to perform the duty. Another person accompanied him; but, unwilling to endure the insults he met with, he abandoned the mission, and Gilles pursued his journey alone. At that time the duke resided at Nice, for Turin, his capital, was still in the hands of the French, and the distance between the localities was great enough to expose the Vaudois messenger to many perils. He reached Nice in safety, however, and, after many difficulties and



delays, had an interview with Queen Margaret, who consented to place the document, of which he was the bearer, in the hands of her husband, the duke. The deputy held a conversation also with Philip of Savoy, the duke's brother, and one of the commissioners under the "Act for the Purgation of the 'Valleys.'" He received the Waldensian pastor cordially, and no doubt sympathized with his mission. In a short time he became disgusted with the bloody work of the Inquisition, and left the whole enterprise to be prosecuted by the cruel and bigoted Count La Trinita, his fellow-commissioner, with whom he had been unequally yoked. The heart of the queen was in the "Valleys," and she did not hesitate to advocate the cause of the poor Vaudois. But she stood alone as their intercessor with the duke, and might have prevailed, had not the prelates, the king of Spain, and the pope drowned her voice by their solicitations and threats.

The men of the "Valleys" impatiently waited for a decision from the court at Nice, and their enemies, athirst for plunder and blood, were equally anxious; but for three months neither letter nor edict came. The agents of the Inquisition, unable to restrain their passions, commenced the work of persecution on their own account. They entertained no doubt concerning their sovereign's purposes, and accordingly anticipated them by inaugurating a reign of terror. The tocsin of war was rung out from the monastery of Pinerolo, which was situated on the frontier of the "Valleys." The monks of this establishment closely watched the heretics of the mountains, as vultures fix their eyes upon their prey, ever ready to sweep down upon hamlet or valley when they found it unguarded. They hired a troop of marauders, whom they sent forth to pillage, and this band returned driving before them a wretched company of captives, whom they had dragged from their homes and vineyards in the mountains. They imprisoned the rich until they paid their ransom; but the poor were either burned alive or sent to the galleys. Certain popish landlords in the valley of San Martino followed the example of the monks. The villagers of Rioclarreto were attacked on the 2d of April, A. D. 1560, before day-break by an armed band under the direction of the two seigneurs of Perrier. Some were slaughtered, and the rest were driven out without clothes or food, to perish on the snow-clad hills. After expelling them, the ruffians took possession of their dwellings, declaring that not one should enter them, unless he consented to attend mass; but in three days they were compelled to retire, for four hundred Protestants of the valley of Clusone, hearing of the outrage, crossed the mountains, drove out the invaders, and reinstated their brethren.

Soon after, Philip of Savoy, count de Raconis, and chief commissioner, appeared in the "Valleys." He was an earnest Roman Catholic, but a humane and upright man. One day he visited the Protestant church of Angrogna, and the sermon produced such a favorable impression upon his mind, that he obtained from the pastor an outline of the Vaudois faith, which he sent to Rome, hoping that the pope would cease to persecute a creed containing so little heresy. But the reigning pontiff, Pius IV, thought differently, and beheld mountains of error, where the honest count de Raconis saw only mole-hills. The latter proposed that a discussion with the Waldensian pastors should be held, but the former would not permit it. He condescended, however, to absolve "from their past crimes" all who were willing to enter the Church of Rome. This action of the pope, no doubt, discouraged Philip of Savoy; but he did not abandon his idea of conciliation. In June, A. D. 1560, he visited the valley of Lucerna a second time, accompanied by his colleague, La Trinita, and, assembling the pastors and heads of families, he informed them that the persecution would cease immediately, provided they would consent to hear the preachers he had brought with him—"The Brothers of the Christian Doctrine." He also proposed that the Waldensian ministers should be silenced while his were discoursing. The Vaudois consented, with this provision, that the Romish teachers should preach the pure Gospel; but, in case they taught human traditions, the agreement should be considered withdrawn. In a few days after, the trial of the new expositors occurred. The ablest among them was selected and sent into the pulpit to address the Vaudois congregation. He secured their attention in a very effectual manner, which is described by Muston in his "Israel of the Alps:" "I will demonstrate to you," said he, "that the mass is found in the Scripture. The word *massah* signifies 'sent,' does it not?" "Not precisely," replied his hearers, who understood Hebrew better than the preacher. "The primitive expression," continued he, "*Itc missa est* was employed to dismiss the auditory, was it not?" "That is quite true," replied his hearers, without discerning very clearly the relation of the statement to the argument. "Well, then you see, gentlemen, that the mass is found in the Holy Scripture." The congregation could not determine whether he was conducting a discussion with them, or simply laughing at them.

The duke of Savoy, enraged at the obduracy of the Waldenses, declared war against them in October, A. D. 1560. Early in that month the dreadful rumor reached the "Valleys" that he was pre-

paring to exterminate them. The report was, indeed, too true. In levying an army, the duke offered a free pardon to all "outlaws, convicts, and vagabonds" who would enroll as volunteers to fight against the Vaudois. Soon the forces, formidable in numbers, and truly terrible in character, were assembled, and the total destruction of the men of the "Valleys" seemed inevitable. The pastors and prominent laymen came together to deliberate on the measures to be adopted at this fearful crisis. Trusting in God alone as their refuge, they resolved to take no means for deliverance which might be offensive to him or dishonorable to themselves. The pastors were requested to exhort every one to call upon God with true faith, sincere repentance, and ardent prayer. No defensive measures were recommended; but each family was urged to collect their provisions, clothes, utensils, and herds, and be ready at a moment's notice to convey them, together with all infirm persons, to their strongholds in the mountains. Meanwhile the duke's army—if such a horde of Piedmontese ruffians could be so called—came nearer every day. On the 31st of October a proclamation was posted throughout the valley of Angrogna, calling on the inhabitants to return to the bosom of the "Mother Church," under penalty of extermination by fire and sword. On the day following, the 1st of November, the papal army appeared at Bubiana, on the right bank of the Pellice, at the entrance to the Waldensian valleys. Scipio Lentullus, pastor of San Giovanni, states in a letter published by Leger that the host numbered four thousand infantry and two hundred horse, comprising, besides the desperadoes that formed its main body, a few veterans, who had seen hard service in the wars with France.

When the enemy appeared in sight the Vaudois humbled themselves before God in a public fast, and then celebrated together the sacrament of the Lord's-supper. These religious services imparted strength to their souls, and prepared them to execute the measures previously resolved on. The old men and the women proceeded to climb the mountains, and awakened the echoes with the psalms which they sung on their way to the Pra del Tor, within whose natural ramparts of rock and snow-crowned peaks they sought asylum. The Vaudois population of the "Valleys" at that time was not more than eighteen thousand, and their armed men did not exceed twelve hundred, but they were distributed at various passes and barricades to oppose the enemy, who was now near.

The Piedmontese army commenced to move on the 2d of November, crossed the Pellice, and proceeded along the narrow defile that



leads up to the "Valleys," the heights of Bricherasio on the right and the spurs of Monte Friolante on the left standing as sentinels, while the lofty masses of the Vandalin and Castaluzzo towered in front. The Piedmontese encamped in the meadows of San Giovanni, near the point where the Val di Lucerna and the Val di Angrogna divide, the former expanding into a noble breadth of meadow and vineyard, running on between magnificent mountains, with their rich clothing of pastures, chestnut groves, and chalets, until it ends in the savage pass of Mirabouc; and the latter, to wind and climb in a grand succession of precipice and gorge and grassy dell, until it issues in the funnel-shaped valley, around which the ice-crowned mountains stand in solemn grandeur. La Trinita first entered the Val di Angrogna, taking with him twelve hundred men, the wings of his army deploying over its neighboring heights of La Cotiere. His soldiers were opposed by only a small body of Vaudois, some of whom were armed solely with the sling and the cross-bow. The Vaudois skirmished with the foe, at the same time retiring to the higher grounds. When the day closed neither side could claim a decided advantage. Both armies, wearied with skirmishing, encamped for the night—the Vaudois on the heights of Roccomanot, and the Piedmontese, with their camp-fires lighted, on the lower hills of La Cotiere. The silence of the evening was suddenly startled by a derisive shout from the Piedmontese host.

Beholding on the heights above them the bending forms of the Waldensian warriors, who on their knees were supplicating the God of battles, their adversaries saluted them with exclamations of contempt. Scarcely had these insulting sounds died away, when the sound of a drum was heard in a side valley. A child had found the instrument, and was amusing itself with it. The soldiers of La Trinita saw, in imagination, a fresh body of Waldensians advancing from the defiles to rush upon them. In the greatest disorder they seized their arms, and the Vaudois, beholding the movement of the enemy, seized theirs also, and hastily descended the hill to anticipate the attack. The Piedmontese were panic-stricken, and, throwing away their arms, fled in confusion, pursued by the Waldenses, thus losing in half an hour the ground it had cost them a day's fighting to gain. The Vaudois were in need of weapons, and gladly availed themselves of those which the fugitives abandoned. As the result of the day's combat La Trinita lost sixty-seven men, and the Vaudois only three. On the left of La Trinita was the entrance to the valley of Lucerna, covered with corn-fields and vineyards, and, with its

towns, La Torre, Villaro, Bobbio, and others, forming the noblest of the Waldensian valleys. La Trinita, with his soldiers, occupied this, an achievement comparatively easy, as nearly all the inhabitants had fled to the Pra del Tor. Those who remained were mostly Romanists that were then mixed with the Waldensian population, and even they had sent their wives and daughters to the Pra del Tor, in company with their Vaudois neighbors, to protect them from the brutal outrages of the papal army. On the following days La Trinita had some small engagements with the Vaudois, in all of which he was repulsed with considerable slaughter.

The papal leader now began to appreciate the arduous nature of the work he had in hand. He discovered that the mountaineers were courageous, and determined to die rather than submit their conscience to the pope and their families to the passions of his soldiers. He saw, moreover, that they were a simple and confiding people, entirely ignorant of the ways of deception and intrigue. La Trinita was delighted to find these qualities in them, because he believed that they might be used to accomplish his purposes. He employed men as cunning and degraded as himself—Jacomel, the inquisitor, and Gastaud, his secretary, who pretended to be a Protestant. After they had arranged the programme, La Trinita assembled the prominent men of the Waldenses, and repeated to them some flattering words which he had heard, or professed to have heard, the duke and duchess make use of towards them. He then assured them that he was engaged in a distasteful enterprise, which he would gladly abandon, and that peace could be easily secured if they, as reasonable men, would only make a few small concessions. This suggestion was followed by a proposition that they should deposit their arms in the house of one of their syndics, and permit him, for form's sake, to go with a small train and celebrate mass in the church of St. Lorenzo in Angrogna, and afterwards visit the Pra del Tor. The Waldenses devoted the whole night to the consideration of the count's proposal, and accepted it, contrary to the opinion of their pastors and some of their laymen. La Trinita had formed a correct estimate of the confiding nature of the Vaudois. Having performed mass in the Protestant church, he traversed the gloomy defiles that lead up to the famous Pra, whose green slopes, with their snowy battlements, he was so anxious to behold, though it is said that he manifested some fear when he passed the dark pool of Tompie, with its memories of retribution. After safely accomplishing these feats he returned to complete his programme of deception.

The papal general, therefore, resumed the efforts which he had previously made to establish peace. The duke had now approached nearer, and was residing at Vercelli, on the plain of Piedmont. La Trinita advised the Vaudois to send deputies thither, and also raise a sum of twenty thousand crowns, which would strengthen their supplication, if not insure its success. He proposed, on the payment of the money, to withdraw his forces and leave them to practice their religion in peace. The Waldenses, not expecting such a betrayal of confidence as subsequently characterized the papal general, made concession after concession. Having previously laid down their arms, then sent deputies to the duke, and next bought off his soldiers by taxing themselves, they, last and worst of all, at the demand of La Trinita, had dismissed their pastors. At that season of the year a journey across the Col Julien was a perilous undertaking, but this sorrowful band of God's faithful servants were compelled to perform it. Climbing the snowy summits, where the Winter drifts were continually obliterating the track and piling up fresh wreaths, and pursuing their way across the valleys of Prali and San Martino and over the ice-clad mountains beyond, they sought refuge among the Protestants in the French valley of Pragelas. The more direct road through the valley of Perosa was closed by the marauders and assassins that infested it, and especially by those who were hired by the monks of Pinerolo, and consequently the banished pastors were forced to take a more dangerous and difficult route. The heartless count, believing that he now had the poor people entirely in his power, sent his soldiers to pillage the houses abandoned by the Vaudois.

The few inhabitants remaining, as well as those who returned, supposing hostilities would be suspended during the negotiations for peace, endeavored to escape a second time, and to seek concealment in the woods and caves of the higher reaches of the "Valleys." It is impossible correctly to describe the outrages committed by the ruffians who had possession of the valley of Lucerna. A touching incident has been recorded by the historian Gilles. A helpless man, one hundred and three years of age, was placed in a cave, and his granddaughter, a girl of seventeen, was left to take care of him. The papal soldiers discovered his hiding-place, cruelly murdered the old man and offered outrage to his granddaughter. She fled from the brutal pursuit of the soldiers, leaped over a precipice, and perished. In another instance, one of La Trinita's soldiers chased an old man to the brink of a precipice, and the latter being compelled to choose



death either by his own act or by the sword of his pursuer, soon made a decision. He halted, turned his face, and fell upon his knees as if to supplicate for his life. The soldier was raising his sword to strike him dead, when the Vaudois, clasping him tightly round the legs, and swaying himself backwards with all his might, rolled over the precipice, dragging the soldier with him into the abyss.

Part of the money promised to La Trinita by the Waldenses had been paid to him, but the poor people were under the necessity of selling their herds in order to meet their obligation. The count now withdrew his army into Winter-quarters at Cavour, a point so near the "Valleys" that he could re-enter them at any moment by a few hours' march. He destroyed the corn, oil, and wine which he could not carry away, and even demolished the mills. His plan was to compel the Vaudois to either submit or die of hunger on their mountains. To afflict them yet more grievously he placed garrisons at different points in the "Valleys," and, in the most tyrannical manner, required those who themselves were without bread to provide food for his soldiers. These ruffians were continually prowling about in search of victims on whom to gratify their cruelty and their lust. Whoever was dragged into their den experienced unspeakable sufferings—if men, excruciating torture; if women, revolting outrage.

The Waldenses patiently endured these terrible inflictions in the hope that the deputies, whom they had sent to the duke, would return with an honorable peace. At last, after an absence of six weeks, the commissioners reappeared in the "Valleys;" but their sad countenances, even before they had spoken a word, indicated that their mission had been a failure. They had been sent back with an order demanding of the Vaudois unconditional submission to the Roman Catholic authority on pain of extermination. At that moment a more powerful army was being raised to enforce, to the fullest extent, that order. The alternative now presented to them was the acceptance of the mass or universal slaughter. This crisis aroused the people. Rather than thus disgrace their ancestors, imperil their own souls, and entail a heritage of slavery on their children they would, if necessary, die a thousand times. Their despondency was gone; they were as men who had awakened from heavy sleep; their martial spirit revived, and they found their arms. Their first step was to recall their pastors, the next to rebuild their fallen churches, and their third to resume public services in them. Daily their courage increased, and once more joy illuminated their faces. They were also encouraged by letters

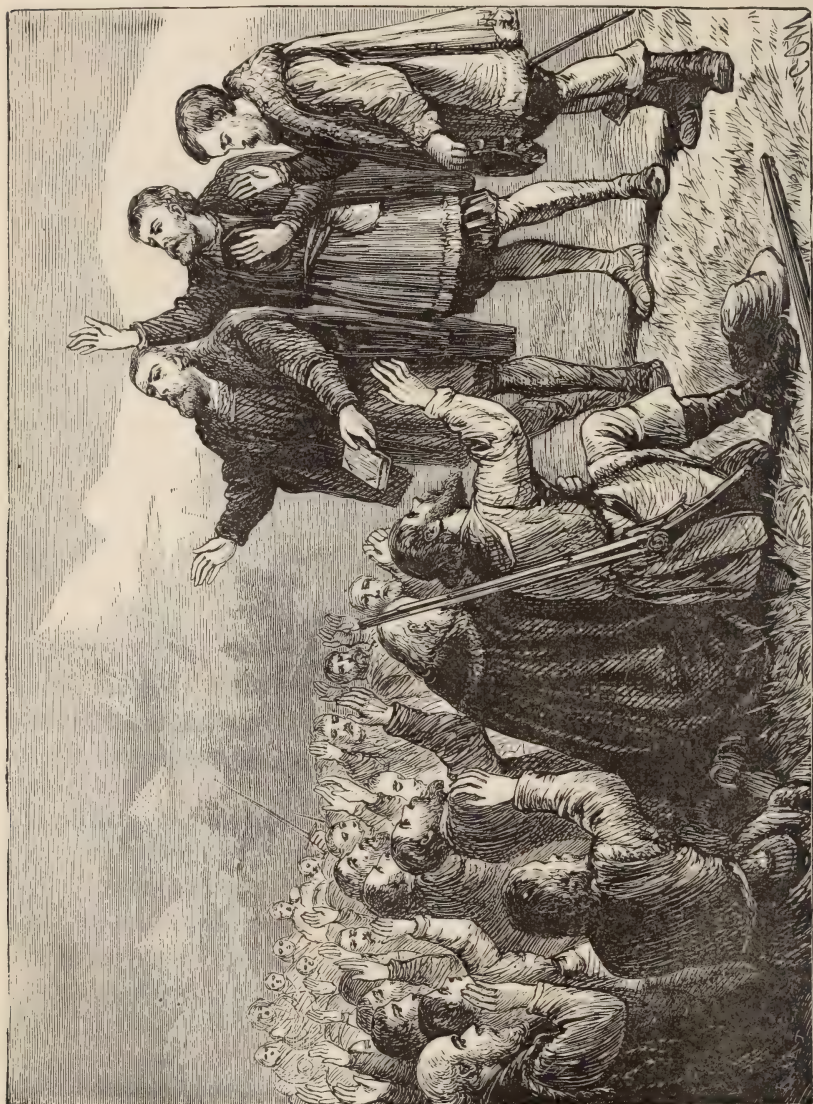
of sympathy, and promises of assistance from their fellow-Protestants of Geneva, Dauphiné, and France. Persecution at that hour impended over the two latter countries, but their own danger made them all the more ready to help their brethren of the "Valleys." "There-upon," says Muston, the historian, "took place one of those grand and solemn scenes, which, at once heroic and religious, seem rather adapted for an epic poem than for grave history."

The Waldenses of Lucerne sent deputies across the mountains, then covered to a great depth with snow, to propose an alliance with the Protestants of the valley of Pragelas, who were at that time threatened by their sovereign, Francis I. The poor persecuted inhabitants gladly accepted the proposition. The deputies assembled on a plateau of snow, facing the mountains of Sestrières and the chain of the Guinevert, and swore to stand by each other in the coming struggle. It was also agreed that this oath of alliance should be sworn with a like solemnity in the Waldensian valleys. The deputies from Pragelas crossed the Mount Julien and arrived at Bobbio on the 21st of January, A. D. 1561. They came at a singularly opportune moment. On the evening before a ducal proclamation had been published in the "Valleys," commanding the Vaudois, within twenty-four hours to attend mass, or suffer the consequences—"fire, sword, the cord; the three arguments of Romanism," says Muston. This fact was announced to the Pragelese deputies immediately on their arrival; but, instead of being discouraged, they proceeded with all the more enthusiasm to renew their oath. Ascending a low hill behind Bobbio, the deputies from Pragelas, and those from Lucerne, standing erect in the midst of the assembled heads of families, who kneeled around, pronounced these words:

"In the name of the Vaudois Churches of the Alps, of Dauphiné, and of Piedmont, which have ever been united, and of which we are the representatives, we here promise, our hands on our Bible, and in the presence of God, that all our valleys shall courageously sustain each other in matters of religion, without prejudice to the obedience due to their legitimate superiors. We promise to maintain the Bible, whole and without admixture, according to the usage of the true apostolic Church, persevering in this holy religion, though it be at the peril of our life, in order that we may transmit it to our children intact and pure as we received it from our fathers. We promise aid and succor to our persecuted brothers, not regarding our individual interests, but the common cause; and not relying upon man, but upon God."



This event, so full of moral sublimity, occurred in a locality of physical grandeur. The green bosom of the valley was calmly spread out immediately beneath, with here and there the silvery waters



THE VAUDOIS TAKING THEIR OATH.

of the Pellice gleaming out amid vineyards and acacia groves. An array of majestic mountains, white with the snows of Winter, filled the horizon on all sides except one, the grand peaks of the Col de



Malure and the Col de la Croix being conspicuous among them. They seemed to be silent witnesses of the oath taken by a heroic people, pledging themselves to die rather than permit their hearths to be defiled and their altars to be profaned by idolatrous, tyrannical hordes. Thus grandly did the Waldensians open one of the most brilliant campaigns in their history. On the following morning, according to the duke's order, they would be compelled to decide whether to attend mass or accept the consequences of refusal. The Romish authorities had prepared a neighboring church, one of those which had been taken from the Vaudois, and it was now ready with altar decked and tapers lighted, for the Protestants to hear their first mass. Scarcely had the day dawned, when the expected penitents were at the church door. Entering the building, they resolved to show the duke how they intended to read recantation. For a moment they stood and surveyed the scene, and, beholding the strange transformation their church had undergone, they began to extinguish the tapers, demolish the images, and cast out into the street the rosary, crucifix, and all the other paraphernalia of popish worship. Only a few minutes were required to perform this work of renovation. The minister, Humbert Artus, then ascended the pulpit, and reading out as his text, Isaiah xlv, 20—"Assemble yourselves and come; draw near together ye that are escaped of the nations; they have no knowledge that set up the wood of their graven image, and pray unto a God that can not save"—preached a sermon which struck the key-note of the campaign then opening.

Rushing down like their own Winter torrents into Lucerne, the inhabitants of the hamlets and chalets in the mountains re-enforced the army of the Vaudois, which advanced toward Villaro to purge the temple there. While on their march, they encountered the Piedmontese garrison, which they attacked and drove back, the monks, seigneurs, and magistrates, who had come to receive the abjuration of the heretics, accompanying the troops in their ignominious flight. The whole band of fugitives—soldiers, priests, and judges—shut themselves up in the town of Villaro, which was now besieged by the Vaudois. The garrison from La Torre made three efforts to raise the siege, but were repulsed. At last, on the tenth day, the garrison surrendered, and their lives were spared, two Waldensian pastors accompanying them to La Torre, as the soldiers expressed greater confidence in them than any other escort. When La Trinita ascertained that his garrison had been driven out, he moved his army from Cavour into the "Valleys," and endeavored again to sow dissensions among the

Vaudois, by entangling them in negotiations for peace ; but they had now learned the value of his promises, and, disregarding them, improved every hour in preparing for defense. They labored with the zeal of men who believed that their cause was a great and righteous one, for which they were willing to sacrifice every thing. They erected barricades, planted ambushes, and appointed signals to telegraph the movements of the enemy from post to post. "Every house," says Muston, "became a manufactory of pikes, bullets, and other weapons." They selected the best marksmen that could be found in their "Valleys," and organized them into the "Flying Company," whose duty it was to hasten to the most dangerous point. Two pastors were assigned to each body of fighting men to maintain the *morale* of their army, and conducted public worship morning and evening, praying with the soldiers before going into battle ; and at its close, when the Vaudois were chasing the enemy down their great mountains and through their dark gorges, endeavoring to prevent any unnecessary effusion of blood.

La Trinita was convinced that the subjugation of the "Valleys," and the successful termination of the campaign, depended upon the capture of the Pra del Tor, into which vast natural citadel the main body of the Waldensian people was now gathered. Thither they had transported the remnant of their provisions and herds ; there they had constructed mills and baking-ovens ; there, too, their council sat, and directed the whole operations of the defense. If a blow could be struck there, the Vaudois's heart would be crushed, and that which the Waldenses regarded as their impregnable castle would be converted into their tomb. The papal general, meanwhile, resolved to defer the chastisement of the other valleys, and to direct all his efforts against Angrogna. On the 4th of February, A. D. 1561, he made the first attempt to enter it with his army ; but, after fighting an entire day, he was repulsed. Three days subsequently he made another effort and advanced a considerable distance into Angrogna, burning and ravaging ; but this partial triumph was a costly one, and the ground already won had ultimately to be abandoned. The severest struggle occurred on the 14th of February. La Trinita employed all his strategy to capture the much coveted Pra del Tor, and all in it, and, dividing his army into three corps, he advanced against it from three points. One body of troops marched along the gorges of the Angrogna, traversed the narrow chasm that leads up to the Pra, and attacked it on the south. Another body ascended the heights from Pramol, crossed the snowy flanks of La

Vechera, and endeavored to force an entrance on the east; while a third, starting from San Martino, climbed the lofty summits that surround the Pra on the north, and descended upon it from that quarter. The papal leader confidently expected that if his soldiers failed to force an entrance at one point, they would surely succeed at another.

As no scout had warned them of approaching danger, the Waldenses were performing their morning devotions in the grand sanctuary of their valley, with ice-crowned peaks for its towers. Suddenly they heard the cries of fugitives, and the shouts of assailants, proceeding from the narrow chasm on the south, and also beheld the smoke of burning hamlets. Of the three points of attack, this was the easiest to be defended, and six brave Waldensian youths hastened down the valley to oppose La Trinita's soldiers. What could six do against an army? The answer may be found in Deut. xxxii, 30: "How should one chase a thousand, and two put ten thousand to flight, except their Rock had sold them, and the Lord had shut them up?" The soldiers were approaching by a long, gloomy road, overhung with large rocks, and so narrow that only two men can march abreast. The mountain rises abruptly on one side, and far down on the other thunders the foaming torrent, and a ledge in the steep face of the cliff running here in the darkness, there in the sunshine, serves as a pathway, which leads to what is called the gate of the Pra. That opening is formed by an angle of the mountain, which obtrudes upon the narrow ledge on the one side, while an immense rock rises on the other, rendering the point of ingress into the Pra still smaller. Having placed a mountain on the right and a yawning gulf on the left, Nature erected the only gateway through which either friend or foe can be admitted to the Pra del Tor on the south. It was here that the six Waldensian warriors took their stand, immovable as their own Alps. According to the historian Monastier, they not only checked the advance of the enemy, but drove them back in a panic-stricken mass, which made the precipices of the defile doubly fatal. They would have received aid, had not danger suddenly appeared in another direction. Looking to the heights of La Vechera, they beheld an armed host crossing the snow and entering the valley on the east. Before they could descend they were met by the Waldenses, who dispersed and put them to flight. Thus two of La Trinita's attacking parties were defeated.

While the Waldenses were pursuing the discomfited enemy on La Vechera, they saw yet another armed troop, which had climbed the mountains that separate the Val San Martino from the Pra del Tor



on the north, and were descending upon them. The alarm was immediately raised, but only a few men could be spared to resist the invaders. These Waldensian warriors lay in ambush at the mouth of a defile, through which the enemy were marching down into the Pra. The latter, emerging from the narrow pass, and beholding the lovely valley beneath them, exclaimed, "Haste, haste! Angrogna is ours." The Vaudois rushed upon them, sword in hand, crying out, "It is you that are ours." The Piedmontese soldiers, trusting to their superior numbers, fought desperately; but the Waldenses, in a few minutes, hastened from other points, where victory had crowned their arms, and rendered timely aid to their brethren. The invaders, attacked on all sides, turned and fled up the slopes they had just descended. Many were slain and not a man of them would have recrossed the mountains had not the pastor of the "Flying Company" elevated his voice to the highest pitch, and entreated the pursuers to spare the lives of those who could no longer resist.

Among the slain was Charles Truchet, who so cruelly ravaged the commune of Rioclarét a few months before. He was prostrated on the ground by a stone from a sling, and his head was cut off with his own sword. Another celebrated persecutor of the Vaudois, named Louis de Monteil, perished in the same conflict. These repulses so enraged Count La Trinita that he attacked the almost defenseless valley of Rora, burning its little town and driving away its population of eighty families, who escaped over the snows of the mountains to Villaro, in the valley of Lucérne. He next invaded that valley with his soldiers, and though, at the time, it was almost depopulated, the remaining peasants again and again defeated the papal general, compelled him to retreat to his old quarters at Cavour, and thus afforded him the opportunity to meditate upon his misfortunes, and devise new stratagems, which he ardently hoped would retrieve his disgraces.

La Trinita spent a month in re-enforcing his army, now greatly reduced and weakened by the losses it had sustained. The king of France sent him ten companies of foot, and some other choice soldiers, while Spain contributed a regiment, and Piedmont numerous volunteers, comprising many of the nobility. The papal army had now increased from four thousand—its original number—to seven thousand, and its commander felt confident that, with such a force, he was able to begin a third campaign, which would result in wiping out the disgrace of the others, and in eradicating from the earth, at once and forever, the great scandal of the Waldenses. Regarding

Angrogna as the heart and bulwark of the Valleys, he again directed all his efforts against it. It was Sunday, the 17th of March, A. D. 1561. The Vaudois had assembled in the Pra del Tor on the morning of that day, soon after dawn, to unite in their customary public devotions. The first rays of the rising sun were beginning to brighten the snowy crown of the mountains around them, and the last cadences of their morning psalm were dying away on the grassy slopes of the Pra, when the sudden announcement was made that the enemy was approaching by three routes. One body of armed men appeared on the ridges of the eastern summits; another was marching up the chasm, and, in a few minutes, would pour itself through the gateway, already described, into the Pra, while a third was forcing itself over the rocks by a path intermediate between the two. Instantly the enemy was confronted at every point of approach. The line of glittering cuirassed men, who were defiling through the narrow gorge, was repulsed by a handful of Waldensians.

At the other two points, where bastions of rock and earth had been erected, severe fighting occurred, and the dead lay thick upon the ground. The invaders were defeated on every side, and some of their ablest captains were among the slain. It is said that so great was the number of soldiers killed that, when Count La Trinita beheld the heaps of the dead, he sat down and wept. The Waldenses might have pursued those who escaped, and, being so much better acquainted with the mountain-paths, could have exterminated them, leaving not one of all that host to convey the tidings of its discomfiture to the inhabitants of Piedmont. The Waldensian pastors had resolved at the commencement of the campaign that they would use with moderation and clemency whatever victories the "God of battles" might be pleased to give them, and that they would shed no blood unless when absolutely necessary to prevent their own being shed. Hence they restrained their victorious warriors and were satisfied with the triumph already won. As in former contests, the Piedmontese lost many more men than the Vaudois, so much so that it was currently said, in the cities of Piedmont, that the "God was fighting for the barbets."

The papal commander, more deeply humiliated and disgraced than ever, returned to his old quarters with the remnant of his army. He no doubt regretted that he had ever invaded the Waldensian territory, because, in addition to his own ignominious failure, he had sacrificed many of the nobles of Piedmont, whose bones were now bleaching on the mountains of the Vaudois. But he was slow in

learning the proper lesson from these calamitous events, and actually entertained the design of returning to attack that fatal valley where he had lost so many laurels and buried so many soldiers. Concealing his purpose, he waited for a favorable opportunity. The men of the "Valleys" and the duke of Savoy had opened negotiations which were proceeding satisfactorily. La Trinita, taking advantage of this circumstance, hastily assembled his troops, and, on the night of the 16th of April, he marched them against the Pra del Tor, hoping to enter it unopposed and give the Vaudois "as sheep to the slaughter." The light of the morning was beginning to shine upon the snowy ranges around the Pra when the people, who had just concluded their united worship, were startled by unusual sounds issuing from the gorge that led into the valley. Six brave mountaineers immediately rushed to the gateway that opens from the gorge. They made their arrangements and calmly waited for the appearance of the enemy. The first two Vaudois, holding loaded muskets, knelt down. The second two stood erect, ready to fire over the heads of the first two. The third two undertook the loading of the weapons as they were discharged.

The long file of La Trinita's advanced two abreast, their helmets and cuirasses glittering in the light. As the first two of the enemy turned the rock they were shot down by the two foremost Vaudois. The next two of the attacking force fell in like manner by the shot of the Vaudois in the rear. The third rank of the enemy met the same fate and was laid by the side of their comrades. The pass was filled up in a few minutes with a small heap of dead bodies, which prevented the advance of the accumulating mass of Piedmontese soldiers in the chasm. In the meanwhile other Vaudois, climbing the mountain that overhangs the gorge in which the invading host was imprisoned, and tearing up the great stones with which the hill-side was strewn, rolled them down upon the soldiers, who, checked by the wall of dead in front, and prevented from retreating by the ever-accumulating file behind, were crushed in dozens by the falling rocks. A panic, dreadful in such a position, ensued. Leger describes the scene, which no doubt was terrible. Wedged together on the narrow ledge, with a murderous rain of stones descending upon them, they struggled to escape. Jostling one another, and treading each other under foot, many perished, while vast numbers fell over the precipice and were dashed on the rocks or drowned in the torrent. There were some at the entrance of the valley who watched the result of the contest, and when they beheld the crystal waters of the Angrogna

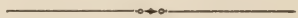


begin about noon to change into blood, they exclaimed: "Ah! the Pra del Tor has been taken; La Trinita has triumphed; there flows the blood of the Vaudois." Indeed, it is said that the papal general, in commencing his march that morning, boasted that, by the middle of the day, the torrent of the Angrogna would change its color; and this it truly did. The stream, naturally pellucid, glides along at the mouth of the valley, over its white gravelly bed; but now it appears different—deeply dyed from recent slaughter. When the few who succeeded in escaping the catastrophe returned to relate the result of that day's conflict, it was then ascertained that it was not the blood of the Vaudois, but that of their ruthless enemies, which dyed the waters of the Angrogna. La Trinita withdrew on the same night with his army to return no more to the "Valleys."

The duke of Savoy resolved to resume negotiations again with the Waldenses, not this time through the Count La Trinita, but through Philip of Savoy, count of Raconis. Finding that he could not conquer the men of the "Valleys," the duke of Savoy did not win meritorious distinction in making peace with them. The matter was speedily brought to a satisfactory issue, and the capitulation was signed on the 5th of June, A. D. 1561. Its first clause granted an indemnity for all offenses which had been suffered—not committed. Leger gives the "Articles of Capitulation" in full, and we learn from them that the Vaudois were permitted to erect churches in their "Valleys," with the exception of two or three of their towns, to conduct public worship, and, in short, to celebrate all the offices of their religion. All the "ancient franchises, immunities, and privileges, whether conceded by his highness or by his highness's predecessors," were renewed, provided they were vouched by public documents. Thus closed this cruel war of fifteen months, and the Vaudois attributed the favorable terms of its settlement to the influence of the good Duchess Margaret. The pope, however, called it a "pernicious example," which he feared might be imitated in those days when the love of many to the Roman See was "waxing cold." It was highly offensive to the monks and prelates of Piedmont, to whom the heretics had been a free booty. Nevertheless, Duke Emmanuel Philibert faithfully maintained its stipulations, the duchess being by his side to counteract any pressure in the opposite direction. The prevalence of peace and the dawn of Summer slowly effaced the deep scars which persecution had left on the "Valleys." This brave and afflicted people were greatly consoled and strengthened by the sympathy and aid extended to them by Protestants abroad, particu-

larly by Calvin and the Elector Palatine, the latter addressing a spirited letter to the duke on behalf of his persecuted subjects.

All through these terrible conflicts the Vaudois exhibited a noble spirit of devotion, indicating their unshaken confidence in God. While their "Valleys" resounded with the din of arms they were also vocal with prayer and praise. The papal soldiers came from carousing, from blaspheming, from murdering, to engage in battle; the Waldenses rose from their knees to unsheathe the sword and wield it in a cause which they firmly believed to be that of Him to whom they had bent in supplication. When their little army went to the field to meet the enemy their *barbes* always accompanied it, to inspire the warriors by proper exhortations before they rushed into battle, and to moderate their vengeance, which in the hour of triumph might become so fierce that it would diminish the glory of their victory. When their soldiers hastened to the defile or to the bastion the pastors assembled on the mountain's slope or on its summit, and there, with uplifted hands, supplicated help from the "Lord strong and mighty, the Lord mighty in battle." After the conflict had ceased, and the enemy were in flight, and the victors had returned from chasing them from the "Valleys," the gray-haired pastors, the lion-hearted men of battle, the matrons, the maidens, the striplings, and the little children would assemble in the Pra del Tor, and "while the setting sun," as Dr. Wylie eloquently remarks, "was kindling into glory the mountain-tops of their once more ransomed land, they would raise their voices together, and sing the old war-song of Judah in strains so heroic that the great rocks around them would send back the thunder of their praise in louder echoes than those of the battle whose triumphant issue they were celebrating."



## CHAPTER XXV.

### *DISTINGUISHED PONTIFFS—PROMINENT SCHOLARS.*

THE pontificate of Clement VIII extended into the seventeenth century, and closed A. D. 1605. If he had been less selfish during his reign he might have made the beautiful domain which he ruled one of the most desirable regions in the world. The "States of the Church" were rich and prosperous when they came into the possession of the pontiff; but this absolute master gradually deprived

the people of every liberty or right they had ever possessed. Taxes were levied on every thing from which a revenue could be derived, including alum, salt, flour, and meat. The poor were crushed beneath the heavy burdens laid upon them, enterprise was destroyed, and industry discouraged. In this part of Italy personal and political liberty were unknown, and the power of the papal government extended to every department of life, severe punishment being inflicted upon any who deviated from the exact line of conduct or of thought prescribed by the court of Rome. The popes, using their temporal power for purposes of gain, oppressed the inhabitants and robbed them of their earnings. They did nothing to promote education; and idleness, poverty, and vice increased with fearful rapidity.

Indeed, Clement VIII had now become a leading Italian prince, and concerned himself more about his temporal than his spiritual possessions. He endeavored to extend his authority over the Venetians, but the latter defeated him in his efforts to subjugate them. They were Roman Catholics, and their chief ecclesiastical dignitary, or patriarch, was inferior in rank to the pope alone. The Venetians maintained him in great splendor, but resolutely refused to allow him to interfere with their political affairs, requiring him to reside first at Aquileia, and subsequently at Grado. After the Jesuits became a power in the Church a systematic warfare was inaugurated against education and freedom of thought. Venice regarded this crusade against knowledge as a direct blow at one of her most important industries, which was not only an object of pride to her, but also a source of great profit. Since the early part of the sixteenth century Venice had been noted for her printing-presses. Aldo Manuzio issued many volumes that commanded the admiration of the world, and are still dear to the antiquary. The court of Rome, by restricting the publication of books, inflicted a serious loss upon the Venetian printers, who were finally compelled to leave that city and the territory of the republic altogether.

Leo XI, a Medici, followed Clement VIII, but only lived twenty-six days after his election. He was succeeded, on the 16th of May, A. D. 1605, by Cardinal Borghese, who assumed the title of Paul V. Arrogance and ill-temper were his distinguishing characteristics: and he seemed born either to restore the lost authority of Rome or to annihilate the power which it still retained in the different countries of Europe. The imprudence of this pontiff nearly alienated the republic of Venice from the Romish communion. The dispute originated in two decrees, which the senate of Venice had recently



enacted for preventing the unnecessary erection of religious houses, and for prohibiting the subjects of the republic from appropriating their property to religious fraternities without the sanction of the senate. The latter also imprisoned two ecclesiastics, who were accused of enormous crimes, while it was an established maxim at Rome that ecclesiastical persons were only amenable to the tribunal of the Church. Paul V, by his nuncio at Venice, vehemently protested against the edicts prohibiting the endowments of religious houses; and at the same time he demanded that the prisoners should be delivered into his hands, to be tried for their crimes by ecclesiastical judges. The senate having refused to comply with these demands, the pope laid the dominions of the republic under an interdict. The Jesuits, and the other dignitaries who presumed to publish the bull of excommunication against the republic, were expelled from Venice. The senate ordered that any priest who was disloyal to the state should be hanged. The Jesuits offered to celebrate the ordinary services, but would not celebrate the mass. This compromise was not acceptable to either side, and both prepared for war. Though the republic had at one time sustained the cause of Henry IV of France, that sovereign would not assist it in its hour of need, nor did it receive any aid from James I of England, who had expressed sympathy. Henry IV, however, acted as mediator, and the difficulty was adjusted. The pope relinquished much of his pretensions, the prisoners were delivered up to the French ambassador, and all the exiled ecclesiastics were permitted to return to Venice, except the Jesuits, against whom the senate enacted a severe decree.

Paul V was succeeded by Gregory XV, a man of milder disposition; and he was followed by Urban VIII, of the Barberini family, A. D. 1623. The latter was a ripe scholar and a promoter of literature, having a great reputation as a judicious orator and an elegant poet. At the same time he possessed a stern, unrelenting disposition, and was an inflexible enemy to civil and religious liberty. He became jealous of the emperor's encroachments on Italy, and, by arraying the French and the Protestants against him and by uniting with the league which commenced the Thirty Years' War in Europe, he contributed to the more complete establishment of Protestantism on the Continent. It was under Urban that the Church attacked the doctrines of Galileo, and the astronomer was condemned to the Inquisition by this infallible pontiff. Innocent X, the successor of Urban, adopted the policy of his predecessor. He was both ignorant and licentious, and during his reign accomplished nothing worthy

of record. The next occupant of the papal throne was Cardinal Chigi, who assumed the title of Alexander VII. He was a man of morality and integrity; but his pontificate was not distinguished by any events of special importance. His Corsican guards insulted the French ambassador and his lady, and attacked his house. Louis XIV of France demanded an apology, and Alexander was compelled to send his nephew to Paris in the character of a suppliant. A pillar was erected in Rome in memory of the monarch's triumph over the head of the Church. To him succeeded, A. D. 1668, Cardinal Rospigliosi, as Clement IX, who, though he shut out his relatives from office, enriched them with the wealth of the Church. The Rospigliosi palace stands as a monument of the greatness of the family. At this time the wealthy houses established in Rome by successive pontiffs became the ruling aristocracy of the papal states. From henceforth the popes, cardinals, and government of the papacy came through them chiefly, and they became the outlet of the riches of the Church. After the death of Clement IX the pontifical chair was occupied by Clement X, A. D. 1669, who lived only a few months.

Benedetto Odescalchi entered Rome as a warrior, sword and pistol in hand, but was persuaded by one of the cardinals to devote himself to the Church. Accepting the advice, he was soon promoted from priest to cardinal, and on the death of Clement X was elected pope, as Innocent XI. He was a man of uncommon abilities, and of excellent moral character. With zeal he entered on his duties, endeavoring to reform the abuses of the Church. It is said that he secretly aided William of Orange in his invasion of England on account of his animosity to Louis XIV of France, whose vice and pride were obnoxious to him. He was in many respects one of the most popular popes that ever ascended the throne. The minister of Innocent became his successor, under the title of Alexander VIII, and was affable, easy, and kind. He was above eighty when elected, and lived but a short time. His successor, Innocent XII, imitating the example of Innocent XI and Alexander VIII, opposed the position of Louis XIV of France, who claimed the revenues of a vacant French see until the appointment of a new bishop. Soon after his election, A. D. 1691, Innocent XII, like his predecessors of the same name, strenuously endeavored to reform the abuses of the papacy in Rome. The pope whose reign concluded this century was Clement XI, whose learning and liberality rendered him useful to the Church.

During the seventeenth century literature and the natural sciences





MILTON'S VISIT TO GALILEO.



flourished in Italy. Scientific academies were founded in Rome, Florence, Bologna, and Naples. The Florentine *Accademia del Cimento* embraced the most illustrious savants of that age, and published important accounts of its researches. Pre-eminent among philosophers was Galileo, who was born A. D. 1564. He invented the telescope, A. D. 1609, and, in the following year, discovered the moons of Jupiter, the belts of Saturn, and the two motions of the earth, confirming, and even going beyond, many of the discoveries of Copernicus. He was brought before the Inquisition, where he was forced to recant or die. For sixteen years he remained silent, when he published, A. D. 1632, his "System of the World," to vindicate the Copernican theory. He was again summoned before the Inquisition, and again recanted, but was imprisoned for ten years. His two daughters, who were nuns, attended him, and, during his confinement, he received a visit from Milton. He died, A. D. 1642, and was denied burial in consecrated ground; but the Inquisition could not overthrow the truth expressed in that familiar utterance of the philosopher, "*E pur si muove.*" The world indeed moves in a higher sense, and science can not be interdicted by the papal hierarchy. The trial and imprisonment of Galileo form the final scene in the death of the Italian intellect. The most noted pupils of the great astronomer were Viviani, Torricelli, and Castelli, and among the contemporary physicists, Borelli, Malpighi, Bellini, and Redi were the most prominent. The most distinguished historians were Sarpi, Davila, Bentivoglio, and Pallavicini. Fra Paolo Sarpi was an eminent lawyer and theologian of Venice, and defended that republic against the encroachments of the papacy.

---

## CHAPTER XXVI.

### THE FAMINE—THE PLAGUE—THE MASSACRE.

THE inglorious defeat of La Trinita by the Waldenses, and the treaty of peace signed at Cavour on the 5th of June, A. D. 1561, were described in a previous chapter. The cloud of war had indeed disappeared, but numerous and affecting memorials of the desolations it had inflicted remained in the "Valleys." The inhabitants, descending from the mountains, exchanged the weapons of war for the pruning-knife and the spade. With slow and feeble

steps the aged and infirm were led down into the vales, and sat once more at noon or at eve beneath the shadow of their vines and ancestral chestnut-trees. But, as they beheld those scenes lately so fair and smiling, now scathed and ruined, tears of sorrow moistened their eyes, and a heavy burden of despondency rested upon their hearts. The rage of the invading enemy was indicated in the destruction of fruit-bearing trees, the desolation of vineyards and corn-fields, and the burning of hamlets and villages. The beauty of their "Valleys" would not be restored until the hand of time should efface the deep scars of war. Their cup of grief was the more bitter when they remembered that many who had lived under the same roof-tree with them, and united morning and night in the same psalm, would, alas, return no more. Their distress was rendered still greater by the threatened appearance of famine in their "Valleys." Having been engaged seven months in incessant fighting, they could not cultivate their fields, and, as they had exhausted their stock of last year's provisions, starvation began to stare them in the face. The season of sowing had already passed when the treaty of peace was signed, and therefore scarcely any thing could be found to reap in the Autumn. About this time a large number of fugitives from Calabria arrived in the "Valleys," and their presence was a further aggravation of the prevailing destitution. Naked and hungry, they came to their brethren for relief, having escaped with nothing but their lives; and they were received with open arms by the Vaudois, who, though bordering on famine, shared with them the little they had.

The story of the suffering Waldenses reached other countries, and aroused the sympathy of their Protestant brethren. With characteristic promptness and zeal Calvin led in the movement to secure aid for them. He advised them to send deputies to present their case to the Protestant Churches abroad, and, as the result of this plan, collections were made for them in Geneva, France, Switzerland, and Germany. The first subscriber on the list was the Elector Palatine; then followed the names of the duke of Würtemberg, the canton of Bern, the Church at Strasburg, and others. The Waldenses, however, were not long dependent upon the charity of their brethren. Seed-time and harvest were again restored to their "Valleys." On the sides of their mountains, and by the banks of their streams, smiling chalets began to rise, and the evil effects of La Trinita's campaign were being forgotten, when they were annoyed by the appointment of Castocaro, a native of Tuscany, to be deputy-governor of their "Valleys." He had served against the Vaudois as a colonel

of militia under La Trinita, was taken prisoner, and, after honorable treatment, was at length generously released. Resolving to return evil for good, he sought to be appointed ruler of the Waldenses, and, being acquainted with the Duchess Margaret, their protectress, he ingratiated himself into her favor by professing a warm affection for the men of the "Valleys," and secured the friendship of the archbishop of Turin by pledging himself to make strenuous efforts to convert his prospective subjects to Romanism.

After his inauguration as governor of the Waldensian territory, he forgot his professions to the duchess, to whom he mainly owed his appointment, and commenced faithfully to fulfill the promises he had made to the archbishop. He began by restricting the liberties guaranteed to their Churches in the treaty of peace; he then ordered the dismissal of certain of their pastors, and, when their congregations refused to comply, he fined and imprisoned the rebellious. He sent false reports to the court of the duke, and marched a body of soldiers into the country, on the pretext that the Waldenses were preparing to resist the government. He built the fortress of Mirabouc, at the foot of the Col de la Croix, in the narrow gorge that leads from Bobbio to France, to close this gate of exit from their territory, and overawe the valley of Lucerna. Finally, he threatened to renew the war, unless the Waldenses should comply with his demands. What could they do in this emergency but present their complaints and remonstrances to the duke and duchess at Turin? But, alas, Castrocara had by his craft and malice poisoned their minds against the Vaudois, and the latter would soon again be confronted with the old alternative—the mass or death.

In their extremity they appealed for help to the Protestant princes of Germany, and this cry from the Alps found a responsive echo from the German plains. The sympathies of the great Protestant chiefs of the Father-land, especially of Frederic, elector palatine, were aroused; and, recognizing these humble vine-dressers and poor, oppressed herdsmen as his brethren, Frederic espoused their cause with ardor and warmth. He addressed a letter to the duke, which contains a noble defense of the rights of conscience and an eloquent plea in behalf of toleration. Leger published the letter in full, but an extract is sufficient to show the elevation of its sentiments, and the catholicity of its views: "Let your highness know that there is a God in heaven, who not only contemplates the actions, but also tries the hearts and reins of men, and from whom nothing is hid. Let your highness take care not voluntarily to make war upon God,



and not to persecute Christ in his members. . . . Persecution, moreover, will never advance the cause it pretends to defend. The ashes of the martyrs are the seed of the Christian Church. For the Church resembles the palm-tree, whose stem only shoots up the taller, the greater the weights that are hung upon it. Let your highness consider that the Christian religion was established by persuasion and not by violence; and, as it is certain that religion is nothing else than a firm and enlightened persuasion of God and of his will, as revealed in his Word, and engraven in the hearts of believers by his Holy Spirit, it can not, when once rooted, be torn away by tortures."

Thus the Elector Palatine warned the duke in words certainly remarkable, when we remember that they were written in the middle of the sixteenth century. We doubt whether a better expression on the subject of the rights of conscience, the spirituality of religion, and the impolicy as well as the criminality of persecution, could be obtained in our own liberal age. We often apologize for the cruel and bloody deeds of Spain and France, on the ground that intolerance and ignorance then prevailed in those lands. But six years before the St. Bartholomew massacre was enacted this great voice had been raised in Christendom for toleration. It is not definitely known what effect this letter produced upon the mind of the duke, but afterwards Castrocara restrained his violence, though he still continued at intervals to terrify the poor people by making the most atrocious threats against them. On the death of Emmanuel Philibert, A. D. 1580, the villainy of the governor was more fully revealed. The young duke, Charles Emmanuel, ordered his arrest; but its execution was a difficult matter, as Castrocara had entrenched himself in the castle of La Torre, and surrounded himself with a band of desperadoes, to which he had added, for his yet greater defense, a pack of furious blood-hounds of unusual size and strength. He was betrayed by a captain of his guard, and, as he had maintained himself by treachery, it is significant that by treachery he was at length taken. Monastier informs us that he was carried to Turin, where he perished in prison.

The patient Vaudois had been afflicted with famine, persecution, war, all three sometimes in succession, and sometimes together; but now they were visited from the hand of God. While Europe had been in combustion, they, shut up within their mountains, enjoyed, for some years, an unusual peace. In France, Spain, and many parts of Italy their brethren of the Reformed Church were falling on the field, perishing by massacre or dying at the stake, while they had been remarkably preserved from harm. But now a new calam-

ity carried gloom and mourning into their "Valleys." On the morning of the 23d of August, A. D. 1629, a cloud of unusual blackness gathered on the summit of the Col Julien, and suddenly burst in a water-spout or deluge. The torrents rolled down the mountains on both sides and overflowed the villages of Bobbio and Prali, situated the one in the southern and the other in the northern valley. Many of the houses were swept away and the inhabitants had barely time to save their lives by flight. An icy wind, accompanied by a dry cloud, scathed their "Valleys" in September of the same year, and destroyed the crop of the chestnut tree. Then followed a second deluge of rain, which completely ruined the vintage. As these calamities succeeded a year of partial famine, the affliction was the more grievous. The Vaudois pastors assembled in solemn synod to humble themselves and to lift up their voices in prayer to God. "Little did they imagine," as Dr. Wylie remarks, "that at that moment a still heavier calamity hung over them, and that this was the last time they were ever to meet one another on earth."

In the French army, which, under Marshal Schomberg, suddenly occupied the "Valleys," A. D. 1630, were many volunteers who had made their escape from a virulent, contagious disease, then raging in France. The plague manifested itself in the first week of May, in the Valley of Perosa; it next appeared in the more northern Valley of Martino; and then soon spread throughout all the "Valleys." Beneath the shadow of this mysterious and terrible scourge the pastors met together to supplicate the Almighty, and adopt practical measures for checking the ravages of the fearful visitant. They also engaged in the benevolent work of purchasing medicine, collecting provisions for the poor, visiting the sick, consoling the dying, and preaching in the open air to crowds, solemn and eager to listen. The weather was hot, and the seeds of the pestilence, which the army had brought with it, rapidly developed themselves, and in July and August, when the heat was excessive, the malady raged yet more furiously. Four of the pastors died in the month of July, seven in August, and in September another, the twelfth was mortally stricken by the plague. Only three pastors now remained, and it was remarked as a singular circumstance that they belonged to three several valleys—Lucerna, Martino, and Perosa. These three survivors assembled on the heights of Angrogna to consult with the deputies of the various parishes concerning the means for providing pastors. As the result of the conference, they wrote to Geneva and Dauphiné, requesting that religious teachers might be sent to celebrate

worship, so that the venerable "Church of the Valleys," which had survived so many calamities, might not become extinct. The historian, Muston, states that Antonio Leger was recalled from Constantinople, where he had been tutor for many years in the family of the ambassador of Holland.

During the Winter the pestilence subsided, but in the Spring, A. D. 1631, it revived again in renewed force. Of the three surviving pastors one other died, leaving thus only two—Pierre Gilles, of Lucerna, and Valerius Gross, of Martino. With the heats of Summer the plague increased in strength. Armies coming and going in the "Valleys" were attacked by this silent yet invincible enemy and suffered equally with the inhabitants. Horsemen were seized with sudden illness, and could be seen falling from the saddle on the highway. Soldiers and sutlers were stricken down in by-paths, where their corpses lay infecting the air. In La Torre alone fifty families became extinct. The most moderate estimate of the number cut off by the pestilence is ten thousand, or from a half to two-thirds of the entire population of the "Valleys." The grapes rotted on the bough, the corn in many places remained uncut, and the fruit dropped from the tree. Silence reigned in towns and villages where the sound of industry had recently been heard. Strangers, who had come to find health in the pure mountain air, obtained from the soil nothing but a grave. Parents were without children, and children were without parents. Patriarchs, who had been accustomed to gather with pride and joy their numerous grandchildren round them, had seen them sicken and die and were now sad and lonely.

The venerable pastor Gilles lost his four elder sons, but in the providence of God he was preserved, though continually exposed to the malady in the homes of the stricken and at the bedsides of the dying. He was no doubt spared to compile the monuments of his ancient Church, and record among other woes that which had just desolated his native land, and "part of which he had been." Only two of the Vaudois pastors now remained, and, fearing that the "old lamp" might go out, ministers from Geneva and other places hastened to the "Valleys." Hitherto the services of the Waldensian Church had been conducted in the Italian language, but the new pastors could speak only French, and hence the latter tongue was used in performing religious devotions. The Vaudois soon obtained a knowledge of it, their own ancient language being a dialect between the French and Italian. They introduced another change at this time by assimilating their ritual to that of Geneva; and made a further inno-



vation by dropping the primitive and affectionate name of *Barba* and substituting the modern title, *Monsieur le Ministre*.

After the departure of the plague the Waldenses began to reorganize their community. Death had entered every house, rent asunder every tie, and destroyed nearly every family. What few scattered inhabitants remained now came together to unite heart and hand in restoring the ruined churches, raising up the fallen habitations, and creating anew family and home. Other events of an encouraging character occurred at this time which revived the spirits of the Vaudois, and inspired in them a ray of hope which made the scene of the recent terrible catastrophe appear brighter. A treaty of peace between the French monarch and the duke was signed, the army then withdrew, and the dominion of the House of Savoy was once more extended over the "Valleys." Comparative tranquillity prevailed for a decade and a half, during which the population established itself anew, and the soil was brought again under tillage. But what were fifteen years of peace and prosperity amid storms so awful? This delightful period came to a close A. D. 1650, when the Vaudois entered within the shadow of their greatest calamity. Charles Emmanuel II, a youth of fifteen, and a prince of mild and humane disposition, then occupied the throne of Savoy. His mother, the Duchess Christina, who sprung from a race always celebrated for their dissimulation, their cruelty, and their bigoted devotion to Rome, was appointed regent of the kingdom during her son's minority. She was the daughter of Henry IV and Mary de Medici, and granddaughter of that Catherine de Medici whose name stands so prominently connected with a tragedy which has received, as it deserved, the execration of mankind—the St. Bartholomew Massacre. The granddaughter inherited the gloomy disposition and ferocious temper of the grandmother. The young prince, Charles, was counseled and ruled by her, and in no reign did the tears and blood of the Waldenses flow so profusely. It was not the facile spirit of the House of Savoy that enacted those scenes of carnage which make humanity shudder, but they were the result of a policy adopted in the Vatican and executed by the cruel, crafty, blood-thirsty agent of the House of Medici and regent of the kingdom.

The premeditated blow did not descend all at once, but a series of lesser strokes—chicaneries, machinations, and legal robberies—prepared the way for the great attack, which was expected to terminate in the complete and final extermination of the Waldenses. First of all appeared the monks. The plague had visited the "Valleys," and

now came a swarm of Capuchins, who were regarded by the Vaudois as a second pestilence. They had been sent to convert the heretics, and, confident of victory, they began their mission by challenging the pastors to a controversy. After a few trials, however, they ascertained the fact that the heretics were not easily conquered in debate. Indeed, these shrewd monks endeavored to cover their weakness by complaining that the Vaudois made 'a pope of their Bible,' and, as this was a book which the Fathers had not studied, they, their successors, did not know where to find the passages that they felt sure would confute the advocates of error. Finding that discussion was an ineffectual method of silencing heretics, the Capuchins banished them, the accomplished Antonine Leger, uncle of the historian, being among the exiles. Thus were the people deprived of their spiritual leaders, and some of their churches were closed. They were prohibited, on pain of confiscation and death, from purchasing, or even cultivating lands outside their own narrow territories, which to them were practically a prison, since an order had been issued forbidding them to cross the frontier, even for a few hours, unless on fair-days.

The communes of Bobbio, Villaro, Angrogna, and Rora, which were wholly Protestant, were commanded to sustain each a mission, and foreign Protestants were interdicted from settling in the "Valleys, under pain of death, and a fine of one thousand gold crowns upon the communes that should receive them. This law was designed to drive out the pastors, who, since the pestilence, were mostly French or Swiss, and the papal authorities confidently hoped that, in a few years, the Vaudois would be without ministers. The billeting of soldiers, poor harvests, and confiscations had reduced the people to extreme poverty, and, taking advantage of their condition, their Romish rulers established *Monts de Piété* to induce them to pawn their goods, and, when they had pledged all, they were offered restitution in full, on condition of renouncing their faith. Young maidens were promised dowries on the same terms. These various arts did not succeed, only some dozen Waldenses being added to the Roman Catholic Church. The agents of the latter, surprised and disappointed at the slow progress of the good work of proselytizing, resolved to adopt more efficient measures.

The "Society for the Propagation of the Faith," established by Pope Gregory XV, A. D. 1622, had already spread over Italy and France. Its object was originally declared in words simple and innocent: "*De Propaganda Fide*" (for the Propagation of the Faith). Since the first institution of the society, however, its title, if not its object,

had undergone enlargement. To its first modest designation were added the significant and emphatic words: "*et Extirpandis Hereticis*" (and the Extirpation of Heretics). The membership of the society rapidly increased, including both laymen and priests. All ranks, from the noble and the prelate to the peasant and the pauper, hastened to unite with it, the inducement being a plenary indulgence to all who should engage in the noble enterprise, so unmistakably indicated in the one short and pithy clause, "*et Extirpandis Hereticis*." The societies in the smaller towns reported to the metropolitan cities, and they to the capital, and the capitals to Rome, where, in the words of Leger, "sat the great spider that held the threads of this mighty web." The "Council for the Propagation of the Faith" was established at Turin, A. D. 1650. The chief councillors of state, the great lords of the country, and the dignitaries of the Church enrolled themselves as a presiding board.

Societies of women were organized, at the head of which was the Marchioness di Pianeza. She was the first lady at court, and, not having worn "the white rose of a blameless life," she was all the more zealous in this cause, in the hope of making expiation for the errors of the past. She labored earnestly to promote the object of the society, and infused her resolute spirit into all under her. "The lady propagandists," says Leger, "distributed the towns into districts, and each visited the district assigned to her twice a week, suborning simple girls, servant maids, and young children, by their flattering allurements and fair promises, and doing evil turns to such as would not listen to them. They had their spies every-where, who, among other information, ascertained in what Protestant families disagreements existed, and hither would the propagandists repair, stirring up dissensions, in order to separate the husband from the wife, the wife from the husband, the children from the parents; promising them, and, indeed, giving them, great advantages if they would consent to attend mass. Did they hear of a tradesman whose business was falling off, or of a gentleman who, from gambling or otherwise, was in want of money, these ladies were at hand with their *Dabo tibi* (I will give thee), on condition of apostasy; and the prisoner was in like manner relieved from his dungeon, who would give himself up to them. To meet the very heavy expenses of this proselytizing, to keep the machinery at work, to purchase the souls that sold themselves for bread, regular collections were made in the chapels, and in private families, in the shops, in the inns, in the gambling houses, in the streets, every-where, was alms-begging in operation. The marchioness of Pianeza



herself, great lady as she was, used every second or third day to make a circuit in search of subscriptions, even going into the taverns for that purpose. . . . If any person of condition, who was believed able to contribute a coin, chanced to arrive at any hotel in town, these ladies did not fail to wait upon him, purse in hand, and solicit a donation. When persons of substance known to belong to the religion [Reformed] arrived in Turin, they did not scruple to ask money of them for the propagation of the faith, and the influence of the marchioness, or fear of losing their errand and ruining their affairs, would often induce such to comply."

While busy in the prosecution of these schemes, the marchioness di Pianeza was prostrated by disease. As death approached, she experienced great remorse, and, desiring to make some atonement, she summoned her lord (from whom she had been parted for many years), to her bedside, and charged him, as he valued the repose of her soul, and the safety of his own, to continue the good work on which her heart had been so much set, of converting the Vaudois. For the purpose of stimulating his zeal, she bequeathed him a sum of money, which, however, he could not touch until he had fulfilled the condition on which it was granted. The marquis accepted the task with the utmost good will. As a bigot and soldier he could think of only one way of converting the Vaudois.

The storm of persecution now burst upon them. Gastaldo issued his famous order on the 25th of January, A. D. 1655, commanding all the Vaudois families residing in the commons of Lucerna, Fenile, Bubiana, Bricherasio, San Giovanni, and La Torre—in short, the whole of that rich district that separates their capital from the plain of Piedmont—to abandon their dwellings within three days, and retire into the valleys of Bobbio, Angrogna, and Rora. The penalty, in case of refusal, was death. Another requirement was, that they should sell their lands to Romanists within twenty days. Those, however, who abjured the Protestant faith were exempted from the decree. It was the depth of Winter, and that season in the Alps has terrors unknown to the Winters of even more northern regions. How inhuman and barbarous, therefore, this edict, which compelled young children and old men, the sick and the bed-ridden, the blind and the lame, to undertake a journey across swollen rivers, through valleys buried in snow, and over mountains covered with ice! The Romish Propaganda at Turin appointed the time of departure, knowing that the Vaudois must inevitably perish with cold and hunger. When Christ was speaking to his disciples about the Roman armies

gathering around Jerusalem, he said, "Pray ye that your flight be not in Winter." But how much more terrible was the experience of these modern disciples. Cold were the icy peaks that looked down on them as they were now fording the torrents, and now struggling up the mountain tracks, but the heart of the persecutor was colder still. They were offered the alternative of attending mass; but Leger, the historian, says that he was pastor of a congregation of nearly two thousand persons, and that not one of them accepted the alternative. "I can well bear them this testimony," he observes, "seeing I was their pastor for eleven years, and I knew every one of them by name; judge, reader, whether I had not cause to weep for joy as well as for sorrow, when I saw that all the fury of these wolves was not able to influence one of these lambs, and that no earthly advantage could shake their constancy. And when I marked the traces of the blood on the snow and ice, over which they had dragged their lacerated limbs, had I not cause to bless God that I had seen accomplished in their poor bodies what remained of the measure of the sufferings of Christ, and especially, when I beheld this heavy cross borne by them with a fortitude so noble?"

These poor exiles were welcomed by the Vaudois of the other valleys, who gladly shared with them their own humble and scanty fare, consisting of polenta and roasted chestnuts, with the milk and butter of their mountains. Thus laden, their table was joyfully spread for all the refugees. The enemies of this persecuted people were filled with amazement when they beheld the whole community rise up as one man, and depart. But greater woes rapidly followed this initial calamity. The deliberate purpose of the "Propaganda" was the extirpation of the entire body of the Vaudois, though only a part of it had suffered from the cruel decree of Gastaldo. The Waldensians, who had retired to the upper valleys, sent respectful representations to the court of Turin, describing their piteous condition in such pathetic terms that it seems strange how even that tribunal could refuse their supplications. These petitioners besought the fulfillment of treaties in which the honor and truth of the house of Savoy were pledged, but their temperate and just request was not granted. The ear of their prince had been poisoned by falsehood. They were denied access to him, and their remonstrances, though accompanied with tears and groans, were wholly unheeded by the "Propaganda." The Vaudois were put off with equivocal answers and delusive promises until the fatal 17th of April had arrived, when it was no longer necessary to dissemble and equivocate.

The marquis di Pianeza, on the 17th of April, A. D. 1655, departed secretly at midnight from Turin, and appeared before the "Valleys" at the head of an army of fifteen thousand men. While he was on the road to La Torre the Waldensian deputies were, by appointment, knocking at his door in Turin. Leaving the main body of his army encamped on the plain, the marquis, attended by about three hundred men, appeared under the walls of La Torre, at eight o'clock on Saturday, the same 17th of April. That army, secretly prepared, was composed of Piedmontese, comprehending a large number of banditti, who were promised pardon and plunder should they behave themselves well. Monastier states that there were some companies of Bavarians, six regiments of French, whose thirst for blood the Huguenot wars had not been able to slake, and several companies of Irish Romanists, who, banished by Cromwell, arrived in Piedmont dripping from the massacre of their Protestant fellow-subjects in their native land.

The Waldensians had hastily constructed a barricade at the entrance of La Torre. The marquis ordered his soldiers to storm it; but the besieged made such a strong resistance that, after three hours' fighting, the enemy discovered that he had made no advance. At one o'clock on Sunday morning Count Amadeus of Lucerna, who was well acquainted with the locality, made a flank movement along the banks of the Pellice, stole silently through the meadows and orchards, and, advancing from the opposite quarter, attacked the Vaudois in the rear. Suddenly turning, and facing the enemy, they pierced the ranks of their assailants and retreated to the hills. The Vaudois had lost only three men in all that conflict. It was now between two and three o'clock on Sunday morning, and, though the hour was early, the Romanists repaired in a body to the church in La Torre and chanted a *Te Deum*. It was Palm Sunday, and thus did the Romish Church, by her soldiers celebrate in the Waldensian valleys that great festival of good-will and love.

Having previously transported their families to the mountains, the Vaudois, from their natural fastnesses, fearlessly beheld the movements of the enemy. Their sentinels kept watch night and day along the frontier heights, closely observing Pianeza's army on the plains beneath. They saw their orchards falling by the axes, and their dwellings being consumed by the torches of the soldiers. Along the line of their mountain passes and forts a series of skirmishes occurred on Monday, the 19th, and Tuesday, the 20th. The Vaudois were poorly armed and vastly outnumbered, but they were victorious



at every point. The popish soldiers retreated in great disorder, reporting wondrous tales of Vaudois valor and heroism to their comrades on the plain, and infusing incipient panic into the camp.

Pianeza, remembering that mighty armies had previously perished on these mountains, became disquieted, and was haunted with misgivings regarding the result. As cowardice and guilt are generally associated, he naturally employed a weapon which the Waldenses have never been able to use as effectively as the sword. Before daybreak on Wednesday, the 21st, Pianeza announced, by sound of trumpet at the various Vaudois intrenchments, that he was willing to receive their deputies and treat for peace. Accordingly, delegates were sent to his camp, and were welcomed at headquarters with the utmost urbanity, and sumptuously entertained. The papal commander expressed his deep regret that his soldiers had committed such excesses, contrary to his orders. He declared that he had come into their valleys only in pursuit of a few fugitives, who had disobeyed Gastaldo's order; that the higher communes had nothing to fear; and that, if they would admit a single regiment, each for a few days, in token of their loyalty, all would be amicably settled. The crafty leader conquered the deputies, and despite the warnings of the more sagacious, especially the pastor Leger, the Waldenses opened the passes of their valleys and the doors of their dwellings to the soldiers of Pianeza.

The Waldenses, alas! had received under their roofs the murderers of themselves and their families. The first two days, the 22d and 23d of April, were passed in comparative peace, the soldiers eating at the same table, sleeping under the same roof, and conversing freely with their destined victims. During this interval the necessary preparations were made for the tragedy that was to follow. The towns, the villages, the cottages, and the roads throughout the "Valleys" were now occupied by the enemy, who likewise hung upon the heights. The two great passes which led into France—the one over the snows of the lofty Col Julien, and the other by the valley of Queyras into Dauphiné—were held by Pianeza's forces, and escape was therefore impossible by either outlet. No one could traverse the Col Julien at this season and live, and the fortress of Mirabouc, that guarded the narrow gorge which led into the valley of Queyras, the enemy had been careful to secure. The Vaudois were inclosed as in a net—shut in as in a prison.

At length the terrible blow fell with the sudden crash of the thunder-bolt. According to Leger, who was an eye-witness of these

horrors, the signal was given from the castle-hill of La Torre, at four o'clock on the morning of Saturday, the 24th of April, A. D. 1655. But who can rehearse the fearful tragedy that followed? "It is Cain a second time," says Monastier, "shedding the blood of his brother Abel." Almost instantly a thousand assassins commenced the work of death, and the valleys of Angrogna and Lucerna beheld a scene of dismay, agony, and woe. If the fiends of pandemonium had come forth to riot in crime and revel in blood, they could not have excelled the cruel soldiers of the Romish "Propaganda." The victims hastily climbed the hills, pursued by the murderers; and the torrents rolling down the mountain-side soon became tinged with blood, indicating that the butchery was progressing on the heights. Clouds of dark smoke, relieved by gleams of lurid light, ascended from the vales; for a priest and monk accompanied each party of soldiers, and set fire to the houses as soon as the inmates had been murdered. The most heart-rending cries and groans echoed and re-echoed from the rocks around, and it seemed as if the mountains had taken up a lamentation for the slaughter of their children. "Our valley of Lucerna," exclaims Leger, "which was like a Goshen, was now converted into a Mount Etna, darting forth cinders and fire and flames. The earth resembled a furnace, and the air was filled with a darkness like that of Egypt, which might be felt, from the smoke of towns, villages, temples, mansions, granges, and buildings, all burning in the flames of the Vatican."

The soldiers, not satisfied with the sudden infliction of death by the sword, invented new modes of torture and death; and we dare not portray in plain words all the disgusting and horrible deeds of these men, whose wickedness can never be known, because it never can be all told. The selection of a few instances from the awful account given by Leger will be sufficient to show how human beings may be transformed into fiends. Little children were torn from the arms of their mothers, clasped by their tiny feet, and their heads dashed against the rocks; or were held between two soldiers, and their quivering limbs torn up by main force. Their mangled bodies were then thrown on the highways or fields, to be devoured by beasts. The sick and the aged were burned alive in their dwellings. The hands, arms, and legs of some were cut off, and fire applied to the severed parts to staunch the bleeding and prolong their suffering. Some of them were flayed alive; some were roasted alive; some disemboweled, or tied to trees in their own orchards, and their hearts cut out. Others were horribly mutilated; and of many the brains

were boiled and eaten by these cannibals. Some were fastened down into the furrows of their own fields, and plowed into the soil. Some were even buried alive. Fathers were marched to death with the heads of their sons suspended round their necks. Parents were compelled to look on while their children were first outraged, then massacred, before being themselves permitted to die. But we can not proceed farther in Leger's shocking narration. The abominable, monstrous, and vile deeds of Pianeza's soldiers are so utterly disgusting and fiendish that they can not be transcribed. The heart sickens and the brain begins to swim. "My hand trembles," says Leger, "so that I can scarce hold my pen, and my tears mingle in torrents with my ink, while I write the deeds of these children of darkness—blacker even than the Prince of Darkness himself."

A general description, however appalling, can not convey so correct an idea of the terrible character of this persecution as would the history of individual cases; but circumstances will not permit this. Could we describe these martyrs one by one—could we portray the tragical fate of Peter Simeon, of Angrogna; the barbarous death of Magdalene, wife of Peter Pilon, of Villaro; the sad story of Anne, daughter of John Charbonier, of La Torre, whose sufferings can not be expressed by words; the cruel martyrdom of Paul Garnier, of Rora, whose eyes were first plucked out, who next of all endured other horrible indignities, and, last of all, was flayed alive and his skin divided into four parts, extended on the window-gratings of the four principal houses in Lucerna—could all these cases, with hundreds of others equally atrocious, be narrated in detail, the recital would be too harrowing, and the reader of the bloody story would turn away from it. The Waldenses literally suffered all the things of which the apostle speaks, as endured by the martyrs of old, with other torments not then invented, or which the rage of even a Nero shrank from inflicting: "They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword; they wandered about in sheep-skins and goat-skins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented (of whom the world was not worthy), they wandered in deserts and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth."

These cruelties are unparalleled and unique in the history of at least civilized countries. There has been more blood shed and more life sacrificed in other tragedies, but in none were the actors so completely dehumanized and the forms of suffering so fearfully disgusting and so unutterably revolting. The "Piedmontese massacres," in this respect, stand alone. They are more fiendish than all the atrocities and



murders before or since, and Leger may still advance his challenge to "all travellers and all who have studied the history of ancient and modern pagans, whether among the Chinese, Tartars, and Turks, they ever witnessed or heard tell of such execrable perfidies and barbarities." The authors of these deeds believed that they would be considered incredible by the world on account of their monstrous cruelty, and they boldly denied them even before the blood of the martyrs was well dry in the "Valleys." But pastor Leger immediately adopted effectual means to demonstrate the falsehood of that denial, and to secure that clear and convincing proof which would satisfy that and succeeding generations. Soon after the massacre he traveled from commune to commune, attended by notaries, who took down the depositions and attestations of the survivors and eye-witnesses of these deeds, in presence of the council and consistory of the place. From the evidence of these witnesses he compiled and published a book, which Dr. Gilly, of England, truly characterized as one of the most "dreadful" in existence. Leger gave the originals of these depositions to Sir Samuel Morland, who placed them, together with other valuable documents pertaining to the Waldenses, in the library of the University of Cambridge.

When the survivors of this awful massacre beheld their brethren slain, their country devastated, and their Church overthrown, their hearts were filled with inexpressible grief. "Oh that my head were waters," exclaims Leger, "and mine eyes a fountain of tears, that I might weep day and night for the slain of the daughter of my people! Behold and see if there be any sorrow like unto my sorrow." "It was then," he adds, "that the fugitives who had been snatched as brands from the burning, could address God in the words of the seventy-ninth Psalm, which literally as emphatically describes their condition:

"O God, the heathen are come into thine inheritance,  
Thy holy temple have they defiled;  
They have laid Jerusalem on heaps,  
The dead bodies of thy servants have they given  
To be meat unto the fowls of heaven,  
The flesh of thy saints unto the beasts of the earth."

When the work of desolation and death had ceased, Leger assembled the scattered survivors to consult with them relative to the course to be pursued. It is not strange that some advocated a speedy retirement from the "Valleys;" but Leger strongly dissuaded them against the thought of forsaking their ancient inheritance. He

urged them to rebuild their Zion in the faith that the God of their fathers would not permit the "Church of the Valleys" to be finally overthrown. To encourage them in this undertaking he presented a statement of their sufferings and demoralized condition to their brethren of other countries, who, he was sure, would hasten to their help at this great crisis. These counsels prevailed. "Our tears are no longer of water," so wrote the remnant of the slaughtered Vaudois to the Protestants of Europe, "they are of blood; they do not merely obscure our sight, they choke our very hearts. Our hands tremble, and our heads ache by the many blows we have received. We can not frame an epistle answerable to the intent of our minds and the strangeness of our desolations. We pray you to excuse us, and to collect amid our groans the meaning of what we fain would utter." This touching introduction was followed by a representation of their state, expressing themselves in terms, the moderation of which contrasts strongly with the extent of their wrongs. When the news of the massacre reached Protestant Europe a thrill of horror was felt by all classes.

In no country did the tidings awaken a deeper sympathy or kindle a stronger indignation than in England. Cromwell, who was then at the head of the state, proclaimed a fast, ordered a collection for the sufferers, and wrote to all the Protestant princes and to the king of France, to enlist their sympathy and aid in behalf of the Vaudois. Dr. Wylie states that the sum contributed in England was about thirty-eight thousand pounds sterling, and that sixteen thousand pounds of this was invested, on the security of the state, to pension pastors, school-masters, and students in the "Valleys." This latter sum was appropriated by Charles II, on the pretext that he was not bound to implement the engagements of a usurper. At this time Milton was the protector's Latin secretary, and the writing of these letters was one of the noblest as well as the most sacred of the tasks ever performed by the great poet. Indeed, his pen was not more gloriously employed in writing "Paradise Lost." Cromwell was so deeply interested in the welfare of these venerable sufferers for conscience' sake, that he sent Sir Samuel Morland with a letter to the duke of Savoy, in which he expressed the astonishment and sorrow he felt at the barbarities which had been committed. Cromwell's ambassador visited the "Valleys" on his way to Turin, and beheld with his own eyes the terrible spectacle which the region still presented. "If," said he, addressing the duke of Savoy, "the tyrants of all times and ages were alive again they would doubtless be ashamed to find that nothing barbarous nor inhuman, in comparison of these deeds, had

ever been invented by them. In the mean time, the angels are stricken with horror; men are dizzy with amazement; heaven itself appears astonished with the cries of the dying, and the very earth to blush with the gore of so many innocent persons." The scene of the slaughter gave force to his eloquence and kindled his republican plainness into Puritan fervor, moving him to exclaim, "Avenge not thyself, O God, for this mighty wickedness, this parricidal slaughter. Let thy blood, O Christ, wash out this blood!"

We have often mentioned the Castelluzzo in our history of the Waldenses, and their numerous martyrdoms. It is intimately connected with the "massacre of 1655," and inspired the muse of Milton. It stands at the entrance of the "Valleys," with feathery woods covering its feet, and around its middle like a girdle is strewn a mass of rock and *debris*, which countless tempests have gathered there. From amidst these the supreme column rises up like a pillar, and seems to touch the white cloud, which floats past in mid-heaven. A short distance below the crowning rocks of summit a dark spot is visible on the face of the cliff. At first sight it appears to be the shadow of a passing cloud upon the mountain, but a closer observation shows that it is immovable, and, when approached, proves to be the mouth of a cave, so extensive that it will accommodate several hundred persons. To this friendly chamber the Waldensians were accustomed to flee when Pandemonium reigned in the valleys beneath, glittering with steel, red with crime, and resounding with execrations and blasphemies. During the great massacre of 1655 many of the Vaudois secreted themselves in this cave; but, alas, the persecutor tracked them thither, and, dragging them forth rolled them down the dreadful precipice.

The law of association, that indissolubly links atrocious crimes with the spot where they were perpetrated, has written the "Massacre of 1655" on this mountain, whose rocks will remain as eternal witnesses of that bloody tragedy. As Dr. Wylie eloquently remarks, "there is not another such martyr's monument in the whole world." While the Castelluzzo stands the cruel slaughter will be remembered, and through all ages it will continue to speak in terms which Milton, the sublime poet, has interpreted:

"Avenge, O Lord, thy slaughtered saints, whose bones  
Lie scattered on the Alpine mountains cold;  
Even them who kept thy truth so pure of old,  
When all our fathers worshiped stocks and stones,  
Forget not; in thy book record their groans



Who were thy sheep, and in their ancient fold  
Slain by the bloody Piedmontese, that roll'd  
Mother with infant down the rocks. Their moans  
The vales redoubled to the hills, and they  
To heaven. Their martyr'd blood and ashes sow  
O'er all the Italian fields where still doth sway  
The triple tyrant; that from these may grow  
A hundred-fold, who, having learned thy way,  
Early may fly the Babylonian woe."

---

## CHAPTER XXVII.

*GIANAVELLO—THE MASSACRE—THE EXILES.*

WHILE the revolting events described in the preceding chapter were transpiring in the valleys of Lucerna and Angrogna, tragic scenes were also being enacted in the valley of Rora. This valley is situated on the left as one enters La Torre, and is separated from Lucerna by a barrier of mountains. It has two entrances, one by a side ravine, which branches off about two miles before reaching La Torre, and the other by crossing the valley of Lucerna and climbing the mountains. The latter is deserving of a brief description. Starting from the town of La Torre and skirting the Castelluzzo on the right, we then, by turning to the left, find ourselves descending into the valley, with its bright meadows shaded by the vine, which extends its arms in classic freedom from tree to tree. By passing over the torrent of the Pellice on a small bridge and advancing to the foot of the mountains of La Combe—that wall in the valley of Rora—we are ready to ascend by a winding path. As we proceed upward we discover that pasturage and vineyard disappear, and the chestnut forest surrounds us; climbing higher we lose sight of the chestnut, and see only the pine; and soon we reach that elevation where we stand amid the naked ledges of the mountain, with their gushing rills margined by moss or other Alpine herbage. After an ascent of two hours we come to the summit of the pass, and, while resting upon this pedestal, some four thousand feet in height, we can behold the grandeur of the stupendous amphitheater of Alps around us. How profoundly deep the valley at our feet from which we have just climbed up! The Pellice now seems like a thread of silver; the meadow like a patch of green a few inches square; the chestnut tree seems to be a mere dot, scarcely visible; while yonder are La Torre

and the white Villaro, so tiny in appearance that they look as if they could be "packed into a child's toy-box."

While distant objects appear smaller, the mountains around us seem to have enlarged their bulk and increased their stature. The summit of the Castelluzzo towers high above us; still higher rise the rolling masses of the Vandalin, the lower slopes of which form a vast and magnificent hanging garden, excelling those which once ranked among the wonders of Babylon. In the far distance a tumultuous sea of mountains charm the eye, here extending upward like sharp needles, there stretching away in long serrated ridges, and there rising up in massy peaks of naked granite wearing the glorious shining garments which Winter weaves for the giants of the Alps. Beneath us is the Valley of Rora, a cup of verdure some sixty miles in circumference, its sides and bottom variously clothed with corn-field and meadow, with vineyard and orchard, with the walnut, the cherry, and fruit-bearing trees, from amid which numerous brown chalets cheerfully look forth. The great mountains sweep around the valley like a wall, and among them, pre-eminent in glory as in stature, stands the monarch of the Cottian Alps, Monte Viso.

From time to time God raised up among the Waldenses mighty men of valor to deliver his people as he did among the ancient Jews. One of the most remarkable of these Vaudois was Gianavello, commonly known as Captain Joshua Gianavello, a native of this same Valley of Rora. We learn from historical accounts of him that he possessed all the qualities of a great military leader—daring in courage, resolute in purpose, fertile in resource, and self-possessed in emergencies. He was quick to resolve and prompt to execute, besides having the faculty of skillful combination, which is so essential in a commander. By his devotion and energy he succeeded in mitigating, to some extent, the horrors of the "Massacre of 1655," and his heroism ultimately rolled back the tide of that great calamity and made it recoil upon its authors. On the morning of the 24th of April, A. D. 1655—the same day that Pianeza stained the valleys of Lucerna and Angrogna with innocent blood—that inhuman leader sent five hundred soldiers to the Valley of Rora to murder its unsuspecting and unoffending inhabitants. These soldiers ascended from the valley of the Pellice until they had gained the summit of the pass, and were already descending on the town of Rora stealthily and swiftly, as a herd of wolves might descend upon a sheepfold, or as, says Leger, "A brood of vultures might descend upon a flock of harmless doves."

Gianavello, who had been expecting for some weeks an attack, though he knew not when or where it would be made, was vigilant and active. He saw the troops and at once understood their mission. Not a moment could be lost without endangering the inhabitants of Rora. Unless a speedy resistance was made not a man would be spared to carry the tidings of their extermination to the next commune. But how could Gianavello alone overcome an army of five hundred men? Determined to make a desperate effort, he hastened up the mountain under cover of the rocks and trees, and, on his way, persuaded six peasants, brave like himself, to join him in repelling the invaders. The heroic little band marched on until they were near the troop, then, concealing themselves in the bushes, they lay in ambush by the side of the path. The soldiers came on, never suspecting the trap into which they were marching. Gianavello fired with such precision that seven of the troop fell dead. Then reloading their pieces and adroitly changing their ground they fired again with like effect. The suddenness of the attack, and the invisibility of the enemy, surprised Pianeza's soldiers, whose frightened imaginations multiplied tenfold the number of their assailants. Resolved to seek safety in flight they began to retreat; but Gianavello and his men, springing from cover to cover like so many chamois, followed them, harassing their rear, and pouring upon them a deadly volley of bullets. Fifty-four of the invaders were found dead upon the field; and thus did these seven peasants chase from their Valley of Rora the five hundred assassins who had come to murder its peaceful inhabitants.

On that same afternoon the people of Rora, who were ignorant of the fearful massacre which was at that very moment proceeding in the valleys of their brethren, visited the marquis di Pianeza and complained of the attack, but he pretended to be ignorant of the whole affair. "Those who invaded your valley," said he, "were a set of banditti. You did right to repel them. Go back to your families and fear nothing. I pledge my word and honor that no evil shall happen to you." These words did not deceive Gianavello, who remembered the maxim enacted by the Council of Constance, and so often practiced in the "Valleys:" "No faith is to be kept with heretics." He knew that Pianeza was the agent of the "Council of Extirpation." The light of the following morning had scarcely dawned when the hero-peasant was abroad, scanning with eagle eye the mountain paths that led into the valley. Soon his suspicions were confirmed. Six hundred men-at-arms, who were selected with



special reference to this difficult enterprise, were seen ascending the mountain Cassuleto, to do what their comrades of the previous day had failed to accomplish. Gianavello had collected a little host of eighteen, of whom twelve were armed with muskets and swords, and six with only the sling. He divided these into three parties, each consisting of four musketeers and two slingers, and stationed them in a defile, through which he saw the invaders must pass. As soon as the van of the enemy had entered the gorge they were saluted with a shower of bullets and stones from invisible hands. Every bullet and stone executed its mission of destruction. The first discharge brought down an officer and twelve men, and was rapidly followed by others equally fatal. The cry was raised, "All is lost; save yourselves!" The flight was precipitate, for every rock and bush seemed to send forth deadly missiles. Thus these murderers were driven from the Valley of Rora, and the Piedmontese troop were disgraced by a second ignominious retreat.

The inhabitants visited Pianeza a second time and complained of the treatment they had received. "Concealing," as Leger says, "the ferocity of the tiger under the skin of the fox," he assured the deputies that the attack had been the result of a misunderstanding, that certain accusations had been brought against them, the falsity of which had since been discovered, and now they might return to their homes, for they had nothing to fear. But immediately after their departure this treacherous leader began vigorously to prepare for a third attack, and organized a battalion of from eight hundred to nine hundred men. This host made a rapid march next morning on Rora, took possession of all the avenues leading into the valley, and chasing the inhabitants to the caves of Monte Friolante, first plundered and then burned their dwellings. Captain Joshua Gianavello, in command of his little troop, beheld the enemy approaching; but their overwhelming numbers deterred him from attacking them, and he waited for a more favorable opportunity. The Piedmontese soldiers were retiring, laden with their booty, and driving before them the cattle of the peasants. Gianavello, kneeling down before his heroband, rendered thanks to God, who had twice saved his people, and prayed that the hearts and arms of his followers might be strengthened to work yet another deliverance. He then attacked the spoilers, who, in their consternation fled up the mountain, leaving their plunder behind them, and endeavored to escape into the valley of the Pellice, but when they reached the pass and began to descend their flight became yet more disastrous. The Vaudois gathered massive

stones and rolled them upon the retreating soldiers, at the same time pouring upon them a shower of bullets. These missiles did deadly execution, while many of the enemy in their haste fell over the precipices, and the few who survived fled to Villaro.

The marquis di Pianeza should have seen the finger of God in these events, but he was only the more filled with rage and the more determined to extirpate every heretic from the Valley of Rora. The historian, Muston, states that all the royal troops that Pianeza then commanded, together with those which could be spared from the other valleys, were assembled and made preparations to surround the small commune of Rora. This was now the fourth attack upon that territory, but the invaders were destined once more to recoil before the shock of its heroic defenders. Some eight thousand men were ready to march, but a certain Captain Mario, who made himself prominent in the massacre at Bobbio, desiring to appropriate the entire glory of this enterprise, became impatient and would not await the movement of the main body of the army. He marched two hours in advance with three companies of regular troops, few of whom ever returned. His soldiers, panic-stricken, rushed along the narrow path and crowded their ferocious and impulsive leader over the edge of the rock into the stream. He was seriously wounded and was taken to Lucerna, where he died two days afterwards in great torment of body, and yet greater torment of mind. One of the three companies in this fatal expedition was composed of Irish who had been banished by Cromwell, and who met in this distant land the death they had inflicted on others in their own.

This series of strange events, in which Pianeza was a prominent actor, was now coming to a close, and that military leader became infuriated because he had been defeated by herdsmen and thereby disgraced. Many of his bravest soldiers had been sacrificed. Victor Amadeus once observed that "the skin of every Vaudois cost him fifteen of his best Italian soldiers." While some hundreds of the best soldiers of Pianeza were slain not one of the little troop of Gianavello, dead or alive, fell into the enemy's hands. The papal commander, however, resolved to prosecute the war more vigorously and with a much larger army. He collected ten thousand men and attacked Rora on three sides at once. While Gianavello was bravely resisting the first troop of three thousand on the summit of the pass that gives entrance from the valley of the Pellice, a division of six thousand had entered by the ravine at the foot of the valley, and a third of one thousand had crossed the mountains that divide Bagnolo

from Rora. It is impossible to describe the horrors that followed the entrance of these assassins. They had no compassion upon those of tender years, and no reverence for the gray hairs of the venerable sire. Neither age nor sex were respected, and happy were they who suffered instant death and thus escaped fearful indignities and tortures. The few spared from the sword were carried away as captives, and among these were the wife and the three daughters of Gianavello. The patriot-hero had nothing more to contend for in the Valley of Rora. The light of his hearth was extinguished, his village was a heap of smoking ruins, his fathers and brethren had fallen by the sword; but these accumulated calamities did not intimidate him, and he marched his brave troop over the mountains to the frontier of his country, there to take advantage of whatever opportunities Providence might yet open to him of defending the ancient liberties and the glorious faith of his people.

Pianeza, having resolved to make a final desperate effort to crush the hero of Rora, first wrote to him as follows: "I exhort you for the last time to renounce your heresy. This is the only hope of your obtaining the pardon of your prince, and of saving the life of your wife and daughters, now my prisoners, and whom, if you continue obstinate, I will burn alive. As for yourself, my soldiers shall no longer pursue you; but I shall set such a price upon your head as that were you Beelzebub himself, you shall infallibly be taken; and be assured that if you fall alive into my hands, there are no torments with which I will not punish your rebellion." To these ferocious threats, Gianavello magnanimously and promptly replied: "There are no torments so terrible, no death so barbarous that I would not choose rather than deny my Savior. Your threats can not cause me to renounce my faith; they but fortify me in it. Should the marquis di Pianeza cause my wife and daughters to pass through the fire, it can but consume their mortal bodies; their souls I commend to God, trusting that he will have mercy on them, and on mine should it please him that I fall into the marquis's hands." If Pianeza did not appreciate the fact that this was the most mortifying defeat he had yet sustained in his contest with Gianavello, he must have realized that a crusade against the Alps themselves would be as successful as a war against a cause which could infuse such a spirit into its champions. Gianavello's reply, observes Leger, "certified him as a chosen instrument in the hands of God for the recovery of his country, seemingly lost."

The heroic peasant had rescued from the wreck of his family his



infant son, whose safety, first of all, he desired now to secure. He therefore placed him on his shoulders, and, crossing the frozen Alps which separate the valley of Lucerna from France, he intrusted him to the care of a relative resident at Queyras, in the valleys of the French Protestants. With the child he carried thither the tidings of the awful massacre of his people. A feeling of intense indignation every-where prevailed, and many brave spirits like Gianavello were willing to enlist under his banner. Having greatly recruited his little band, he repassed the Alps in a few weeks to begin his second and more successful campaign. When he arrived in the "Valleys," he was re-enforced by Giaheri, under whom a troop had been assembling to avenge the massacre of their brethren. In Giaheri, Captain Gianavello had found a companion worthy of himself and worthy of the cause which he was now defending. Of this heroic man Leger has recorded that, "though he possessed the courage of a lion, he was as humble as a lamb, always giving to God the glory of his victories; well versed in Scripture, and understanding controversy, and of great natural talent." The Vaudois race had been nearly exterminated by the massacre, so that these two leaders could only collect five hundred men. The opposing army at this time in their "Valleys" was composed of between fifteen and twenty thousand trained soldiers. The faith of these two men in the God of battles must have been strong, else they would not have ventured with such a handful of peasants against such odds. They believed that God would not permit his cause to perish or the lamp of the "Valleys" to be extinguished, and, though few in numbers, they knew that God was able, by their humble instrumentality, to save their country and Church. With a faith resting upon such a basis, these two Christian warriors unsheathed the sword, and so valiantly did they wield it that soon that sword became the terror of the Piedmontese armies. The ancient promise was fulfilled, "The people that do know their God shall be strong and do exploits."

To describe in detail all the prodigies of valor performed by this brave little host would be a difficult task; but the record would be a thrilling volume. "I had always considered the Vaudois to be men," said Descombies, who had joined them, "but I found them lions." They assaulted the enemy with a fury that nothing could resist, and the Piedmontese troops were driven from post to post, from village to village, until they were soon expelled from the upper valleys. The war now passed down into the plain of Piedmont, where it was prosecuted with the same heroism and the same success.

The Vaudois besieged and took several towns, and fought many pitched battles, achieving a victory in nearly every contest, though opposed by more than ten times their number. Their triumphs could hardly be credited were they not recorded by historians of unimpeachable veracity, and the accuracy of whose statements was attested by eye-witnesses. At the close of a day's fighting, as many as fourteen hundred Piedmontese soldiers were often found slain on the field of battle, while not more than six or seven of the Waldenses had fallen. Such victories seemed to be miraculous, and were so regarded, not only by the Vaudois themselves, but even by their foes, who could not refrain from expressing their conviction "that surely God was on the side of the barbets." While the Vaudois were thus bravely maintaining their cause by arms, and inflicting the chastisement of war on those from whom its miseries had come, tidings of their sufferings and oppressions were being conveyed to all the Protestant states of Europe. The reports awakened a feeling of horror, and the cruelty of the government of Savoy was universally and loudly condemned. It was generally acknowledged that such a recital of woe they had never before heard, but the Protestant states did not content themselves by simply condemning these deeds. Believing that it was their imperative duty to interpose in behalf of this poor and greatly oppressed people, they adopted prompt and active measures. Prominent among those nations which achieved imperishable honor was England, then under the protectorate of Cromwell. As we have already said, a Latin letter, composed by Milton, was sent by the protector to the duke of Savoy. In addition, Cromwell wrote to Louis of France, soliciting his mediation with the duke in behalf of the Vaudois. The letter is interesting because it expresses the truly catholic and noble sentiments of England:

"MOST SERENE AND POTENT KING,—

. . . "After a most barbarous slaughter of persons of both sexes and of all ages a treaty of peace was concluded, or rather secret acts of hostility were committed the more securely under the name of a pacification. The conditions of the treaty were determined in your town of Pinerolo: hard conditions enough, but such as these poor people would gladly have agreed to, after the horrible outrages to which they had been exposed, provided that they had been faithfully observed. But they were not observed; the meaning of the treaty is evaded and violated, by putting a false interpretation upon some of the articles, and by straining others. Many of the complainants have been deprived of their patrimonies, and many have

been forbidden the exercise of their religion. New payments have been exacted, and a new fort has been built to keep them in check, from whence a disorderly soldiery make frequent sallies and plunder or murder all they meet. In addition to these things, fresh levies of troops are clandestinely preparing to march against them; and those among them who profess the Roman Catholic religion have been advised to retire in time; so that every thing threatens the speedy destruction of such as escaped the former massacre. I do therefore beseech and conjure your majesty not to suffer such enormities, and not to permit (I will not say any prince, for surely such barbarity never could enter into the heart of a prince, much less of one of the duke's tender age, or into the mind of his mother) those accursed murderers to indulge in such savage ferocity, who, while they profess to be the servants and followers of Christ, who came into the world to save sinners, do blaspheme his name, and transgress his mild precepts by the slaughter of innocent men. Oh, that your majesty, who has the power, and who ought to be inclined to use it, may deliver so many supplicants from the hands of murderers, who are already drunk with blood and thirst for it again, and who take pleasure in throwing the odium of their cruelty upon princes! I implore your majesty not to suffer the borders of your kingdom to be polluted by such monstrous wickedness. Remember that this very race of people threw themselves upon the protection of your grandfather, King Henry IV, who was most friendly disposed towards the Protestants when the duke of Lesdiguières passed victoriously through their country, as affording the most convenient passage into Italy, at the time he pursued the duke of Savoy in his retreat across the Alps. The act or instrument of that submission is still extant among the public records of your kingdom, in which it is provided that the Vaudois shall not be transferred to any other government, but upon the same condition that they were received under the protection of your invincible grandfather. As supplicants of his grandson, they now implore the fulfillment of this compact.

“Given at our Court at Westminster, this 26th of May, 1658.”

The French king undertook the mediation as requested by the Protestant princes, but hurried it to a conclusion before the ambassadors from the Protestant states had arrived. The delegates from the Protestant cantons of Switzerland were present, but were not permitted to participate in the deliberations. The Grand Monarch managed the whole affair, and on the 18th of August, A. D. 1655, a treaty of



peace was concluded; but it was unjust to the Waldenses. They were deprived of their ancient possessions on the right bank of the Pellice, lying toward the plain of Piedmont. Within the new boundary they were guaranteed liberty of worship; an amnesty was granted for all offenses committed during the war; captives were to be restored when claimed; and they were to be exempt from all imposts for five years, on the ground that they were so impoverished as not to be able to pay any thing.

When the treaty was published, two clauses in it astonished the Protestant world. In the preamble the Vaudois were called rebels, whom it had pleased their prince graciously to receive back into favor; and there was an article in the body of the deed, which no one remembered to have been mentioned during the negotiations, empowering the French to construct a fort above La Torre. This indicated the determination of the enemy to renew the war. By this treaty the Protestant states were deceived, their ambassadors were outwitted, and the poor Waldenses were left as much as ever in power of the duke of Savoy and the "Council for the Propagation of the Faith and the Extirpation of Heretics."

After the great "massacre of 1665" the Waldenses enjoyed comparative peace for thirty years, though their enemies annoyed them in innumerable ways. Many of their prominent men were sent into exile, and Captain Gianavello and Pastor Leger had sentence of death passed upon them. The former retired to Geneva and the latter became pastor of a congregation at Leyden. But the storm of persecution again burst upon the "Valleys." Louis XIV of France had revoked the "Edict of Nantes," and afterwards requested the duke of Savoy to exterminate the Waldenses. The young and humane Victor Amadeus refused to do so; but the French monarch, in his third message to him, threatened to send an army of fourteen thousand men to purge the "Valleys," which he would add to his dominions. Amadeus yielded; an edict was promulgated on the 31st of January, A. D. 1686, demanding of the Vaudois an immediate acceptance of the Romish faith, or death. An army of between fifteen and twenty thousand French and Piedmontese soldiers invaded the "Valleys," and more than three thousand Vaudois were massacred. The remainder of the nation were imprisoned in the various fortresses of Piedmont. "When they entered these dungeons," says Henri Arnaud, "they counted fourteen thousand healthy mountaineers; but when at the intercession of the Swiss deputies, their prisons were opened, three thousand skeletons only crawled out." In December, A. D.

1686, they were liberated; but a cruel edict compelled them to start immediately across the snowy Alps. Sick, hungry, and poorly clad, the exiles commenced their weary march, and after three weeks of untold hardship and suffering, reached Geneva on Christmas. Many perished on the way; but the survivors received a hospitable welcome from their Swiss brethren. A deputation of prominent citizens, headed by the patriarch Gianavello, who still lived, went out to the frontier and escorted them to the city.

---

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

### *THE RETURN OF THE WALDENSES.*

A BRIGHTER day now dawned upon the Waldenses. We have seen three thousand of them in exile entering the gates of Geneva, the feeble remnant of a population of from fourteen to sixteen thousand. All could not be accommodated in one city, and therefore arrangements were made for distributing them among the reformed cantons. A short time before, the revocation of the Edict of Nantes had thrown thousands of French Protestants upon the hospitality of the Swiss, and the arrival of the Waldensian refugees made yet heavier demands on the public and private charity of the Swiss cantons. Protestant Helvetia, however, responded with equal cordiality in the case of the Vaudois as they did in that of the French, and perhaps even more so, in view of their greater destitution. Nor were the expatriated Waldenses ungrateful. "Next to God, whose tender mercies have preserved us from being entirely consumed," said they to their kind benefactors, "we are indebted to you alone for life and liberty."

Several of the German princes opened their states to the exiles; but their great enemy, Louis XIV, exerted such a powerful influence in these parts that they could not reside in peace. His emissaries were constantly watching them and tampering with their patrons. While being moved about from place to place they began anxiously to discuss the question of their permanent settlement in the future. Among the projects that were suggested was that of conveying them across the sea in the ships of Holland, and planting them at the Cape. Their hearts were filled with intolerable anguish when they thought of the possibility of never again beholding their

native land, which was dearer to them in exile than when they dwelt in it. After three years of banishment from it they began to ask themselves the question whether they were not able to reassemble their scattered colonies, return to their valleys, and rekindle their ancient lamp in them. As they wandered by the banks of the Rhine, or traversed the German plains, they delighted to feast their imaginations on their far-off homes. A picture of the past rose before them—the chestnuts shading their former abodes, the vines bending gracefully over their portal, and the green meadow spreading out in front, rendered perpetually bright by the crystal stream whose murmur sweetly blended with the evening psalm. Whenever they knelt to pray, their faces were turned towards their grand mountains, where slept their martyred fathers. The duke of Savoy had made several efforts to introduce into their territory a mongrel race, partly Irish and partly Piedmontese; but the land, as if unfriendly to the strangers, refused to be productive. The spies whom the Vaudois had sent to examine its condition reported that its fields were uncultivated, its vines unpruned; its ruins had not been repaired, and it was almost as desolate as on the day when its sons had been banished from it. It appeared to them that the land was waiting their return.

At length they could no longer repress the yearning of their hearts. The 10th of June, A. D. 1688, was the day appointed for commencing their expedition. Leaving their various cantonments in Switzerland, and taking by-roads, they traveled through the country by night and assembled at Bex, a small town in the southern extremity of the territory of Bern. The senates of Zurich, Bern, and Geneva received intelligence of their secret march, and, foreseeing that the departure of the exiles would compromise them with the popish powers, their excellencies adopted measures to prevent it. A boat containing arms for their use was seized on the lake of Geneva. The inhabitants of the valleys, in concert with the Savoyards, at the first alarm seized the bridge of St. Maurice, the key of the Rhone valley, and stopped the expedition. To extinguish all hope of their return to the valleys they were distributed anew over Germany; but scarcely had this second dispersion occurred when war broke out. The palatinate was overrun by the French troops, and the Vaudois who had settled there, dreading, not without reason, the soldiers of Louis XIV, retired before them and started for Switzerland. The condition of these poor exiles, tossed from country to country by political storms, excited the compassion of the Protestant cantons,



and they settled them again in their former allotments. In the mean time important events were occurring in the nations around them, and the expatriated Waldenses, with uplifted hearts, waited the result. They saw their protector, William of Orange, mount the throne of England. They beheld their powerful enemy, Louis XIV, attacked at once by the emperor and humiliated by the Dutch. They saw their own prince, Victor Amadeus, withdraw his soldiers from Savoy because he needed them to defend Piedmont. It appeared to the Waldenses that an invisible hand was opening up their path to return to their native land.

These indications encouraged them to prepare a second time for their departure. They selected as their place of rendezvous a wood on the northern shore of the Leman, near the town of Noyon. For days before they came in scattered bands from various directions, converging by stealthy marches on the point designated. On the decisive evening, the 16th of August, A. D. 1689, a general muster occurred under cover of the friendly wood of Prangius. After commending their enterprise to God in solemn prayer, they embarked on the lake, and crossed by starlight. These means of transportation were fortunately provided by a circumstance which threatened at first to defeat their plan, but which in the end greatly facilitated it. Many people had been drawn by curiosity to this part of the lake, and the boats which conveyed these sight-seers became the means of escape to the Vaudois.

In this emergency, as in others which arose in the past, a distinguished man was raised up to lead them, Henri Arnaud, who was born at La Tour, in Piedmont, A. D. 1641. His early history is obscure; but it is said that he at first served as a pastor, until the troubles of his nation compelled him to leave the valleys. William III of England gave him a colonel's commission, and he acquired great distinction as a military commander, at the head of twelve hundred Vaudois, under Marlborough. He was a man of decided piety, ardent patriotism, and of great decision and courage, combining in a remarkable manner the qualities of the pastor and the soldier. It is difficult to say whether his soldiers listened more reverentially to his occasional exhortations from the pulpit or to the orders he gave them on the field of battle. These eight hundred Vaudois, after their arrival on the southern shore of the lake, bowed before God in prayer, and began their march through a country containing numerous enemies. The lofty snow-clad mountains over which they were to fight their way rose before them, but Arnaud

was not discouraged. Arranging his little company into three divisions—an advanced guard, a center, and a rear-guard—he traversed the valley of the Arve to Sallanches, and seized the chief men as hostages. Just as the soldiers of Arnaud emerged from its dangerous passes the inhabitants of Sallanches had completed their preparations for resisting them. Occasional skirmishes occurred during their march; but as a general thing they encountered slight opposition, for the terror of God seemed to have fallen upon the people of Savoy.

The Vaudois continued to advance, and climbed the Haut Luce Alp, which was so named by the author of the “Rentree,” from the village at its foot, but which, without doubt, says Monastier, is the Col Joli, seven thousand two hundred and forty feet high, or the Col de la Fenetre, or Portetta, as it was named to M. Brockedon, who has visited these countries and traveled the same road as the Vaudois. They next crossed Bon Homme, the neighboring Alp to Mont Blanc, sometimes sinking to their middle in snow, and then subjected to both toil and danger by treacherous glaciers and steep precipices. To add to their discomfort the rain fell in torrents, and thoroughly saturated them. Their provisions were growing scanty; but the shepherds of the mountains recruited their supplies with bread and cheese, and at night welcomed them to their huts. At every stage the Vaudois renewed their hostages; sometimes they “caged”—to use their own phrase—a Capuchin monk, and at other times an influential landlord; but all were kindly treated. After crossing the Bon Homme, which divides the basin of the Arve from that of the Iser, they descended, on Wednesday, the fifth day of their march, into the valley of the latter stream, where they anticipated opposition, as the numerous population of that region was known to be well-armed and decidedly hostile; but they did not disturb the Vaudois. The latter marched forward, traversing Mount Iserna, and also the yet more formidable Mount Cenis, and finally descended into the valley of the Dora.

On Saturday, the 24th of August, they encountered a considerable body of regular soldiers in that valley. At first they met a peasant, of whom they inquired whether they could have provisions by purchasing them. “Come on this way,” said the man, in a tone which seemed to indicate that he was elated; “you will find all that you want; they are preparing an excellent supper for you.” Following him into the defile of Salabertrand, where the Col d’Albin closes in upon the stream of the Dora, they found themselves suddenly ushered into the presence of a French army, whose camp-

fires—for night had come—illuminated the opposite slope far and wide. It was impossible for the Vaudois to retreat. The French were two thousand five hundred strong, flanked by the garrison of exiles, and supported by a miscellaneous crowd of armed followers. The Vaudois advanced in the dark to the bridge which crossed the Dora, on the opposite banks of which the French were encamped. To the challenge, "Who goes there?" the Vaudois answered, "Friends." The instant reply shouted out was, "Kill! kill!" followed by a tremendous fire, which was kept up for about fifteen minutes. It did no harm, however, for Arnaud commanded his soldiers to fall flat on their faces and permit the deadly shower to pass over them. But now a division of the French appeared in the rear of the Vaudois, thus placing them between two fires. Some one in Arnaud's army, seeing that all must be risked, shouted out, "Courage! the bridge is won." At these words the Vaudois started to their feet, rushed across the bridge sword in hand, and, clearing it, they threw themselves with the impetuosity of a whirlwind upon the enemy's intrenchments. Confounded by the suddenness of the attack, the French could only use the butt-ends of their muskets to defend themselves. The fighting lasted two hours, and ended in the total rout of the French. Their leader, the marquis de Larr, after a fruitless attempt to rally his soldiers, fled wounded to Briançon, exclaiming, "Is it possible I have lost the battle and my honor?"

In a short time after the battle the moon rose, and revealed the field of conflict to the victors. On it, stretched out in death, lay six hundred French soldiers, besides officers; while arms, military stores, and provisions were strewn promiscuously among the dead. Thus had been suddenly opened an armory and magazines to men who greatly needed both weapons and food. Having amply replenished themselves, they collected into a heap what they could not carry away, and burned it. The explosion of the gunpowder, the sounding of the trumpets, and the shouting of the captains, who, throwing their caps in the air, exclaimed, "Thanks be to the Lord of hosts, who hath given us the victory!" awakened the silence of the valleys and reverberated from mountain to mountain.

This great victory cost the Waldenses only fifteen killed and twelve wounded. They were very much fatigued; but, fearing to halt on the battle-field, they aroused those who had already sunk into sleep, and commenced to climb the lofty Mont Sci. The day was breaking as they gained the summit. It was the Lord's-day, and Henri Arnaud, halting until all should assemble, pointed out to



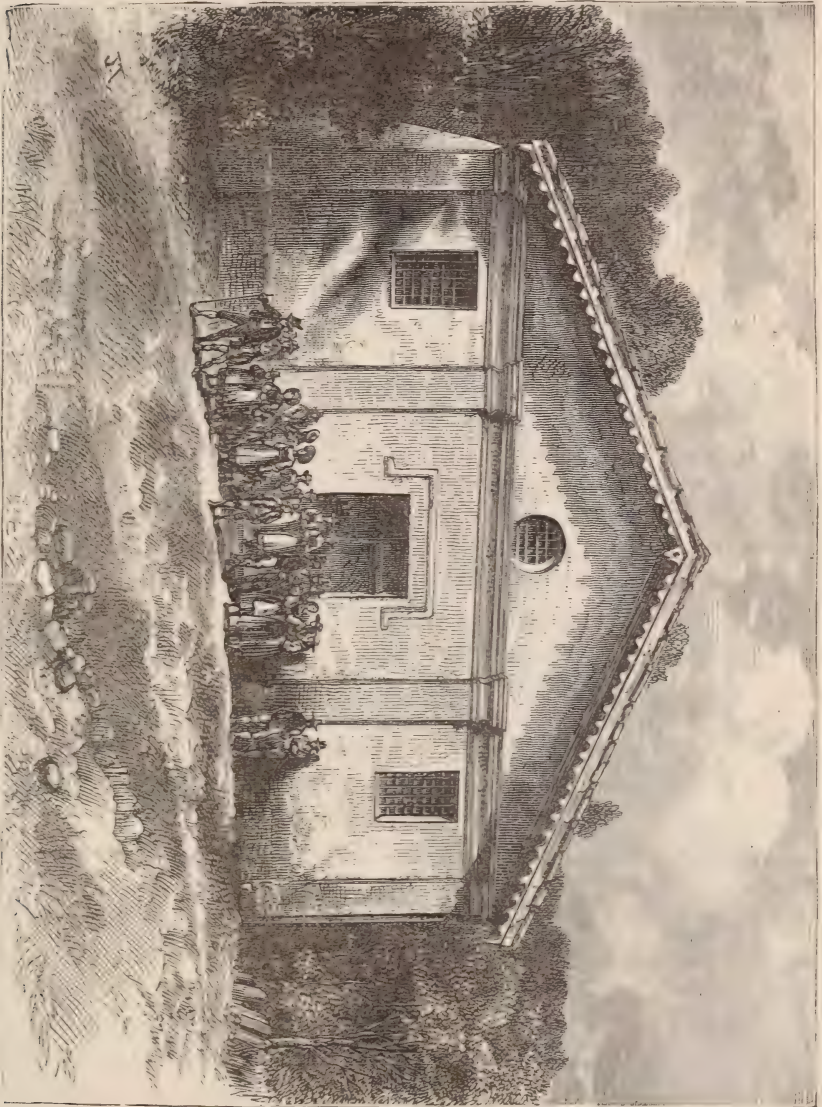
them, just as they were becoming visible in the morning light, the mountain-tops of their own land. No sight was ever more welcome to their longing eyes. Bathed in the radiance of the rising sun, it seemed to them, as one snowy peak began to burn after another, that the mountains were kindling into joy at the return of their long-absent sons. This army of soldiers resolved itself into a congregation of worshipers, and the summit of Mont Sci became their church. Kneeling on the mountain-top, the battle-field below them, and the solemn and sacred peaks of the Col du Pis, the Col la Vachera, and the glorious Monte Viso looking down upon them in reverent silence, they humbled themselves before the Almighty, confessing their sins, and giving thanks for their many deliverances. From this assembly of warrior-worshipers, gathered under the dome-like vault that rose over them, the offering of sincere and devout thanksgiving ascended to God.

This heroic band, invigorated by the services of the Sabbath, and encouraged by their recent victory, rapidly descended to the valley of Clusone, which is about two miles in width, and is watered by the broad, clear Germagasca. Before they could enter San Martino, one of the grandest of their "Valleys," they were compelled to pass through a narrow defile which was guarded by a detachment of Piedmontese soldiers, but the latter fled at the approach of the Vaudois. These brave mountaineers rushed through the open gate, and, on the twelfth day after departing from the shores of Lemane, stood once more within the limits of their inheritance. They discovered, when they reached Balsiglia, in the western extremity of San Martino, that fatigue, desertion, and battle had reduced their numbers from eight hundred to seven hundred.

The Vaudois spent the first Sabbath after their arrival at the village of Prali, where they found the only sanctuary that remained standing in the "Valleys." They resolved to restore their ancient and Scriptural worship, and made a good beginning by purging the church of its popish ornaments. As the edifice was too small to contain all, a portion of the valiant army stood without, while Henri Arnaud, the soldier-pastor, mounted a table which was placed in the porch, and preached to them. They commenced their worship by chanting the seventy-fourth Psalm: "O God, why hast thou cast us off forever? Why doth thine anger smoke against the sheep of thy pasture?" etc. The text selected for the occasion was the one hundred and twenty-ninth Psalm, and Arnaud reviewed the wonderful history of the Vaudois, at the same time urging his people to emu-

late the glorious achievements of their fathers. The service was closed by these seven hundred warriors chanting in magnificent chorus the Psalm from which their leader had preached ; and while

CHURCH OF CHABAS, OLDEST IN THE "VALLEYS."



engaged in these devotional exercises they no doubt recalled the fact that the village of Prali had been the scene of a revolting outrage at the time of their exodus. The pastor of the church at that place,

M. Leidet, a deeply pious man, had been discovered by the soldiers while he was praying under a rock, and, after being dragged forth, he was first tortured, then mutilated, and finally executed, his last words being those of the sainted Stephen, "Lord Jesus, receive my spirit!" For more than three years the enemies of the Gospel had prevented the preaching of the truth in Prali, and it seemed appropriate that the Vaudois should recommence Protestant worship in the sanctuary of the martyr Leidet.

---

## CHAPTER XXIX.

### *THE WALDENSES RE-ESTABLISHED IN THEIR VALLEYS.*

WHILE the Vaudois had entered the land they had not yet obtained control of it; and what could they, a mere handful, accomplish in a contest with the large and well-appointed Piedmontese army, aided by the French? Their great leader, however, was a man of wonderful courage, and with this was combined a strong faith. They believed that the "cloud" which had directed their steps over the lofty mountains, with their snows and abysses, would cover their camp and lead them to victory on the battle-field. Having succeeded, after a marvelous journey, in reaching their native land, they were confident that they would be able to possess it. With these inspiring hopes to sustain them, the brave seven hundred commenced the arduous task before them.

As they climbed the Col Julien, which separates Prali from Lucerna, the fertile and central valley of the Waldenses, and came near the summit of the pass, the Piedmontese soldiers, who had been stationed there shouted out, "Come on, ye barbets; we guard the pass, and there are three thousand of us!" They did come on, and in a few moments forced the intrenchments, and put to flight the garrison. The Vaudois found in the evacuated camp a store of ammunition and provisions, which to them was a very seasonable booty. They descended rapidly the slopes and precipices of the mountain and surprised the town of Bobbio, which nestles at its foot. Driving out the popish inhabitants, they entered their ancient dwellings and resolved to rest a short time after the march and conflict of the previous days. Here they spent their second Sabbath, the congregation celebrating public worship and "chanting their psalm to



the clash of arms." On the following day they went to the "Rock of Sibaud," where their fathers had pledged their faith to God and to one another, and there, on the same sacred spot they renewed their ancient oath, swearing with uplifted hand to abide steadfastly in the profession of the Gospel, to stand by one another, and never lay down their arms till they had re-established themselves and their brethren in those "Valleys," which they believed had as really been given to them by the God of heaven as Palestine had been to the Jews.

Marching to Villaro, which is situated half-way between Bobbio at the head and La Torre at the entrance of the valley, they stormed it, and taking possession expelled the new inhabitants. But the Vaudois could not advance further in their career of conquest, but were compelled by a strong re-enforcement of regular troops to abandon Villaro the next day, and fall back on Bobbio. This patriot army was now divided into two bands, and for many weeks were under the necessity of waging a sort of guerrilla war on the mountains. Desiring to exterminate this little company of warriors, France on the one side and Piedmont on the other continued to pour in soldiers. The Vaudois not only won marvelous victories in their daily skirmishes, but also endured great privations and hardships. While they were constantly conquering, their ranks were rapidly thinning. Even if a hundred of the enemy were slain, while only one Waldensian fell, the former could recruit their numbers, but the latter could not. Besides, they had now neither ammunition nor provisions except what they had captured from their enemies; and to increase their perplexities, Winter was near, and soon their mountains would be buried beneath the snow, leaving them without food and shelter. They held a council of war, and finally resolved to march to the valley of Martino and intrench themselves on La Balsiglia.

As this was the last heroic stand of the returned exiles, a description of the natural strength and grandeur of the Balsiglia may be interesting. It is situated at the western extremity of San Martino, extending five miles in length and about two in width, having as its floor the richest meadow-land, and for walls mountains superbly decorated with terraces, abundantly covered with flower and fruitage, and its summit ramparted with dark peaks and splintered cliffs. It is closed at its western extremity by the naked face of a perpendicular mountain, down which the Germagnasca dashes like a flood of silver. The bosom of the valley is clothed with meadows and woods, through

which the torrent runs, forming a seam both broad and white, its bed being strewn with many rocks, that give it the appearance of a continuous river of foam. The mountains, which constitute the walls of this valley, are exceedingly picturesque. Advancing up it the traveler beholds on the right a succession of terraced vineyards rising up, finely diversified with corn-fields and massy knolls of rock crowned with cottages or hamlets, which look out amid their rich embowerings of chestnut and apple-tree. Leaving this fruit-bearing zone, and ascending higher, we find the grassy uplands, the resort of herdsmen, and above these tower the rocky ridges that rise in wavy and serrated lines and run off to the higher summits, which recede into the clouds. The mountain-wall on the left is more precipitous, but equally rich in its clothing. A carpeting of delicious sward envelops its foot, while the bright sunlight shines here and there upon it through the overarching branches of trees, vast in circumference. Higher up, fields of maize and forests of chestnut present themselves to view, and higher still is seen the rock-loving birch with its silvery stem and graceful tresses. A bristling line of firs runs along the splintered rocks on the summit, "forming a mighty *chevaux-de-frise*." Toward the head of the valley, near the vast perpendicular cliff already mentioned, which shuts it in on the west, is seen a glorious assemblage of mountains. "One mighty cone uplifts itself above and behind another mighty, till the last and highest buries its top in the rolling masses of cloud, which are seen usually hanging like a canopy above this part of the valley. These noble *aiguilles*, four in number, rise feathery with firs, and remind one of the fretted pinnacles of some colossal cathedral. This is La Balsiglia."

Henri Arnaud, with his patriot warriors, pitched his camp on the terraces of this mountain amid the dark tempests of Winter, and the yet darker tempests of a furious and armed bigotry. The Balsiglia, as if proudly conscious of having once been the resting-place of the Vaudois ark, shoots its gigantic pyramids towards heaven. Man, with all his skill, could not erect a castle so mighty and grand; it had for its builder the almighty Architect himself. Behind the Balsiglia, on the west, stands the lofty Col du Pis, which rarely permits the spectator to behold his full stature, for his dark sides run up and bury themselves in the clouds. Face to face with the Col du Pis, stands on the other side of the valley the yet loftier Mont Guinevert, with most commonly a veil of cloud around him, as if he too were unwilling to allow the visitor to gaze upon his stately proportions.

Thus do these two Alps, like twin giants, guard this valley, famous in the wars of conscience and liberty. With his army, now, alas, reduced to four hundred persons, Henri Arnaud encamped on the lower terrace of this pyramidal mountain, the Balsiglia. When seen from the level of the valley, the peak appears to terminate in a point, but on ascending the top expands into a grassy plateau. Its sides, like those of an escarped fortress, could not be scaled; and the only avenue of approach was by the bed of the torrent. The skill of Arnaud enabled him to add the defenses of art to the natural strength of the Vaudois position. They erected huts as temporary barracks; they dug out some four-score cellars in the rock to hold provisions; they constructed covered ways and inclosed themselves within earthen walls and ditches. Three springs, that gushed out of the rock, supplied them with water. By building intrenchments on each of the three peaks that rose above them they could, if the first was taken, ascend to the second, and so on. A sentinel was placed on the loftiest summit of the Balsiglia, which commanded a view of the entire valley, to watch the movements of the enemy.

After three days had elapsed, four battalions of the French army arrived and surrounded the Balsiglia on every side. On the 29th of October the Vaudois position was attacked, but the enemy were repulsed with great slaughter without the loss of a single man to the defenders. The snows of early Winter having commenced to fall, the French general resolved to defer the capture of the Balsiglia until Spring. He first destroyed all the corn which the Vaudois had collected and stored in their villages, and then began his retreat from San Martino. In a laconic manner he bade farewell to the Waldenses, and requested them to be patient until Easter, when he would again visit them. During the Winter of A. D. 1689-90, the Vaudois remained in their mountain fortress, not only enjoying the rest which they needed after the marches, battles, and sieges of the previous months, but also preparing for the promised return of the French. Wherever Henri Arnaud encamped there he erected his altar, and if from that mountain-top the shout of battle pealed forth, from it ascended also morning and night the psalm and the prayer. Besides the daily devotions he preached a sermon on each Thursday and Sunday, and at stated times administered the Lord's-supper. Proper care was taken to prevent the commissariat from being exhausted. Foraging parties brought in wine, chestnuts, apples, and other fruits, which the Autumn now far advanced had ripened. An incursion was made by a strong detachment into the French valleys of Pragelas



and Queyras, and returned with salt, butter, some hundred head of sheep, and a few oxen. The enemy before departing had destroyed their stock of grain, and as the fields were long since reaped, the Waldenses despaired of being able to repair their loss.

In this emergency they found relief in an unexpected quarter. The snow that year began to fall earlier than usual and covered up the ripened corn, which the popish inhabitants had not time to cut when the approach of the Vaudois compelled them to flee. This ample magazine of grain remained unknown to the Waldenses for some time, and was discovered when they needed it most. From this store-house the garrison obtained supplies which had been provided in such a marvelous way as to convince them that He who feeds the fowls of the air was caring for them. They had bread to last them during the entire Winter. Little did the popish peasantry dream, when they sowed the seed in the Spring, that the Vadois hands would reap the harvest. To Vaudois eyes corn had been provided almost as miraculously as was the manna for the Israelites, but how could they grind it into meal? There is a little mill on the stream of the Germagnasca and almost at the foot of the Balsiglia. The owner, M. Tron-Poulat, three years before, when going forth into exile with his brethren, threw the millstone into the river; "for," said he, "it may yet be needed." The necessity now existed, search was made, the stone was found, drawn out of the stream, and again put to work in the mill. At the entrance of the valley there was another and more distant mill, to which the garrison had recourse when the enemy occupied the immediate precincts of the Balsiglia and the nearer mill was not available. "Both mills," says Dr. Wylie, "exist to this day; their roofs of brown slate may be seen by the visitor peering up through the luxuriant foliage of the valley, the wheel, motionless it may be, and the torrent which turned it shooting idly past in a volley of spray."

The army of France and Piedmont reappeared in the Spring and completely invested the Balsiglia. The celebrated De Catinat, lieutenant-general of the armies of France, commanded the combined force, which amounted to twenty-two thousand in all—ten thousand French and twelve thousand Piedmontese. The "four hundred" Waldenses from their camp of rock beheld the valley beneath them glittering with steel by day and shining with camp-fires by night, De Catinat confidently believed that he could capture the place by a single day's fighting, and, desiring to celebrate the victory which he regarded as already won, he ordered four hundred ropes to be sent

along with the army in order to hang at once the four hundred Waldenses. He had also commanded the inhabitants of Pinerolo to prepare *feux de joie* to grace his return from the campaign. The headquarters of the French were at Great Passet, so called in contradistinction to Little Passet, situated a mile lower in the valley. Great Passet has some thirty roofs, and is situated on an immense ledge of rock which runs out from the foot of Mont Guinevert, some eight hundred feet above the stream, and right opposite Balsiglia. The ruts worn by the cannon and baggage wagons of the French army are still visible on the flanks of this rocky ledge. These marks are unquestionably the memorials of the siege, for no other wheeled vehicles ever were in these mountains.

Having reconnoitered, Catinat, on the 1st of May, A. D. 1690, ordered the assault to be made on that side of the Balsiglia which alone offers any chance of success. At every other point a wall of rock rises up, but at this a stream trickles down from the mountains and makes a gradual slope. But Henri Arnaud had taken care to fortify this point with strong palisades. Five hundred picked men, supported by seven thousand musketeers, advanced to storm the fortress. Rushing forward with ardor, they threw themselves upon the palisades, which they could not tear down, formed as they were of great trunks fastened by mighty bowlders. The Vaudois were massed behind the defense, the younger men loading the muskets and the veterans taking steady aim. At every volley the besiegers fell in dozens. When the Waldenses saw that the assailants were beginning to waver, they, with sword in hand, made a fierce sally, and cut in pieces those whom the musket had spared. A few score only of the five hundred picked soldiers lived to reach the main body of the army which from the valley beheld their total rout. It may appear incredible, but the statement is true that not a Vaudois was killed or wounded, not one of them was touched by a bullet. The fire-works which Catinat was anxious to have ready for the celebration of his victory were not needed that night, and the men of Pinerolo were disappointed.

The French were now convinced that the fortress could not be reduced by other means, and accordingly brought up their cannon. The preparations being complete, the last and grand assault was made on the 14th of May. An immense knoll extends across the ravine, in which the recent conflict occurred, and is on an equal level with the point where the Waldenses had constructed their lower intrenchments. To this rock the cannon were hoisted up to play upon the

fortress. Never before had the rocks of San Martino been shaken by the sound of artillery. It was the morning of Whit-Sunday, and the Waldenses were preparing to celebrate the Lord's-supper when they heard the first boom from the enemy's battery. The cannonading continued all day, its terrible noises re-echoing from rock to rock, and rolling upwards to the summits of the Col du Pis and the Mont Guinevert, being still further heightened by the thousands of musketeers who were stationed all around the Balsiglia. When night came the ramparts of the Waldenses were in ruins and it was evident that the defense could not be maintained any longer. What was now to be done? For the moment the cannonading had ceased, but the attack would certainly be renewed at dawn.

The Vaudois had been frequently threatened with utter destruction, but never before did it appear to impend so inevitably over them. To remain where they were was certain death, yet no way of escape opened to them. The unscalable precipices of the Col du Pis rose behind them, and the valley swarming with their foes was beneath them. If they should wait until the morning dawned it would be impossible to pass the enemy without being seen, and the night was rendered almost as bright as day by the numerous camp-fires which burned beneath them. But the hour of their extremity was the time of God's opportunity. Often before there seemed to be a special divine interposition in their behalf, but perhaps it was never so strikingly displayed as now. The Vaudois looked in every direction to find some way of escape from the net which inclosed them, but in vain. Suddenly the mist began to gather on the summits of the mountains around them. They immediately recognized the old mantle that covered their fathers in the hour of peril. It crept lower and yet lower on the great mountains. Now it touched the supreme peak of the Balsiglia. Will it mock their hopes? Will it only touch and not cover their military camp? The Vaudois behold it still rolling downward until its white fleecy billows cover the war-battered fortress. The handful of heroic defenders are now within its sheltering folds. As yet they dared not attempt escape because the watch-fires burned brightly in the valley. But in a few minutes more the mist in its downward course reached the enemy's camp, and all was dark. A Tartarean gloom filled the gorge of San Martino. While the garrison stood mute, pondering what the next moment would develop, Captain Poulat, a native of that region, broke the silence by commanding them to be of good courage, for he was acquainted with the paths and would conduct them in safety



past the French and Piedmontese lines by a track known only to himself. Crawling on their hand and knees and passing close to the French sentinels, yet concealed from them by the mist, they descended frightful precipices and escaped. "He who has not seen such paths," says Arnaud in his "*Rentrée Glorieuse*," "can not conceive the danger of them, and will be inclined to consider my account of the march mere fiction. But it is strictly true, and I must add the place is so frightful that even some of the Vaudois themselves were terror-struck when they saw, by daylight, the nature of the spot they had passed in the dark." When the day appeared every eye in the plain below was directed toward the Balsiglia. On that day the four hundred ropes which Catinat had brought with him were to be put in requisition, and the *feux de joie*, so long prepared, were to be lighted in Pinerolo.

To the amazement of the enemy the Vaudois had escaped, and could be seen climbing the snowy sides of the distant mountains, far beyond the reach of their would-be captors. Well might they sing: "Our soul is escaped as a bird out of the snare of the fowler: the snare is broken and we are escaped." During several days they wandered from hill to hill, or concealed themselves in the wood, suffering great privations and encountering numerous perils. At last they succeeded in reaching the Pra del Tor. When they arrived at this celebrated and hallowed spot, they were astonished and delighted to find deputies from their prince, the duke of Savoy, with overtures of peace. The Vaudois were as men that dream. An overture of peace! It seemed incredible. What did it mean? A coalition, including Germany, Great Britain, Holland, and Spain, had been formed to check the ambition of France, and three days had been given to Victor Amadeus to decide what course he would pursue. He resolved to break with Louis XIV and unite with the "Leaguers." In such a contest, to whom could he so well commit the keys of the Alps as to his trusty Vaudois? Hence the overtures that met them in the Pra del Tor. Ever willing to rally around the throne of their prince, they accepted the terms of peace. Their towns and lands were restored; their churches were reopened for Protestant worship; their brethren, still in prison at Turin, were liberated, and the colonists of their countrymen had passports to return to their homes. Thus, after a gloomy interval of three years and a half, the valleys were again peopled with their ancient race, and resounded with their ancient songs.

## CHAPTER XXX.

*FOREIGN RULE IN ITALY—PROMINENT POPES AND WRITERS.*

**D**URING nearly the whole of the eighteenth century Italy was the battle-ground of Europe. Many of the most prominent questions of the period were fought out on its soil, and its territory was divided at pleasure by foreign sovereigns, who never regarded or consulted the wishes of the Italian people as to these arrangements. The war of the Spanish succession had a most important bearing upon the destinies of Italy, which was the scene of a part of it. By the peace of Utrecht, A. D. 1713, the Emperor Charles VI received Milan, Naples, and Sardinia. The duke of Mantua, having been the ally of France in this war, was deprived of his duchy. The duke of Savoy, for his assistance to the house of Austria, was given the island of Sicily, with the title of king, and in the same year was crowned at Palermo. Thus Italy passed from under the power of Spain into the hands of Austria; a change for the better, though the Austrian rule proved to be very oppressive. Savoy also received Montferrat, Alessandria, and some towns in Lombardy, and was recognized by the treaty as an independent power, or in other words, was relieved of all its former obligations to the empire.

Philip V, of Spain, was not satisfied with the provisions of the treaty of Utrecht, and was determined to regain a footing in Italy at the earliest opportunity. On the death of his wife, who was the daughter of the duke of Savoy, he married Elizabeth Farnese, the heiress of the duke of Parma. This marriage made him the lawful heir to that duchy, and to Piacenza, and also gave him a claim to the succession to the grand duchy of Tuscany, the reigning duke of which was childless, as the queen of Spain claimed to be descended from a daughter of Duke Cosmo II. This marriage greatly displeased the Emperor Charles VI, who was himself a candidate for the succession to the duchy of Tuscany. Philip was not yet satisfied with what he had done, but, in violation of the terms of the treaty of Utrecht, seized the island of Sardinia, which was held by the Austrians, and prepared to send an army into Sicily. England, France, Holland, and the emperor made a league known as the Quadruple Alliance, and an English fleet under Admiral Byng was dispatched to the Mediterranean in the Summer of 1718. Byng annihilated the

Spanish fleet in a battle off Cape Passaro, and Spain was compelled to relinquish Sardinia. The king of Sicily was believed to have favored the course of Philip, and was obliged to surrender his island kingdom to Austria, which gave him in exchange for it the barren and rocky island of Sardinia. The emperor by this transfer became king of the two Sicilies, as he was already king of Naples. The duke of Savoy was thus cut off from participation in the disputes between Austria and Spain, and was able to give his whole attention to the development of his kingdom. One of the first acts of Victor Amadeus was to deprive the Jesuits of their control of public education, as the power they enjoyed in consequence of this control had made them dangerous to the welfare of the state. This action was very popular, and did much to strengthen the national feeling in the new kingdom.

The conduct of Victor Amadeus II toward the Waldenses is discreditable to his name and reign. These unfortunate people, in the wonderful providence of God, were saved from extermination by the rupture which occurred between Savoy and France, A. D. 1701. The duke seemed to feel that he had done wrong in his former severe treatment of them, and was disposed to do all that he could to assure them of his good will. They were now restored to their native valleys, and cheerfully went to work to cultivate their little farms, and endeavored in the joys of the present to forget the sorrows of the past. And no sooner did the duke of Savoy ask their assistance in the long war which he was compelled to carry on against the French than they promptly rendered it. Such were their bravery and fidelity, that not only did they often gain the applause of their native prince, Victor Amadeus II, but also that of Prince Eugene of Savoy, who entered Lombardy in May, A. D. 1701, with a powerful force, raised the siege of Turin, and drove the French under Marshal Catinat from the region between the Adige and the Adda. This war, which secured the safety of the Waldenses, was prosecuted with great vigor. Marshal Villeroi succeeded Catinat, but was defeated by Eugene at Chiari and Cremona, and the year closed disastrously to the French. The French and Spanish forces were commanded for a few months, A. D. 1702, by Philip V, but no decisive battles were fought in Piedmont. In August, A. D. 1705, the French under the duke of Vendome defeated Prince Eugene at Cassano. In April, A. D. 1706, Eugene gained a victory of the French at Calcinato, and was preparing to follow up this success by driving them out of Turin, when he was ordered to join the allied forces in Flanders. In the Autumn of



the same year, Turin was invested by the French, under the duke of Orleans, nephew of the king of France, and Marshal Marsin. The duke of Savoy fled, and was compelled to seek refuge among the Waldenses in the Valley of Rora; but, receiving information that Prince Eugene was returning from Flanders, he went forth with some troops to meet him, and after uniting their forces, both advanced to the relief of Turin. On the 7th of September, A. D. 1706, the French intrenchments were stormed, and the besieging army scattered toward the Alps in utter confusion, with the loss of their camp and their whole train of siege artillery. Lombardy was at once occupied by the victors, and Charles VII was proclaimed at Milan. The French were obliged to abandon the whole of Northern Italy, and a small force of allies under Marshal Daun conquered the kingdom of Naples, and proclaimed Charles III, the Austrian archduke, king of the two Sicilies.

After the valuable services rendered by the Waldenses to Prince Eugene and Victor Amadeus in these conflicts, which ended with the peace of Utrecht, on the 11th of April, A. D. 1713, these brave sons of the Alps no doubt expected to enjoy tranquillity at least during the remainder of the reign of the duke of Savoy. But these poor, oppressed subjects soon realized that it was impossible for any of the weak and bigoted house of Savoy to be merciful to Protestants. Victor Amadeus, two years before his abdication, which occurred A. D. 1730, caused the governor of Pignerol to receive the oath of allegiance from the Waldenses, and promised them security in their possessions. And yet at the same time he diminished their territory by taking from them the Valley of Pragela, and issued an order that all who had not been born in the "Valleys" should abandon them forever. Hence about three thousand Protestant French and Swiss who had been living among the Waldenses, some of them nearly forty years, were compelled to retire to Switzerland, and afterwards to Germany, where they organized a synod which embraced fifteen Churches. When they started on their journey the duke had given them an order on the commissariat for bread; but a courier overtook the miserable fugitives on Mont Cenis, and under the pretense that something was wrong in the form of the order, obtained it, and carried it back to Turin, leaving them to make their way as best they could, through Savoy to Switzerland, without bread. This unjust decree of banishment was an evident infraction of the treaty made, A. D. 1704, between the king of Sardinia and Queen Anne of England, stipulating that the inhabitants of the Valley of Pragela,

in particular, should be left in the free exercise of their religion. Victor Amadeus undoubtedly entertained kind feelings toward his Waldensian subjects. He had not forgotten how nobly they defended him when he was a refugee, and he remembered the silver goblet which, on his departure, he presented, as a token of his gratitude to the family of Durand Canton, by whom he had been hospitably received. In his subsequent severe treatment of his faithful subjects he acted in accordance with the instructions of the court of Rome, which he feared to disobey.

After abdicating in favor of his son, Charles Emmanuel III, the father became dissatisfied, and immediately tried to recover the power he had surrendered; but he failed, and was imprisoned in the castle of Rivoli, where he died, A. D. 1732. The new ruler of Sardinia entered into an alliance with Louis XV, of France, and Philip V, of Spain, to drive the Austrians out of Italy. The Farnese family having become extinct, the duchies of Parma and Piacenza were given, A. D. 1731, to the Spanish prince, Charles. Don Carlos, the son of Philip V, was to receive the two Sicilies, and the duchies named above and the duchy of Milan were to go to Sardinia. Charles Emmanuel III soon overran all of Milan but Mantua. Spain having been deprived of all her Italian possessions by the peace of Utrecht, Philip V resolved to recover some of the lost territory, and, therefore, during the war of the Polish succession, he seized Naples and Sicily where the Austrian rule was detested, and conferred them upon Don Carlos, who became king as Charles III, and with whom began the reign of the Spanish Bourbons at Naples. The war of the allies against Austria commenced in October, A. D. 1733, and was closed by the treaty of Vienna, in November, A. D. 1738. The interests of the king of Sardinia were entirely sacrificed by his allies. Don Carlos was acknowledged king of the two Sicilies, and abandoned his claims upon the duchies. The Medici family had become extinct, A. D. 1737, and the grand duchy of Tuscany was bestowed upon Francis Stephen of Lorraine, the husband of Maria Theresa, the Austrian empress, and the daughter and heiress of the Emperor Charles VI; and the duchy of Parma was given up to the emperor, who was allowed to retain Milan and Mantua. The king of Sardinia, cheated at every point, received Novara and Tortona, which were cut off from the duchy of Milan.

The war of the Austrian succession overturned all these arrangements, and made Italy the scene of a terrible and destructive conflict. The object of the war was to exclude Maria Theresa from the

succession to the dominions of her father, the Emperor Charles VI. Both parties sought the alliance of the king of Sardinia, whose action would control that of Lombardy. He at first embraced the cause of the allies, but after the war began abandoned them and supported Maria Theresa, whose rights were gallantly upheld by her Hungarian subjects. The king was anxious to add the republic of Genoa to his possessions, as he desired a seaport; and the Genoese, in alarm, gave the French and Spanish forces a free passage through their territory into the dominions of Sardinia. These forces defeated the Sardinian army, A. D. 1745, and occupied the duchy of Milan. In the same year Francis of Lorraine, the grand duke of Tuscany, and the husband of Maria Theresa, was elected emperor, and the war was ended in Germany. Thus relieved at home, the empress queen sent an army to the assistance of Sardinia. The combined armies of Austria and Sardinia defeated the French and Spaniards in the severe battle of Piacenza, A. D. 1746, and the Austrians marched to Genoa, which surrendered at the first demand, and occupied the city. The tyranny of the invaders drove the Genoese into a revolt on the 5th of December, and the Austrians retreating from the city withdrew beyond the Apennines. The treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, signed in October, A. D. 1748, ended the war.

By this treaty Parma, Piacenza, and Guastalla were erected into a separate state, and given to Don Philip, the son of the king of Spain, and the brother of the king of the Two Sicilies. The republic of Genoa and the duchy of Modena and its dependencies were placed under the protection of France, to which power Genoa ceded the island of Corsica. During the life-time of the Emperor Francis I his grand duchy of Tuscany was almost a province of Austria. It was given, A. D. 1765, by the emperor to his third son, Peter Leopold, and became independent once more. Leopold reigned with despotic power, but he was a wise ruler and a benefactor to his people. He reformed the evils which had grown up around the administration of justice, brought the clergy under the control of the state, diminished the number of monks, and abolished the "Inquisition" in his dominions. He drained the unhealthy valley of the Chiana and converted it into a fertile region, and was engaged in draining the Maremma when, on the 20th of September, A. D. 1790, he was elected emperor of Austria. He appointed his second son, Ferdinand, his successor in Tuscany.

From the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle to the period of the French invasion Italy was at peace. Charles Emmanuel III, of Sardinia,



employed this interval in advancing the prosperity of his kingdom. He ruled with despotic power, and kept the Church and the Jesuits down with a firm hand. He did this, not because these powers were enemies of the freedom of Italy, but because they were rivals to him in his own dominions. While he encouraged agriculture, and did something for the cause of education, his reign was destructive of the liberties of his people, who had little cause to regret his death, which occurred, A. D. 1773. He was succeeded by his son, Victor Amadeus III, who formed a close alliance with France, and introduced into his kingdom the Bourbon plan of tyranny.

While the prominent Roman Catholic nations—Austria, Spain, and France—were struggling in Italy for political supremacy, they had not time to promote the interests of the Papal See. Hence, during the eighteenth century the flames of persecution were measurably extinguished, and the spirit of toleration prevailed to a considerable extent. There were some persecutions, but, as a general rule, people were permitted to enjoy the liberty of thinking and acting for themselves. Clement XI succeeded to the papal throne, A. D. 1700, and is chiefly remarkable for having published the famous bull which, from its initial letters, is entitled *Unigenitus*. It was issued in opposition to the Jansenists, and defined and settled the articles of the Romish faith. This pontiff favored Louis XIV and the Jesuits in their persecutions of the Jansenists. Innocent XIII followed Clement, but his reign was not marked by any distinguished event. Benedict XIII, who succeeded Innocent, was a man of eminent piety, and, besides, possessed the qualities of liberality, frugality, and industry. He once entertained the thought of uniting all Christendom, *Catholic, Greek, and Protestant*, in one communion, but the times were not favorable. For the purpose of reforming the errors of the Church he assembled the famous council which met in the palace of the Lateran, A. D. 1725, the acts and decrees of which were made public, but proved utterly ineffectual to the ends which were proposed from them. Benedict XIII died, A. D. 1730, and was succeeded by Clement XII, who reigned during the next decade. His pontificate was marked by the introduction of state lotteries and low finances. He was followed by Benedict XIV, a pious, scholarly, and judicious man, who exhibited wisdom and prudence in managing the difficult questions that arose during his administration. In his reign the Jesuits were threatened in Portugal, and the Jansenists obtained more power.

Clement XIII, who ascended the pontifical throne on the 6th of

July, A. D. 1758, was a Venetian by birth and an ascetic in religion. He was a bigot to every petty ceremony, and his spirit and manner belonged to the twelfth instead of the eighteenth century. Indeed, the celebrated Ganganelli seems to have perfectly characterized his two predecessors in a few words when he said, "Benedict had written and Clement had prayed much." The latter exhibited the haughtiness of the Venetian character in the dispute in which he involved himself on account of the Jesuits with all the branches of the house of Bourbon, who threatened to withdraw their dominions from the spiritual jurisdiction of Rome. He endeavored to restore the papacy to its former greatness, but sank it lower than he found it, leaving the papal dignity in a critical situation, from which all the prudence and moderation of his successor could scarcely emancipate it.

Laurenzo Ganganelli, the son of a physician at St. Archangelo, and the only regular in the Sacred College at the time of his election (being of the order of Minor Conventuals), was chosen on the 19th of May, A. D. 1769, and assumed the title of Clement XIV. After completing his studies, he had obtained the regency of his college, and was afterward promoted to the office of consular to the "Holy Office." This employment, which included that of pope's minister in all inquisitorial concerns, made him prominent. He was studious, learned, of pure morals, and of genuine piety. His elevation to the papal throne was, no doubt, the result of a concentrated effort made by the "forcing courts," as the courts of Spain, Portugal, and Naples were termed from their always taking an active part in the election of a pope. The indecision of Clement XIII concerning the suppression of the Jesuits had been very offensive to them, and they resolved to secure the election of an ecclesiastic who would execute their will. He became very popular by diminishing several taxes, which were oppressive to the poor, and manifested his liberality and taste by enriching the Clementine museum. He was modest and unaffected, and practiced extreme temperance. Finding his chamber in the Vatican hung with crimson damask, he ordered it to be removed, and observed that bare walls were sufficient for a plain monk. No other occupant of the papal chair ever exhibited so much humility, as he performed every office about his person as long as he was able rather than incommode his attendants. He adopted frugal regulations in his domestic economy, and distributed the savings among the necessitous poor, in the relieving of whom he indulged himself as a favorite amusement.

Clement endeavored with honest but mistaken zeal to reform the

Jesuitical order, but after several years of fruitless effort he abandoned the undertaking. On the 21st of July, A. D. 1773, he issued the famous bull, "*Dominus ac Redemptor Noster*," by which he dissolved and forever annihilated the order as a corporate body at a moment when it counted according to Duller's "History of the Jesuits," twenty-two thousand members. The bull justified itself by a long and formidable list of charges against the society. Had this accusation proceeded from a Protestant pen it might have been regarded as not free from exaggerations, but coming from the papal chair it must be accepted as sober truth. It charged the Jesuits with raising various insurrections and rebellions, with plotting against bishops, undermining the regular monastic orders, and invading pious foundations and corporations of every kind, not only in Europe, but also in America and Asia, to the danger of souls and the astonishment of all nations. It accused them of engaging in trade, and that instead of seeking to convert the heathen they had shown themselves intent only on gathering gold and silver and precious jewels. The bull also declares that the Jesuits had interpolated pagan rites and manners with Christian beliefs and worship, set aside the ordinances of the Church, and substituted opinions which the apostolic chair had pronounced *fundamentally erroneous and evidently subversive of good morals*. Clement further stated that tumults, disturbances, and violent commotions had followed them in all countries; that they had broken the peace of the Church, and so incurably that the pontificates of his predecessors, Urban VIII, Clements IX, X, XI, and XII, Alexanders VII and VIII, Innocents X, XI, XII, and XIII, and Benedict XIV, had been passed in abortive efforts to re-establish the harmony and discord which they had destroyed.

After this severe arraignment of the Jesuitical order, the bull affirmed that the peace of the Church would never be restored while the institution existed, and the necessity of the papal decree was therefore apparent. It dispossessed the Jesuits "of every office, service, and administration;" took away from them "their houses, schools, hospitals, estates;" withdrew all "their statutes, usages, decrees, customs, and ordinances;" and pronounced all the power of the General Provincial Visitors, and every other head of the same order, whether spiritual or secular, "to be forever annulled and suppressed." "The present ordinance," said the bull, in conclusion, "shall remain in full force and operation from henceforth and forever."

When Clement XIV laid down his pen, after signing his name to the bull, he said to his friends around him that he had signed his



death-warrant—"Sotto scriviamo la nostra morte." He was at that time in robust health, and his vigorous constitution and temperate habits promised a long life. But now dark rumors began to be whispered in Italy that the pontiff would die soon. In April of the following year he began to decline without any apparent cause, his illness increased, no medicine was of any avail, and, after lingering in torture for months, he died on the 22d of September, A. D. 1774. "Several days before his death," says Caraccioli, "his bones were exfoliated, and withered like a tree, which, attacked at its roots, withers away and throws off his bark. The scientific men who were called in to embalm the body found the features livid, the lips black, the abdomen inflated, the limbs emaciated and covered with violet spots. The size of the heart was diminished and all his muscles were shrunk up, and his spine was decomposed. They filled the body with perfumed and aromatic substances, but nothing could dispel the mephitic effluvia." It was generally believed that Clement had been made to drink the "*Aqua Tofana*," a spring in Perugia more famous than healthful; but, no matter how administered, poison served the purpose of the Jesuits, whose unforgiving pride and deadly vengeance demanded the payment of this fearful penalty.

Clement's successor was Pius VI, who ascended the papal throne on the 15th of February, A. D. 1775. He was a man of fine appearance, of elegant manner, and of a respectable private character. Like Leo X, he was pleasant and cheerful, and fond of magnificence, art, and splendor. He was strongly attached to the Romish faith, delighted to perform the various offices and ceremonies of religion, and labored diligently to promote the interests of the papal Church. Sad events and humiliation awaited him, and he was destined to behold the decline of that system which had ruled the most powerful nations.

During the eighteenth century, art, science, and literature made some advancement in Italy. When, near the beginning of the century, the war of the Spanish succession raged in the Peninsula, under the scepter of the young Don Carlos, and afterwards of Ferdinand III, literature and the sciences were cultivated with renewed vigor. Naples produced Giannone, distinguished in the department of history, Capasso in literature, Cirillo in medicine, Mazocchi in archæology, Genovesi in political economy, one Gagliani in architecture, and another in domestic economy and philology. Filangieri rivaled Montesquieu in the philosophy of legislation; Pagano wrote on the criminal law; Poli distinguished himself in the positive sci-

ences; Maffei and Calsabigi devoted themselves to poetry. The university of Bologna was now in its splendor, its academy of sciences taking the name of "The Institute." Marsigli, Stratico, Cesarotti, Foscarini, the brothers Gozzi, Morelli, Maffei, Pompei, Lorenzi, Mazzuchelli, and Serassi made the city of Venice illustrious; but political jealousy prevented the culture of the economical and legislative sciences there, which under Beccaria and others were making great progress in other parts of Italy.

In Tuscany the famous French encyclopædia was republished. In the cities of Lombardy flourished Scopoli, Fontana, Frank, Tissot, Spallanzani, Bertola, Villa, Natali, Volta, Scarpa, Tamburini, Parini, Beccaria, Verri, Landriani, Agnesi, Carli, and others, devoted to literature, art, science, and the development of political and ethical principles. Bodoni raised the art of typography to an admirable elegance. Prominent among the patrons of literature was Victor Amadeus II of Savoy. The Italian drama had as yet attained to excellence only in the opera, and lacked superior tragedies and comedies. The "Merope" of Maffei was the best tragedy produced in the early part of the century. A greater influence, however, was exerted upon his age and upon literature by Alfieri. This celebrated poet was born in Piedmont, A. D. 1749. Of patrician birth, after eight years of "ineducation," as he styles it, with an absolutely "anti-geometric" head, that could not comprehend the fourth proposition in Euclid at the age of twenty-seven, without ever having read a tragedy, without having acquired even his own native language, he resolves to be a tragic poet. He becomes a child again, plunging, "Curtius-like," into the abysses of grammar; studies Italian and Latin; doffs the cothurnus; and then goes to Florence to accustom himself "to speak, hear, think, and dream in beautiful Tuscan." There he met the countess of Albany, who became henceforth his inspiration; and then, having watched over him during his last illness, in 1803 erected his mausoleum. Alfieri was truly the head of an important school of tragedy. He was hostile alike to the operatic lightness of the



VITTORIO ALFIERI.

Italian drama and to the formal and complicated intrigues of the French, but went to an opposite extreme, demanding in tragedy both the utmost intensity of passion and the utmost simplicity of treatment. He was the poet of energetic action and profound thought and feeling, as Metastasio was of love. Indeed, Alfieri bears the same relation to Italian tragedy that Tasso does to the Italian epic, or Goldoni to Italian comedy. He was at the same time its founder and its most brilliant illustrator. An ardent lover of liberty and a pronounced republican, he wrote an ode on "Free America," and dedicated his "Brutus" to Washington. The writer, while visiting the church of Santa Croce at Florence, beheld Alfieri's monument, wrought by Canova, and was not surprised at what may appear to be an extravagant description of it by one who called it "the tomb of Sophocles, sculptured by Phidias." Though not a Shakespeare, the tragic poet of Florence deserves a high rank in Italian literature, and Italy is not inappropriately represented by the artist as a weeping mourner at his tomb.

A reformation in the Italian comedy was effected by Goldoni, the only genuine comic poet that Italy can boast. The most illustrious historians were Muratori, Maffei, Denina, Mazzucchelli, Tiraboschi, and Lanzi. The writings of Muratori and Tiraboschi still maintain their reputation, both for erudition and criticism. In archæology, the names of Fabretti, Gori, Mazzocchi, Martorelli, Passeri, and Carli were distinguished. Vico founded the new science of the philosophy of history, and Parini excelled in satirical poetry.

---

## CHAPTER XXXI.

### *THE FRENCH CAMPAIGN IN ITALY.*

THE outbreak of the French Revolution did not immediately affect Italy, although it seemed to threaten the despotisms of that country with ruin. The French republic was established A. D. 1792, and Savoy and Nice were seized and made parts of the French territory. Under a new government France made peace, A. D. 1795, with all the states of Europe that had been opposing her, save England, Austria, and Sardinia. The Archduke Charles of Austria having repulsed the armies of the republic, the French directory resolved to attack that power through Italy, which was



destined to become the principal theater of the war, and three armies were accordingly organized for the campaign of 1796. Two of these were designed for service in Germany, under Generals Moreau and Jourdan; the third was to operate in Italy under General Bonaparte, who had already given proof of his great genius as a soldier. He was a native of the island of Corsica, and of Italian descent, and since his victory over the sections he had been promoted to the command of the army of the interior. On the 23d of February, A. D. 1796, when only twenty-seven years of age, he was appointed to the command of the army of Italy, and reached the headquarters at Nice on the 27th of March.

The army of Italy numbered about thirty-five thousand men, and was in a wretched state of discipline, and in want of clothing and provisions. Opposed to it was an army of sixty thousand splendid Austrian and Piedmontese troops. Bonaparte soon infused into his own wretched force his own enthusiastic energy, and electrified his men with the promise of victory and wealth in Italy. He then began a forward movement upon Genoa, his plan being to interpose his army between the imperialists and Piedmontese, and prevent their union. Only a few weeks before his troops were a band of malcontents, but now they followed him with enthusiasm. 'Napoleon's plan was completely successful. The Austrians fell back toward Milan, and the Piedmontese toward Turin. A detachment of the Austrians was defeated at Montenotte; and Bonaparte, pursuing the Piedmontese army, captured the fortified town of Cherasco, and entirely cut off the Sardinians from the imperialists. He then compelled the king of Sardinia to accept a humiliating armistice, and forced him to cede Savoy and Nice to France, to expel all French emigrants, even his own daughters, who were the wives of the brothers of Louis XVI, from his dominions, and to place Alexandria, Tortona, and the other chief fortresses of his kingdom in the hands of the French as surety for his neutrality until the conclusion of a general peace.

After concluding this armistice Bonaparte marched at once against the Austrians, and defeated them in the desperate battle of Lodi, on the 10th of May, driving them back to the Mincio. Milan was uncovered by this retreat, and was occupied by the French, amid the rejoicings of the people, on the 15th of May. The French directory were astonished at these rapid successes, and alarmed at the boldness of the young general in venturing to treat independently with the Piedmontese king. Desiring to restrain him, they proposed to divide the command in Italy between him and General Kellerman; but

Bonaparte would not consent to the arrangement, and offered his resignation to the directory. His brilliant successes in Italy had rendered him so popular at home that the directory did not dare to accept his resignation, and left him without interference. From his headquarters at Milan Bonaparte dictated peace to the minor princes of Italy, and compelled them to purchase it upon his own conditions. Money, materials of war, and works of art were demanded from them, and sent to Paris to supply the needs of the republic and adorn the French capital.

After allowing his army twelve days of rest at Milan Bonaparte advanced to Mantua, and laid siege to that strong fortress. It was the chief Austrian stronghold in Italy, and the key to all further operations in that country. An Austrian army was dispatched to its relief under Marshal Wurmser, one of the most trusted generals of the empire. While it was on the march, Bonaparte left a strong detachment to continue the blockade of Mantua, and by a rapid movement overran the States of the Church with the rest of his army, and dictated an armistice with the Papal See. Pope Pius VI was compelled to pay to France the sum of twenty-one millions of francs, together with one hundred valuable pictures and other works of art, and to allow Bologna, Ferrara, and Ancona to be garrisoned by the French. The grand duke of Tuscany was compelled to receive a French garrison at Leghorn, in order to prevent the English from trading with that port. Marshal Wurmser, at the head of seventy thousand men, twice entered Italy from the Tyrol to relieve Mantua. He was no match for his youthful opponent, and was defeated at Brescia, Castiglione, Roveredo, and Bassano. Finding that he was unable to hold the field, Wurmser, on the 19th of September, retired with the remainder of his army within the walls of Mantua, which fortress was well-provisioned and capable of enduring a long siege.

The defeat of Moreau and Jourdan in Germany, and their retreat across the Rhine into France, left the army in Italy to bear the full weight of the Austrian power, and a third Austrian army, sixty thousand strong, was assembled under Marshal Alvinzi for the purpose of driving Bonaparte out of Italy. The French were far inferior in strength to the Austrians, and Alvinzi believed he would have an easy victory. In the first part of the campaign the Austrians were successful, and the French army became disheartened, but Bonaparte, by a series of bold and rapid movements, soon changed the conditions of affairs. On the 14th of November he attacked Alvinzi at Arcola, and in a three days' battle drove him back upon Montebello,

and re-entered Verona in triumph. Alvinzi was re-enforced, and early in January, A. D. 1797, appeared on the Adige with an army of sixty thousand men. On the 14th of January he was utterly routed at Rivoli. The French were greatly inferior in force to the Austrians, and the victory was therefore due to the superior genius of Bonaparte. It was followed by the surrender of Mantua by Wurmser on the 2d of February, by which the French received twenty thousand prisoners of war.

Bonaparte now invaded the papal territories and rapidly overran them. He was ordered by the French directory to destroy the papal government, but on his own responsibility disregarded these instructions, and concluded with the helpless pontiff the treaty of Tolentino on the 19th of February, by which Pius VI ceded to France the legations of Bologna, Ferrara, and the Romagna and Avignon and its territory in France, and paid a second contribution of fifteen millions of francs and a number of the choicest art treasures of Rome. Thus far the brilliant success of Bonaparte had won for France a third of the papal states and Savoy and Nice; had detached the king of Sardinia, and the states of northern and central Italy from the coalition against France, and had laid Genoa and Venice under heavy contributions. The expenses of the campaign had not only been defrayed by the conquered territory, but Bonaparte had been able to remit thirty millions of francs to the directory. The officers and men of the conquering army had grown rich from the spoils of war. Piedmont and Lombardy had been conquered, and four Austrian armies had been defeated or captured. It was the most brilliant campaign that had been conducted by the French since the commencement of the war. The Italians believed at first that the French had come to deliver them from their old tyrants, and they everywhere rose against their rulers and drove out the monks and priests. They soon found, however, that the French were not so disinterested, and that they intended to rule the Peninsula. A growing enmity to the French was now developed in all parts of Italy, and hostilities soon broke out between the Italians and the French. At Verona the garrison left by Napoleon was massacred by the people, and violent outbreaks occurred at Bergamo and other places. Bonaparte at once marched into the Venetian territory, having first declared war against the republic. The city of Venice was occupied by a French division; the Venetian republic was overthrown; the "Council of Ten" abolished, and a democratic government organized. The French levied a fine of six millions of francs upon the republic, occu-



pied its territory with garrisons, and carried off to Paris a large number of works of art, manuscripts, etc. The Venetians surrendered the government without a struggle, and thus perished the ancient commonwealth of Venice. But while deprived of the privileges of a republic, the people were delivered from many abuses that had afflicted them.

On the 17th of October, A. D. 1797, the treaty of Campo Formio was concluded between France and Austria. By its terms Lombardy, Parma, and Modena, the papal states of Bologna, Ferrara, and the Romagna and the Venetian territory, as far as the Adige, were organized into an independent state called the "Cisalpine Republic." Venice and all her dependencies in the Adriatic were given to Austria, who occupied them with her troops in the early part of the year 1798. Napoleon also created the "Ligurian Republic," with Genoa for its capital; the "Cispadane Republic," with its capital at Bologna; and the "Tiberine Republic," whose capital was Rome. Naples was captured by the French A. D. 1798, and made the capital of the "Parthenopæan Republic." A second coalition had been formed against France by Russia, Turkey, Great Britain, Austria, and the Two Sicilies. The king of the Two Sicilies, before the treaties were signed between these powers, advanced upon Rome with an army of forty thousand men; but the French repulsed this force, pursued King Ferdinand IV into the Neapolitan territories and compelled him to take refuge in Sicily.

As Napoleon had declined to obey the instructions of the French directory respecting the papal government, General Berthier was sent on a special mission to Rome. He found the people thoroughly discontented, and they received him as a deliverer. After proclaiming the restoration of the republic, he made Pope Pius VI a prisoner and stripped him of all his property. The unfortunate pontiff was conveyed to the convent of Sienna, and subsequently removed to France, where, after being detained in captivity, he died in the eighty-second year of his age. In the Summer of 1799 the French army pillaged Rome, and the efforts of the people to protect their property were unavailing. Berthier, who had promised to respect the private possessions of the citizens, was disgusted with the course of the directory and the conduct of his own army, and demanded to be recalled.

In the mean time France, having lost her hold upon Italy, was alarmed at the situation. A powerful Russian army under the famous Marshal Suwarof had entered the Peninsula and formed a junction with the Austrians under General Kray. This force successively

defeated the French army under General Sherer at Verona and Magnano. Sherer was succeeded by Moreau, who was defeated by Suwarof at Cassano. The allies then occupied Milan, and Moreau would have been crushed had not the Austian government ordered Suwarof to lay siege to Mantua, Peschiera, and other places that were considered essential to the preservation of the territory already won. Profiting by this delay, Moreau took position at Coni, where he could communicate with Genoa and with France. Re-enforcements were hastening to him, but desiring to distinguish himself by some decisive act before their arrival, Moreau left his position and attacked Suwarof near the Trebia and was utterly routed. This defeat was followed by the loss of Piedmont. The allies occupied Turin, Pignerol, Susa, and other important points, and the Cossacks of Suwarof's army passed the Alps and invaded Dauphiné. Joubert was sent to supersede Moreau, but was defeated and slain in the bloody and decisive battle of Novi on the 15th of August, 1799. A combined force of Russians, Turks, and Neapolitans advanced upon Rome, which was surrendered by the French on the 27th of September. Later in the same year the city of Naples was taken by the army of Ferdinand IV and the English fleet under Lord Nelson. After a short existence the "Parthenopæan Republic" was overthrown, and the government of Ferdinand IV re-established by Cardinal Ruffo, the leading patriots having surrendered the castle on condition that they should be allowed to go to France. The capitulation was broken by Lord Nelson, and the liberals who had already embarked on ship-board, and who numbered many of the best and most learned men in Naples, were all executed. By these reverses all of central and southern Italy were lost to the French, who had already been driven from northern Italy.

## Part IV.

### PAPAL DARKNESS DISAPPEARING.

#### CENTURY XIX.

---

#### FIRST DECADE, 1800-1810.

---

#### CHAPTER I.

##### *ITALY UNDER FRENCH RULE.*

THE dawn of the nineteenth century found Italy still the battlefield of hostile nations. Indeed, all Europe was convulsed by the French Revolution, and the thrones of monarchy seemed to be rocking. The idea of liberty, practically illustrated in America, had deeply stirred the people of France, and, though they allowed freedom to wander unrestrained into the most extravagant and fearful license, yet the principle itself had not ceased to agitate European society. The contest in Italy had been really between republican France and despotic powers, and the Italians themselves, while in the midst of constant wars and subject to foreign invaders, were not altogether without compensations. On the whole, the period of French rule in the Peninsula was one of order and of observance of law, and something was done for the material and intellectual development of the country. But, more than all, the hope of national unity then arose in the Italian mind. Natives of different parts of the Peninsula were thrown together in the armies of Napoleon, and from this companionship derived a feeling of brotherhood which tyranny could not crush. Even the papacy proved powerless to resist the popular tide, and Pius VII, who began to reign on the 14th of March, 1800, was destined to greater humiliation than his predecessor.

Austria still continuing hostile, Napoleon resolved to take the field against her. In April, 1800, the Austrian army in Italy under Baron Melas attacked the French under Generals Soult and Masséna,



and drove them back to Genoa, while another French division under General Suchet was forced to retreat upon Borghette. Melas sent a large body of troops to besiege Genoa, while, with the remainder of his army, he followed Suchet, intending to force him back and to invade France by way of Provence. Napoleon now executed a brilliant and daring plan to expel the Austrians from Italy. He proposed to cross the Alps of Switzerland with his army and plant it in Italy in the rear of the Austrians. He began his march from Geneva with a force of thirty-five thousand men. The French engineers had examined the pass of the Great St. Bernard, and had reported that it was barely possible to cross the mountain. Napoleon at once gave orders to make the attempt. The cannon were dismounted, placed in the hollow trunks of trees, and were dragged over the frozen paths by the troops. By the most indefatigable exertions the mountain was passed, and on the 16th of May, 1800, the advanced guard of the French army, under Lannes, entered Piedmont. Another division, under General Moncey, crossed Mont St. Gothard; and a third, under General Thurneau, passed over Mont Cenis. These divisions were reunited in Lombardy, and on the 2d of June Napoleon occupied Milan without opposition. The passage of the Alps by the French army has always been regarded as one of the most remarkable feats in military history.

In the mean time Masséna, who had held Genoa for sixty days, and had defeated the efforts of the enemy to capture it, was reduced to the necessity of capitulating, and on the 5th of June evacuated the place with the remainder of his force. The exultation of the Austrians was suddenly checked by the startling news of the passage of the Alps by the French, and their presence in Milan. Napoleon was between the Austrians and their base of operations, and they must fight to recover their communications with their own country. Melas hastily fell back to Alessandria, and concentrated his forces there. Napoleon took position in the great plain of Marengo, where, on the 14th of June, the decisive battle of the campaign was fought. The Austrians were successful in the morning; but the arrival of Desaix with a fresh corps, in the afternoon, enabled Napoleon to renew the battle, and the Austrians were defeated and driven in confusion across the Bormida. Each army lost about seven thousand men killed. The heroic Desaix was mortally wounded. Their defeat left the Austrians in such a critical condition that Melas was compelled to enter into negotiations with the first consul. An agreement was signed by which the Austrian army withdrew beyond the Min-

cio, and twelve fortresses, including Milan, Turin, Genoa, Piacenza, and Alessandria, passed into the hands of the French. By his single victory Napoleon gained all the territory he had won in his earlier campaigns, and which had been lost by his absence from Italy. Austria was deprived of all that she had obtained in the northern part of the Peninsula. A suspension of hostilities was agreed upon until the Austrian commander could receive definite instructions from Vienna as to a treaty of peace; and Napoleon returned to Paris, where he was received with an ovation.

On the 9th of February, 1801, the peace of Lunéville, which confirmed the treaty of Campo Formio, was signed, by which the duke of Parma obtained Tuscany under the designation of the Etrurian Kingdom; Lombardy and Parma fell to France, and Venice to Austria. In 1802 the Cisalpine was changed into the Italian Republic, its constitution revised, and Napoleon made president. Piedmont was formally annexed to the French dominions in September of the same year, and about the same time the duchies of Parma, Piacenza, and Guastalla were seized and placed under a French administration. In 1805, when the military *régime* was completed in France, and Bonaparte had become its emperor, the same kind of monarchy was forced upon Italy, and he was crowned king of the latter country in the cathedral of Milan, on the 26th of May, the ancient iron crown of Lombardy being used on that occasion. The emperor appointed his stepson, Eugene de Beauharnais, his representative in Italy, with the title of viceroy. On the 30th of June the Genoese territory was organized as three French departments, and formally incorporated with France. Guastalla was annexed to the new Italian kingdom, and Piombino and Lucca were given in fief to Napoleon's sister, Elisa, who had married Paschal Bacciochi. By the peace of Presburg, signed on the 26th of December, 1805, Venice, Istria, and Dalmatia were added to the Italian kingdom, the area of which then comprised thirty-five thousand and four hundred square miles, with a population of five million six hundred and fifty-seven thousand. Naples had entered into a treaty of neutrality with France; but under the influence of Queen Caroline, a sister of the unfortunate Marie Antoinette, it had taken sides with the allies. Napoleon at once proclaimed that "the house of Bourbon had ceased to reign in Naples," and in February, 1806, sent a powerful army under Joseph Bonaparte and Marshal Masséna into the Neapolitan territory. The royal family fled to Sicily; Naples was occupied by the French, and the emperor conferred the Neapolitan crown upon his eldest

brother, Joseph Bonaparte. The latter was annoyed by Ferdinand, who made repeated efforts to regain his throne; but the insurrection was suppressed by the French troops.

In 1808 Joseph Bonaparte exchanged his position as king of the two Sicilies for the throne of Spain, and was succeeded by his brother-in-law, General Murat, one of the most brilliant marshals of the empire. In the same year the Etrurian kingdom and the Papal States were added to France; but Istria and Dalmatia were separated from Italy, and united to the new Illyrian kingdom, while a portion of the Tyrol was assigned to Italy. The last effort of Austria to crush the French in the Italian Peninsula having been frustrated in a series of battles extending from the 19th to the 23d of April, 1809, the supremacy of Napoleon remained undisturbed until his power was broken by the Russian campaign, and the successful rising of Germany.

---

## SECOND DECADE, 1810-1820.

---

### CHAPTER II.

#### *BIRTH OF CAVOUR—ITALY OPPRESSED—GARIBALDI.*

THE year 1810 will ever be regarded by the true Italian patriot as one of the most memorable in the history of his country. No startling political or military event occurred, and Napoleon continued to be undisputed ruler of the whole Peninsula. But the birth of one who was destined to be the deliverer of Italy rendered that year almost sacred. If the 22d of February, 1732, is a day to be revered by Americans, the 1st of August, 1810, deserves like commemoration by the Italians. The parents of Camillo Bensi di Cavour resided at Turin, where this, their second son, was born. His father, the Marquis Michael Benso di Cavour, belonged to one of the most ancient and noble families of Piedmont, and was for many years, during the reign of Carlo Alberto, mayor of the city in which he lived. The infant son and future statesman was held at the baptismal font by the Princess Pauline Borghese, sister of Napoleon I, and the Abbé Frezét, author of a history of the house of Savoy, was his first instructor.

The social center at Turin was united, though varied, and in this



wholesome and strengthening atmosphere Camillo Cavour was reared. He was a robust child, sparkling with vivacity, enjoying his own life and imparting happiness to all around him. In 1815, when the tragic warfare which swept away the French empire had made Piedmont independent, he was only five years of age. In that same year, on the 18th of June, the star of Napoleon set on the bloody field of Waterloo to rise no more, while that of Cavour, which was destined to guide Italy through its dark night to the haven of national unity and safety was just rising above the horizon. Indeed, the reign of Napoleon was virtually ended in the Peninsula in 1814. On the 11th of January, Murat, king of Naples, abandoned Napoleon, united his forces with those of Austria, and assisted in expelling the French army from Italy, which was accomplished on the 23d of April, 1814. While Cavour, in the innocence of childhood, spent happy hours under the parental roof, his native land was about to pass under the despotic rule of Austria.

After the abdication of the French emperor, Eugene Beauharnais, who had been viceroy of Milan, withdrew, and the states of Italy returned to the government of their former rulers, with the exception of Venice, which remained subject to Austria. On the return of Bonaparte from Elba, in 1815, Murat took up arms, advanced northward and entered Bologna. Driven thence, he was soon afterward defeated near Tolentino, and his power completely destroyed. The Austrian general, Nugent, entered the capital, and Murat fled to France, while his wife and family found refuge in Austria. Ferdinand returned from Sicily to Naples, and maintained with few changes the Code Napoleon and other institutions introduced by the French. Murat made a feeble attempt to recover his kingdom, and having collected a small body of troops in Corsica, landed at Pezzo, in Calabria, where he was taken prisoner, tried by a military tribunal, and shot.

To restore the political system of Europe, which had been so completely subverted, a General Congress met at Vienna, on the 1st of November, 1814. Six of the crowned heads of Europe were present, and also many princes, ambassadors, and ministers. This congress decreed a new territorial arrangement of Italy. The king of Sardinia received back all his dominions according to the boundaries existing in 1792, with some few changes in the frontier. To these were added Genoa and the territory belonging to it when a republic. The emperor of Austria received the newly elected kingdom of Venetian Lombardy, in which were included the districts of the Valteline, Bormio, and Chiavenna, with parts of the Grisons.

The valley of the Po was fixed upon as the boundary between the popedom and Parma. The house of Hapsburg again received the sovereignty which it once exercised over Modena, Reggio, Mirandola, Massa, and Carrara. Parma, Piacenza, and Guastalla fell to the Empress Maria Louisa, wife of Napoleon. The first-named was given to her as a sovereignty for her life, after which it was to fall to the duchess of Lucca and her heirs, who were to give up a territory in Bohemia to the duke of Reichstadt, the son of Napoleon and Maria Louisa. Prince Ferdinand received Tuscany and the district of Piombina, with the title of Grand Duke. He also obtained the sovereignty of the isle of Elba, on condition of reserving in that island the rights of Prince Buoncompagni Ludovisi. To the Infanta Maria Louisa, the Bourbon princess, was assigned Lucca, as a sovereign dukedom, with a yearly pension of five hundred thousand francs till the decease of the Empress Maria Louisa. The pope was fully reinstated in all his dominions, with the exception of a few small portions on the left bank of the Po; but Austria reserved the right of recruiting in Ferrara and Comacchio. Ferdinand of Naples was again acknowledged as king of both Sicilies. Malta, Gozzo, and Comino remained in the hands of England, and the republic of San Marino and the prince of Monaco were guaranteed in the enjoyment of their ancient rights.

Thus, at the end of twenty years of war, Italy was deprived of the ancient liberties of some of its provinces, and saw the Austrian rule more firmly established and extended in others. But this was not the worst feature. Her rulers, who before the French Revolution had commenced civil and religious reforms, returned with an obstinate aversion to any change. All that the country had gained was the abolition of the remnants of feudal rights and privileges, the division of feudal domains, and the extensive lands wrested from the suppressed monasteries, and the introduction of the Code Napoleon into most of its states. The restoration of the old governments, however, was not followed by the return of tranquillity, still less of contentment, among the Italians.

Vienna could not allay the spirit of national independence which was astir among the people. It was first awakened by a few poets of the last twenty years of the eighteenth century and was fostered by the allied powers themselves, whose interests were promoted by the overthrow of the French rule in Italy. The Archduke John of Austria in 1809, Lord William Bentinck in 1814 at Genoa, and General Nugent in 1815, had all promised independence to the Italians, and

excited them to arise in the name of their country's freedom and defend their own rights and their own liberties. When Murat marched into Upper Italy, in 1815, he appealed to the spirit of national independence, and even proclaimed that the freedom of Italy was the object of his expedition. It became then the favorite theme of the national literature, and was strengthened by the arrangements of the Congress of Vienna. By the extension of the Austrian power in the peninsula all the Italian sovereigns became virtually so many liege lords of the empire. The cabinet at Vienna dictated their policy, and not one of them dared to think or act for himself. Thus Ferdinand, when leaving Sicily in May, 1815, addressed a proclamation to the Neapolitans, in which he promised to be the depository of such laws as should be decreed by a constitution; but, in June of the same year, by a secret treaty, signed at Vienna, he engaged himself not to introduce into his states any principles of government irreconcilable with those adopted by Austria in her Italian provinces; and accordingly, in 1816, he put, *de facto*, an end to the Sicilian constitution of 1812. (An intense feeling of hostility to Austria now prevailed, and a deep conviction that there could not be any real improvement in the state of the Peninsula until national independence had been obtained, had taken possession of the Italian mind.

The Italian sovereigns, on returning to their respective states, neither restored the ancient order of things nor adapted their new policy to the fresh wants and altered conditions of society. In compliance with the dictates of the Holy Alliance, they undid not only what had been done under French rule, but also their own previous reforms. By an agreement with the pope, the Jesuits were restored every-where; many of the suppressed monasteries were re-established, and the mortmain laws of the eighteenth century were repealed. The taxes upon land were increased, and exports and imports checked by means of high duties. The system of passports was made much more stringent, and permission to leave one's native town, even for a few days, often denied. Elementary education was narrowed in its limits, and thrown entirely into the hands of the clergy; its highest branches were discountenanced and lowered by the expulsion from the universities of some of the ablest professors, supposed to entertain liberal views. Private lecturing or teaching was not allowed without a previous license from the ordinary and police agent. The freedom of the press was fettered more than it had ever been before, and every work, before being published, was subjected to a rigorous scrutiny. Public functionaries were changed





PIUS VII.

without any regard to justice, but merely because they had served under the former government. All who had distinguished themselves in the time of Napoleon, or who were of a liberal turn of mind, were openly persecuted or ostracized, and their movements and words suspected, watched, and reported.

In addition to all this, in the papal states ecclesiastics returned to fill all civil offices, and the Code Napoleon was withdrawn from those provinces which had formed part of the kingdom of Italy. Hence, there arose general discontent among the people, and thousands of otherwise quiet persons, either in the hope of finding redress or protection, or only out of a feeling of revenge, united with secret political societies, which had been formed during French rule for the purpose of emancipating the Peninsula. Many officers of the army were connected with them, who, at the time of the restoration, either lost their position or failed to be regularly promoted. This vast combination, supported by the general sympathies of the people, wanted but a small impulse to break out into open rebellion; and it was in vain that the government of Naples endeavored to oppose the popular movement by organizing a secret society called the *Calderari*. Thus the great evil of oath-bound political associations was sanctioned by the royal party.

When Clement XIV suppressed the Jesuits, A. D. 1773, he decreed the abolition of the society "forever," but it neither ceased to exist nor to act. Its leaders pointed to the awful tempest of the French Revolution and to the fallen thrones and desecrated altars as the expression of God's anger at the suppression of their holy order, and demanded of Pius VII its restoration. Scarcely had the latter returned to the Vatican when he issued a bull, dated the 7th of August, A. D. 1814, restoring the order and appointing Thaddeus Borzodzowsky its general or chief. It is said that this step was taken with the full approval of the allied powers, who wished to reward the Jesuits for the zeal which they manifested towards the cause of the Bourbons.

From 1815 to 1820 Italy was not disturbed by any violent commotions, though the people were restless under the oppressive rule of their princes, who were Austria's agents. In 1819 young Cavour, the coming Italian statesman, was a student in the Military Academy of Turin, the school of the noble Piedmontese youth, and by his superior ability soon obtained the position of page in the household of the prince di Carignano, the future Charles Albert. But the proud spirit of the future diplomatist chafed under the "pack-saddle," as he styled it, of his livery, so that the king soon released him from a service that was uncongenial to his sturdy and robust disposition.

At this time another youth, who was destined to play an important part in the deliverance of his country from foreign rule, was attend-



ing school at Genoa. Guiseppe Garibaldi was born at Nice on the 4th of July, 1807. His father was a sailor, and, after educating his son in the common branches, trained him to the life of a seaman in a vessel with himself. Garibaldi, in writing of his boyhood, refers to a simple incident which made a deep impression upon his mind. Having caught a grasshopper, he carried it into the house; but, handling it too roughly he broke its leg. After reflecting on the injury he had done the harmless insect, he was so much affected with grief that he retired to his chamber and wept bitterly for several hours. This tenderness of heart in the child characterized him when he became a man. On another occasion he rescued a poor woman who had fallen into a deep ditch filled with water, and he declares that in saving her life he experienced the highest pleasure. It appears, therefore, that in early years, though fearless of danger, he was easily moved by the sight of suffering.

The instructors of Garibaldi, Padre Gianone and Signor Arena, are mentioned by him in terms of grateful praise. He expresses regret that he was more inclined to play than to study. In view of the proximity of Nice to France, the Italian language was not generally spoken in that city, and besides the government neglected to provide proper education for the people. Garibaldi acknowledges his indebtedness to Padre Gianone for instructing him in his own native dialect. His brother in America encouraged him in the effort, and also persuaded him to read Roman and Italian history, in which he became deeply interested. While at school in Genoa he grew weary of study, and especially of confinement at the desk, and therefore resolved to undertake an adventure by sea and seek his fortune. With several companions he entered a boat, taking with him some provisions and fishing tackle, and sailed for the Levant. But when the young voyagers reached Monaco they were overtaken by a "corsair," commanded by Garibaldi's father, and taken back to their homes. Garibaldi was exceedingly mortified by the failure of the enterprise, but it was the beginning of an adventurous career unequalled in heroism and daring.

In a short time he commenced the life of a sailor on board the vessel *Costanza*. "How every thing is embellished," he says, in referring to this event, "by the feelings of youth, and how beautiful appeared to my ardent eyes the bark in which I was to navigate the Mediterranean when I stepped on board for the first time! Her lofty sides, her slender masts, rising so gracefully and so high above, and the bust of 'Our Lady,' which adorned the bow, all remain as



distinctly painted on my memory at the present day as on the happy hour when I became one of her crew. How gracefully moved the sailors, who were fine young men from San Remi, and true specimens of intrepid Ligurians! With what pleasure I ventured into the forecabin to listen to the popular songs sung by harmonious choirs! They sang of love until I was transported; and they endeavored to excite themselves to patriotism by singing of Italy! But who in those days had ever taught them how to be patriotic and Italian? Who, indeed, had then ever said on those shores to those young men that there was such a thing as Italy, or that they had a country to be ameliorated or redeemed?"

The second voyage of Garibaldi was made to Rome in a vessel belonging to his father. "Rome," he exclaimed, "once the capital of the world, now the capital of a sect! The Rome which I had painted in my imagination no longer existed. The future Rome, rising to regenerate the nation, has now long been a dominant idea in my mind, and inspired me with hope and energy. Thoughts springing from the past, in short, have had a prevailing influence on me during my life. Rome, which I had before admired and thought of frequently, I ever since have loved. It has been dear to me beyond all things. I not only admired her for her former power, and the remains of antiquity, but even the smallest thing connected with her was precious to me. Even in exile these feelings were constantly cherished in my heart, and often, very often have I prayed to the Almighty to permit me to see that city once more. I regarded Rome as the center of Italy, for the union of which I ardently longed."

Garibaldi made several voyages with his father, and afterwards one with Captain Gervino to Cagliari, and during the return passage, in a fearful storm, on the ocean, he beheld the capsizing of a Spanish boat, and the drowning of the crew. It was impossible to render them any assistance, and the Italian sailors shed tears over the sad fate of the unfortunate men. This experience on the ocean accustomed Garibaldi to hardship and danger, and, at the same time, awakened those tender emotions in his heart, which, in subsequent years, manifested themselves in the darkest hours of his life. During one of his voyages he visited Constantinople, where he was taken sick, and, after his recovery, being in straitened circumstances, he taught in a private family. In a short time, however, he resumed the nautical life.

## THIRD DECADE, 1820-1830.

## CHAPTER III.

*JOSEPH MAZZINI AND THE CARBONARI.*

**A**MONG the secret political societies that existed in Italy, seeking to overthrow Austrian tyranny and to establish a republican form of government, was the *Carbonari*. It was strong in France, and had been introduced into Italy, where, in 1820, its membership embraced thousands. The order was very powerful in Naples, and, in 1820, under its guidance, the Neapolitans rose in insurrection against King Ferdinand, and demanded that the absolute rule of that king should give way to a constitutional monarchy. Ferdinand was taken at a disadvantage and granted them a constitution, which he intended to revoke at the first favorable opportunity. A few months later the emperors of Russia and Austria, and the kings of Prussia, Sardinia, and Naples met at Laybach, in Austria, and agreed to crush out the Neapolitan movement for constitutional freedom as dangerous to the cause of absolutism.

In 1821 a force of sixty thousand Austrians entered the Neapolitan territories, and, with their aid, King Ferdinand revoked the constitution, restored the absolute monarchy, and put down the resistance of his people. He celebrated his victory by treating the liberal leaders with great cruelty. In the same year a similar insurrection broke out in Piedmont, or the Sardinian kingdom, and the people demanded of King Victor Emmanuel I a constitution. Rather than grant this Victor Emmanuel abdicated his crown in favor of his brother, Charles Felix, who was at that time absent in Modena. Until the new king could reach Turin his cousin, Charles Albert, prince of Carignano, was made regent. The latter was the heir to the throne, as the new king had no children. For some reason he complied with the demands of the liberals, but immediately upon his arrival at Turin Charles Felix set aside the regent's concessions and compelled the submission of his people by threatening to call in the Austrians to assist him in maintaining his power. Any thing was better than an Austrian intervention, and, for a while, the liberals

were forced to submit. The Jesuits and the Austrian party endeavored to induce Charles Felix to name as his heir Francis, duke of Modena, who had married a daughter of Victor Emmanuel I; but the king remained faithful to his cousin, Charles Albert. Duke Francis began to intrigue with the liberals, and gave them to understand that, if they would declare him king of Italy, he would adopt their principles, head their party, and unite Italy in a constitutional monarch. For some time they believed him sincere.

One Sunday in 1821, soon after the Piedmontese insurrection had been crushed, partly by Austria, partly by treachery, and partly through the weakness of its leaders, Joseph Mazzini, then a boy of twelve years, accompanied by his mother, and an old friend of the family named Andrew Gambini, walked in the *Strada Nuova* of Genoa. It was in April, and the revolutionists, seeking safety by sea, had flocked to that city, and finding themselves distressed for means they went about asking aid to enable them to cross into Spain, where the revolution was yet triumphant. The greater number of them were crowded in *S. Pier d'Arena*, awaiting a chance to embark; but not a few had contrived to enter the city one by one. Young Mazzini, who was born in Genoa in 1809, was the son of a prominent physician, and had been unconsciously educated in the worship of equality by the democratic principles of his parents, "whose bearing," he says, "towards high or low was ever the same." Disregarding the position of the individual, they estimated him by the standard of character. Mazzini declares that his own natural aspirations towards liberty were fostered by constantly hearing his father and mother, and Andrew Gambini, the friend already mentioned, speak of the recent republican era in France, by the study of the works of Livy and Tacitus, which his Latin master had given him to translate, and by "certain old French newspapers" which he discovered half concealed behind his father's medical books. Among these last were some numbers of the *Chronique du Mois*, a Girondist publication belonging to the first period of the French Revolution.

While Mazzini, his mother, and Gambini were proceeding along the street above named, they were stopped and addressed by a tall black-bearded man, with a severe and energetic countenance, and a fiery glance that made a deep impression upon the young patriot in the party. Holding out a white handkerchief towards them, the stranger merely said: "For the refugees of Italy." A contribution was made and he passed on to solicit from others. This man was Rini, a captain in the National Guard, which had been instituted at



the commencement of the revolution. He accompanied the fleeing republicans as collector, and finally perished for the cause of liberty in Spain. "The idea of an existing wrong in my own country, against which it was a duty to struggle, and the thought that I, too, must bear my part in that struggle," says Mazzini, "flashed before my mind on that day for the first time, never again to leave me. The remembrance of those refugees, many of whom became my friends in after life, pursued me wherever I went by day, and mingled with my dreams by night. I would have given, I know not what, to follow them. I began collecting names and facts, and studied, as best I might, the records of that heroic struggle, seeking to fathom the causes of its failure."

Mazzini associated with the refugees, easily detecting them either by their general appearance, by some peculiarity of dress, by their warlike air or by the signs of a deep and silent sorrow on their faces. The Genoese were deeply moved, and some of the boldest had proposed to Santarosa and Ansaldi, the leaders of the insurrection, to concentrate in and take possession of the city, thus organizing a new resistance; but Genoa was found to be deprived of all means of successful defense; the fortresses were without artillery, and the leaders had rejected the proposition, telling them to preserve themselves for a better fate. The sympathy of young Mazzini was profoundly excited, and the desire to deliver his country from foreign oppression became an absorbing passion. When at school, surrounded by noisy, tumultuous students, he was silent and somber, and appeared like one suddenly grown old. He even resolved to dress always in black, fancying himself in mourning for Italy, and his mind was so much burdened that his mother feared he would commit suicide.

This first tempest of feeling, however, passed away, and by degrees a calmer state of mind was enjoyed by the young patriot. His friendship for the Ruffinis—an interesting family—had a tendency to soothe his troubled spirit, and afford relief to the inward passion that consumed him. He conversed with them of literature, of the intellectual resurrection of Italy, and upon philosophico-religious questions; but that which brought peace to his mind was the proposition to form associations for the purpose of smuggling books prohibited by the police. This opening, though on a small scale, encouraged Mazzini, who soon drew around him a little circle of chosen friends, whom he designated as "a group of Pleiads, and a salvation to my tormented spirit." Toward the end of 1826 he wrote his first literary article, "*Dell'Amor Patrio di Dante*," and boldly

sent it to the "*Antologia*," of Florence, but it was not published; subsequently, however, it was inserted in the "*Subalpino*," by N. Tommasseo. For several years Mazzini had studied the writings of Dante, and he venerated him not only as a poet, but as the father of the Italian nation. In 1827 the literary war between the classicist and romantic schools was raging fiercely. It was a war between the supporters of a literary despotism, dating its origin and authority two thousand years back, and those who sought to emancipate themselves from its tyranny in the name of their own individual inspiration. Mazzini and the young men who followed him belonged to the latter school. The *litterati* of that period were neither citizens nor patriots, and were completely governed by the false French doctrine of art for art's sake. But Tommasseo and Montani, in the fruitful and fostering school of criticism, taught in their "*Antologia*," declared that without a country and without liberty no vital art could be produced. The writings of Count Alessandro Manzoni presented similar views. The patriotic heart of this great author earnestly desired the freedom of Italy, and noble sentiments breathing that spirit occasionally transpire in the choruses of his tragedies and other passages of his works, though restrained by his devotion to the Roman Catholic Church and the gentleness of his nature. Mazzini declares that the ideas awakened in him in 1821 still burned in his soul in 1827, and moved him to renounce the career of literature for the more direct path of political action.

At that time a small journal called the *Indicatore Genovese* was published in Genoa by one Ponthenier, who was also the editor. It contained mercantile advertisements, and Mazzini persuaded the proprietor to admit notices of books he had for sale, embracing a brief description of each. This was the commencement of his career as a critic. By degrees the advertisements swelled into articles, but the government, which slumbered like the country, either did not heed or did not observe them, and the *Indicatore* gradually became a literary journal. These articles, which were collected and published at Lugano many years afterwards under the title of "*Scritti Letterari d'un Italiano Vivente*," show how Mazzini and his few friends understood the question of "Romanticism" or progressive literature. The controversy now assumed a political aspect, and though it was only a miniature warfare, resembling a skirmish between the riflemen of the two camps, yet it was the first step towards national independence. Mazzini, believing that the latter could only be secured by the freedom of the press, desired to arouse the youth of the country

and infuse a new spirit into the hidden, latent life, fermenting deep down in the heart of Italy. He knew that the effort to unite these elements—literary and political independence—would be resisted by both foreign and domestic tyranny. At last the government observed Mazzini's writings and became incensed, and when he, flushed with success, announced at the end of the first year his intention to enlarge his journal, a governmental veto suddenly extinguished it.

These few articles, full of vigor and daring, gave Mazzini a certain amount of fame in his native city, and he made the acquaintance of the writers of the "Antologia" of Florence, men who were Italians at heart, though the majority of them were timid. He won their friendship by writing a reproof to Carlo Botta, who by his productions had fascinated the young men; and he published two articles on Guerrazzi's drama, the "Bianchi e Neri," which led to a correspondence between him and that celebrated man. Guerrazzi had already written not only that drama, but the "Battaglia di Benevento;" yet so great was the distance between the provinces in those days that Mazzini had not heard of him until he accidentally met with the "Bianchi e Neri." He replied to a letter written to him by the author, and this was the commencement of an enthusiastic and fraternal correspondence between these patriots.

When the Sardinian government suppressed the *Indicatore Genovese* they suggested the idea of continuing the publication in Leghorn under the title of the *Indicatore Livornese*. Guerrazzi, Carlo Bini, and Mazzini were the chief contributors to this second journal, in which the political purposes of the writers were more openly revealed—almost, indeed, without disguise. They wrote of Foscolo, who, apart from his other merits, is deserving of the reverence of the Italians, because he was the first, both in word and deed, to restore literature to its true patriotic mission in the person of the writer. They wrote of "The Exile," a poem by Pietro Giannone, then himself in exile—a man of incorruptible fidelity, and an ardent lover of freedom. They also wrote of Giovanni Berchet, the author of magnificent poems, full of patriotism, and whose works were degraded and lost, in 1848, among the patricians and the courtiers of royalty in Milan.

The *Indicatore Livornese* became so bold by the end of the year that even the slumbering Tuscan government ordered the publishers to discontinue it, and they obeyed the official order; but the two journals had aroused a certain number of young men, who, in 1829, were collected together and ready for action. They were con-



vinced that the various governments in Italy were deliberately opposed to progress and hostile to liberty. "In the midst of all this literary warfare," says Mazzini, "I never forgot my own purpose, and I continued to look around me to discover men capable of attempting an enterprise. Whispers were rife amongst us of a revival of Carbonarism. I watched, questioned, and searched on every side, until at last a friend of mine—a certain Torre—confessed to me that he was a member of the sect, or, as it was called in those days, the order, and offered me initiation. I accepted. While studying the events of 1820 and 1821 I had learned much of Carbonarism, and I did not much admire the complex symbolism, the hierarchical mysteries, nor the political faith—or, rather, the absence of political faith—I discovered in that institution. But I was at that time unable to attempt to form any association of my own; and in the *Carbonari* I found a body of men in whom—however inferior to the idea they represented—thought and action, faith and works, were identical. Here were men who, defying alike excommunication and capital punishment, had the persistent energy ever to persevere, and to weave a fresh web each time the old one was broken. And this was enough to induce me to join my name and my labors to theirs."

Mazzini has given an interesting account of his initiation into the *Carbonari*. He was conducted one evening to the highest story of a certain house, where he met a man named Riamondo Doria, half Corsican, half Spaniard, who was already advanced in years, and had a forbidding countenance. The candidate was solemnly informed that he would be spared the usual symbolical rites, ceremonies, and ordeals, because numerous meetings could not be held while the government was so vigilant. Doria asked him whether he was ready to act, and to obey the instructions that would be imparted to him from time to time, and even to sacrifice himself, if necessary, for the good of the order. Mazzini responded in the affirmative; and, kneeling down at the request of Doria, who unsheathed a dagger, proceeded to repeat the formula of oath administered to the initiate of the first or lowest rank. He then received from Doria two or three signs by which to recognize the brethren, and was declared a *Carbonaro*. Mazzini was not fully satisfied, and interrogated the friend who had accompanied him to and from the place of meeting, concerning the organization—its aim, its members, and its work; but in vain. He was told to be silent, to obey, and to slowly deserve and receive confidence. His friend congratulated him on the fact that in view of circumstances he had not been required to pass

through the usual trying ordeals, and asked him what he would have done if he had been, as in the case of others, in that part of the ceremony where the candidate must fire off a pistol in his own ear, which had been previously loaded before his eyes. Mazzini replied that he would have refused obedience to such a demand, "telling the initiators," he remarks, in his characteristic manner, "that either there was some valve in the interior of the pistol into which the bullet fell—in which case the affair was a farce, and unworthy of both of us—or the bullet had really remained in the stock; and in that case it struck me as somewhat absurd to call upon a man to fight for his country, and make it his first duty to blow out the few brains God had vouchsafed to him." The more Mazzini reflected upon the oath which had been administered to him, the more he realized that it was a mere formula of obedience, saying nothing concerning the aim to be reached. He remembered that his initiator had not referred to federalism or unity, republic or monarchy. War to the government, and nothing more was proposed.

The contribution required from each member of the *Carbonari* was twenty francs at the time of initiation, besides a monthly subscription of five francs. Mazzini regarded this a heavy tax for a student like him to pay; but he cheerfully made the sacrifice for the good of his country. He denounced the selfishness of those who wasted large sums of money in procuring comforts or enjoyments, which to a great extent were more imaginary than real, and imperiled the honor, dignity, and even the very life of their own souls and those of their fellow-men, rather than "unloosen the strings of their purse." After directing attention to the noble example of the early Christians, who cast all their possessions at the feet of the apostles for the benefit of the poorer brethren, merely reserving for themselves the bare necessities of existence, Mazzini, addressing those who should have been willing "to coin their very blood to create a country or found true liberty," said: "Amongst us it is a gigantic, a Utopian enterprise to find, among twenty-five millions of men who all prate of liberty, one million ready to bestow a single franc each day for the emancipation of Venetia. The first had faith; we have only opinions."

Soon after his first connection with the order the Genoese patriot was initiated into the second rank, with power to affiliate others; and among the *Carbonari* with whom he became acquainted was Passano, a high dignitary of the brotherhood, who had formerly been the French consul at Ancona. He is described as an old man, full of life



MAZZINI.

and energy, but more concerned in petty intrigues and low political artifices than in manly efforts to secure the object of the order. As yet Mazzini was completely ignorant of the programme, and was even disposed to think that nothing would be done, because the *Carbonari* generally spoke of Italy as a nation inheriting no power to act, being a kind of secondary appendix to Europe. They called themselves cosmopolitans, a term which Mazzini said was acceptable to him, provided it meant liberty for all men. At that time the struggle between the French opposition and Charles X was at its height, both in and out of the chamber, and the popular names constantly mentioned among the *Carbonari* were Guizot, Berthe, Lafayette, and the 'Haut Vente' at Paris. The lever of republicanism, that is destined to move Europe and lift it out of the rubbish of decayed



thrones needs a fulcrum, and, while many of the *Carbonari* in 1829 looked for it in Paris, Mazzini sought it in Italy.

Having been commissioned to write in French a declaration in favor of the liberty of Spain, Mazzini set forth the illegality and also the disastrous effects of the Bourbon intervention of 1823. After performing this duty he occupied himself in affiliating other students, believing that the time would soon come when the young men would be sufficiently strong in numbers to form a compact nucleus among themselves and infuse some new life into the *Carbonari*. He also continued his skirmishes against those whom he called the "*non-archists* of literature," and wrote the article "Upon a European Literature," which, after long discussions and much correspondence, was inserted in the "Antologia" of Florence. At length the *Carbonari* leaders were aroused to a slight degree of activity by the evident approach of the political tempest in France, and Mazzini was appointed to visit Tuscany and establish the order there. He disliked to undertake this mission, not only because it would separate him from his home, but also on account of financial inability. After long hesitation, however, he decided to go, and, stating to the family that he would be absent a few days visiting a student at Arenzano, he obtained a small sum of money upon various pretexts from his mother, and prepared to depart. The day before he started an incident occurred which did not give him an exalted opinion of *Carbonarism*. Having been ordered to go to the Ponte della Mercanzia at midnight he obeyed, and met several young men there whom he had enrolled, and who, like himself, were ignorant of the object of the convocation. After waiting a long time, they beheld Doria approaching, accompanied by two strangers, whose faces, up to the eyes, were covered by their cloaks. The hearts of the young men bounded within them at the thought and hope of action.

Having arranged them in a circle, Doria commenced a discourse, directed at Mazzini, in which he referred to the culpable conduct of certain inexpert and imprudent young men who had criticised the order, and pointing to the two cloaked individuals, who were as mute as specters, he said that they were about to start on the morrow for Bologna in order to stab a *Carbonaro* there for having spoken against the chiefs. Doria, in conclusion, declared that the order was determined to crush rebels as soon as they were discovered. Mazzini knew that he was an offender, because he had uttered complaints which some zealous member reported at headquarters. But Doria's stupid threat sent a thrill of indignation and anger through him, and

he notified the leaders that he would not go to Tuscany, at the same time informing them that they were at liberty to crush him. Some of his friends, however, admonished him, when he became calmer, not to sacrifice the cause of his country to his own offended individuality, and, after carefully considering the matter, he resolved to obey. He went to Leghorn and there established a *Vente*, enrolling several Tuscans and some of other provinces. Among the initiated were Camillo d'Adda, a Lombard, a pupil of Romagnosi, who had just left an Austrian prison, and Marliani, who died, some years later, defending Bologna from the Austrians. Mazzini intrusted all the remaining duties growing out of his mission to Carlo Bini, who was "a young man of pure and noble soul, which he had preserved uncontaminated throughout a life passed amid the rude and quarrelsome *popolani* of Venezia, a quarter of Leghorn so-called." He possessed great intellectual power, which revealed itself only occasionally, because his mind, confined to mercantile pursuits, was still further hindered in its development by a profound skepticism, which, though not extending to matters of principle, included the men and events of his own day. He was a man of "extraordinary moral rectitude, and an immense capacity of sacrifice—all the more meritorious in one without faith or hope in its results."

Bini, as well as Mazzini, laughed at all the forms and symbolism of *Carbonarism*, but both believed in the great importance of organization, in some shape or other, for action. They traveled together to Montepulciano, where Guerrazzi was then confined for the offense of having recited a few solemn pages in praise of a brave Italian soldier, Cosimo Delfante. Mazzini in his account of the interview, which he had with Guerrazzi, states that the latter was then writing the "Assedio di Firenze," the introductory chapters of which he read to his two visitors, the blood, in the mean time, rushing to his face and causing him to bathe his head in order to calm himself. During the conversation the historical and philosophical lectures of Guizot and Cousin, then coming from the French press, were discussed.

## Third Decade, Continued, 1820-1830.

## CHAPTER IV.

*THE WALDENSES—COL. BECKWITH—THE PAPACY.*

IN 1823 an important step was taken toward the advancement of education in the "Valleys" of Piedmont. After the long storm of war, which had spread its devastations over Europe for more than twenty years, had passed away, and general peace was restored upon the final overthrow of Napoleon, English Christians, in their visits to the Continent, began to make their way to Italy, and some of them turned aside to see what had become of the "Church in the wilderness," which they found unconsumed, like the bush which Moses beheld in the midst of the flames in Mount Horeb. Among those who visited the Waldenses at that time were the Rev. W. Stephen Gilly, Prebendary of Durham, Rev. Mr. Sims, and Sir Hugh Duke Acland. Dr. Gilly in particular, by a work, entitled "Waldensian Researches," which he published in 1823, created a great interest in behalf of this body of primitive Christians. Several books on the same subject also appeared on the Continent, and deeply moved the hearts of philanthropists in Holland, Germany, and Switzerland. In consequence of the obscurity in which the Waldenses had remained for many years, great ignorance concerning them prevailed, and even Sharon Turner in his "History of England," located them on the shores of Lake Lemman, confounding the "Valleys" of the Vaudois with the Canton de Vaud.

When the condition of the Waldenses—their poverty, the insufficient number and support of their pastors, and the want of a college, hospital, primary schools, etc.—became known large sums were raised in the course of five or six years for their aid. Rev. Mr. Sims obtained a considerable amount for the establishment of girls' schools, and, in 1827, Dr. Gilly and other friends succeeded in inducing the British government to restore the stipend, which had been long paid, with some serious interruptions, for the support of thirteen Waldensian pastors. Over sixteen thousand pounds was sent by Oliver Cromwell, A. D. 1655—A. D. 1658, to assist the Vaudois, after the horrible persecution to which they had just been subjected.



This sum was designed by him to be a fund for the future assistance of the Vaudois; but Charles II shamefully spent it for his private gratification. To replace this in part, and to efface the national disgrace, Queen Mary, wife of William III, gave, during her life, an annual pension of four hundred and twenty-five pounds; but it was discontinued upon her death. Finally, it was again sent by order of Queen Anne, and, at the instance of Archbishop Sharpe, was increased to five hundred pounds. This sum, under the name of royal bounty, was regularly issued from the British exchequer every year until 1797. From that time it was discontinued for a period of thirty years, partly because the "Valleys" were in the possession of France, during the former part of that period, and partly because the subject seemed to be overlooked by those in power as well as by others, with the exception of a few, who were unable to induce the government to restore the annuity. When it was renewed in 1827 the sum was reduced to two hundred and seventy-seven pounds sterling, which amounted to a little more than twenty-one pounds, or one hundred dollars, for each of the thirteen pastors. To their great credit, however, they refused to accept more than sixty dollars each, and devoted the remaining sum to the support of two more pastors, and the assistance of disabled ministers and widows of ministers.

Before the year 1830 twenty thousand five hundred dollars had been received for the Waldenses from France, Switzerland, Denmark, Sweden, and some German states, and this amount was appropriated to buy the grounds, erect, and furnish a hospital at La Tour and a dispensary at Pomaret, with the exception of eight thousand francs, which were funded. In England the sum of seven thousand three hundred and two pounds sterling had been raised, of which the interest was appropriated as follows: one hundred and fifty pounds to the hospital and dispensary, twenty pounds to the education of young men for the ministry, and forty pounds to the support of four girls' schools of industry. The money raised in Holland and Prussia was invested in the public funds, and the interest, amounting to one hundred and fifty pounds, was sent to the Vaudois. Indeed, this wonderful people have extensively shared the sympathy of their fellow-Protestants of every land for a long period. From first to last, probably not less than one hundred thousand pounds sterling have been collected in Great Britain alone, to sustain these children of the "Valleys," and at least fifty thousand pounds have been donated by the other Protestant countries of Europe and the United States of America. It is but fitting that Protestant Christendom should thus testify a

sense of its obligation to this ancient people, who maintained the purity of the Gospel when all others had bowed their necks to the papal Antichrist.

But the best friend and most efficient worker in behalf of the Waldenses at that time was Col. John Charles Beckwith, whose career is invested with a romance not unlike that which belongs to the life of Ignatius Loyola. He was born in England in the Summer of 1790, and entered the British army in his fifteenth year, serving in Hanover, in 1805, and subsequently in Sweden, Portugal, and Spain. During the Peninsular campaigns of the duke of Wellington young Beckwith was on the staff of that great general, and was in almost every considerable action without receiving a wound; but in the battle of Waterloo, on the 18th of June, 1815, his left leg was carried away by a cannon ball. Having been rendered unfit for military service in the field, he retired on half-pay, his name, however, retaining its place on the army list. At the age of twenty-eight he was promoted to the grade of colonel. Released from active service, he spent his time, for years, partly with his mother and sisters in England and partly in foreign travel. During the Winter of 1819-20 he was in the United States, and, as a gay British officer, with a wooden leg, attracted considerable attention. At that period of his life he was not a religious man, and, though born and brought up in the Established Church of England, had not experienced the power of saving grace. He returned to England, and, being a favorite with the duke of Wellington, was often invited to Apsley House. One day in 1827, while there, an incident occurred which influenced his entire subsequent career. The duke being particularly engaged at the time of his call, he was shown into the library to wait until he should be at leisure. To while away the time, he took from the shelves a book, and began to read it. It was Dr. Gilly's "*Waldensian Researches*," published in 1823. He had perused but a few pages when he was summoned to the duke's room; but the volume, as far as read, had made such an impression upon him that he purchased a copy of it, and collected whatever else he could find relating to these poor mountaineers. He felt himself drawn irresistibly to a people with whose wonderful history he had become acquainted for the first time. From that hour his life was consecrated to them.

In 1827 Colonel Beckwith, desiring to know more concerning the Waldenses, visited Piedmont; but remained only three or four days. The next year he spent three months in the "*Valleys*," and afterwards six months, until finally he made his permanent home there.

He exerted himself for the improvement of the people, and contributed largely of his own means to aid them. The Waldenses desired to give their children the best education which their extreme poverty permitted; but it was difficult for them to procure books, and besides, for several centuries, they had not, in the fires of persecution, any opportunity to build up a good educational system. Colonel Beckwith found very few schools, and therefore incited the inhabitants to rebuild their school-houses. But, while education was much neglected among them, their religious condition was good. They had suffered very much in their morals for years from the pernicious influence of the French troops that so often traversed their "Valleys" in the time of Napoleon, as well as from the bad habits which their own conscripts in many cases brought back from the armies of that modern Alexander. But the visit of that wonderful man, Felix Neff, to the "Valleys," about the year 1823, produced glorious moral results, and that purity of life which so greatly distinguished their ancestors had to a good degree returned at the period of Colonel Beckwith's settlement among them.

When this noble philanthropist visited Italy he found the people in mental and moral darkness. The Romish Church was corrupt, and its leaders tyrannical. On the 20th of August, 1823, Pope Pius VII, whom Napoleon called a "fanatic," passed away from earth, in the eighty-third year of his age. He had excommunicated the liberals, restored the Jesuits, brought back to life the bull, *In cæna Domini*, re-established the Inquisition and the torture, and labored to suppress the national aspirations of the Italian people. The conclave which assembled after his death was filled with cardinals created by Consalvi, with two exceptions—La Sommaglia and that famous Cardinal Ruffo, who had commanded the bands of the *Santa Fede*, at Naples. The forty-nine cardinals of the conclave were all old men, the younger part being composed of cardinals from fifty to fifty-nine years of age!

Cavalchini, Dandini, and Severoli were mentioned, and their qualifications discussed; but no decision was reached until September 29, 1823, when the wall of the balcony of the Vatican fell, and Cardinal Ruffo, presenting himself before the people with a red cap on his head, cried out, with a loud voice, "Annuntio vobis gaudium magnum, papam habemus." Cardinal de la Genga was proclaimed pontiff, under the title of Leo XII. "The devil! a lion!" exclaimed the people in their turn: "Abbiamo dunque un papa bestia" (we have, then, for a pope a beast)! He had followed the career of diplomacy



at Paris, Munich, and elsewhere, and had a hand in all the intrigues which the courts of Europe had in secret plotted against Napoleon. He had acquired, at the courts and *salons* of Europe, aristocratic and elegant tastes, and enlarged views in matters of social life, but at the same time had also acquired the habit of feigning, dissembling, and mistrusting. He despised the people and the ideas which obtained in the world since 1789, and would have made an excellent pope for the Middle Ages. He hated liberty, science, and progress, renewed the bulls against the *Carbonari*, and persecuted the liberals in every way. His secretary of state, Cardinal de la Sommaglia, having died, Leo XII appointed as his successor the Cardinal-deacon Tommaso Bernetti de Fermo, who was descended from a plebeian family, but as a prelate passed successively from *chierico di camera* to minister of war, and finally to governor of Rome. Leo XII died February 10, 1829, and was succeeded, March 31st of the same year, by Pius VIII, who issued, on the 14th of the following May, a general edict of the "Holy Office," and the work of the Inquisition continued.

---

#### FOURTH DECADE, 1830-1840.

---

#### CHAPTER V.

##### THE ITALIAN REVOLUTION—"YOUNG ITALY."

THE period of Italian history extending from 1830 to 1840 was one of agitation and revolution. In the beginning of the decade the political state of the country appeared tranquil to a superficial observer; but a strong feeling of dissatisfaction pervaded the public mind. The French revolution of 1830 profoundly stirred the Italian people, and aroused the hope that their deliverance from the Austrians, the priests, and the princes was at hand. The news from Paris was eagerly sought, and multitudes surrounded the post-offices, while young men, standing on the benches in front of the cafés, read the newspapers aloud to the bystanders. The echo of the cannon fired on the 2d of February, 1831, against the dwelling of *Ciro Menotti*, in Modena, gave the signal for the insurrection. On the 4th of the month Bologna rose; and on the 5th Modena, recovering from the first surprise, drove out the duke and his supporters. Imola, Faenza,

Forlì, Cesena, and Ravenna shook off their rulers. On the 7th of February Ferrara defeated the Austrians, and compelled them to retire. Pesaro, Fossombrone, Fano, and Urbino emancipated themselves on the 8th of the same month, and on the 13th the movement was triumphant in Parma, Macerata, Camerino, Ascoli, Perugia, Terni, Narni, and other cities. Ancona, where at the outset Colonel Sutterman showed a disposition to resist, yielded to a few companies of soldiers and national guards, led by Sercognani. "Thus, by the 25th of February," says Mazzini, "nearly two millions and a half of Italians had embraced the national cause, and were ready, not only for defensive, but for offensive war for the emancipation of their fellow-countrymen."

During the first days of the insurrection the youth of Bologna had endeavored to invade Tuscany, and they of Modena and Reggio to reach Massa, and later the national guards demanded to be led through Furlo into the kingdom of Naples. The Italian tricolored cockade was adopted every-where, in spite of the entreaties of Orioli and others who afterwards formed part of the government. The instinct of the multitude was for national independence; but the leaders feared to make a declaration of principles. They sought the favor of kings, and prostrated the popular movement at the feet of diplomacy. The revolution, from the very nature of its elements, and the special position of the provinces, was necessarily republican, and the sympathy of existing governments was therefore impossible. Instead of trusting the people the leaders watched the actions of France and Austria; and this weakness and hesitation awakened a feeling of distrust in the insurgent states, and spread discouragement over the other provinces of Italy.

The principle of non-intervention had been explicitly and solemnly proclaimed by the French government. Before the insurrection occurred a memorial had been drawn up by various influential Italians to inquire of the French ambassador (Latour Marbourg) what would be the conduct of France in case an Italian revolution should provoke the armed intervention of Austria, and the ambassador had written with his own hand that France would support the revolution, provided the new government should not assume an anarchical form, and should recognize the order of things generally adopted in Europe. Marbourg afterwards denied this note; but the fact that it was sent to the "provisional government" during the first days of the movement was stated by Francesco Orioli, one of the members who read it. On the 1st of December, 1830, the president of the

Chamber of Deputies, Lafitte, had spoken the following words: "France will not allow any violation of the principle of non-intervention. . . . The Holy Alliance made it a fundamental principle to suffocate popular liberty wheresoever it should raise its standard; the new principle proclaimed by France is that of allowing the unimpeded development of liberty wheresoever it may spontaneously arise." On the 15th of January Guizot had declared: "The principle of non-intervention is identical with the principle of the peoples;" and on the twenty-second of the same month the minister of foreign affairs had said: "The Holy Alliance was founded on the principle of intervention for the overthrow of the independence of all secondary states; the opposite principle, consecrated by us, and which we intend to see respected, assures liberty and independence to all." On the 28th of the month the same things were repeated by the duke of Dalmatia, and, on the 29th, by Sebastiani.

As war with Austria was inevitable, republican leaders like Mazzini urged the people to prepare for hostilities; but the provisional government of the insurgent provinces chose to adopt the hypothesis that Austria would not invade, thus allowing the insurrection sufficient time to implant itself firmly in the heart of Italy. It is strange that such an idea could be entertained a moment, as Austria would never consent to the establishment of a free government in the vicinity of her Lombardo-Venetian possessions. The authorities of Parma and Modena exhibited their want of courage by declaring that the people were compelled to form a new government because the princes had abandoned their states without establishing any, while the government of Bologna defended its organization on the ground that Monsignor Clarelli, the pro-legate, had announced his determination of entirely renouncing the administration of political affairs, and that, therefore, something must be done to prevent anarchy. Even when the revolution was a success, and they held the reins in their own hands, the leaders, instead of using bolder language to give the movement greater internal security, endeavored to deduce the right of Bologna to liberty from the local tradition of a compact signed A. D. 1447 between Bologna and Pope Nicholas V; and a long, pedantic, ignoble piece of writing, dated the 25th of February, 1831, was published by the president, Vicini, commenting, attorney-fashion, upon that tradition. In Parma the leadership of the national guard was offered to a certain Fedeli; but he refused to accept it without permission from the duchess. The government allowed him to request that permission, and was repaid for its folly by his forming a



retrograde conspiracy. At a later period, and when their finances were almost exhausted, they passed a decree ordering that the payment of the salaries of the employ  s of the banished court should be continued.

During the fermentation produced by the rising of Central Italy, in Naples, in Piedmont, and on every side, while all were anxiously awaiting inspiration from the central focus wherein the insurrection had been first kindled, the decree of the 11th of February coldly announced that Bologna "did not intend to interrupt her friendly relations with other states, nor to permit the smallest violation of their territories; hoping that in return no intervention to her disadvantage would take place, as she had no intention of being drawn into action unless in self-defense." By this act the center of the republican movement abdicated all initiative, and separated her cause from the cause of Italy. Thus the leaders at Bologna, trusting solely in the promises of foreign governments, gave up all idea not only of offense but of defense. The plan of organizing a militia was rejected. The fortifications of Ancona were not rebuilt. The suggestions of Zucchi, who, on his arrival in Bologna, ordered the formation of six regiments of infantry and two of cavalry, were opposed. The idea repeatedly suggested by Sercognani, of a decisive enterprise upon Rome, where symptoms of insurrection had manifested themselves on the 12th of February, was repulsed. Neither the minister, Armandi, nor any of the others seemed capable of comprehending the power and significance of an Italian banner floating from the capitol. Fear was visible in every decree, and, says Mazzini, "Not a single act was passed, therefore, asserting the sovereignty and right of the nation; none to call the people to arms; none to organize the elections; none to incite or encourage the neighboring provinces of Italy to rise."

The murmurs of the Italian youth were quieted by repeated promises, which were never fulfilled, and the stern voice of the press was silenced by the edict of the 12th of February, "decreeing a penalty of fine or imprisonment to the sellers of any writings likely to injure the existing peaceful and friendly relations with foreign governments." And, as an inevitable consequence of its policy, the "Provisional Government" was abandoned and betrayed by all. The French government did not even deign a reply to Count Bianchetti, who was sent to Florence to interrogate the ambassadors of France and Austria, whilst it continued to maintain a friendly correspondence with the court of Rome. Count St. Aulaire, the envoy of France to Rome, avoided the route of Bologna and all contact with its provisional government. Austria added insult to outrage by declaring

her intentions to invade Parma and Modena, and promising to respect Bologna if she behaved well. The invasion of Parma, Modena, and Reggio soon followed, and on the 6th of March, 1831, the provisional government declared, "The affairs of the Modenese are no concern of ours; non-intervention is a law for us as well as for our neighbors; and none of us have any business to mix ourselves up with the affairs of the states on our frontiers." They also ordered, that all "foreigners presenting themselves on their frontier should be disarmed and sent back;" and seven hundred Modenese foreigners, headed by Zucchi, were compelled to pass through Bologna as prisoners.

After the Austrians had occupied Ferrara they next took possession of Bologna, presenting themselves at the gates on the 20th of March. The government, after giving orders that the National Guard should preserve the public peace, retired to Ancona, where, on the 25th of March,—two days after they had abdicated all power by the election of a Triumvirate—they capitulated to Cardinal Benvenuti, praying for an amnesty. The request was signed by all the members of the government except Carlo Pepoli, who was absent. The conditions of the capitulation were violated, as was to be expected, and it was annulled on the 5th of April by the pope. On the 14th and 30th of the same month edicts were issued condemning the leaders, accomplices, and approvers. Louis Philippe, imitating the example of many crowned heads, insulted the fallen by announcing to the Chamber, in his speech of the 23d of June, that he had obtained from the pope a complete amnesty for the insurgents. In the mean time the neutrality of the seas was violated by the capture of the vessel which was conveying Zucchi and about seventy others into exile, and conducting them as prisoners to Venice.

Thus Parma, Modena, Ferrara, Bologna, and other revolted provinces quietly submitted to Austria. While these stirring events were transpiring, Mazzini was a prisoner in the fortress of Savona, on the Western Riviera. The French Revolution of July, 1830, aroused him and the other young men belonging to the *Carbonari*, and they proceeded to cast bullets and to make all preparations for the conflict, which they believed to be certain and decisive. Soon after the three days of Paris, Mazzini received an order to go at a certain hour to the "Lion Rouge," a hotel then existing in the *Salita S. Siro*, where he would find a certain Major Cottin, either of Nice or Savoy, who was already initiated into the first rank of the *Carbonari*, and desired to be affiliated in the second. As the young men of the order were

regarded by the leaders as mere machines, Mazzini was compelled to accept the commission, not even daring to ask why he was selected rather than some member personally known to the major. Before going to the hotel he had a presentiment that he might be arrested, and therefore devised a method by which he could secretly correspond with the Ruffinis, who were intimate with his mother, through the medium of the family letters in case of imprisonment. This precaution proved wise. On the appointed day Mazzini went to the "Lion Rouge," asked for Cottin, and, after making himself known by the usual signs to show that he was a brother, or, as it was then called, a cousin of the order, he stated to him the object of his visit. He was invited by Cottin into his bedroom, and the latter, having knelt down, the former, drawing a sword from his stick, in accordance with the prescribed form, was just beginning to make the candidate repeat the usual oath when a small window, cut in the wall by the side of the bed, suddenly opened, and an unknown face presented itself, looked sharply at Mazzini, and disappeared. Cottin requested him to proceed with the ceremony and not be alarmed, as the strange visitor was only a confidential servant. When the initiation was completed, the major declared that he would start in a few days for Nice, where he could accomplish something among the military, and, professing to have a treacherous memory, he asked Mazzini to give him a formula of initiation in writing. The latter refused, saying that he was not permitted to write it, but that he might dictate it to any member. Cottin wrote what was thus imparted, and then retired. He was a small man, without any uniform, spoke French, and had a forbidding eye.

Mazzini was dissatisfied with this individual, and fears of betrayal disturbed him. He was not altogether surprised, therefore, when arrested by the police a few days later, but he congratulated himself that the *Sbirri*, who seized him, did not closely search his person. At that time he had articles enough with him to secure three condemnations: rifle bullets, a letter in cipher from Bini, a history of the three days of July, printed on tricolored paper, the formula of the oath for the second rank of *Carbonari*, and a sword-stick. He was taken by the officers when in the act of leaving the family residence, which was subjected to a close examination without leading to dangerous discoveries. Mazzini, who succeeded in getting rid of every thing about his person, refers to the inefficiency of the police by saying that "they had all the inclination, but not sufficient capacity for tyranny." The commissioner, Pratolongo, was in doubt



concerning the course to be pursued in regard to the prisoner, and sent again for orders; but, in the mean time, Mazzini was taken to the barracks of the carbiniers in *Piazza Sarzano*, where he was examined by an old commissioner, who accused him of initiating a certain Major Cottin into the second rank of *Carbonarism*, giving the very hour and day.

The prisoner remained in the barracks for some days, exposed to the witticisms and sneers of the carbiniers—the most literary of whom presented him to the others as a new edition of “Jacopo Ortis”—and contriving to correspond with his friends through the help of a small pencil concealed in the food, which had been sent to him from home. He wrote upon his linen, and thus his mother, who washed it, heard from him. The sentences in their letters were so constructed that every alternate word furnished the key to the sentiment which they concealed. Through this channel Mazzini learned that Passano, Torre, Morelli, Doria, and others had been arrested; but none of those whom he had initiated into the *Carbonari*. One night he was taken by two carbiniers to the fortress of Savona, on the Western Riviera. Before leaving the barracks, however, he obtained the privilege, after considerable persistence, of writing to his mother; and to his delight, when thrust out of the sedan chair into the carriage which was waiting on the suburbs of the city, he heard the voice of his father exhorting him to be of good cheer. At the same time his ardent friend, Agostino Ruffino, who stood near the conveyance, saluted him; but without delay the prisoner was hurried away to the prison of St. Andrea, in front of which the carbiniers halted, and from whence they brought Passano. He was placed in the carriage with Mazzini, who not only recognized him, but also one of the armed guards by his side, who was the unknown spy of the “*Lion Rouge*.”

The two patriots were separated in the fortress of Savona, Mazzini occupying a cell in the highest part, from which he beheld the sea. “The sea and sky,” he wrote, “two symbols of the Infinite, and, except the Alps, the sublimest things in nature, were before me whenever I approached my little grated window.” This view, and the voices of the fisherman, which the wind often wafted to him, greatly comforted the prisoner. During the first month he had no books, but fortunately for him a new governor, Cavalier Fontana, soon replaced De Mari, a tyrannical old man, and he obtained “a Bible, a Tacitus, and a Byron.” During these months of imprisonment he conceived the plan of the association of “Young Italy”

(*Da Giovina Italia*). He was convinced that *Carbonarism* had no vitality, and declared that, instead of wasting time in the endeavor to "galvanize a corpse," he would expend his energy in establishing a living organization.

A committee of senators at Turin investigated the charges against Mazzini; and, as Major Cottin had stipulated when he consented to play the part of informer ("*Agente Provocatore*"), that he was not to appear at the trial, the only witness was the carabineer, who had seen the accused in his room with a drawn sword in his hand. The explanations of Mazzini, however, counterbalanced the evidence against him, and he was acquitted by the senate. Venanson, the governor of Genoa, who was detested by the people, felt indignant at the result of the trial, and fearing that the liberated patriot would render to him "evil for evil," determined to prevent his return to his native city. Hence, Carlo Felice was importuned by the vindictive governor to prohibit Mazzini from residing in Genoa, Turin, or any other large city, or even any part of the Ligurian coast. The king, disregarding individual rights, the sentence of the judges, and the anguish of parental hearts, yielded to the demand of Venanson, and informed the young republican hero that he could either select a place of residence in such interior towns as Asti, Acqui, or Casales, or be sent into exile for an indefinite period, the duration of which must depend upon the royal pleasure and his own conduct. He was not allowed to see any but his nearest relations, and, accordingly, his father went to Savona to escort him home. His fellow-prisoner, Passano, being a Corsican by birth, and having served as French consul at Ancona, had been released some time before this, because the monarchical governments in Italy at that period, while hating France in their hearts, desired to propitiate her in every way.

The insurrection in the center of Italy had broken out a short time before the liberation of Mazzini, and the latter, while in Genoa, learned that the Italian exiles were crowding to the frontier, encouraged both by assistance given and the inducements presented by the new government of France. He resolved to leave the country rather than remain in the smaller towns of Piedmont and be under the constant *surveillance* of the police. After parting from his family, and proceeding through Savoy, he passed over Mont Cenis to Geneva, where he met Sismondi, the historian of the Italian Republics, whom he describes as "amiable, singularly modest, simple, and affable in his manner, and Italian at heart." Both he and his wife (Jessie Macintosh, a Scotch lady) kindly received the exile, and

questioned him as to the state of things in Italy. Sismondi made inquiries concerning Manzoni, whose romance he admired above all his other works, and the few other writers whose works indicated the revival of intellectual life among the Italians. The historian deplored the tendency he observed in the people of Italy to follow the doctrines of the eighteenth century; but explained it by the necessities of a state of struggle. He was not as liberal as Mazzini had expected, evidently accepting the teachings of Cousin, Guizot, and Villemain, the leaders of the *doctrinaire* school, and had become imbued with federalism, which he preached as the ideal of political organization to the many Italian exiles who surrounded him, and drew their ideas and inspiration from his lips. It was apparent that none of them dreamed of the possibility or even the desirability of Italian unity.

Sismondi introduced Mazzini to Pellegrino Rossi at the "Literary Club," and the latter directed the attention of the young patriot to a Lombard exile seated in the corner close to him, who seemed to be listening only to his words. This stranger or spy, Giacomo Ciani, condemned to death by Austria in 1821, then approached Mazzini and said to him in a whisper, that if he was desirous of action he should go to Lyons and make himself known to the Italians at the "*Caff  della Fenice*." Without delay he proceeded to that city, and found many exiles, the greater number of whom were military men, and some of whom he had seen wandering in the streets of Genoa ten years before, with all the bitterness of disappointment in their looks. Among these were Borso de Carminati, an officer of considerable promise, Carlo Bianco, Voarino, Tedeschi, Pisani, Fecchini, and General Regis, all of them Piedmontese and republicans. They had flocked to Lyons to join in an invasion of Savoy, then being organized by a special committee. The expedition already numbered two thousand Italians and many French workmen. They had an abundance of money, for nobles, princes, and men of all shades of opinion, belonging to the wealthier classes, had been induced to support the movement, because the French government was supposed to be favorable to it. The exiles made their preparations publicly; the Italian tricolored flag was entwined with that of France in the "*Caff  della Fenice*;" the depots of arms were known; and the committee was in communication with the prefect of Lyons.

The French government, however, soon changed its position, and there appeared a severe proclamation against the Italian enterprise, dated from the office of the prefect, commanding the exiles to dis-



band, and threatening to punish, with the utmost rigor of the criminal law, any persons who should venture to compromise France with other governments by violating the frontiers of friendly powers. "I found the committee," says Mazzini, "completely crushed and overwhelmed. The banners had all disappeared, and a great number of arms had been sequestered. Old General Regis was in tears, and the other exiles were cursing both the betrayal and betrayer—the sterile vengeance reserved for those who, in their country's cause, put their trust in others rather than in themselves." The French authorities not only arrested the advance guard of the expedition which, embracing many Frenchmen, had been sent out toward Savoy, but also seized a large number of exiles, conveyed them handcuffed to Calais, whence they were embarked for England. In the midst of the confusion of imprisonment, flights, threats, and despair, Borso informed Mazzini that he and a few other republicans intended starting that night for Corsica, thence to carry arms and assistance to the insurgents in the center of Italy. Among the refugees in the diligence to Marseilles were Borso, Mazzini, Bianco, Voarino, Tedeschi, and Zuppo, a Neapolitan. Proceeding from Marseilles to Toulon, they went on board a merchant vessel of Naples, and after a very stormy voyage reached Bastia. Mazzini, who was delighted to stand upon Italian soil again, found the island "truly Italian, not only in climate, scenery, and language, but in generous patriotism." He made a short tour over the central part of Corsica, in company with Antonio Benci, one of the Tuscan contributors to the "Antologia," who had fled from threatened persecution to the island, and he found the people hostile to France and in sympathy with the insurrection then progressing in Italy. These rough but worthy mountaineers were armed, and expressed a desire to follow Mazzini and his companions as leaders to assist the insurgents in the Romagna. Neapolitan exiles first introduced *Carbonarism* into Corsica, and it soon became a ruling power throughout the island. A venerated leader among them was Galotti, who was given up to the tyrant of Naples by Charles X, of France, but who escaped to Corsica, where La Cecilia and several other refugees from Southern Italy had sought protection.

Mazzini learned from these individuals the plan that was to be pursued, which was simply to cross to the Continent, and invade the center of Italy at the head of two or three thousand Corsicans, who were already armed and organized. But money was wanting to hire vessels and to support the families of the poorer islanders; and, though solemnly promised by a friend of the patriotic priest, Bonardi,

one of the disciples of Buonarroti, the needed funds never arrived. In consequence of these delays the expedition did not sail, but suddenly collapsed, when the news arrived that Austrian intervention had restored the insurgent provinces to their former masters. Having exhausted his means, Mazzini left Corsica in March, 1831, and returned to Marseilles, where his uncle, in his parents' name, had urged him to come. There he resumed his design of founding the association of "Young Italy." The exiles of Modena, Parma, and the Romagna flocked into Marseilles to the number of upwards of a thousand. During that year Mazzini became acquainted with Nicola Fabrizzi, Celeste Menotti, Gustavo Modena, L. A. Melegari, and other young, ardent patriots. He mentions in his writings Giuditta Sidoli, "a woman of rare purity of principle and firmness of mind," adding to this special tribute a general eulogy in these words: "They were all linked with me in the holiest of all friendships, a friendship sanctified by unity of virtuous aim, and which, with some among them—Nicola Fabrizzi, for instance—ripened into an affection, which has endured to the present day; with others, as in the case of Lamberti, it was only interrupted by death. Towards none of them was it ever betrayed by me. I sketched forth the design and the rules of the association of 'Young Italy,' and sent word of my purpose to my friends in Genoa."

In April, 1831, Charles Felix died, and his cousin Charles Albert ascended the Sardinian throne. He was inclined to pursue a liberal policy toward his people, and was even willing to grant them the same constitution he had given them as regent; but feared that such a step would involve him in a war with Austria, for which he did not believe his kingdom was prepared. Mazzini resolved to address a letter to the new sovereign. Before printing it, he read it to Guglielmo Libri, an eminent man of science, who praised it; but opposed its publication on the ground that the perpetual banishment of the author would result from it. Disregarding this advice, Mazzini issued the letter, and sent a few copies from Marseilles to Italy, to such individuals as he knew by name in the various cities of the Sardinian states. Three or four clandestine reprints of it were soon made, and thus it quickly spread in all directions. Charles Albert received a copy and read it, and, shortly afterwards, a circular was sent by the government to the authorities at all the frontiers, instructing them to arrest and imprison Mazzini should he attempt to return to Italy. In this letter the king was reminded of the enthusiastic hopes awakened in the minds of the Italians by the accession of a prince who

had been a *Carbonaro* in 1821. His attention was then called to the universal dissatisfaction, and the hatred of Austria, existing in all the states of Italy, and the possibility of uniting them in the grand struggle for Italian independence, and he was exhorted to seek a "crown brighter and nobler than that of Piedmont—a crown that only awaits a man bold enough to conceive the idea of wearing it, resolute and determined enough to consecrate himself wholly to the realization of that idea, and virtuous enough not to dim its splendor with ignoble tyranny."

The association of "Young Italy," founded by Mazzini, adopted as a symbol a sprig of cypress, in memory of those who had died in defense of its principles. Its motto, *Ora e Sempre*, "Now and Forever," indicated the determination of its members to persevere in their enterprise. Its banner, "composed of the three Italian colors, white, red, and green, bore on the one side the words LIBERTY, EQUALITY, HUMANITY; and on the other, UNITY and INDEPENDENCE. The first indicated the international mission of Italy; the second, the national. Committees were rapidly constituted in the principal cities of Tuscany. In Genoa, the brothers Ruffini, Campanella, Benza, and a few other young men, diligently labored to promote the interests of the association. Mazzini, Lamberti, Usiglio, Lustrini, G. B. Ruffini, and five or six others, mostly Modenese, worked day and night at Marseilles, writing articles and letters, seeing travelers, and affiliating Italian sailors. They smuggled their documents into Italy in packages, barrels, and other merchandise, being assisted by French republicans and sailors of the Italian merchant navy. Among these friends were Lerici, and Ambrogio Giacobello. The association rapidly spread from Genoa along the two Riviere, and even extended to the Neapolitan frontier. Clandestine presses were established in various parts of Italy to reproduce the writings of these radical republicans, and the supply was not equal to the demand. Unable to prevent the circulation of these papers in Italy, the authorities there resolved to silence the authors, and, accordingly, France was requested to banish them from her territory. The order was issued in August, 1832; but Mazzini concealed himself, and conveyed the impression that he had departed. He continued the publication of the republican journal, *Young Italy*, employing French compositors, and secretly circulating the copies when printed. "And then began for me," says Mazzini, in 1861, "the life I have led for twenty years out of thirty—a life of voluntary imprisonment within the four walls of a little room."



By the middle of 1833 the organization of the "Young Italy" had become very powerful, especially in Lombardy, the Genoese territory, Tuscany, and the States of the Church. The Tuscan center of the association was Leghorn, where Guerrazzi, Bini, and Enrico Mayer were exceedingly active. The branches of the associations in Pisa, Sienna, Lucca, and Florence were guided by them. Enrico Mayer went to Rome, where he was imprisoned upon suspicion; but was soon released, and, proceeding to Marseilles, consulted with Mazzini. Among the zealous members of the association, in various cities of Italy, were Professor Paulo Corsini, Montanelli, Francesco, Cempini, Franchini, Enrico Montucci, Carlo Matteuci, Carlo Fenzi, and Maffei. In Naples, Carlo Poerio, Bellini, Leopardi, and their friends had an independent organization, but animated by the same spirit that burned in "Young Italy." There was a committee in Rome, and another in Umbria, of which Guardabassi was chief. In Genoa, not only the youth, but the commercial class, and even many of the nobility, united with the new movement; among others, the brothers Mari, the Marquis Roveredo, the two Cambiasi, and Lorenzo Pareto, afterwards minister. In Piedmont the work proceeded more slowly; but even there many branches of the association had been organized, and among the active followers were the advocate Azario, Allegra, Sciandra, Romnaldro Cantara, Ranco, Moia, Barberis, Vochiero, Parola, Massino, d' Ivrea, and Stara.

Mazzini, believing that Sardinia was the most favorable locality in Italy for exciting a revolt against Austrian rule, resolved to occupy the two strategic points—Alessandria and Genoa, where the association was most numerous and powerful; but the government, suspecting that incendiary documents were being circulated, was successful in discovering some of the publications of "Young Italy." All who had them in their possession were imprisoned, and were threatened with death if they refused to give the names of their accomplices. Some complied with this demand, and others confessed their own guilt without betraying their companions. The prisons were filled with the suspected, and their friends were also arrested. Many of the prisoners were treated in the most cruel manner, and every species of torture tried for the purpose of extorting a confession from them. A large number yielded; others remained firm and were executed. Jacopo Ruffini tore a nail from the door of his prison, and, opening a vein in his neck, passed away from earth. He was a school-mate of Mazzini, who said that he was "a youth of the sweetest nature, the purest and most constant affections," he had ever known.

Some who were present declare that the trial of the prisoners was a mockery, being conducted hastily, without any regard to legal forms. During the months of May and June, 1833, ten or twelve subordinate officers of the army suffered the penalty of death.

After the disastrous and tragic failure of "Young Italy," Mazzini retired to Geneva, in Switzerland, and organized another movement, which he called "Young Europe," his purpose being to unite the cause of Italy with that of the other oppressed nations, and raise the banner of European fraternity upon the Alps. He was assisted by several military men, among whom were Carlo Bianco, then residing at Nyon, and Gentilini Scovazzi. At the hotel where Mazzini made his headquarters were Agostini Ruffini, of Genoa; Giambattista Ruffini, of Modena; Celeste Menotti, Nicola Fabrizzi, Angelo Usilio, Giuseppi Lamberti, Gustavo Modena, Paolo Pallia, and others. The new enterprise also received aid from Giacomo Ciani, Gaspare Belcredi, and Gaspare Rosales, and the command of it was given to General Ramorino, a native of Savoy, who had taken part in the Polish insurrection. Mazzini was not favorable to his appointment, but submitted to the wishes of others.

On the 1st of February, 1834, the expedition started for St. Julien, for the purpose of invading Savoy. The government of Geneva, however, seized the boats and arrested all suspected parties; but the population of the city arose in defense of the prisoners, and they were released. As they proceeded onward, the news of their coming reached St. Julien, and the Piedmontese leaders, seeing the impossibility of defending the place, had abandoned it. Ramorino, whose heart was really not in the movement, did not take advantage of the situation; but divided his forces. In the mean time, Mazzini was taken sick, and became delirious with fever. Ramorino, on ascertaining this fact, disbanded his troops, and thus ended the campaign. Many of the exiles were arrested and sent to England or America; but Mazzini, the two Ruffinis, and Melegari succeeded in escaping from Geneva, and after remaining for some time concealed in Lausanne, finally settled at Berne. While at Lausanne, Mazzini published a small pamphlet under the title, "*Ils sont Partis*," treating of the persecutions of these two hundred exiles. Toward the end of 1834, he founded the association called "Young Switzerland," and in June, 1835, commenced the publication of *La Jeune Suisse*, a bi-weekly journal. In 1836, he and his companions were exiled from Switzerland by the diet, and, in January, 1837, went to London.

## Fourth Decade, Continued, 1830-1840.

## CHAPTER VI.

*THE WALDENSES—GREGORY XVI—GARIBALDI.*

IN addition to the large sum contributed in England, previous to 1830, for the support of benevolent work among the Waldenses, Dr. Gilly received five thousand pounds from friends in that country to establish a college in the "Valleys." To choose the site, and take the requisite measures for the accomplishment of this great object, he made a second visit to Piedmont in 1831. Returning home the same year, he published a second volume of his "Waldensian Researches," in which he gave the results of his observations at that time. This book, like the first, awakened a deep interest in behalf of the Vaudois.

In the latter part of May, 1837, the Rev. Robert Baird, D. D., a prominent American clergyman and active philanthropist, visited the region inhabited by the Waldenses. He had been sent to Paris by the "French Evangelical Association" of the United States to promote the interests of Protestant Christianity in France, and, also, as far as possible, in other countries on the Continent. Dr. Baird had brought letters from Rome and Naples to Count Walbourg Truchsess, then the ambassador of Prussia at the court of Turin, and through him became acquainted with the Rev. A. Bert, chaplain of the Protestant embassies at that city. The latter accompanied Dr. Baird to the residence of his brother-in-law, Rev. Jean Pierre Bonjour, whose parish of St. Jean was about thirty miles from Turin. Col. Beckwith was a guest of the family, and Dr. Baird records the delightful interview he enjoyed with the inmates. Madame Bonjour, an estimable and pious lady, had died a few months previous, leaving the bereaved husband sad and desolate. She was a daughter of the Rev. Mr. Bert, who, at the time of his death was moderator of the Waldensian Synod. Col. Beckwith and Dr. Baird visited, on foot, La Tour, and other interesting places in the "Valleys." The latter, in his work entitled "Protestantism in Italy," refers to the favorable impression made upon his mind by the simple, honest, and Christian appearance and demeanor of the inhabitants. Without an



exception, he received kind salutations from men, women, and even children, among the Waldensian population; but the Romanists seldom returned any thing more than a sullen look to his civil greeting of *Bon jour*, or *Bon soir*, as the case might be. As an evidence of the industry of the Waldenses, the same writer states that the few beggars he saw in the "Valleys" were invariably Roman Catholics, who came there from the country around.

"Nor were we able soon," says Dr. Baird, "to divest ourselves of the emotions of the preceding night. We felt that we were in a land where, if every rock and every ancient tree and every ancient house had a tongue, it could tell a tale such as none could hear unmoved. And never did we so fully see and feel the beauty and the force of the remark of the Roman orator: 'We are moved, I know not how, by the very places where remain the footsteps of those whom we either love or admire. Even our Athens itself does not so delight me with its magnificent works, and its exquisite arts of the ancients, as by the remembrance of her great men, and the spots where each dwelt, sat, and disputed; I contemplate with eagerness even their very sepulchers.' . . . There is hardly a spot on or near which an intelligent Waldensian pastor or laic even will not be able to relate to you some thrilling occurrence having taken place."

While among the Waldenses, Dr. Baird observed their mode of worship. The regent or teacher of the chief parish school, which is always held in the village where the church of the parish stands, commences the service by reading two or three chapters from Osterwald's French Bible, and also the practical observations at the end of each in the old folio edition of that excellent translation. After half an hour has been spent in that way, and when the people are well assembled, the pastor ascends the pulpit and commences with a short invocation of the divine blessing, according to the words of the liturgy used in the Waldensian Churches. He then invites the people to listen attentively to the Ten Commandments and the summary thereof given by Christ. The next exercise is the "confession of sins," which is the same that is found in the liturgies of the French and Swiss Churches. After the singing of a psalm, in which the whole congregation unite, a prayer of some length, either extemporaneous or taken from the liturgy, is offered up. Then comes the sermon, which is followed by the singing of a psalm or hymn. The concluding prayer, to which are appended the Lord's Prayer and the Apostles' Creed, is selected from the liturgy, and is composed of petitions in behalf of their own Church, their poor and afflicted, the

Church universal, the king and royal family, and others in authority. The service is closed with the singing of a few verses of a psalm or hymn, and the Aaronic benediction. When the rite of baptism is to be performed it immediately follows the sermon. The minister, after a special prayer for the occasion, and an address to the parents or those who present the child, descends from the pulpit, places his hands together, into which some one pours water from a vial or small bottle, which he in turn pours upon the child, pronouncing at the same time its name and repeating the words of the institution: "I baptize thee in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost." When the Lord's-supper is to be celebrated it likewise follows the sermon in the forenoon, and, like the ordinance of baptism, is administered almost in the same form which the Presbyterian Churches every-where observe.

Dr. Baird, in examining the historical records of the Waldenses, was impressed with the fact that the "Church of the Valleys" had in all ages maintained the true faith. At their synod, which met at Angrogna in September, A. D. 1535, the pastors or *barbes* adopted seventeen propositions which are eminently Protestant. Their present "Confession of Faith" was made A. D. 1655, when they addressed their famous appeal to the Protestant Churches of Germany, Switzerland, England, the United Provinces, Denmark, Sweden, Poland, Bohemia, and other countries, in which they affirmed that their religious views were the same as those held by those orthodox bodies. The document, which contains the belief of the Waldensian Church, consists of thirty-three articles, and was drawn up with great ability by Leger and others, who passed through dreadful trials rather than deny the evangelical doctrines which they had embraced. In 1837 Dr. Baird found the Waldensian ministers true to their orthodox standards, and, instead of sending their students to the academy of Geneva, where rationalism reigned, they placed those who desired to study in that city in the new theological school, then under the presidency of the distinguished Merle d'Aubigné.

The benevolent work of Colonel Beckwith among the Waldenses excited the admiration of Dr. Baird, who beheld its glorious results. The noble English philanthropist was engaged in promoting the education of the youth by the establishment of village and hamlet schools throughout the "Valleys." He had already established about ninety, and hoped to increase the number to one hundred and fifty, which would secure the opportunity of gaining a good common education in the French language, which all spoke, to every child and youth

among the twenty-two thousand Waldensian people. At that time the fruits of the charitable efforts of Dr. Gilly and other English Christians were visible in the three or four female schools at as many different places in the "Valleys," and also in the large and commodious college edifice, then in course of erection. Colonel Beckwith's labors in behalf of the Waldenses were appreciated, and no one was ever so highly esteemed by them. His portrait, lithographed at Paris, was almost the only ornament to be seen in many of their cottages. On one of the school-houses in the parish of St. Jean was this inscription: "*Whoever passes this way let him bless the name of Colonel Beckwith.*" The affection of these hardy mountaineers for this humble and unostentatious Christian foreigner was deep and sincere. While English philanthropists, like Beckwith and Gilly, were laboring to educate the Waldenses, comparatively little was done by the Italian authorities to elevate the masses throughout the Peninsula. The condition of the country was truly lamentable. On the 2d of February, 1831, three millions of Italians had a new master, whose name was Gregory XVI. Austria designated the man she wished to succeed Pius VIII in the papal chair, and the sacred college obeyed by selecting Cardinal Mauro Capellari. He was a monk of the Camadules and ignorant of public affairs. The political situation was not promising when he commenced his reign, and, filled with alarm, he threw himself into the arms of Cardinal Bernetti. The Roman people suffered innumerable evils. Three millions of citizens were enfeoffed to some thousands of priests or persons under the mask of ecclesiastical garments, who absorbed for themselves alone fifty-five millions of dollars. All the honors, all the offices, the whole of the authority and nine-tenths of the property of the state were in the hands of the clergy. The supporters of this class were a band of assassins called *sanfedistes*, six thousand Swiss, and a few regiments of national soldiers, despised, in rags, and badly disciplined. Besides this there was no commerce and no industry. The smugglers organized like a regular government, with its bankers, its depots, its chiefs, its army, its correspondents, its docks, stronger than the legal government, more beloved, always ready to give battle to the clerical agents and feared by the latter when they were not accomplices.

Agriculture was neglected, statistics were not given, and no effort made to sustain a regular and normal administration. Insupportable taxes badly laid and distributed were charged almost entirely upon laymen, and excited discontent, especially in the Marches and Umbria. Innumerable obstacles were opposed to the development of the pub-



lic wealth, particularly on account of the repulsion which the priests had for railroads, and on account of the preservation of the property in mortmain and the conversion of large personal properties into real estate by a legal fiction. There existed no codes and no equality before the law, but the clergy enjoyed numerous privileges and immunities. The administration of justice was intricate, slow, and uncertain, and the priests were the controlling spirits. The people groaned beneath a public debt of eighty millions of crowns, of which Pope Gregory XVI alone was responsible for twenty-seven millions, which he had extravagantly spent. There was an enormous deficit every year, but no account of the administration of the public finances was rendered and no budget agreed upon. The darkest feature of Gregory's reign, however, was the want of a general system of instruction, and the Jesuits directed the whole course of private education.

The pontificate of Gregory XVI was not marked by any great events. The prince de Metternich disliked Cardinal Bernetti, and urged the pope to dismiss him. In 1836 he was forced to resign, and Cardinal Lambruschini became the papal prime minister or secretary of state. Like Gregory XVI, he was also a monk. He was tall in stature, haughty in manner, and well adapted to shine in diplomatic circles. He understood men, business, and the proprieties of life; he was not a stranger to the intrigues of the court of Europe; he was initiated into the principles of the "Holy Alliance," and gave to them the consecration of the papacy. Legitimacy was his national religion, and France his *delenda Carthago est*. In choosing this secretary of state, Gregory XVI believed that he was ridding himself of a master, but he soon found himself in the hands of a tyrant.

While Italy was thus crushed, and the hour of her deliverance appeared to be far in the future, the men who were destined to be her liberators were then in comparative obscurity. Cavour cultivated his farm, Gavazzi occupied a professor's chair, and Garibaldi was a sailor. The latter at this period (1832) became deeply interested in the welfare of his country. "Being an ardent lover of Italy from my childhood," he says, "I felt a strong desire to become initiated in the mysteries of her restoration, and I sought every-where for books and writings which might enlighten me on the subject, and for persons animated with feelings corresponding with my own. On a voyage which I made to Tagangog, in Russia, with a young Ligurian, I was first made acquainted with a few things connected with the intentions and plans of the Italian patriots." As the result of his

entire devotion to the cause of Italy he was proscribed, and on the 5th of February, 1834, at seven o'clock in the evening, passed out of the gate of Linterna, at Genoa, in the disguise of a peasant. A few days afterwards he saw his name for the first time in a newspaper containing his death sentence.

Proceeding to Marseilles, Garibaldi remained there several months, and then made another voyage to the Black Sea. He resolved to visit the Italian colony in South America, and accordingly sailed for Rio Janeiro. In that city he met Rosetti, with whom he engaged in business. From Zambeccari, a prisoner sent from Rio Grande, Garibaldi learned that the Italians there had declared for independence. With a few companions he sailed in a small vessel, which he named *The Massini*, and thus commenced that remarkable military career of thirteen years' duration in South America, which for daring, bravery, and hardships has few parallels in history. While fighting for the "Republic of Rio Grande" he was conquered by the beautiful Anna, who became the partner of his sorrows and joys, and was truly the inspiration of his life.

---

## FIFTH DECADE, 1840-1850.

---

### CHAPTER VII.

#### *MAZZINI IN EXILE—THE BANDIERAS.*

DURING the former part of this decade Italy enjoyed comparative exemption from political commotion. Mazzini was in England, struggling with poverty, and only able to support himself by the aid of literature. He made some acquaintances, and became a contributor to several reviews, receiving a small compensation, which, with the help of his own modest allowance, enabled him to meet his daily expenses. Either by choosing Italian subjects, or by frequent allusions to Italian matters, he directed the attention of the English people to the national question in his beloved country. Though some of his ideas appeared impracticable, and even dangerous to many English minds, yet the sincerity of his convictions, demonstrated by his life, gained him the friendship of a large number of the best residents. "Nor shall I ever forget while I live,"

he wrote, "nor ever pronounce without a throb of gratitude, the name of the land wherein I now write, which became to me almost as a second country, and in which I found the lasting consolation of affection in a life embittered by delusions and destitute of all joy." He expressed his warmest thanks to many kind families, whose ministries of benevolence almost made him forget at times that he was an exile.

Mazzini had long cherished the desire of extending the fame of Ugo Foscolo, a writer, in his opinion, who, with the single exception of Alfieri, had contributed more than any other to that manly vigor which Italian literature had manifested during the preceding sixty years. He declared that, while the majority of authors in Italy wrote in the name of princes, patrons, or academies, Foscolo taught a higher and nobler view of art, and inculcated devotion to the great idea of patriotism. Mazzini, after becoming acquainted with the literary men of England, and feeling a new stimulus from the articles which he had written upon the intellectual movement in his native land, resolved to collect the literary productions of the great author. The latter, while in exile, had commenced many works, which were only partially completed, and others, owing to the poverty and isolation in which he lived, had been lost. After a long and almost fruitless search Mazzini found—besides several letters to Edgar Taylor—all that Foscolo had finished of his work upon the great poem of Dante, and the proof-sheets of about two-thirds of the "*Lettera Apologetica*," at that time quite unknown in Italy. The discovery of the latter manuscript filled Mazzini with real joy. The pages, without any title, and without the author's name, had been thrown aside with several torn papers, destined to be destroyed, in a room at the house of Pickering, a London publisher.

The Genoese patriot, when he found these important papers, expressed surprise that not one among the many Italians residing in London or visiting it for amusement had ever sought for them, and that the honor of restoring them to Italy, at least eleven years after Foscolo's death, should have been left to another exile in poverty. If diligent effort had been made earlier all of these valuable writings might probably have been saved; and Mazzini asserted that this neglect is "one among many proofs of the indifference and ingratitude which are the common vices of enslaved peoples." The publisher, who had formerly despised these works because ignorant of their value, became exacting when he saw the eagerness of the discoverer, and refused to part with them unless the latter would also purchase the work on the text of Dante, for which he demanded four hundred



pounds. Mazzini, to use his own expression, "could not at that time have answered for four hundred pence," and therefore wrote to Quirina Magiotti, "an exceptional woman and exceptional friend," asking help to redeem these relics of one whom she had loved and esteemed beyond all others. This lady responded favorably to the appeal; but the bookseller still persisted in not selling the one work without the other, and she regretted her inability to purchase both. After many useless attempts, Mazzini succeeded at last in persuading Pietro Rolandi, an Italian publisher settled in London, to pay the sum demanded and assume the expenses of the edition. It was strange that a man "prudent and timid, both from necessity and habit," should be induced to undertake such a literary enterprise. Though "at heart more tender of his country's glory than booksellers generally are," and united to Mazzini by strong friendship, yet the latter was astonished at his influence over Rolandi.

In a short time afterwards the very pages which were needed to complete the book were found in a trunk full of papers belonging to Foscolo, and saved from dispersion by the Canon Riego—the only man who watched by the bedside of the exile during his last illness—which subsequently came into the possession of Enrico Mayer and other friends at Leghorn, but had never been examined. The discovery of these last fragments awakened an energy in all of them, which resulted in giving to Italy, first, the volume of the political writings of Foscolo, which Mazzini published at Lugano, and then the Florentine edition, directed with "*l'intelletto d'amore*," by Orlandini. Believing that a biography of the distinguished author should be written, Mazzini commenced the pleasant task, but was prevented by adverse circumstances and many cares from completing it. He expressed the opinion that Nicolini was the most competent to do it; but the latter subsequently died, and his own life is still unwritten. Owing to stress of poverty and illness Foscolo had only completed the first part of his undertaking, "*L'Inferno*;" and Mazzini, finding that the publisher, Pickering, would sell all or none, determined to complete the "*Purgatory*" and "*Paradise*."

In the Summer of 1844 Mazzini, discovering that his correspondence had been tampered with in London, placed the evidence which he had accumulated in the hands of a member of parliament, and petitioned the House for an inquiry into the matter. The accusation produced great excitement, and, the London *Times* having cast reflections upon the Italian patriot, Mr. Thomas Carlyle published in that paper a letter defending his character. The following extract

indicates its spirit: "I have had the honor to know M. Mazzini for a series of years; and, whatever I may think of his practical insight and skill in worldly affairs, I can with great freedom testify to all men that he, if ever I have seen one such, is a man of genius and virtue, a man of sterling veracity, humanity, and nobleness of mind, one of those rare men, numerable, unfortunately, but as units in this world, who are worthy to be called martyr-souls; who in silence, piously in their daily life, understand and practice what is meant by that." Many of the letters addressed to Mazzini, and which when opened were found to contain some views relative to the proposed expedition of the brothers Bandiera, were copied and sent to the governments of Naples and Austria.

The brothers Bandiera, who corresponded with Mazzini at that time, were born at Venice. They were the sons of Baron Bandiera, rear-admiral of the Austrian navy, so unfavorably known to Italy for having violated the articles of the capitulation of Ancona in 1831, and captured the insurgents on their way to France by sea. From their earliest years the brothers had dreamed of the national unity of Italy; and long before they were able to obtain any contact with Italian exiles, or the republican leaders in the center of the Peninsula, they had themselves endeavored to prepare the way for the realization of their idea. Toward the close of 1842 Attilio, the elder of the two brothers, wrote to Mazzini under an assumed name, expressing his esteem and love for him "as chief of those who represent in our generation the national opposition to the tyranny and consequent infamy that now contaminates Italy." In the letter he refers to Mazzini as the founder of the secret society called "Young Italy," and also as the editor of a journal bearing the same title, but declares that he had not, until a few days previous, seen any of that patriot's works. Attilio further states that the first and second numbers of the "Apostolato Popolare" were doubly welcome to him, because to the gratification he received in finding his own political principles shared by a man like Mazzini was added the satisfaction of discovering a means, however indirect, of forwarding a letter to him, after a year's earnest effort to learn his address. The bearer of the letter to London was Domenico Moro, a native of Venice, and lieutenant of the *Adria*. Attilio and his brother Emilio worked secretly, carefully preparing their expedition; but about the 1st of March, 1843, they learned that a certain Micciarelli had betrayed their plans. Attilio resolved to escape, and before starting sent word of his intention to Emilio, then at Venice. The latter sought refuge in Corfu,

and wrote to Mazzini, on the 22d of April, that the Archduke Rainieri, vice-regent of the Lombardo-Venetian provinces, had sent an agent to his mother, promising that if she could persuade her son to return to Venice a pardon would be secured for him. The devoted mother visited him, and endeavored to move him by entreaties, and even tears, but he decided to remain.

The Austrian government now declared the brothers Bandiera guilty of high treason "for having joined the sect of 'Young Italy,'" and they were cited to appear within the space of ninety days before the imperial tribunals at Venice. They replied, through the medium of the public journals, that they gloried in what the authorities called "high treason," and, as death was certain, they preferred to meet it in any shape rather than under the infamous banner of Austria. At this time Domenico Moro, then only twenty-two years of age, voluntarily became an exile by uniting with the brave brothers. He is represented as having a fine personal appearance and a truly angelic disposition. Attilio, after visiting Syra, Malta, and other places, went to Corfu on the 8th of May, 1843, and in a letter written to Mazzini a few days subsequently, stated that their band proposed to enter Calabria, and that he and Emilio had sold at ruinous prices the few things which they had brought with them, receiving only five hundred francs. As they needed at least three thousand, Attilio wrote to Nicola Fabrizi for that amount, which Mazzini had deposited in his hands for the use of the Bandieras. Instead of complying with the request, Fabrizi endeavored to persuade them to defer their expedition until a powerful force could be organized, and in this effort he was seconded by Mazzini. The latter received a letter from Attilio, on the 21st of May, in which he declared that the attempt they had intended to make during that month was rendered impossible for the want of money. "Do not imagine, however," he wrote, "that poverty can alter us in any way. . . . Whatever our fate, we hope to leave the young generation an example of undying perseverance."

Meanwhile the general discontent increased, and the popular excitement, which seemed to subside in 1843 manifested itself in a still more threatening manner in 1844, extending from the center to the south of the Peninsula. An armed *émeute* occurred at Cosenza, which, though soon put down, produced much agitation, and awakened a strong desire for action. Sicily, burdened so long by misgovernment and extortion, was anxious to revolt; but certain parties advocated delay, and the brave Sicilians were restrained. While



letters were passing between Fabrizi at Malta and the brothers Bandiera at Corfu, relative to the enterprise already mentioned, Ricciotti, a friend of Mazzini since 1831, departed from London and, early in June, joined the Bandieras. He was born in 1800, at Frosinone, in the papal states, and, when only eighteen years of age, the national Italian idea had taken such full possession of his mind that he swore to devote his life to its realization. In 1835, seeing no present probability of redemption for Italy, he resolved to acquire military experience in Spain, saying in a letter to his children, "I shall once more combat in the cause of liberty, and, should fortune favor me, I may yet live to put the knowledge I acquire to profit for my country."

On the night of the 12th of June, the Bandieras, Ricciotti, and twenty others started for Calabria, and soon arrived there in safety. But a force five times greater than theirs was sent to capture them, and, though they fought bravely, the insurgents were compelled to surrender. The prisoners were dragged before a military commission, and nine of them, including the Bandieras, Domenico Moro, and Nicola Ricciotti were condemned to be shot. One who was present at their execution, on the 25th of July, 1844, at Cosenza, speaks of them as saints, calm and intrepid, like the martyrs of the first ages of Christianity. On the morning of their execution they were found asleep, but rising from their humble beds they arranged their toilet carefully, as if they were about to accomplish an act of religious solemnity. They gently repulsed a priest who approached them, and said to him, that having endeavored "to practice the law of the Gospel, and to propagate it even at the cost of their blood among those emancipated by Jesus, they hoped more from their own good intentions than his words." "Reserve them," added one of the prisoners, "for your oppressed brethren, and teach them to be what the cross has made them, free and equal." They walked to the place of execution conversing together without agitation, without ostentation. "Spare the face," said they to the soldiers, "it was made in the image of God. *Vive l'Italia!*" This was their last cry on earth.

"The martyrs of Cosenza," says Mazzini, "have taught us that man is bound to live and die for the faith that is in him; they have proved to the world that Italians know how to die; they have strengthened in Europe the conviction that Italy is destined to exist. The faith, for which such men seek death as eagerly as the lover seeks his betrothed, is neither the frenzy of culpable agitators nor the dream of deluded men; it is the germ of a religion, a providential decree. And from the fire of patriotism that emanates from their sepulcher,

the angel of Italy will one day kindle the torch with which Rome, not as the false prophets tell us, the Rome of the popes, the greatness of which is extinguished forever, but the Rome of the people, shall, for the third time, illumine the path of progress to be followed by all humanity."

---

### Fifth Decade, Continued, 1840-1850.

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

### CAMILLO CAVOUR—THE CRISIS IN ITALY.

CAMILLO CAVOUR, whether wandering over his farm in the district of Vercelli or enlivening with his sparkling conversation the *salon* of his aunt, the duchess of Clermont-Tonnère at Turin, or discussing European affairs with the learned circles in Geneva, was closely observing the progress of events in his own country. While visiting London and Paris he studied the institutions of England and France, and derived from them valuable lessons. His models of statesmen were Pitt, Canning, and Robert Peel, and it was thus at the moment when the period of reforms opened for Italy, that "the obsure citizen of Piedmont" found himself armed for public life. At the close of 1847 he established a journal, *The Risorgimento*, to promote and regulate the national movement which Charles Albert had stimulated by his concessions.

One day, early in 1848, Genoa, that center of keen and bitter passions, was the scene of tumult, resulting from the excited state of the public mind. A deputation had been sent to Turin to demand from King Charles Albert the expulsion of the Jesuits and the institution of a national guard. The liberal section at Turin favored the request of the Genoese deputation. Cavour instantly perceived that such a radical policy would not secure the proposed reforms, because the adoption of rigorous measures against the Jesuits might wound the religious sentiments of the king, and the establishment of a national guard would only provoke trouble and sedition so long as a legal representation of the whole people was wanting. Hence, he resolved to claim a constitution, and thus directly accomplish, without discord, what was demanded in the Genoese petition. While Ca-

avour's plan was more daring, it was also more politic, because it would flatter the pride and secret ambition of the prince, whom the constitution would elect the chief of Liberal Italy. It was a curious circumstance that those who most warmly opposed Cavour, and refused to follow his suggestions, were extreme liberals, men of the democratic party, Valerio and Sineo, who were suspicious of his leaning to English institutions, and ironically called him "My Lord Camillo." From that time arose the question between the constitutional policy and revolutionary policy.

Soon after this every thing was strangely changed, and there was no question of the constitution wrested from the vacillations of Charles Albert. The revolution of the 24th of February had recently burst forth, every-where kindling incendiary fires in Italy and in Germany—at Vienna as well as at Berlin. As already stated, Sicily was in a state of insurrection; Milan had expelled the Germans at the close of a five days' struggle; while, at the same time, Venice was securing her own freedom. The Austrian dominion, weakened in the heart of the empire by the Viennese revolution, had barely a hold even in its fortresses of the Adige. During the progress of these events impassioned appeals were heard in Turin. Cavour was among the first to utter the decisive word. On the breaking out of the revolution in Lombardy he already saw, with prophetic eye, the grand and noble edifice of Italian unity rising under the constitutional scepter of the house of Savoy; and, on the 23d of March, 1848, he addressed a bold and stirring appeal to the Piedmontese government, which sounded out amidst the storm like the blast of a bugle.

"The supreme hour for the Savoyard monarchy has struck," he wrote, "the hour for bold deliberations, the hour upon which depends the fate of empires and the destinies of nations. In view of the startling events occurring in Lombardy and Vienna hesitation, doubt, delay are no longer possible; they would prove the most disastrous of policies. Men of cool judgment, accustomed to listen much more to the dictates of reason than the impulses of passion, after having pondered well our every word, we are in duty bound to declare there is no alternative for the nation, for the government, for the king, but war—war without hesitation and without delay." The result justified the declaration of Cavour; for, shortly after, Carlo Alberto formally declared war against Austria.

On the 1st of May, 1848, the Sub-Alpine parliament was convoked for the first time. Cavour, who was elected as the representative of the first electoral college of Turin, delivered his maiden speech on



the 4th of July following, upon the occasion of the proposed union of Lombardy with Piedmont. "We must not forget," he exclaimed, "that, while we are talking and debating, our brethren are fighting, and that they have the same rights that we have in the formation of of the Constitutional Assembly, which is to decide the destinies of Italy." On the announcement of the defeat of Custoza, Cavour hastened to enroll himself as a volunteer; but the armistice of Milan prevented his departure for the theater of war. He accordingly resumed his seat in parliament, where he ably defended the Perrone-Pinelli ministry, which, having accepted the mediation of England and France in obtaining an honorable peace from Austria, was fiercely assailed by the opposition, who were impelled by their principles to wish a continuation of the war.

The sudden and, perhaps, inevitable crisis which arose in Italy in March, 1848, was not then fully understood; but it was, nevertheless, the most perilous of trials, and has since been a lesson to a whole generation. Men like Cavour, though opposed to a rash policy, did not deem it their duty to draw back. Circumstances seemed, no doubt, at first to warrant audacity, and fortune apparently smiled on Italy. The army of Radetsky had been driven back from Milan and from Lombardy, and compelled to shut itself up in Verona, in the midst of a circle of fire, and had evidently reached its last defense, because, being almost deserted by Vienna, it could not maintain the Austrian dominion beyond the Alps. On the other hand, the Piedmontese army, crossing the Ticino under the command of Charles Albert, could have soon occupied the lines of the Mincio and the Adige. For four months it fought bravely, and a day came, that of the taking of Peschiera and the victory at Goito, when the cause of Italian independence seemed almost won. "It was, in reality," says De Mazade, "a grand undertaking, badly begun, and rendered complex by inexperience of every sort, as well as by every passion and every illusion which could lead it to a fatal termination." One of the dangers that threatened it was external circumstances. (The war of 1848, which broke out thus unexpectedly, and with so little preparation, was intimately connected with a wide-set revolutionary situation, with a European convulsion. Hence, to a certain extent, every thing beyond the Alps depended upon what occurred in Europe—upon the reactions which might and which inevitably must ensue. At the commencement of the campaign, the chances of success were no doubt real, but they diminished in proportion as events developed.

After the days of June, France was completely absorbed in her own internal affairs. She had thought of intervention when she gathered together the army of the Alps; but finally concluded to act as a mediator, though she adopted an evasive and lingering policy. England, an ally in this mediation, desired agitations to cease, because they threatened the peace of Europe, established in 1815. Revolutionary Germany, while expressing her disinclination in parliament, at Frankfort, also openly pointed to the fortresses of the Adige as being the outworks of her natural frontiers. Austria, though convulsed for a moment, had time to consider the situation, and, by the assistance of her generals at Prague and at Vienna to recover herself; and from the heart of the empire the poets sent forth to Radetsky, to that ancient warrior of Italy, the sympathetic war-cry, "Austria is in your camp!" Every thing had changed in a few months, so that, before the Autumn of 1848, Piedmont, driven back from the Mincio to the Ticino, was compelled to submit to the humiliating armistice of the 16th of August, and, without any support, resisted a strengthened and victorious Austria. There was no hope of assistance from Europe, and no inducement to recommence hostilities with an army disorganized by defeat, and already powerless to restrain the passions that urged it to renew the conflict. The raging of these violent passions beneath the surface in Italy hastened the overthrow of the national cause. While the army was bravely fighting at Pasrengo, Goito, Curtatone, and Vicenza, a combination of circumstances seemed to conspire against her. The princes, full of misgivings and alarm, refused their alliance; the pope, by the Encyclical of the 29th of April, disavowed the war of independence; and King Ferdinand, of Naples, was engaging on the 15th of May in a victorious battle of internal repression, which ultimately made the Neapolitan policy one of extreme reactionary measures.

Not only the ministry, but the monarchy itself, was in imminent peril. The star of democracy was now in the ascendant. Mazzini had proclaimed the advent of the universal republic. Pius IX, who had precipitated a revolution he did not wish, and could not control, was conspiring at Gaeta against the new-born liberties of the people; Austria, supported by Germany and Russia, triumphant and defiant, with one hundred thousand soldiers in Lombardy; France declining aid, and England counseling delay. In a word, the Piedmontese government, without a friend or ally abroad, and with an unpopular ministry at home, was compelled to advance against this powerful opposition.

Cavour defended the administration so earnestly and boldly that

a storm of popular abuse soon descended upon him. He had commenced his career in parliament distrusted by the aristocratic party, to whom he was related by ties of birth and friendship, on account of his liberal proclivities, while he was repudiated by the democrats, on account of his moderation. Seated upon the benches of the right center, he opposed every motion proceeding from the extreme right or left, looking to reaction on the one hand, or revolution on the other. He thus became a target for the sharp-shooters of both the political parties. He was characterized as a lukewarm friend of Italian independence and unity, concealing his despotic tendencies under a liberal mask. He was accused of being a blind admirer of England, and in derision of his so-called *Anglomani*a, was called "Lord Camillo," or, "*Milord Risorgimento*." While the utterances of the orators of the opposition were greeted with general and prolonged applause, amidst shouts of "Bravo! Bene!" the voice of Cavour was oftentimes drowned by the interruptions of the opposition, and the hisses of the galleries, which found an echo outside the chamber, in the calumnies of the press, and the jeers of the populace. On one occasion, when the storm was at its height, he resolutely opposed the tide of turbulent passions, and exclaimed, "Whoever interrupts me does not insult me, but the Chamber, and the insult I divide with all of my colleagues."

The reverses of the Piedmontese army became the signal for an extensive and disastrous anarchy, which manifested itself successively at Milan, in scenes which imperiled the life of Charles Albert; at Rome, in the murder of Rossi, the flight of the pope, and the proclamation of Mazzini's republic; at Florence, in the flight of the grand duke. While Piedmont was protected "by solid traditions, by a national dynasty, and by the 'statuto,' or royal decree, recently promulgated," it did not escape the universal contagion of strife and anarchy. The democratic party of the Ratazzis, the Valerios, the Ravinas, the Brofferias, did not have a majority in the newly opened parliament; yet it was powerful enough to perplex the military and political action of the government by its inconsistent propositions and its incoherent declamations, supported by the clubs and an intemperate press. At Turin that party represented the advocates of popular insurrections and the wildest of combinations; it was the ally of all the agitators of Italy, the accomplice of a turbulent democracy whose motto was "war to the knife."

In this feverish and dramatic manner public life was inaugurated in Piedmont, and Cavour, undismayed in the midst of these disturb-



ances, fought in the front ranks, both as deputy from Turin to parliament, and in his capacity of editor of *The Risorgimento*. He was a patriot and a constitutionalist before the "statuto," and before the war, and during the struggle he was opposed to revolutionary measures, showing himself to be the most liberal and reasonable of men. Some desired to bribe the union of Lombardy and of Piedmont with the simulacrum of a constituent assembly; but he strenuously opposed it, and urged the necessity for immediate amalgamation. To those who advocated the establishment of a sliding scale of taxation, he replied, with the discernment of an experienced financier, a political economist, and a man of business. Some were ever talking of recommencing hostilities with a disorganized army, and depending upon the assistance of England and of France; but he advised differently, and exhibited the sagacity of a politician who understood the affairs of Europe. Cavour did not fear the conflict; but, in the midst of warring factions, resolutely stood by the government. He maintained a wonderful composure of mind, even when the wild tempest of conflicting passions was at its height. At first he was not distinguished as an orator; but had that self-possession and imperturbable coolness which made him master of the situation. Frank, simple, and moderate, he was eager to encounter those who believed only in "revolutionary means," without taking nature, reality, and experience into account.

Cavour, in accordance with his political creed, that revolutions, to be permanent, must be in harmony with natural laws, assailed these Utopian reformers with his merciless common sense and irony, and accused them of being independent of every law whatever, whether human or divine. Equally bold and daring as these ultra-revolutionists, he had a more profound respect for humanity, and a greater faith in the triumph of principles. While he was not satisfied with any thing less than the possible, he never aimed at the impracticable. He resolutely advanced in the path of progress, and was not one of those timid reformers "who are always waiting until the people become mature before conceding to them the very institutions which are precisely adapted to mature them." Nor did he belong to that impracticable school of politicians who affect to believe that a legislative act can create value; that a law of political economy can be annulled by a parliamentary majority, or a permanent revolution be achieved by a proclamation or a *coup d'etat*. Referring to the French revolutionists, in *The Risorgimento* of the 16th of November, 1848, Cavour directly attacked the shibboleth of the extreme party,

thus characterized their insane policy, and with singular precision prophesies its final result:

"This iniquitous and ignorant faction finds itself confronted by science, affection, the individual, the family—every fundamental law of human society. . . . What does it signify? It has implicit faith in revolutionary measures, is certain of victory, and enacts the 24th of June. French blood flows in torrents. France, upon the brink of an abyss, arouses herself, and hastens to suppress the foolhardy attempt. What has been the result? We were looking for a democratic and social republic; we were in possession of the germs of many ideas which, if developed by peaceful and ordinary means, would probably have resulted in some new advance in political science; and, instead, we have Paris under martial law; in Piedmont, a dubious and dilatory intervention; at Naples, a shameful intimacy between the French envoy and the Bourbon tyrant. . . . What is it which has always wrecked the finest and justest of revolutions? The mania for *revolutionary means*; the men who have attempted to emancipate themselves from ordinary laws; . . . the French Constituent Assembly creating the assignats in contempt of nature and economic laws: *revolutionary means*, productive of discredit and of ruin! The Convention attempting to smother in blood the resistance to its ambitious project; *revolutionary means* producing the Directory, the Consulate, and the Empire; Napoleon bending all to his caprice, imagining 'that one can with a like facility conquer at the bridge of Lodi and wipe out a law of nature;' *revolutionary means*, leading to Waterloo and St. Helena! the sectarians of June striving to impose the democratic and social republic by fire and sword; *revolutionary means*, producing the siege of Paris, and reaction everywhere. Wait but a little longer, and you will see the last consequence of your revolutionary means—Louis Napoleon on the throne."

In the elections for January, 1849, Cavour was not returned to parliament. No longer a deputy he was still a journalist. He waged war all the same upon the extremists of both parties, but especially upon the ultra-republicans, whose only idea of democracy seemed embodied in the violence and excesses of the French revolution. But neither Cavour, nor his friends in parliament nor of the press, could, situated as they were, in the center of a circle of criticism and opposition, improvise moderate views that should yet have strength to prevail. The movement that was hurrying Italy away, and re-echoed through Turin, swept off with it successively the first constitutional ministry of Count Balbo, Count Casati's ministry of compromise,

the armistice ministry of Alfieri, Revel, Pinelli, rushing into one of headlong measures, revolutionary plots, and war at any price. In the latter days of 1848, Vincenzo Gioberti, a man raised to power through popularity, seemed, for a moment only, called to arrest events, or to stamp them with a new character. He endeavored to do so, and, in making the effort, he soon began to appreciate the energetic assistance of Cavour, who had previously defended to the utmost the ministry of Counts Revel and Pinelli, against him.

Gioberti felt the danger of a revolutionary policy, and believed that, without renouncing the idea of national independence, he could secure it by a different method; and before attacking Austria Piedmont had another part to play, that of bringing the grand duke to Florence and the pope to Rome, and every-where re-establish a constitutional government—in a word, to direct the Italian movement. By pursuing this course Piedmont would deprive Austria of one excuse for intervening in Peninsular affairs, at the same time conciliating and strengthening the restored princes; she would regain the sympathy of Europe, which, almost exhausted by constant agitation and excitement, seemed ready to forsake her, and when her work was completed she would find herself in a better position either to negotiate with the concourse of mediating powers or again to take up arms.

Every thing appeared to be in readiness for the consummation of the plan. It was approved by England and France; and General Alfonso La Marmora was approaching with a Piedmontese division from Tuscany. It was unfortunate for Gioberti that he came into power with such men as Ratazzi, Buffa, Sineo, and Tecchio, and, besides, he committed a great error in dissolving the first Piedmontese parliament when it had hardly been established, and in permitting a new and thoroughly democratic chamber to be elected under the auspices of his name. He regarded himself a leader when he had ceased to be any thing. At last he was left alone with his project of intervention, forsaken by a chamber to which ten elections had returned him, betrayed in his own cabinet by certain of his own colleagues, and vainly supported by Cavour, who had now to defend him against his recent friends. His defeat was the victory of the democratic ministers, opposed to intervention in central Italy, desiring the failure of the armistice and all negotiations, and anxious for immediate war. The overthrow of Gioberti was the resumption of the old policy of extremes, with an army still inefficiently reorganized and irritated by party insults, with a king overwhelmed with bitterness.



Charles Albert, placed midway between intricate complications at home and a new war of independence, preferred to throw himself on the Austrian sword, heading a country whose only cry was, "Let us make an end of it." One year after first crossing the Ticino, and the hopeful departure for the campaign in Lombardy, Piedmont found herself again driven to the combat, to play the highest of stakes. The policy of "revolutionary means," to use Cavour's own words, had been tried, and it resulted as he had predicted. On the 24th of March, 1849, it ended in the catastrophe of Novara, where Charles Albert staked his crown with an all but desperate heroism, and for a time the last chance was wrecked for Piedmont and Italy. The defeat of Novara was soon followed by an armistice, which handed over a portion of the country to foreign occupation. The Austrians, encamped on the Sesia, had power to place a garrison in Alessandria, and they held Piedmont between the two threats of an absolute invasion or a treaty of peace in which they would dictate the terms. The Piedmontese could no longer make any steady resistance. The army had fought bravely at Mortara and at Novara, under the eyes of Charles Albert, and always stood firm in the hottest of the battle. Many of the generals and other officers had fallen before the enemy. As it was chiefly composed of recruits, who felt that it had been compelled to pay the price of blood for the madness of political agitators, the army was entirely demoralized. A general panic ensued, and the officers could not control their men.

At Turin the clubs resounded with denunciations, and there naturally arose a cry of treason. Popular feeling wavered between discouragement and exasperation, and found expression in passionate rhetoric. In the Chambers Brofferio prepared a decree of general insurrection, and the formation in the assembly of a committee of public safety. In parliament motions rapidly followed one another; one ingeniously declaring the armistice to be "unconstitutional," and the "statuto" in peril; another threatening to indict the government if it opened the gates of Alessandria to the Austrians; a third seriously proposed an inquiry into the situation and as to means for pursuing the war. All this as though the enemy were not at hand and ready to draw the sword of certain victory when defied.

But the agitation at Turin was slight compared with that in other cities. When the news of the disaster at Novara first reached the populous and fiery city of Genoa, the town of Mazzini, the contagion of discontent rapidly spread, passing from agitation to insurrection, and thence to a real revolution. Either the army had

betrayed its chiefs or it had been betrayed by them. The "statuto" had been violated. Turin was to be handed over to the Austrians, and Genoa herself was to be held as a hostage of war. By the circulation of these reports the agitators inflamed the public mind and gave the signal for civil war. The garrison was chiefly composed of reserves, poorly commanded, and was compelled to retire after a humiliating surrender to the rioters, who thus remained masters of the town—the arms, artillery, forts, and defenses of the most important place in the kingdom. The excited populace massacred a few unfortunate persons, among whom were a major of carbineers and the military commandant of the city, and detained as hostages the general and his family. The Genoese revolutionists, headed by an old emigré, the veteran Avezzana, constituted itself an association of public safety—the provisional government of Liguria. It refused to recognize the armistice, it separated itself from Piedmont, and it humiliated the army by arraying itself against the regular authorities. Indeed, what occurred as early as 1849 at Genoa was an anticipatory sketch of the commune in Paris in 1871.

These disturbances could only add to the misery of the masses, draw on Piedmont a still heavier invasion, and place the government in a more embarrassing situation. The defeat at Novara, the disorganized army, the threatened ruin of the army, agitations at Turin, civil war at Genoa, uncertainty every-where; such were the events immediately preceding the abdication of Charles Albert. When the young prince who was destined by his birth to wear the crown of Savoy—Victor Emmanuel—re-entered Turin in the last days of March, 1849, he occupied a critical position. Every thing depended upon his first acts. Two policies were open to him. He could lay aside the "statuto" and the recently inaugurated liberal *régime*, again become possessor of the blue flag of Savoy, and recover the past by shutting himself up within his frontiers, and no longer directing his attention beyond the Ticino towards Italy. By the adoption of this policy at that decisive moment of European reaction and national confusion he certainly would have obtained an easier peace, and he would in his embarrassment have had the support of Austria. There were not wanting powerful influences which inclined him to this resolution, and had he yielded to these external solicitations he would perhaps have obtained a certain momentary security, but it would have placed him in the modest condition of a subject of Austria, another duke of Modena, or a second grand duke of Tuscany. Victor Emmanuel could also have manfully resigned himself to his unfor-



fortunate surroundings and have endured the disastrous results of war without sacrificing the "statuto" or the tricolored flag, the only two surviving representatives, the only two symbols of Piedmontese independence, and of Italian hopes that were left.



VICTOR EMMANUEL.

The soldierly and princely Victor Emmanuel did not long hesitate between these divergent policies, but accepted the part of a liberal and national king. The sincerity of his intentions was shown in a significant manner by his elevating to the post of prime minister, him who might be termed the Knight of Italy, Massimo d'Azeglio, still



lame of a wound he had received at Vicenza. The fate of Italy was decided by this important step. "This made of that dark day of Novara not only an anniversary of mourning for the bloody termination to the inconsecutive attempts of 1848," says De Mazade, "but made it also the somber yet absolute starting-point of a new epoch." By the preservation of the tricolored Italian flag and the maintenance of the "statuto" the future of Italy was saved. "It is a long work to recommence," said D'Azeglio, "but we will recommence it." And on the other hand Cavour wrote about the same time to Salvagnoli: "As long as liberty exists in one corner of the Peninsula we must not despair of the future. As long as Piedmont can protect its institutions from despotism and anarchy there will be a means of working successfully at the regeneration of the country."

Depending alone upon the "statuto," Massimo d'Azeglio entered into office after Novara, associating with himself moderate and patriotic men—Count Siccaldi, Paleocapa, the Venetian, the banker, Nigra, and General Alfonso La Marmora, who had lately won the gratitude of the nation by suppressing with equal judgment and promptitude the factious Genoese. This great service was not easily performed, because among the obstacles to be overcome were the irritation and confusion of parties, parliamentary blunders resulting from inexperience, and all possible internal and external difficulties. D'Azeglio saw that peace must be secured, and, in submitting to it and negotiating for it as the chief necessity, he set an example of resigned patriotism and real self-denial. It was evident that this peace must be a hard one, taking Piedmont back to the treaties of 1815, and inflicting a war indemnity of seventy-five millions of francs, a heavy weight on the budget of the country. While to some extent it was humiliating, yet, being a necessity, national honor was willing to endure it. Strange as it may appear, there were parties who desired to bargain with that necessity, and, though scarcely to be credited, refused to co-operate, at the risk of sacrificing every thing. The government on two occasions was compelled to dissolve the house, and, on the last of these two, the king himself deemed it necessary to make a direct appeal to the common sense of the country by the proclamation of Moncalieri, which, under the cloak of a *coup d'état*, was nevertheless a deed of far-sighted liberalism. "Do not these gentlemen perceive," said D'Azeglio, sadly, "that the ministry has already enough to do in upholding the constitution, and that *after us, the Croats?*"

But this was not the only task to be performed. While Piedmont

boldly stood by constitutional government, reaction was triumphant in all parts of Europe. Piedmontese liberty seemed an anomaly and a danger when contrasted with the absolutist restorations which were occurring around it in Italy, at Rome, at Florence, and at Milan. Austria called Turin an "incendiary focus." The emperor of Russia declined any intercourse with the new king of Sardinia. Even in France the Conservative party, which had lately reinstated the pope at Rome, regarded this transalpine constitutional *régime* as an importunate and troublesome brawler, because it pretended to accomplish reforms both civil and religious. Piedmont was compelled, as it were, in the midst of opposition from every side, to wrest virtually, day by day, from Austria and from domestic factions as well as foreign suspicions, that "statuto" which constituted the basis upon which the national edifice could alone stand. Revolutions and revolutionists had almost wrecked the temple of freedom, but a sagacious prince like Victor Emmanuel and his wise supporters believed that the "statuto" would be a means of reconstruction if aided by a constitutional monarchy.

As we have already stated, the elections for January, 1849, which had overthrown Gioberti, also defeated Cavour. He was excluded from parliament as a reactionary or *codino*, being defeated by the extremists, who brought forward to oppose him an "obscure nonentity" of the name of Pansoya—a Barodet of the period—who derived his celebrity of one day from that strange adventure. But at the elections, which followed soon after the disaster at Novara, Cavour was returned to the house, never again to leave it; and in this new position his authority rapidly increased, warranted and confirmed by his clear-sighted wisdom, his patriotic spirit, and a superiority that was recognized in matters of public and financial economy.

## Fifth Decade Continued, 1840-1850.

## CHAPTER IX.

*ALESSANDRO GAVAZZI—PIUS IX—GIOBERTI.*

**A**MONG the eloquent champions of Italian independence, unity, and evangelization who appeared upon the scene at this memorable period was Alessandro Gavazzi. He was born in 1809 at Bologna, and was the second of twenty children. His father was a barrister and a judge, and many of his ancestors were among the most eminent magistrates of his native city. In 1825 he embraced the monastic life and entered the order of the Barnabites, and, in 1829, at the early age of twenty, he was appointed professor of rhetoric in no less a city than Naples. He exhibited great talents and was regarded as precocious in his physical and intellectual developments. Thence he was sent to Livorno or Leghorn. In both places he was not only admired as a man of genius, but beloved as a dear friend. He desired, however, to instruct his fellow-creatures in a larger sphere, and accordingly abandoned the chair for the pulpit. In a short time the principal towns of Italy resounded with his bold and impressive eloquence, and his name became familiar to all. Wherever he preached the churches were crowded to excess, and he was soon recognized as the cherished apostle of the religion of Christ. In a country where only the religion of men was found, such a man produced a sensation, and was "a burning and a shining light" in that night of papal darkness. He did not preach the superstitious practices of Rome, but the precepts of the Gospel; and, above all, he illustrated them by the example of a pure, simple, and moral life. The Jesuits never forgave him for his fearless proclamation of the truth, and the priests opposed him because he advocated a morality which they did not practice.

When the infamous Gregory XVI died (June 1, 1846), Gavazzi had been for twelve months in a sort of confinement in the Convent of Noviziato, at the small town, St. Severino, in the march of Ancona. After the accession of Pope Pius IX, Gavazzi was released, and immediately resumed his preaching. His friend and fellow exile, G. B. Nicolini, in writing of this change in the pontificate, says: "The



pontiff, Pio Nono—alas! why should I be obliged to revert to that brief period of illusion, to that moment when the heart of my noble country beat anew and drew inspiration from the tombs of the Camilli and the Scipios, sanctified as we thought by the blessing of the Vatican? Why did those bright dreams vanish so soon? Why were we recalled from prison and exile, and presented with the cup of liberty, only to have it withdrawn from our lips almost before we had tasted its sweets? Oh, bitter, bitter delusion! Oh, stolid folly to rely on a pope for freedom and independence!"

After having been in exile sixteen years, Nicolini returned in the middle of November to Senigallia, where his family resided. He was met by many old and dear friends, and, after the first greetings were over, all of them, without an exception, asked him: "Wert thou here to hear Gavazzi?" or "Hast thou heard Gavazzi?" and similar questions. Gavazzi had preached a day or two before, and his sermon, more or less richly framed, hung out of nearly every shop, no matter whether great or small. It was inscribed to Joseph, the pope's brother. Nicolini was not then personally acquainted with Gavazzi, and, desiring to meet him, he hastened to Count Joseph to find the eloquent preacher, but he had gone away. The count, who had been a prisoner and an exile, and who was certainly the less mischievous of the Mastai, declared that he entertained the greatest hopes from the truly liberal and Christian principles of Gavazzi. These incidents, to some extent, indicated the popularity of the Barnabite monk. But his popularity did not result entirely from his eloquence. He proclaimed the truth, and that is more powerful than eloquence. The Italians themselves were astonished at the new phenomenon—a priest and monk exposing the iniquities of priests and monks. The hearts of his auditors palpitated with holy delight when he demonstrated that the religion of Christ was not the religion of blood-thirsty and cruel tyrants or the support of the oppressor, but was a religion of love and of brotherhood, and the refuge of the oppressed.

The following extract from Nicolini's writings is no doubt a true reflection of the patriotic Italian mind at that time: "And believe me, if you want to introduce reformation into Italy, you must first persuade the Italians that the religion of the Gospel has nothing, absolutely nothing, to do with the religion of the priests. If you do not succeed in this, you may give up all hope, not only of introducing reforms, but even of counteracting the spirit of atheism which is widely spread among the Italian youth. Ah, yes! so it is. Why should I deny it? I have no motive to deceive you. The priests

have made of the warm-hearted Italians almost a nation of atheists. What wonder! Can you not conceive it? Have they not made our religion the cause of all our miseries? Do we not owe to the ambition of the popes the decay of our glory, the loss of our independence? Have they not perverted and turned to their own account the most sacred doctrines of the Gospel? The sign of our redemption, has it not been changed into the ax of the executioner? Are we not condemned to death, not in the name of the law, but in the name of CHRIST, the judges placing their hands on a crucifix? Does not that priest, who says that an hour before he had in his hand, and now keeps in his bosom, the true body and blood of Christ, does he not, I say, sign our death-warrant, and return immediately after to take in the same hand, covered with our blood, the body of Christ? And are you surprised that the ardent and superficially informed youth of Italy, identifying the religion of Christ with that of the pope, should become atheists? Let us then try to sweep away those priests and their corrupted religion; let us throw down the last fragment of the old house, and then we shall be able to build a new one." By such declarations, in which he exposed the corruption and tyranny of Rome, Nicolini expressed the prevailing sentiment in Italy relative to the priesthood.

Soon after the accession of Pope Pius IX, in 1846, Gavazzi removed to Rome, drawn thither by sympathy with the reformatory spirit of the new pontiff. The latter had heard of the popularity of the preacher, and, as he was strongly recommended to him by his brothers, Gavazzi was admitted to an audience on the second day of his arrival. The reception was at first rather cool, and the countenance of the pope serious. He had been informed of the wonderful effect of Gavazzi's sermon at Senigallia, which aroused so much enthusiasm that even the sanctity of the Church could not restrain it, and several times the people expressed their feelings in plaudits, to the great scandal of the cardinal-archbishop, who was officiating. This fact had been communicated to the pope, who, being very strict in the performance of religious ceremonies, was displeased, and thus addressed the preacher: "So, Father Gavazzi! they have been applauding you in the church?" and he was probably proceeding to reprove him, when the sharp-witted monk answered: "Not me, holy father, but to your holiness's name." Pius smiled graciously, and changed the conversation immediately. Indeed, he was always desirous of obtaining applause and flattery, and it is said that, on one occasion, when he had been received coolly by the populace of Rome,

because he had refused to grant a popular request, he went home and, like Peter, "wept bitterly."

Rome, at that time, was regarded by the liberal party as the hope of Italy, and Pius IX as the redeemer of their country. It is impossible to describe the enthusiasm of the Italians for the pope, and those only who resided in the city at that period can have an adequate conception of it. People of every class rejoiced, because they considered him the defender of their sacred rights. All advocated reform except the Jesuits and their partisans, who were enraged at the new order of things, and even formed a conspiracy against the life of the pope. The vigilance and energy of the Romans defeated the parricidal project, and, by the unanimous voice of the citizens, Gavazzi was called to preach a sermon of thanksgiving to God for having delivered the country from the hands of the conspirators. On this occasion he fully expressed the thoughts which burned within his breast. He exposed the enormities of the past reign; he painted in vivid colors the butcheries which had stained the pontificate of Gregory XVI with blood; and he demanded a reform of the many abuses which made the religion of Christ a religion of oppression and tyranny. How cruelly disappointed must Gavazzi have been when, instead of receiving the thanks of the pope for his apostolic zeal and unsparing severity in speaking the truth, he was forbidden again to preach. That eloquent and powerful voice, which revealed the secrets of the priests' iniquities, was silenced, and Gavazzi, believing in his heart that perhaps his zeal had led him to utter indiscreet language, obeyed the order and was silent. On one occasion only he could not resist the temptation again to preach. Some of the patriotic Italians were assembled on the 22d of January, 1848, in the University Church at Rome, holding a memorial service in honor of their brethren, who had been slaughtered by the Croats at Milan and at Mantua. The edifice was full to suffocation, and the ceremony deeply impressive and affecting. There were present all the studious youths and many of the noble and illustrious citizens, attired in deep mourning, and wearing branches of cypress on the breasts of their coats. In devout and profound silence the audience listened to the solemn chants with which the church echoed, when suddenly a unanimous cry was heard from the assembled multitude for Gavazzi, who was present, to ascend the pulpit. He was so wonderfully inspired by the commemorative services that he could not refuse the call, and immediately entered the sacred desk. "But how can I describe," says Nicolini, "the different strong sensations which his



powerful voice, at times pathetic and commemorative, and at times severe and imprecatory, excited in our breasts? We were almost in a state of delirium. I never heard Gavazzi more eloquent."

But Pius IX was determined to punish him, even though he had denounced Haynau and Radetsky, the authors of these butcheries, and pronounced a eulogy upon the brave Italians; and he was, therefore, sent to the penitentiary at La Polveriera. Rome was in a tumult and many proposed to release Gavazzi by force, but the more cautious advised sending a deputation to the pope. Father Ventura, celebrated, first for his exertions in favor of civil and religious liberty, and afterwards his apostasy from that sacred cause, and Prince Gaetani, the first layman who entered the council of the pope, were sent to the latter to express the wishes of the Romans that Gavazzi should be released. After some observations the pope promised that next morning he should be set free. The ambassadors departed highly pleased, and the people who had assembled to hear the answer raised a tremendous shout of applause for Pius IX. What was their astonishment when next morning it was known that during the night Gavazzi had been transferred to the Capuchin monastery of Gensona. These friars were suspected of liberalism by the court of Rome, and not a few of them were once to be found among the *Carbonari*. They received Gavazzi so kindly and treated him so well, that Pius IX, after his return from Gaeta, sent them into distant provinces by way of punishment.

When first the news spread through Rome of the confinement of the eloquent preacher all the city went to the convent which was his ordinary residence to give in their names; but he was not there, and Nicolini, in re-entering his own dwelling, on his return from the pious pilgrimage, was dragged to prison by the order of the pope. Gavazzi had spoken the truth and Nicolini had written a pamphlet against the Jesuits. The latter was the first man imprisoned by Pio Nono for a political offense. The arrest of these two patriots produced great excitement, but the pope would not yield to popular sentiment. The cardinals who were the least inclined to liberal reforms returned to court. Savelli took the place of Morandi as governor of Rome, and the entire policy of Pius IX changed. The proceeding against the retrograde conspirators was abandoned, and Rome presented a sad and mournful aspect. But the liberal movement could not be arrested by any man, however great. The execrated king of Naples, urged by the king of Piedmont and the pope to grant some reforms to keep his people quiet, unwilling to consent

and unable to resist, played them a Jesuitical trick by giving them a "constitution." This still further aroused the Romans, and their excited minds became more inflamed as the news came in rapid succession—of the outbreak at Vienna—of the noble and unanimous insurrection of the heroic people of Milan, where some hundreds of unarmed citizens had fought during five days against fourteen thousand Austrians, protected by a strong citadel and by hundreds of cannon, and had expelled them from their town. The Austrians, driven from Milan, Venice, Padua, and other places, tremblingly retired into their strongholds of Verona, Mantua, Peschiera, etc.

When the news of these stirring events reached Rome, the feeling of indignation was so intense that no power on earth could have moderated it. From every part of Italy a cry arose—"a cry," says Nicolini, "universal, irrepressible, powerful as the voice of God, calling for arms, that our sanguinary oppressors might be expelled from the Italian soil. The long-cherished hopes of independence assumed the shape of reality, and from Etna to the summit of the Alps a long and uninterrupted shout was heard, of 'Away with the strangers!'" Pius the Ninth would have prevented the Italians from rushing to arms; but neither he nor any other man could have damped their spirits. Ten thousand National Guards took up arms, and, accompanied by twenty thousand citizens, went to the Quirinal, and demanded to be sent to the plains of Lombardy to drive out the Austrians. To this excited multitude Gavazzi, who had been set at liberty, preached from the middle of the Coliseum. It was an imposing scene. The powerful orator, surrounded with the ruins of one of Rome's grandest monuments, addressed the "sons of Vesuvius," and denounced the butcheries of their brethren. The multitude seemed to be infuriated, and, together with the speaker, swore to die for their country. But the brave Gavazzi, remembering even then that he was a monk, selected for his standard the typical form of the cross, and wore it on his breast in the thickest of the fray. Before two days had passed the crusade commenced, and the enthusiasm was indescribable. From Prince Ruspoliosi, who marched as a simple commoner, to the lowest shoemaker, the army contained all classes of society. "For the sake of human nature," says Nicolini, "I will believe that even Mastai forgot, for a moment, that he was pope, and felt that he was an Italian! He blessed his country. 'Great God,' said he, 'bless this Italy!' Oh, thou Mastai! either hypocrite or renegade, what hast thou done with those patriots whom thou then blessedst?" In answer to this question, propounded in

1851, Ninolini said: "Alas! most of these generous men are either now wandering in exile or pining in prison." The Barnabite monk was appointed chaplain-in-chief of the army; and the pope afterward received him, addressed him in the kindest manner, and gave him religious instructions for his new mission.

The army marched onward, preceded by Gavazzi, as "the avenging angel," who exclaimed: "We are blessed by Pius, and God sends us: God who has stretched forth his hands to save the elect people from the bondage of slavery condemned by his holy Gospel!" These words, in the mouth of such a man, produced a wonderful effect; and his march through the Roman states and Tuscany was a perfect ovation. The Italians manifest their feelings with all the warm and poetic passion of their southern clime, and hence it was not strange that, in many places, the horses were unharnessed from Gavazzi's carriage, and that noble youths dragged his conveyance in triumph into the towns. Often troops of damsels, arrayed in robes of white, preceded the coach, strewing flowers on his way, and singing national songs as did the Hebrew maidens of old before King David. If the patriotic monk had been a man of motives less pure, ambition might have led him astray; but he was not selfish. He made every thing subservient to his country's cause, and desired nothing but the modest position of a chaplain.

When the army, in its triumphant, uninterrupted march, reached Bologna, orders were sent from Rome, commanding it to return. Mastai, forgetting that he was an Italian, was animated by the spirit of the papacy, and sanctioned the proposal of the "butcher of Naples, the jailer of Poerio," to recall the troops he had been compelled to send for the deliverance of his country. The soldiers were greatly perplexed, not knowing whether to disobey the king, and have their mothers, their wives, and their children imprisoned or murdered, or to disregard the call of their country. The larger part were for the king; but Gavazzi was not intimidated. Standing in the midst of this armed and excited multitude, he poured forth a strain of the most impassioned eloquence, imploring them to be faithful to their country. His courage rose with the occasion, his form seemed to dilate, and his eyes flashed with unusual fire. Though that powerful voice seemed to move the listening crowd, yet only a few noble patriots adhered to the cause of the speaker. The remainder of the troops, or the contingent sent from Naples, were but *lazzaroni*, clad in the soldier garb, who uttered imprecations against the fearless preacher, and would have put him to death if he had not displayed firmness and



remarkable courage. The Neapolitan army went back to Naples to butcher their brethren, and to immure in dungeons the noblest of the citizens. It seemed to be ordained that Italy had yet to pass through bitter trials of blood and misery before she could be free. "Perhaps," says Nicolini, "we were not yet worthy of the blessing of liberty! *Perhaps God, in his infinite wisdom, prevented Italy from being liberated at the hands of the pope, in order that that abhorred institution, the popedom, might be swept from the face of the earth, without leaving behind it a single regret.*"

Resolving to deliver their country or to die, the patriotic army marched onward to Padua. In the cathedral of that city, one of the most beautiful of the many magnificent churches of Italy, Gavazzi, that second Peter the Hermit, again raised his eloquent voice in prayer to God to bless the holy cause of national regeneration. True to his apostolic mission, he never spoke without appealing to the religious feelings of his auditors, and inculcating the duty of always following the sublime dictates of the Gospel. From Padua the army marched on to Venice, and received an enthusiastic welcome. There the presence of Gavazzi created an intense excitement, and he was waited on by Manin, Tomasseo, and the other members of the Venetian government, and requested to address the people on the Place of St. Mark—the piazza of S. Marco—that noble monument of past glories, that masterpiece of Italian genius! The Place of St. Marco, the theater, Italians of all states, the auditors, Gavazzi, the orator!—theater, auditors, and orator, worthy of one another, and forming a spectacle of rare and engrossing interest! Every stone of the surrounding palace spoke of former glory, and the "Lion of St. Mark," long the dread of the infidel and the barbarian, on his marble column, seemed to revive and shake his noble mane. It is easy to conceive how Gavazzi reveled in great and glorious images and illustrations, suggested by the objects which surrounded him on every side. The emotion was so strong that tears fell from almost every eye. Gavazzi urged the active men to advance against the enemy; and he asked the feeble and the aged to give their offerings towards the expenses of the war. Hundreds of young Venetians, yielding to the powerful effects of eloquence, and moved by the love of liberty, pressed forward, eager to shed their blood for their country. It was a sublime spectacle.

At the same time thousands of the people of both sexes and of all ages at once poured the contents of their purses on the platform. Those who had no money gave any thing of value they had upon them. Nobody went away without making an offering. No woman

took away with her all the jewels she had on when she left home. Many divested themselves of every ornament, thinking their charms sufficiently adorned that day with the inestimable gem, the love of father-land! The more joyful were those who had the more to give. The smile of satisfaction was on the countenance of every one, except a poor girl, who was sad and depressed because she had nothing to give. Suddenly clasping her hands, with a cry of exultation, she ran frantically away, cut off her beautiful, black tresses, and, all radiant with joy, brought the price to lay upon the altar of her country. Five thousand pounds, besides precious things, were the results of Gavazzi's appeal. From that moment commenced a series of sacrifices on the part of the Venetians, which almost surpasses conception, and which availed Venice nothing, but the glory of being the last bulwark of Italian independence.

Meanwhile the Austrian forces had gathered courage, and were pouring down on the Venetian territory. The Roman troops met them at Cornuda, and a severe battle was fought at some distance from Treviso. Throughout all the horrors of the war Gavazzi never deserted his post, and in each fierce encounter he and that holy martyr, Bassi, were always to be seen among the foremost, exhorting and encouraging the men before the fight, and, after it, giving every kind of consolation to those who had been sufferers. Nicolini has recorded the fact that four of Gavazzi's brothers were in the Roman army, and that while the battle near Treviso was progressing Gavazzi himself, unmindful of the shower of bullets and grape-shot which fell upon the brave troops, went through the midst of it, supporting on his bosom a wounded man. Charles, his eldest brother, trembled for his safety, and cried out: "Alessandro, Alessandro, do not expose yourself. Go behind that tree!" The fearless apostle stirred not from the spot. The Roman forces were compelled to retreat; but Gavazzi did not move until he had seen the wounded man safe in a wagon.

Treviso and Vicenza, after performing prodigies of valor, were forced to capitulate. Though brave and ready to die for their native land, inexperienced men, collected from the benches of universities, from the forum, and from the gilded palaces of the city, could not contend against an old and disciplined army. Charles Albert was betrayed by his staff, who were either ignorant of, or adverse to, the Italian movement. The hopes of the patriots began to darken, and their faith in the nation's regeneration to diminish. The warm-hearted Gavazzi, however, did not despair. After the capitulation of Vicenza,

he went from town to town, from Florence to Milan, to endeavor to revive the fire of patriotism wherever it seemed to be dying out. But misfortune followed misfortune. The Piedmontese army was routed and Milan surrendered by a very inglorious capitulation. With the fall of the latter the fate of Italy was decided. Vainly the brave Garibaldi, with his gallant band, made heroic efforts to renew the war in the advantageous position of the Alps; but, destitute of all resources, he was compelled to yield. Italy was again trodden by its merciless tyrants. All Milan fled from the infuriated Radetsky, whose revengeful anger even burst upon women, many of whom were publicly whipped for the crime of preferring their countrymen to the Austrians. Gavazzi formed one of the large body of emigrants, and departed for Genoa, where he spent some days in sorrow. The prospects of Italy were so dark that even his dauntless heart became discouraged.

But while the patriot was lamenting the fate of his beloved country the priest was called to the discharge of the duties of his holy ministry. Bologna, his native town, was the theater of many acts of ferocious barbarity. It is a common belief that the priests instigated some ruffians to commit murders, that the blame might be cast upon the liberal party. However it was, the spirit of blood had entered men's hearts, and Bologna was a scene of death and desolation. All the means adopted to calm the excited passions that prevailed having failed, as a last resource the citizens of Bologna sent for "Father Gavazzi," who accepted the perilous task, rejoicing in the noble enterprise that was laid before him. Leaving Genoa, he proceeded to Livorno, whose inhabitants received the apostle of liberty with wild enthusiasm, and desired him to remain a long time in their city; but the noble hero, having always before him his "bleeding Bologna," was anxious to hasten his departure. Now a question arose with him whether he should or should not pass through Florence. The Florentines longed to hear his powerful voice, and derive from it some comfort to the glorious but mournful remembrance of Curtadona. But the government, and especially the grand duke, Leopold of Hapsburg, the *gens d'armes* of Guicciardini, had no desire that the eloquent voice of such a man should be heard in the same place where once preached Savonarola; so that, repenting of having granted him permission to pass through his capital, he sent troops of *gens d'armes* and dragoons to arrest him on the way. It was truly a ludicrous sight to see such an army of *sbirri* sent, brandishing their arms, to arrest a poor, unarmed monk. He was seized, put into a





PIVS IX.

coach, and escorted by *gens d'armes* to the Tuscan frontier. But this breach of faith nearly cost the hypocritical grand duke his throne. The Livornese revolted, the Florentines followed their example; and Leopold, compelled to fly, did not return to Florence but through the treason of Guerrazzi, and after four months' exile.

At Bologna, however, Gavazzi found ample compensation for the insult he had suffered. He entered the city as an angel of peace, with an olive-branch in his hand, and addressed the multitude collected on the public place. "Am I among assassins, or among Italians?" exclaimed he to the crowd. An outburst of applause told him that the assassins would disappear and the Italians remain. After that day Bologna was the quietest of all the Italian cities. As a recompense for his noble and courageous conduct he was again arrested, and sent, a prisoner, to be immured in the inquisitorial dungeon of Corneto. He had denounced the wrath of God not only on the assassins, but also on the betrayers of their country. He disarmed the ruffians, but frightened the priests. Pius IX ordered him to a dungeon; but before he was thrown into it, on passing through Viterbo, the people of that town rose, dispersed the *gens d'armes* who guarded him, and gave Gavazzi his liberty.

At this period a new era opened for Italy. Deceived by princes, the people resolved to fight for liberty, and the progress of events rapidly brought them to the decisive hour. When Cardinal Mastai Feretti ascended the papal throne, on the 16th of June, 1846, and began his reign by reversing the policy of Gregory XVI, his unpopular predecessor, the Italians were both surprised and delighted. Pius IX inaugurated a series of moderately liberal reforms, and was hailed as the political savior of his country. He was to be a constitutional pope, and his first acts revived the drooping hearts of the people. All those who had been imprisoned for violating the civil law were liberated, and received a full amnesty. The citizens of the States of the Church were granted liberty of speech and the right to petition for a redress of grievances. The convents and monasteries were made subject to a rigid inspection, and other innovations were made. The *Gregoriani*, or admirers of the previous pope, were indignant at these radical changes; the extreme republicans were angry because Pius IX had become the most popular man in Italy; but the great mass of the people of the papal states were enthusiastic in their support of the new *régime*. In the Autumn of 1846 and the Spring of 1847 many disturbances occurred in the streets of Rome,



and, the papal troops and the municipal police being unable to preserve peace, the liberal party demanded of Pius IX the formation of a national guard. This was done, not only in Rome, but in all the papal states; and the Austrian government, wishing to punish the pope<sup>a</sup> for yielding to the popular demand, sent a strong force of Croats into his territory. Ferrara was occupied, in spite of the protests of the papal legate. The success of the Roman movement encouraged the other Italian states to compel their rulers to grant them constitutions. In January, 1848, an insurrection occurred at Palermo, and the Sicilians made the duke of Genoa king, resisting for more than a year the efforts of Ferdinand V of Naples to subdue them. They lost confidence in the latter because, after having given them a liberal constitution, he soon violated it. Hence their determined opposition to him.

All the Italian princes looked to Austria for aid to suppress these popular movements; but Charles Albert, king of Sardinia, became the champion of the national cause, and declared his intention to resist any further invasion of the papal territory by Austrian troops. The French revolution of 1848 aroused all the nations of Europe, and even conservative Austria was shaken. Her Hungarian subjects openly revolted, and rose in arms to win back their national independence. The Italians immediately took advantage of this rebellion, and also endeavored to throw off the Austrian yoke. On the 18th of March, 1848, the Milanese attacked the Hungarian garrison under Marshal Radetsky, and, after a five days' struggle, drove it from the city. Vicenza, Padua, Brescia, Bergamo, and other places, united with Milan in opposition to the Austrian army, and Radetsky, the commander, was compelled to relinquish Lombardy and fall back on Verona. On the 22d of March Venice drove out her Austrian garrison under Count Zichy; the republic of Venice, or St. Mark, was proclaimed on the 23d, and Manin and Tommasèo were placed at the head of affairs. The first-named patriot and statesman, Daniel Manin, was born in Venice in 1804. He was the son of an eminent Jewish lawyer, and prepared himself for the same profession, graduating at the University of Padua in 1821. He married in 1825, and led a quiet, domestic life at Mestre, near Venice, engaged in historical and legal studies and writings; and commencing practice at the bar about 1830, he gained a high reputation as a jurist and orator. He early became known as the champion of the national cause, though not involved in any of the secret societies, and aiming to combat Austria rather with legal weapons than by conspiracies. On



several important political trials he acted as counsel for the defense, which brought him into collision with the government.

After the accession of Pius IX to the Holy See Manin and Tommasèo became the leaders of the reform movement in Venice. In 1847 Manin exerted himself to make Austria give practical effect to the laws which she had nominally granted to Venice. He asked for a separate government of Venice and Lombardy, a revision of the codes, an annual budget, and freedom of religion and of the press. But his hopes of obtaining pacific concessions from the house of Hapsburg were destroyed by Radetsky's massacres in Milan on the 9th of January, 1848. On the 18th of January he and his colleague protested against these outrages, and were imprisoned. The French revolution, of the 24th of February, 1848, found Manin still in prison, and, as he was detained illegally, he refused to be set free by the populace on the 17th of March, and would only leave his place of detention on a decision of the courts. The revolution advanced in the mean time with rapid strides, and by the surrender of Count Zichy Venice became free. The people prepared to form an independent, permanent, republic in confederation with the Italian states; but as the king of Sardinia had already declared war against Austria, and was adopting a policy which promised to liberate the whole country, the Venetian assembly, which met on the 3d of June, agreed to the fusion with Piedmont and Lombardy, so as to form a united kingdom of Northern Italy. Manin tendered his resignation, but resumed power after the defeat of the Sardinians at Custoza, on the 25th of July. Previous to this disastrous event Charles Albert had been victorious during a four months' campaign, gallantly fighting at Pastrengo, Goito, Curtatone, and Vicenza, and rejoiced at the annexation of Lombardy and Venice to Sardinia, which was accomplished in June and July, 1848. Radetsky, having been re-enforced, attacked the army of Charles Albert at Custoza, and inflicted upon it such a crushing defeat that it fell back behind the Ticino. The Austrians recovered Milan, and proclaimed Lombardy under martial law, which they enforced with great cruelty.

This rapid review of events from the election of Pius IX to the promulgation of his encyclical on the 29th of April, 1848, indicates how strongly the national feeling ruled the Italians, leading them to victory and toward independence. A few more steps had yet to be taken before the long-oppressed people would rise against their masters. The Austrian victory at Custoza was exasperating; but this bitter feeling was intensified when Pius IX and the king of the Two

Sicilies, fearing a war with Austria, deserted the popular cause. In his encyclical of the 29th of April the pope declared that his troops had taken part in the war against Austria without his consent. Ferdinand V deprived his people of the liberties he had granted them, and crushed out their resistance by a brutal massacre in the streets of Naples on the 15th of May. Pius IX was the first to desert the cause of Italy—or, rather, he had thrown away the mask of hypocrisy which he had worn in the beginning of his pontificate. After disowning the war of independence and blessing the Austrians, whom he called his “cherished sons,” he recalled the gallant legions which had so courageously defended Venice. A liberal ministry was dismissed, and a reactionary one, with Rossi at its head, was chosen. It was by order of that ministry that Gavazzi was again arrested and sent to Rome.

The encyclical of the pope destroyed the moderate party, and he was therefore compelled to fight the extreme republicans. At this time Vincenzo Gioberti occupied a prominent position in the conflict. This distinguished Italian philosopher was born in Turin on the 5th of April, 1801. He studied at the University of Turin, and, in 1825, was ordained priest. Becoming professor of theology in his native city, he spent several years in scholastic retirement. He inspired his pupils with the twin motives of patriotism and religion. On the accession of Charles Albert he was appointed court chaplain, but resigned the office in 1833. This step and the liberal tone of his university lectures made him suspected as an accomplice of the revolutionary schemes of “Young Italy,” and he was suddenly arrested. No direct connection with the republican societies was proved, but he was sentenced to four years’s imprisonment and to banishment. The first year of his exile he spent in Paris, for the purpose of pursuing his studies in philosophy. He then went to Brussels, where he occupied for eleven years the humble position of teacher in a private school. He resumed his interrupted studies, and in 1838 and 1840 produced his philosophical works—his “Introduction to the Study of Philosophy” being famous. The mastery displayed at once of the highest problems of theology, philosophy, and history gave him the reputation of being one of the profoundest thinkers of the age, while his learned expositions and hostile criticisms of the principal modern philosophical systems, his brilliant and novel subjection of science to revelation, and of all the culture of life to religion, caused him to be immediately recognized as one of the ablest advocates of the Roman Catholic philosophy. It was rather

by the remarkably original form of its statements than by the novelty of its ideas that the *Introduzione* exerted its influence, and caused Gioberti to be hailed as the reconstructor of modern philosophy.

This work was quoted with applause in the charges of French and Italian bishops, and, though assailed by a portion of the Roman Catholic press, was examined, judged, and commended by Pope Gregory XVI. Eloquent, passionate, and full of bold and felicitous digressions, it contains more pages on literature, art, and especially politics, than on the philosophical theory which it introduces. In his work, "*Del Bello*," published in 1841, he applies his philosophy to æsthetics. The first treatise of Gioberti that made him popularly known was the "*Del Primato Morale e Civile Degli Italiani*," issued in 1843, whose object was to restore in Italy, not only the philosophy of the Christian Fathers, but the Guelf policy of the papacy. Italy, he maintains, is the sacerdotal nation of Roman Catholic Europe, being elected by Providence to guard the second dispensation, as Israel was to guard the first. He affirms that the priesthood has attempted to retain the people in tutelage beyond the proper time, after it has lost its former moral and intellectual authority over them. Hence, a fatal schism exists between the ecclesiastical and temporal orders, between spiritual and secular culture, which is the source of all the evils that afflict modern society. He proposes a voluntary cession by the priesthood of a dominion, which has become incompatible with modern civilization, and a thorough alliance of sacerdotal and lay culture. He calls upon the Italians and the Italian clergy to inaugurate this new civilization, urging the latter to put themselves at the head of social movements, and to be the champions, and not the enemies of the demands of the age for free institutions. He claims for the pope an arbitratorship in the affairs of the European nations, founded on his spiritual authority. The plan which he proposed for immediate Italian politics was a confederacy of the states; the introduction of reforms; a religious head, the pope; a military head, the king of Sardinia; a capital, Rome; a citadel, Turin; and, above all, a sentiment of nationality in the Italian princes. From the publication of the "*Primato*" Gioberti was regarded as the leader of the moderate liberal party. Few works have been received with greater enthusiasm, or have wrought a greater influence upon the public opinion of a nation. It was, however, distrusted by the Jesuits, to whom Gioberti replied in the "*Prolegomeni*" of the second edition (1845). In 1846 he removed to Paris.

The accession of Pius IX, who had studied with favor the writings



of the exiled philosopher, and the liberal measures that he granted, at the same time that constitutional principles were proclaimed by the court of Turin, promised to Gioberti the speedy realization of his ideal. At the revolution of 1848 he returned to Italy after an absence of fifteen years, and was welcomed with a triumph at Turin, the city being illuminated in his honor several nights in succession. Opposed alike to foreign dominion and to a general republic, his scheme was a union of the states, under the supremacy of the house of Savoy, and he visited the principal cities of the Peninsula, haranguing the troops, the universities, and the populace in favor of his views, and was every-where received with enthusiasm. Mazzini, the head of "Young Italy," was, however, his rival in popularity and influence, and his bitter opponent, and the discord between these leaders soon extended to the princes, some of whom withdrew the forces which they had sent to aid Sardinia against Austria. After an exile of seventeen years Mazzini had also returned to Italy, in the early part of 1848. He and Gioberti mutually reproached each other with being the greater enemy to Italy than even Austria. The latter, elected to the Piedmontese parliament, which assembled on the 8th of May, 1848, by both Genoa and Turin, placed himself at the head of the constitutionalist royal party in the Chamber of Deputies, and was appointed its president by acclamation. In July he entered the Casati ministry, and, for a moment, thought he saw a triumph of his hopes in the vote by which the Lombardo-Venetian provinces were annexed to Sardinia. The military reverses experienced by Charles Albert quickly dissipated the illusion, and the ministry gave place to that of Revel, which accepted an armistice that resembled an abandonment of the war of independence, and therefore was at once unpopular. Gioberti united with his opponents of the extreme democratic party in efforts to overthrow Revel's ministry, and, at the same time, resumed his idea of a political league, and became president of the society for an Italian confederation, representatives of which, from all parts of Italy, assembled in Turin on the 10th of October, 1848.

Then followed the uprising in Rome and the assassination of Count Rossi, the papal minister. The palace of the Quirinal, in which Pius IX had taken refuge, was attacked and carried by storm by the citizens. The pope escaped in the disguise of a priest on the 24th of November, and fled to Gaeta, in the Neapolitan territory. "He ran away," says Nicolini, "hoping that Rome would fall into anarchy, and so excite the indignation of Europe—speculating, in so doing, on the calamities to which he exposed his people. And

this man you call a God on earth, the vicegerent of Christ! Away, away with you, impious blasphemer. He ran away and threw himself into the arms of Ferdinand of Naples, that assassin stained with the blood of his own subjects." After the flight of Pius IX two deputations were sent to Gaeta to request him, in the name of the assembly, and in the name of the people, to return and resume the reins of government; but they were repulsed. The pope had appointed a commission to govern in his name; but the persons designated for the office refused to act.

In Venice the republican banner of St. Mark still waved in defiance of the besieging Austrian army. Manin was again at the head of affairs, and the Neapolitan general, Pepe, was intrusted with the military command. Order prevailed in the city, and the Venetians were united in their efforts to resist the Austrian forces at any cost.

---

### Fifth Decade, Continued, 1840-1850.

---

## CHAPTER X.

### *THE ROMAN REPUBLIC OVERTHROWN—GARIBALDI—ANTONELLI.*

WHEN General Garibaldi heard the news of the Italian revolution he resolved to leave Montevideo, South America, for his native land, and, accompanied by some of his countrymen, he sailed in April, 1848. In that brave band was Colonel Anzani, one of the most intimate friends of Garibaldi. He was consumptive, but hopes were entertained that the genial climate of his loved Italy would at least prolong his days. The sight of its shores, however, awakened emotions too strong for his frail body, and, while the vessel was approaching the city of Nice, where Garibaldi was born, his devoted friend passed away. The heroic leader, though almost crushed by this bereavement, hastened to the field of battle in Lombardy, and offered his services to King Charles Albert, who received him coolly. A few days after the king was defeated, and signed an armistice with the Austrians; but, as Garibaldi was not included in it, he refused to lay down his arms. Pursued by the Austrians, he fought several skirmishes at Como, Varese, Laveno, and other places; but his troops being overwhelmed by numbers, disbanded, and he retired

into Switzerland; and, after much suffering, finally made good his retreat across the Po into the papal states, in October, 1848.

General Zucchi, the papal minister of war, at that time happened to be at Bologna, and wrote to Count Rossi, secretary of state under Pius IX, that he had ordered two Swiss regiments, which were at the service of the pope, to march against Garibaldi, who was then at Ravenna, and to throw him and his followers *into the sea*—meaning, probably, to compel them to embark. But before this order was executed the pope had fled from Rome, and the popular government which undertook to govern the state enrolled Garibaldi and his followers, and gave him a commission to increase his band and protect the eastern boundaries of the Roman state against the king of Naples. A short time afterwards the elections for the Roman Constituent Assembly occurred, and Garibaldi was elected at Macerata, and went to Rome to take his seat in the assembly at its opening, on the 6th of February, 1849. After that day Garibaldi put himself again at the head of his troops on the boundaries of Naples, and returned with them to Rome when the French had landed at Civita Vecchia.

After the flight of Pius IX to Gaeta Rome was absolutely without a government. The Chambers appointed a "Provisional Government," and declared themselves dissolved. For two months the administration of public affairs was conducted by this temporary organization; but it was incapable of prolonging a situation so full of danger, and yielding to the earnest solicitations addressed to it from all parts of the states, it convoked the people in the primary assemblies, and appealed to the universal suffrage of the inhabitants for the election of a Constituent Assembly. ~~The appeal was responded to.~~ By the votes of three hundred and forty-three thousand adult male persons, out of a total population of two million eight hundred thousand souls, a Constituent Assembly, consisting of one hundred and fifty members, was invested with the task of government. The assembly, at one o'clock on the morning of the 9th of February, after an uninterrupted session of fifteen hours, passed that remarkable decree which declared the abolition of the secular papacy, and proclaimed that portion of Italy, which had hitherto been the patrimony of the popes, a free and independent republic. The article abolishing the secular papacy was passed with only five dissenting voices, and that constituting the republic with only eleven dissenting voices, out of one hundred and forty-four present. On the 10th of February the Constituent Assembly appointed an executive committee of three citizens, through the medium of whom the government might be



carried on until such time as the constitution of the republic should be fully matured. The citizens appointed to this office, by a majority of votes, were Messieurs Armellini, Saliceti, and Montecchi. Ministers of the different departments of the public service were at the same time appointed. For a period of seven weeks, or from the 10th of February to the 30th of March, the government of the republic was carried on in conjunction with the Constituent Assembly.

The time approached when all eyes were to be opened to the real designs of the French. A crisis was near, when all the charitable hopes of the sincerity of their amicable professions were to be dispelled. Rome was to be attacked by a foreign army for the first time since the days of Charles V, in the period of the Reformation, and for the second time since that of the Northern invasions. In looking back for preceding events of the same kind, the mind had but a single step more to make---the attempt by the Gauls. How different the state of the world since those times! How different the condition of the city; the mode and means of warfare; the principals engaged; the effect to be anticipated on the world! Never before had the city of Rome been voluntarily deserted by a pope, and brought to a state of order and tranquillity by a mere declaration of a republic, and become practically and truly a Protestant city. Never had she been, in the judgment of the world, more certain to be overawed by a powerful host, and more unable to resist. Deeply interesting must have been the situation of many a family.

The negotiations, which had been carried on with the triumvirate by M. Lesseps, the French agent, had resulted in nothing but the manifest exposure of the double dealing of Louis Napoleon, and a display of the integrity, ability, and patriotism of the Romans. There was a mixed multitude within the walls; but most of them belonging to the city, or other parts of the Roman states, and many of them soldiers who had been engaged in one or more battles in other parts of Italy. The whole number of Polanders and other foreigners was trifling. Volunteers had been hourly arriving for several weeks; some in regular corps or companies, others in small bands, and some alone. Colonel Manara had entered the city at the head of his legion of Lombards, raised and paid out of his princely fortune, all which, with his services and his life, he gave, an offering to his country.

The following extract from the Roman *Monitore*, the official journal, shows the character and strength of the Roman army. After denying in such terms, and by such arguments as were unanswerable,

the calumnious charges against the character and origin of the defenders of Rome, the *Monitore* thus enumerated the troops in the city: "The army of the republic being ten regiments of infantry, and two of cavalry—all of them from the Roman states; the Medici legion of three hundred Tuscans; the foreign legion of two hundred and fifty men—French and Poles; the Italian legion of Garibaldi, about two thousand, all except three hundred belonging to the *Roman states*; and, finally, several battalions of the Military Guard Mobile, some of Rome, some of the provinces. . . . The pretended foreign banditti, then, who *oppress* the Roman people, amount to one thousand six hundred and fifty men in a city of one hundred and fifty thousand inhabitants, and with fourteen thousand national guards. These are the men, too, who, for a month, have repelled thirty thousand French troops, not only from the city, but from the country-seats around it, and defended a circuit of forty miles. The most solemn denial that can be given to the accumulated falsehoods of our enemies is to say to all the people of Europe, 'Look and judge! Assaulted by four armies at once, in the rushing ruin of Italian misfortunes, the Roman Republic raised her sacred standard on the towers of the capitol, and guards the sacred fire of liberty.'"

From the 29th of April, 1849, the commander-in-chief of the arms of the republic, General Avezzana, who was also the minister of war, was fully informed of the enemy's approach by the numerous scouting parties whose reports were confirmed by a French prisoner, who the same day fell into an ambush of our advance posts. Day dawned upon Rome, on the morning of the 30th of April, and revealed a scene which no human foresight could have anticipated a few weeks before, and which human ingenuity could scarcely have imagined, even in its principal features. The whole city was in solemn expectation of the arrival of a large French force, which was known to be on a march from Civita Vecchia, and near enough to arrive at the walls in a few hours. Arrangements had been made, and publicly announced, to apprise the inhabitants of their first appearance in sight, by the striking of bells. Preparations for defense had been made, and were still making, by the erection of works in various places in the squares and streets to oppose the French, if they should enter the walls; while the troops were prepared to fight them from the walls, and the ground outside. The elevated buildings and positions were crowded by spectators, some of them foreigners of different classes, and from different countries. The French had pretended to come as friends and protectors; but persisted in advanc-

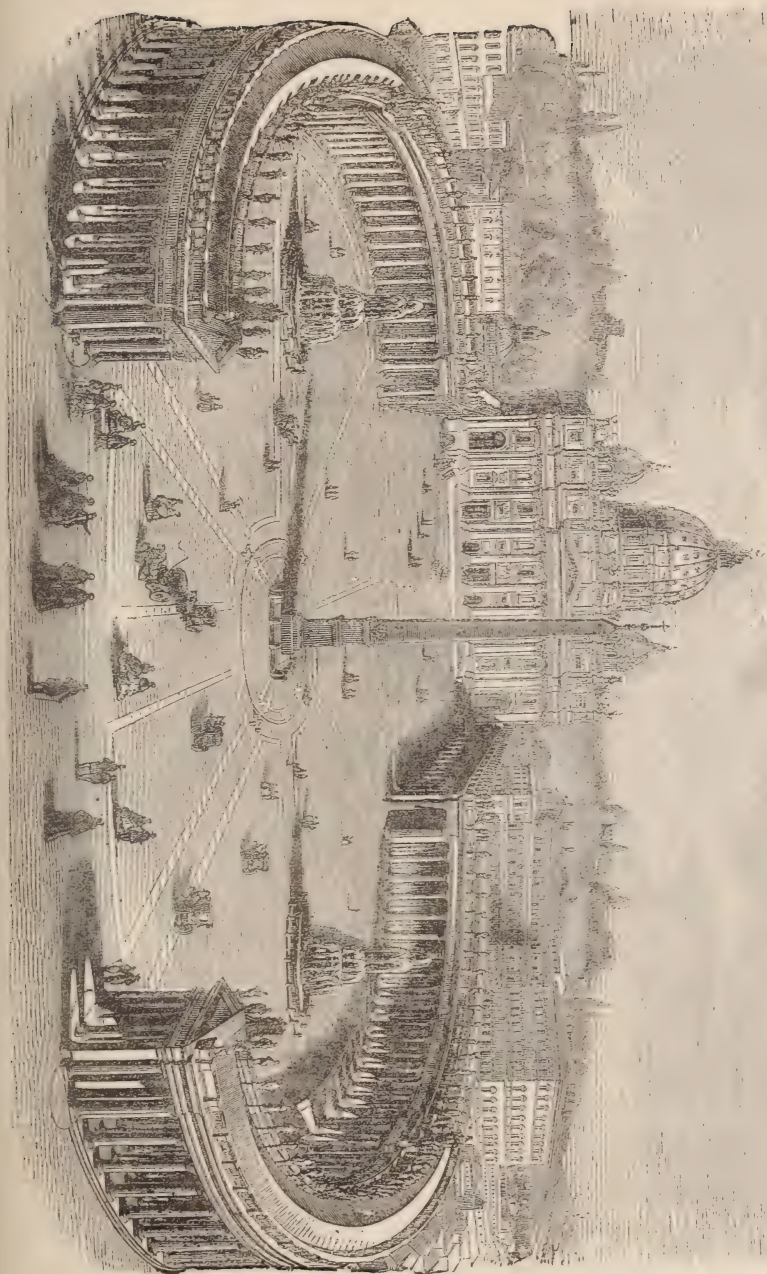
ing, even after being assured by the Romans that they neither needed nor desired their assistance. The French, then, assuming a tone of disdain, had plainly expressed their belief that the *Romans would not fight*. The world was waiting with anxiety the result of that day's movements; and probably very few men believed that the French would meet with any great obstacle. They expected to dine that day in Rome, and to remain masters of it as long as they pleased.

Perhaps no news has ever been more unexpected than that which was that day sent from Rome to all parts of the world, that the Romans had fought the French gallantly with far inferior forces, for several hours, and driven them twelve miles back toward Civita Vecchia. Such, however, was the surprising truth, and, had not the triumvirate peremptorily ordered Garibaldi to pursue them no farther, he would have continued to press them with the resolution which he had formed of driving them into the sea. Among the spectators, who wrote accounts of what occurred that day, were several intelligent men of different nations, who described the defense as conducted with superior skill, and performed with the greatest vigor and valor by the Roman officers and soldiers. Interesting letters from some of these witnesses may be found in the newspapers of different countries published soon after, and many concurrent accounts in various other publications, particularly *Italia del Popolo*, a monthly magazine published by the exile patriots.

On the morning of the 30th of April, the telegraph which gave notice of the advance of the enemy's forces announced, at nine o'clock, that they were within five miles of Rome, and the minister of war sent a captain of the general staff to the cupola of St. Peter's, to remain there until the firing should commence, to observe all the movements of the French, and discover their numbers and intentions. In the mean time, all measures were taken to repel the aggression with such desperate energy as is inspired by the holiness of right and the justice of the cause. According to the historical record of the contest, all access into the city was prevented by strong and numerous barricades at all the gates, and in all the principal streets, especially on the right side of the Tiber; the bastions rising above, crowned with cannon, were prepared to fire upon the enemy, and the young Roman army, impatient with warlike ardor, placed at the different points where the attack was expected, was disposed in the following order: The first brigade, commanded by General Garibaldi, and composed of the first Italian legion, the battalion of the university, the battalion of the reduced, the legion of exiles, and the



ST. PETER'S AND THE VATICAN.



mobilized Finanziere, occupied, outside of the walls, the whole line from the Portese gate to the gate of San Pancrazio; the second brigade, composed of two battalions of the mobilized civic troops, and the first light, commanded by Col. Masi, occupied the wall of the gates Cavalleggieri, Vatican, and Angelica; and, finally, the third brigade, commanded by Col. Savini, and composed of the first and second regiments of mounted dragoons, formed the reserve in Piazza Navona. The fourth brigade, consisting of the first and second regiments of the line, commanded by Col. Galletti, was in reserve in the Chiesa Nuova and Piazza Cesarini, with all the field cannon, which was not in position. General Giuseppe Galletti, commander of Carbineers, and Major Manara, with the Lombard battalion, forming separate corps, were held ready to proceed wherever necessity might require.

It was evident that the French army, which was composed of eight thousand men with two squadrons of cavalry and twelve field-pieces, divided in two columns, intended to make a double and simultaneous attack at the gates Cavalleggieri and Angelica. In fact, about eleven o'clock in the morning, proceeding by Villa Pamfili, they occupied two houses, from which they commenced an active fire of musketry and artillery against the Cavalleggieri gate. The valiant General Garibaldi moved from the gate of San Pancrazio to attack them in flank with all his troops and the university battalion, and there commenced a murderous and obstinate battle, in which a hundred deeds of personal bravery proved that the modern Italians are prepared to imitate the ancient glories of their fathers. The French made a determined resistance to the attack of Garibaldi, and even repulsed their assailants, favored by their superior numbers and by their artillery, which they fired briskly. But, being re-enforced by the Legion of Exiles, the reduced battalion, the Roman Legion, commanded by Colonel Galletti, and two companies of the first regiment of the line, charging simultaneously with the bayonet, they compelled the French to retire precipitately, leaving in the hands of the Romans about three hundred prisoners, among whom were six officers, with the commander of a battalion, and a great number of killed.

While they were fighting thus at San Pancrazio other attacks were made on the gardens of the Vatican, and along the entire line from the Cavalleggieri gate to that of Santa Marta, where the enemy endeavored with all their power to silence the artillery of the Romans, and where they made two furious assaults, but were bravely repulsed by the Masi Brigade and the Mobilized Civic, assisted in good time

by the brave and ardent Carbineers. At all those points the Roman troops sustained the attacks of the French with admirable firmness and coolness, and, by fighting with the bravery of veteran soldiers, compelled them to make a precipitate retreat. In the reports of that encounter it is said that the National Artillery deserve special commemoration, being commanded by Colonel Calandrelli, who lost two distinguished officers, besides wounded. The Civic Artillery, who rivaled the former in zeal and ardor, also received honorable mention.

Thus repulsed on the whole line, the French retired first to Bravella, three miles from the city, whence, after a short halt, they continued their retreat towards Castel di Guido. This battle, which wonderfully consolidated the foundation of the Italian Republic, lasted about seven hours, beginning at ten in the morning and ending at three in the afternoon, without including, as a part of the contest, the little skirmishes which were continued until evening between the opposing forces. According to facts collected and the statements made by the prisoners, it appears that the French lost more than fifteen hundred men, including killed, wounded, and prisoners, while the loss of the Italians was only fifty killed, besides two hundred wounded, among whom were many officers, subaltern and superior. The Italians fought like heroes, showing that, when the love of country is living and strong, the sacrifice of life is sweet. No more expressive eulogium on the valor of these brave men, officers, soldiers, and people can be found than the following extract from a letter, written by General Garibaldi, to the minister of war:

"All the corps which have fought this day are extremely well-deserving of the country. A detachment of the line, the first Roman Legion, the University Battalion, the Arcioni Legion, the Battalion of the Reduced, and the first Italian Legion, have been rivals. The chief officers and the soldiers of those corps have merited the gratitude of Italy and the title of valiant men. Many arms, drums, and other articles of war have remained in our power."

In the reports of the scenes that followed the battles, the services of the sanitary officers of the ambulances, who were diligent in collecting the wounded on the field of conflict, are highly commended. The ladies in the hospital also performed the noblest ministries of charity, and it is said that many of the French declared, before dying, that they departed from the world with remorse for having fought against brother-republicans, while those who were saved denounced their government and repeated as often as their countrymen were made prisoners, "*Viva la Repubblica Romana!*"



The people regarded, with sentiments of profound gratitude, the brave Italian general, Avezzana. He was impelled by an intense love of country to provide for every exigency that arose in the discharge of his onerous duties. With a tenacity, alacrity, and perseverance which would have been remarkable in a young man, he devoted himself to the cause of liberty. From the first approach of the enemy, followed by a portion of his staff (for many other officers belonging to it were appointed to the gates to direct the corps which defended them), General Avezzana visited in succession the places attacked, and by his voice and his example excited the enthusiasm of the people to the highest degree.

In this aggressive movement France was sacrificed by a government which was the enemy of the true interests of their country, and her people were placed in a humiliating position. She suffered immense losses, more moral than material, being deprived of all political influence, and having no claim upon Italian sympathy. The sons of Italy, convinced of the justice of their cause, had conquered the most warlike soldiers, and they were confident, therefore, of their ability to contest with glory and success against all the enemies of the republic and of Italy.

Carlo Rusconi gives the following account of the battle of April 30th: "General Oudinot, who, with eight thousand men and twelve field-pieces wished to raze Rome to the ground, ordered a simultaneous attack on Porta Cavalleggieri and Porta Angelica, and occupied two houses of Villa Pamfili, from which he opened an active fire of musketry and artillery. He presented himself against General Garibaldi, one of those men who serve as types in the creations of art. Beautiful in person, simple in habits, frugal in living, courageous as the heroes celebrated in chivalry, he exerted a fascination on all who surrounded him. He had a thousand men about him who would have allowed themselves to be killed a thousand times at his slightest command. Concise in manner, sparing of words, terrible in wrath, you would have said that Byron must have had this extraordinary man before his eyes when he delineated his immortal Conrad; Garibaldi, who was not in his element except when balls were whistling round his head, moved against the French, attacked them in flank, and, supported by Colonel Galletti, discomfited them after many hours' fighting. Garibaldi, having seen that the engagement with musketry proceeded too slowly, and impatient at that mode of fighting, made a charge on the French with the bayonet in the most destructive manner, and which secured him the victory. Finding

that that method turned out well he never abandoned it in the successive conflicts; and this explains the great number of killed in that obstinate war."

A spirited proclamation was issued to the people of Rome by their representatives the day after the first battle:

"People, yesterday commenced the entrance of the French into Rome. They entered by the Port San Pancrazio as prisoners. To us, people of Rome, this does not cause much surprise; but it may excite a curious sensation in Paris. That also will be well.

"People, the attack will be renewed. Let us do as we did yesterday, and especially do not be alarmed if a few batteries should be silenced by their cannonade. Reports of cannon startle the ears and somewhat shake the houses, but, in fact, when they do not reach united masses of people, they destroy but very few victims. . . .

"We request good shopkeepers to keep at their business constantly; that will have a good influence and be very convenient at the same time. To-day we have need to fortify Pincio (the Pincian Mount); be there early in goodly numbers, and let us labor together."

The "Committee of the Barricades," or the "Representatives of the People," Messrs. E. Carnesuchi, V. Cattabeni, and V. Caldesi issued a proclamation, May 2d, two days after the battle:

"People! General Oudinot promised to pay all, and all in cash. Well, let him pay if he can for the tapestries of Raffaele, shot through with French bullets; let him pay for the losses—no, not the losses, but the insult cast on Michael Angelo. Napoleon at least carried to Paris our masterpieces, and in a certain way Italian genius received the admiration of the foreigner as a recompense for the conquest. Not so to-day. The French government invade our territory, and carry their singular predilection for Rome so far as to wish to destroy her rather than have her exposed to the impatience of the terrible (general) Zucchi and the threats of Radetsky and Gioberti, who are both at several weeks' distance from the Tiber. General Oudinot is more hasty than our enemies. The republic is grateful to him. Do you know why? Because, while the imperialists occupy Alessuandria without a blow struck by Charles Albert, it is a great Italian glory that the people's Rome honorably repels the republicans of France, whom a black government sends against us after calumniating us as robbers and assassins. And the popes? Let us preserve in memory of them the cannon-balls which solemnly celebrated the anniversary of the pontifical encyclic. Enough! Of

kingdoms and triple kings let us talk no more. Let us now think of the barricades. Let us think of our honor, which we must fully vindicate. Rome, like Scævola, has still her arm on the burning torch, and has sworn an oath. The three hundred of Scævola routed Porsenna. The history of Rome is not yet finished."

On the same day the following proclamation was published by the triumvirate, announcing the approach of the numerous army of the king of Naples. Five days later (May 9th) they announced the arrival of the Spanish army of five thousand men on the coast. Both those armies had been raised in obedience to the call of the pope, as well as that of France, which had just been so manfully driven from the walls of Rome:

"ROME, May 2, 1849.

"Romans! A corps of the Neapolitan army, having covered the frontier, threatens to move against Rome.

"Their intent is to restore the pope as absolute master in temporal affairs. Their arms are persecution, ferocity, and pillage. Among their files lurks their king, to whom Europe has decreed the name of the *bombarder of his own subjects*; and around him stand most inexorable of the conspirators of Gaeta.

"Romans! We have conquered the first assailants; we will conquer the second. The blood of the best Neapolitans, the blood of our brothers of Sicily, lies on the head of the traitor-king. God, who blinds the wicked and strengthens the defenders of right, chooses you, O Romans, for avengers. Let the will of the country, and of God, be done!

"In the name of the rights which belong to every country, the name of the duties which belong to Rome in regard to Italy and Europe; in the name of the Roman mothers, who will bless the defenders of their children; in the name of our liberty, our honor, and our conscience; in the name of God and the people,—let us resist, soldiers and people, capital and province. Let Rome be as inviolable as eternal justice. We have learned that to conquer it is enough not to fear death."

The retreat of the French army back to the sea-shore, and the armistice which occurred after the first battle of April 30th, afforded a remarkably convenient opportunity to attend to the king of Naples and his army, which amounted to about twenty thousand men. The following is a description of their position, and the marching of the Roman army against them, translated from the beginning of the report of General Roselli, then commander-in-chief. The report



includes the time from his leaving Rome, May 16th, until the occupation of Velletri, May 20, 1849:

"The Neapolitan army occupied the position of Albano, Velletri, and Palestrina, and had their line of operations directed against Rome.

"The army of the republic left Rome to attack the enemy on the 16th and 17th, and maneuvered to turn their flanks and cut off their communications with the Neapolitan state. The point of direction of the army was Monte Fortino, whence it might menace all the enemy's communications. The Neapolitans had no other way but to retreat or come out and attack us in the positions we had chosen. The army was composed of five brigades, and one of cavalry, with twelve pieces of cannon. The first brigade, with a squadron of lancers and two pieces of artillery, commenced the march. I left Rome at five o'clock P. M., and took the direction of Zagarola, by the road of Campanelle, to expose the right flank as little as possible. The march was very rapid; we reached Zagarola at ten, before noon. The vanguard passed the town rapidly, and encamped on the hills which defend the roads of Palestrina and Albano. According to instructions, the next day it was intended to attack Palestrina, and then march on Velletri; but we learned from our patrols the information that the enemy were no longer in Palestrina, having concentrated their forces in Velletri. It was then immediately decided to occupy Monte Fortino. The order had been given to put the army in movement before daylight; but from misunderstanding and insufficiency of the means of transport, the arrival of provisions having been delayed, our brave soldiers were compelled to lose precious time," etc.

The report of the commander-in-chief is deficient in details; but General Garibaldi, when visiting New York in 1850, gave to his friend and admirer, Mr. Theodore Dwight, a full account of the battle, and from it we learn that the vanguard, led by Garibaldi, had all the fighting to do; and that the main body of the Roman army, under Roselli, did not arrive until the result was really secured. The common opinion was therefore confirmed, that the two remarkable victories of Palestrina and Velletri were attributable to Garibaldi. "My first object," said he, "was to turn the enemy's flank; for I thought that if the king of Naples once heard that I was in his rear he would be frightened, and so it proved." It appears from his notes of the engagements that the Neapolitans occupied the strong positions of Tusculum Mountains, with their headquarters at Velletri and their advanced guard at Albano. Their extreme left was at Castel Gon-

dolfo, and their extreme right a small village. The battle of Palestrina was about ten days before that of Velletri. The troops present at the former were, a hundred cavalry, under Colonel Massina; three hundred Bersaglieri, under Colonel Manara; two hundred Finanzieri, of the Nationals; two hundred students, mobilized; and the Italian legion of one thousand—in all, about eighteen hundred men.

Garibaldi was sent out to harass and observe the Neapolitans with his division, and was at Palestrina when seven thousand of the enemy were sent against him with the intention of attacking him. Between the Tusculum Mount and Palestrina is a valley, in one of the projections of the Apennines, in an amphitheater. When Garibaldi perceived that the enemy had arrived at Valmontone, he sent a detachment to observe them. But it was repulsed, with the videttes, and retired upon the corps. When the Neapolitans reached Palestrina, Garibaldi prepared to defend himself. The enemy advanced by two roads against Palestrina, when Garibaldi prepared two companies to protect the returning soldiers or to harass the enemy if occasion should offer, while he remained in the center with a reserve. The Neapolitans extended in line and attacked, but were repulsed on the left and the center. The two companies on the right were driven back, when Garibaldi, being victorious in other parts, proceeded with the reserve to the right, and the rout of the enemy was then completed. A strong body of royal Swiss troops, in the pay of Bomba, was present. The republicans being destitute of cavalry, and night being at hand, the wrecks of Bomba's troops were saved. From Palestrina Garibaldi returned to Rome.

A few days after he departed from that city with the Roman army and was in the vanguard, having under his orders the First Italian Legion of eleven hundred men; the third of the line eight hundred, fifty cavalry, and two light guns. At Valmontone he received advices that the Neapolitans were sending back their baggage and heavy artillery, and he therefore concluded that they were retreating, and pressed forward, sending notice to the principal corps. At Monte Fortino he received more positive information and continued to advance with haste. About eight o'clock, A. M. he was in sight of Velletri, which was on the road, and two miles distant. He then discovered the enemy's cavalry in *echelon*, on the Appian Way, to protect the retreat of their army, for which they were preparing. The main body of the Neapolitan army was then at Velletri, and as soon as Garibaldi's corps was discovered by them the Neapolitans moved to attack it.

He drew up the third of the line in *echelon* by companies near the road, which was among hills covered with vineyards to protect his retreat in case of necessity, and to act as a reserve in case the enemy should attack. He placed the First Italian Legion on both sides of the road, in the best position he could, and thus awaited the assault of the enemy, leaving two companies in column in the road itself. The cavalry and artillery he placed in positions adapted to be most serviceable. The enemy attacked, but all their attempts were fruitless. They had many killed, and were finally compelled to shut themselves up in the city on the defensive. Garibaldi's corps alone was too weak to prevent the retreat of the enemy, which was finally effected by night.

The principal corps of the Roman army, of seven thousand men under Roselli, arrived late and tired with their march. An attempt, however, was made to attack the city in front by charging at the head of the First Roman Legion with the battalion of artillery placed in a good position upon the road. The Neapolitans sustained the positions of the city, in which they remained the rest of the day. The republicans took positions in order to renew the attack the next day; but in the morning the Neapolitans retreated and disappeared from Velletri.

These bold and successful operations, so briefly described, were of the highest importance in their results, both by driving back the enemy, by encouraging the republicans, and by adding to their reputation. The rout of the Neapolitans was so decisive that they gave no further annoyance, and never appeared again during the war. As for the poor Spanish army, which had landed on the coast in obedience to the call of the unfortunate pope, they did nothing but issue a few bombastic proclamations, and kept themselves out of harm's way.

The French, in the mean time, were preparing to take decisive measures against Rome. The wounded, whom they had left behind them on the 30th of April, had been tenderly nursed by the Roman ladies, who had volunteered to attend at the hospitals, and three or four hundred prisoners, had been harangued in the Corso by the commander-in-chief, addressed as brother-republicans in the name of the government and people, and dismissed without exchange or parole, with open gates, to return to Civita Vecchia. On their arrival there, however, full of their praises of the noble Romans, they were immediately shipped for France for fear of their influence among the troops. The French army soon moved in great force for Rome with heavy artillery and all preparations for a siege. But their first step



was to violate the amnesty by suddenly attacking the outposts the night before the time limited by the armistice, and while they were almost unprotected.

In the *Monitore Romano*, of June 8, 1849, General Garibaldi published an account of the conflict with the French at Villas Corsini and Vascello on the third of the month, and from his report we learn, first of all, the topography of the locality. On leaving the Bastion the ground on the right rises a little in the direction of the Villa Vascello; and on the left forms, by a gentle descent, a small valley, which leads towards the spot where the French were encamped. From the gate of San Pancrazio a street leads directly to the Vascello, a distance of two hundred and fifty paces, and then divides. The principal branch descends on the right along the garden of the Villa Corsini, surrounded by high walls, and goes on to join the great road to Civita Vecchia. Another, flanked by hedges, leads directly to the Villa Corsini, which is three hundred paces in front of the Villa Vascello. And the third road turns to the left and is prolonged, like the first, by the wall of the garden of the Villa Corsini. The Villa Vascello is a large and massive fabric of three stories, surrounded by gardens and walls. In front of the villa, at a distance of fifty paces, is a small house, from which firing may be made against the windows of the Villa Corsini. On the left road, about one hundred paces beyond the point of separation of the streets, are two small houses, one behind the garden of Villa Corsini, the other twenty paces before, on the left of the street.

The Villa Corsini, situated on the highest part of the ground, commands all the neighborhood. It is surrounded by a garden and high wall. The position of the villa is very strong, and more so because, wishing to attack it without showing any preparation of approach beforehand, it is necessary, while passing the Concello, which is at the foot of the garden, to bear the concentrated fire which the enemy, defended and covered by the hedges and vases, or within the villa itself, make upon that point at which the garden walls meet at an acute angle. The ground is also very descending, and, besides, the Villa Corsini is very favorable to a body of troops occupying it, because, declining and covered with groves and crossed by deep streets, they can concentrate their reserves in security from the fire of the Romans when the cannon compel them to abandon the house.

The first attack made by the Italian Legion was against the positions Corsini and Quattro Ventri, which had been abandoned by the Roman troops, because surprised, betrayed, and overpowered by the

great number of the enemy. The attack was made with the bayonet without firing a single shot; the Legion sustained for about three quarters of an hour the whole weight of the enemy; and Colonels Daverio and Massina and Commandant Peralta were killed, and most of the officers wounded. The Manara Bersaglieri arrived at that moment, and, throwing themselves into the garden, vigorously attacked the French even under the walls of the villa. Here fell Captain Dandolo and many soldiers, and many officers and soldiers were wounded. But the houses on the left were captured by the Romans. The French had ceased their progressive work, and the Vascello, strongly occupied, poured on them a fire of grape-shot. The brave Roman artillerymen very soon disturbed the enemy in the Villa Corsini.

The French Tiraglieurs were driven from the garden and hedges by the Manara Bersaglieri advancing from the Casini on the left, and by the Italian Legion from the Vascello. A very warm fire was kept up by both parties. The French, however, were no more able, though re-enforced by two pieces of artillery, to take from the Roman troops the position held with so much valor. The artillery fired upon the Villa Corsini so vigorously that the French were compelled to retreat after setting it on fire; while the cannon in the right Bastion and Bersaglieri, thrown forward of the Vascello, attacked with great ardor the opposing forces, who were in the Casino Quattro Ventri, and who occupied numerous small adjacent houses, from which they made a very heavy but useless fire. Two companies of the Manara Bersaglieri were then sent towards the French camp on the left to annoy the enemy hidden among the vines. A very severe conflict continued all day, always to the advantage of the Roman troops, who (the Manara Bersaglieri and Italian Legion) were able, even a second time, to charge the French beyond the Villa Corsini.

Towards evening several companies of the third regiment of the line were sent to re-enforce the Romans in the Vascello, and the Medici Legion was sent to relieve the Manara Bersaglieri in the Casini on the left. The Villa Corsini and the Casino Quattro Ventri were reduced almost to dust, the cannon being remarkably well directed under the supervision of the brave Lieutenant-colonel Ludovico Calendrelli. The French were defeated at every point, the Manara Bersaglieri and the Italian Legion again and again charging them breast to breast. The first company of Manara Bersaglieri threw itself into the Villa Girand and made many French prisoners. The Italian Legion several times advanced up to Villa Valentini. At evening the Medici Legion vigorously charged the enemy among the

vineyards on the left. "The night came," says General Garibaldi, "leaving to us the field of battle, the enemy admiring our valor, and our troops desirous of renewing the battle which had been so courageously fought the first day. This they did on the following morning. All the officers, and especially the superior and subaltern officers, whom I wish to distinguish, are these here recorded, because martyrs and dying as brave men: Colonels Massina, Daverio, and Ramorino; Adjutant-major Peralta; Lieutenants Bonnet, Cavalleri, and Grassi; Captains Dandolo and David, Lieutenant Scarani, Colonel Poline, Lieutenants Larete and Gazzaniga."

On the night of the 25th of June the French made an attack to dislodge the Roman troops from the Casino, outside the Gate San Pancrazio, but were repulsed with great loss. The following official report of that action, from General Garibaldi to Roselli, the general-in-chief, appeared in the *Monitore Romano* of June 26th:

"CITIZEN GENERAL-IN-CHIEF,—One hour after midnight the enemy tried a second attack and assaulted our right flank, breaking in towards the Vascello, which is under the command of Lieutenant-colonel Medici, and on the left side of the Casetta, which is under the command of Major Cenni. With lively pleasure I communicate to you how heroically our troops sustained themselves and powerfully repulsed them. The very deep mist which involved every thing rendered the conflict the more interesting. Our soldiers gave proofs of their diligence and love for the cause. Many dead, who still lie unburied on the enemy's ground, bear them witness. And the highest encomium is due in general to the detachments Medici and Melara, and to the Manara Bersaglieri on the right wing, and on the left to Major Cenni, of the staff of the division; and, of the Arcioni Legion, to Captains Joanny, Baily, and Romagnori; First Lieutenant Carlotti; Second Lieutenant Belloughi, and to all the soldiers of that corps. Of the Regiment of the Union, Captain Colombani and Lieutenant Dezzi distinguished themselves. The soldiers are the same as those who so lately defended the Casetta, near the Vascello. And the detachment of the line should not be forgotten, commanded by Sub-Lieutenant Ferrandi of the third regiment, who showed themselves openly and intrepid under fire. When the firing had ceased, in consequence of the repulse of the enemy, there was an almost perfect silence, interrupted only by a few exchanges of shot, chiefly harmless. Nothing important occurred before daybreak, and things still remain as yesterday. Salutation and brotherhood!

"GENERAL HEADQUARTERS, *Morning of June 26, 1849.*"



The same number of the *Monitore Romano* contains the following extract from the Paris *Constitutionnel*, stating the reason why General Oudinot had not entered Rome: "It is wrong to believe that Rome can be, in a few days, rescued from the state of defense in which it has been placed by the *foreigners who occupy it*. Even if the possibility of success in an attack by main force were demonstrated with the use of all the means authorized by war, other considerations should prescribe the greatest circumspection to our general-in-chief. In reality, the order to attack, which was sent to General Oudinot, contains an express recommendation to adopt the most complete measures to avoid the exposure of the monuments of the city, which are now placed under the safeguard of France. Considerations of humanity are no less in the plans of our generals who, in no case, will confound the Roman population with the bands of adventurers who ruin and oppress it. For all these reasons the besieging forces will confine themselves to the attack of exterior works, and of positions from which the city and the monuments can not receive any injury."

The editors of the *Monitore Romano*, after stating that other journals of the French government contained a similar explanation, published this reply: "This, it can not be denied, is an ingenious expedient to justify the slowness of the *brilliant successes* of Oudinot under the walls of Rome. It is not a posthumous expedient, but a witty one invented *after the act*. The general had first to think how to let his bomb-shells by hundreds fall, not upon the *foreigners* who defend Rome, but upon the heads of the harmless population whom he has come to *protect*. He must think first how to ruin the edifices of Raffaele, the Aurora of Guido, the temple of Fortuna Virilis, and, only yesterday, the most beautiful fresco of Poussin in the palace Costaguli, now irreparably lost, because it has never been copied or engraved. But this does not prevent the Roman monuments from being placed *under the safeguard* of the French arms! This did not prevent them from having within their scope the defense of the liberty of the people, oppressed by foreigners! Hypocrites and wretches! you do not possess even the brutal frankness of Austria!"

On the 30th of June Rome was captured by the French, and, according to the testimony of eye-witnesses, terrible scenes were enacted. The bombardment, which continued three hours, was so incessant and destructive that it seemed about to bury the whole city in ruins. The inhabitants were all in the streets. Here was seen a tender mother, with her little ones in her arms, running first in one

direction and then in another, to find a safe retreat; and there another making her own breast a shield for her children; while boys were often seen trying to carry on their shoulders the corpses of their beloved fathers. Every-where could be heard the voices of sorrowing women lamenting, not for themselves, but for the loss of those more dear. A few aged and gray-headed persons kneeled on the steps of churches, praying to the Lord to give the heartless pontiff a different mind; while the more resolute ran to where the danger was greatest, among the falling bomb-shells. Shepherds drove away their flocks to find some secure place; and, as if the animals themselves shared the feelings of men, the air was filled with their mournful cries. An eye-witness of these thrilling incidents says: "In one spot in the Piazza di Venezia (the square of Venice) a shell burst, and killed three persons. A woman was crossing the bridge of Sixtus, when a large cannon shot took off her head. While standing within a few steps of the Colonna Square I saw, in a short time, two convoys pass, carrying a great number of wounded persons to the hospital of San Giacomo; and immediately afterwards several others arrived with biers and litters, on the same melancholy errand. Wherever I went within, I heard long and painful lamentations from unfortunate sufferers, whose limbs had been cut or torn by the swords or balls of the enemy. But amidst all I heard not a single exclamation against the new government, though a thousand against the unbridled vengeance of the pontiff, who had condemned his children to such cruel torments."

Fires broke out in different parts of the city, and the courageous Roman firemen ran to extinguish them as soon as possible. "Hasten," said a bystander to an old man of the common people, who seemed resolved to remain in the Piazza Navona; "hasten, I pray you, in the name of God!" "Let me stay," he replied; "what is there for me to do in this world? Yesterday the French hung my son, who was in the battalion of the university; and this night my daughter, the only creature left to me, went to get water to quench my thirst, when she was struck to the ground by a shot." The disconsolate father sobbed while he spoke, but, in a moment, became silent and motionless. The man who had been conversing with him, thinking that he might restore him, took him by the hand; but he breathed only a few seconds, and then died. The young student was found in a villa outside the city walls, hung to a beam, and the old man's statement was confirmed. A few days before the French had thrown out of the windows of the house occupied by

them several other young men of the university who had fallen into their hands.

As the further defense of the city was impossible, without exposing it to destruction, the Romans resolved to abandon the struggle. The French were within the walls, and could not be dislodged. They were, indeed, so strong that the Romans were compelled at least to leave their line, and retire to the other side of the Tiber, which General Avezzana and Garibaldi proposed to defend obstinately. But the inhabitants feared that this movement would result in the speedy ruin of their houses by the French cannon and shells, and, after consulting with the assembly, the decision was reached, that all resistance should cease. Garibaldi now perceived that his work was done in the capital; and, with feelings which we may in some degree realize, he was determined not to witness the disgrace brought upon his noble cause, nor to leave his gallant companions to be disarmed and remain useless to the country. He felt confident that many of them would follow wherever he would lead, and at that time, more than at any other, he was moved by an impulse to lead where only courageous men would follow. He thought of the city of Venice, then besieged by the Austrians, by sea and land, and indulged the flattering hope of being able to reach her and assist her brave defenders. Although a wide extent of country intervened, and the enemy could send a far superior force to oppose him, yet he was not discouraged, and resolved to go.

The following official report of General Garibaldi was the last that he issued in Rome, and therefore is of historic interest:

"GENERAL HEADQUARTERS, *San Pietro in Montorio*, }  
*July 1, 1849.* }

"Yesterday was a day fruitful in deeds of arms: losses and advantages. Yesterday Italy counted new martyrs. Colonel Manara leaves a void in the republican files difficult to be supplied. Young, of surprising merit and valor, he was struck by an enemy's ball, while courageously defending the Villa Spada against an enemy very superior. America yesterday gave, with the blood of a valiant son, Andrea Aghiar, a pledge of the love of liberal men of all countries for our fair and unfortunate Italy. Lieutenant-colonel Medici distinguished himself by skill and courage, in the defense of the first bastion on the right of the gate of San Pancrazio, and of the position Savorelli. He was distinguished in the company of the brave Colonel Ghilardi, commandant of that line. The Medici legion and the first of the line fought like lions. They several times repelled assaults



in the breach, and paid with the precious life of many young men, the hope of the country, the sacred debt of all. Part of the Manara legion fought at the point of the bayonet with their accustomed courage, in union with the companies of the regiment Massi. The Italian legion, under the command of Colonel Manara, showed itself worthy of its fame in the defense of the Villa Spada. The Third of the Line, in defending the positions which were confided to it, covered itself with glory."

The Constituent Roman Assembly, in their session of July 1st, adopted, with unanimity, and *viva voce*, the Constitution of the Republic. By this act it fulfilled the essential part of its high mission; and it also decreed, on motion of the Deputy Agostini, that the law be engraved on two marble tables and placed in the capitol, as an eternal monument of the unanimous will of the people, legitimately represented by their deputies. The *Monitore Romano* of July 2d, in its comments, said: "Woe to him who shall touch those tables of the new civil and political compact which the Roman people form with themselves before God, in the view of all civilized nations! This compact has been sealed with the blood of martyrs, with the blood of all those who, following the voice of their hearts, hastened to Rome, as to the ancient mother, to defend the honor and liberty of Italy, and to lay the first stone of her future and inevitable independence. Whatever may be the present results of measures which foreign supremacy is preparing, the assembly, the people, the national guard, and the Roman army have the consciousness of having fulfilled their duty."

Before dissolving the solemn session, the assembly decreed a funeral in the basilica of St. Peter, to all the heroes who sacrificed their lives for the country, and for the republic, under the walls of Rome. As to the wounded, as no less worthy of honor, and in need of care, the assembly voted a hospital, and appropriated for the purpose one of the national palaces. Finally, that nothing might be wanting to complete the harmony which always prevailed among the people in that conflict, and also reigned in the Constituent Assembly, the latter passed the following resolution of thanks to those citizens who, in the last moments of the republic, bravely fought to save it: "The Constituent Assembly, in the name of God and the people, *decrees*: The triumvirs Armellini, Mazzini, and Saffi have deserved well of the country." This was signed by Allocaletti, President, and also by Santarges, Cocchi, Zambianchi, and Pinnacchi, on the 1st of July.

On the same day the triumvirs, Giuseppe Mazzini, Carlo Armel-

lini, and Aurelio Saffi, issued the following proclamation: "Romans! The triumvirate is voluntarily dissolved. The Constituent Assembly will communicate to you the names of our successors. The assembly, deeply affected, after the act of yesterday performed by the enemy, with a desire to deliver Rome from extreme dangers, and to prevent the fruitless sacrifice of any more lives for the defense, have decreed the cessation of hostilities. The men who were in the right during the contest could not well continue to govern in the new times which are preparing. The mandate sent to them has ceased *de facto*, and they hasten to resign it to the hands of the assembly.

"Romans! Brothers! you have written a page which will remain in history a proof of the power and energy which slept in you, and of your future deeds, of which no force can deprive you. . . . Assembled under the republican banner, you have redeemed the honor of the common country, elsewhere contaminated by deeds of evil men and overthrown by monarchical impotency. Your triumvirs, becoming simple citizens among you, carry with them the highest comfort in their consciousness of pure intentions, and the honor of having their names associated with your bravest deeds.

"A cloud is rising to-day over your prospects and you. It is the cloud of an hour. Remain firm in the consciousness of your rectitude and with the faith in which many armed apostles among you have died. God, who has treasured up their blood, is surely for you. God wills that Rome shall be great; and she will be. Yours is not a defeat; it is a victory of the martyrs to whom the tomb is the passage to heaven. . . . *Viva la Repubblica Romana!*"

Another tribute to the bravery of the republican troops was paid by General Avezzana: "Romans! The last word of the minister of war is a mark of admiration of your valor, and an urgent request to you to persevere in the sacred enterprise of the redemption of Italy. Your martyrs died with this name upon their lips. Difficulties of your condition—adversity of destiny, diplomatic snares, deceitful words—let them never arrest you. The legacy of the valiant who have fallen for you on the walls of the Eternal City is holy and inviolate. They have reopened Roman history. Do you continue its fame."

While the republican government was in possession of Rome the edifice of the Inquisition, called "Sant' Ufizio," (the Holy Office) was opened to public view, and unexpected secrets and horrors revealed to the world. It had been closed for three hundred years; but now was freely entered and examined by thousands of the peo-

ple. De Boni has written the most complete account of it, and the perusal of it should convince those intelligent Americans who profess to believe that such an abominable institution never existed in Rome or elsewhere. The Roman republicans not only exposed the secrets of this infamous den, but they decreed its abolishment and the erection of a monument to its bloody deeds, after they had established on the ruins of popery a system of freedom, on the principles of Christianity, for which they deserve the high honor which history must inevitably award to them.

The sentiment of the Roman people in that crisis was reflected by the newspapers, which possess, and must ever retain, a peculiar interest. The following striking passage is from the *Monitore Romano*: "We have said it, and we repeat it, and we will repeat it always: The republic arose in Rome by universal suffrage; rose on the ruins of the throne of the popes, which the cry of all Europe, the maledictions of all civilized nations, and the spirit of the Gospel had crumbled into dust. To-day, when on that throne, stigmatized by civilization, flows the blood of so many victims, who will dare to raise it again? A mountain of corpses shuts up to the pontiff the way to that throne; and to ascend it again, the white stole of the priest must be dyed with human blood! Can the pope, like the tyrant, sit upon a seat of bayonets? But it is not in the power of France, it is not in the power of Europe conspiring, to restore the pope to the minds of citizens, after the enormous events which have occurred. The scepter of the pope is morally broken forever."

Before his departure from Rome Garibaldi collected his troops, and addressed them in his Spartan speech, which has been so much admired; then, proceeding out of the gates, followed by a considerable portion of his soldiers, he took his course across the Campagna, his wife accompanying him on horseback, notwithstanding all his affectionate remonstrances. He had resolved to make a desperate effort rather than submit to the enemy; and his retreat from Rome to the little port of Cesenatico, on the Adriatic, while pursued by an Austrian and a French army, was characterized by wonderful boldness, skill, and judgment. His route lay through Forlì and Cantalupo to Terni; then declined to the left to Todi, Capretto, and Orvieto, where the French troops showed themselves; then on to the frontier of Tuscany—after which they passed Arezzo, and, crossing a mountain, reached Cisterna; then, passing on to Borgo, Santangelo in Vado, and Montefeltro, he arrived at San Marino near the close of July, and left there on the night of the 31st for Cesenatico,



where they embarked in several boats and sailed for Venice. Several of these were captured or sunk, and others driven to the shore, among which last was that which contained Garibaldi, his wife, Bassi, Cicerouacchio, and his two sons.

Garibaldi, in a noble tribute to his wife, refers to their perilous retreat. "I determined to try my fortune out of Rome," he says, "when the venerated city was forced to succumb to the arms of Louis Napoleon, who had become its conqueror. Anna wished to share the dangers of the enterprise. I objected; but vain were all remonstrances! Her feeble health she treated as nothing. Had I, then, no longer any desire to have her with me, and endeavored to leave her behind me under various pretexts? She asked me whether I doubted her courage. Had I not had proofs enough? Oh, that delightful life in camp! The magnificent cavalcade! And the combats—they were delightful to her. And as for fatigue, privations, and mishaps, what are they to one whose happiness is in the heart? Anna! You were identified in feeling with Italy, and happy in the hope of the redemption of the people. She did not go armed; she was not spotted with blood; but her intrepid countenance would animate and put to blush even a coward. And truly, under the walls of Rome, and beyond them, brave men had fallen, and many lay mutilated on the bed of grief and despair in the hospitals, or weeping at home over the failure of our exertions.

"The right of the noble column of Velletri was degraded by intruders; and the few good men were discouraged by the vandalism of dissension and the cowardice of some. The imposing presence of the American amazon did not avail at San Angelo in Vado and San Marino to stop the fugitives. The word "cowards," uttered by her in contempt, was borne away by the wind, and no longer wounded the ears of men who had lost their spirit. Ah! I must recall the glorious fields of San Antonio, to forget the disgrace of San Marino. Yet we happened to have in our front an enemy more timid than ourselves.

"But, Anna! a land of slavery contains your precious remains. Italy will make your grave free; but what can restore to your children their incomparable mother? At San Marino she had symptoms of a dangerous disease, and I insisted that she should remain there. But all in vain! The increasing dangers did not diminish her resolution to go. At Cisnatico, where we labored all night to effect the departure of the boats designed to transport the troops to Venice, Anna, seated on a rock, sadly contemplated our wearisome toil. She

embarked; and the time spent on board was one of continual suffering. She landed, exhausted, on the beach of Mesola, and was hardly able to walk. In vain she flattered herself that the land would restore her to health. The land! It had nothing to give her but a grave.

“But, Italy, thou hast the ashes of Dante, the most celebrated of Italians. Receive the bones of the American amazon, the martyr of Italian liberty, and place them near the ashes of your great men, and under their protection. And you will take part in the pious deed, all you Italians who ever knew her. Every friend of our country will bless her and the orphan children. And they and I will implore the benediction of God upon you, and the remembrance, not only of Italy, but of the New World, their birthplace and her own. Soil of generous men, press lightly on the grave of the brave daughter of America. And, O God, Protector of the Innocent, preserve the children of the martyr and the proscrip<sup>t</sup>! And my sons, when you are asked, Where are your parents? say, We are orphans for Italy. Yet ever love Italy; for she is unhappy indeed.”

After the death of his beloved wife, who was buried in a secret grave, known only to himself, Garibaldi alone remained alive of the brave individuals who had been driven ashore by the Austrian squadron near the mouth of the River Po. The Roman tribune, with his two sons, retreated to the neighboring marshes, and all of them were probably murdered by the Austrians. The escape of Garibaldi himself seems almost miraculous. He succeeded in crossing Italy in the midst of watchful enemies, and reached Genoa in safety, but was soon compelled to leave Piedmont. The king of Sardinia offered him the choice between prison and exile; and, preferring the latter, Garibaldi sailed for Tunis, but through the intrigues of the French consul that Algerian city refused to receive him. He then proceeded to America, and spent several months in New York and vicinity, recruiting his health, which his long and extraordinary series of labors, privations, and sufferings had rendered feeble. He also engaged in humble daily labor for his subsistence, working for the most of the time in the candle manufactory of his countryman and friend, Signor Meucci, on Staten Island. He declined the honors of a public reception in New York, and earnestly advised his fellow-exiles to reject all offers of pecuniary aid from others while they were able to earn their own living by any kind of labor, however severe or humble. Garibaldi subsequently made several voyages in the Pacific Ocean as commander of merchant-vessels; and, desiring to be near his native

land, he departed from America and returned to the island of Madalena, which lies off the coast of Italy and adjacent to the islet of Caprera.

Among the martyrs of Italy who sacrificed their lives in behalf of the republic of Rome, in 1849, Garibaldi mentions in the highest terms of praise the names of Luigi Carniglia, Antonio Elio, and Hugh or Ugo Bassi. The latter was born in the same town, was of the same age, and of the same monastic order as Gavazzi. He was a poet, a painter, and a musician, and excelled in each of these departments of genius; but his greatest merit was as a preacher. As a devoted religious counselor he was found in the republican army, exposing himself to danger, and twice receiving wounds. On one occasion he was taken prisoner by the French, who afterwards released him. This patriotic priest accompanied Garibaldi in his battles and on his celebrated retreat after the fall of Rome. He left San Marino in company with his leader, embarked in the same boat with him on the Adriatic, and was one of the few of those who escaped the Austrian squadron by landing on the Italian shore; but he was soon after captured by the Austrian troops, taken to Bologna, and sentenced by a military tribunal to be shot, on a false accusation of having borne arms against the emperor. The canon law prohibited the execution of a priest, and in order to avoid the infringement of this statute the Inquisition deprived him of the dignity of the priesthood, in accordance with one of their rules, by skinning the palms, forefingers, and thumbs of both hands. Pretending to have thus divested him of his sacred character, his enemies delivered him over as a layman to the ferocious hordes of Corzkowski, who made short work with him. "The scene," says Nicolini, "was most touching and affecting. He walked composedly to the side of his grave. He raised his beautiful black eyes to heaven and exclaimed: 'I die without remorse; I die for my God and my country. Viva Gesu! viva l'It—' Six homicidal bullets prevented his uttering the whole name of his beloved Italy, and he went to finish it in the bosom of Christ."

While Rome had surrendered to the French, and Austria had the control of the northern part of Italy, the brave Venetians remained independent. General Haynau, who operated against their city, in vain summoned the president, Daniel Manin, to surrender; he also scorned to entertain the overtures for negotiation made by Radetsky in the beginning of May, 1849, notwithstanding the critical condition of the city. After a severe bombardment Fort Malagkera, one of



the forts outside of Venice, fell into the hands of the Austrians on the 26th of May; but Manin, encouraged by the victories of the Hungarians over their common enemies, still held out, though the inhabitants were exposed to the incessant fire of the Austrians and to the pangs of famine and distress, while the cholera raged in the city. It was not until Venice was completely surrounded by the enemy, its provisions entirely exhausted, and the news of Gorgey's surrender had arrived, that Manin consented to negotiate. On the 23d of August he agreed to a capitulation, after having secured favorable terms, which granted an amnesty to all that had taken part in the conflict except forty of the most conspicuous defenders of the city, including, of course, himself, who were compelled to withdraw before the entrance of Radetsky, on the 30th of August. Manin thus had the honor of continuing the contest long after it had ceased in other parts of Italy, while his administrative genius and unselfish wisdom received universal admiration.

After the arrival of Pius IX, at Gaeta, on the southern frontiers, in the latter part of November, 1848, he inaugurated a rival government. His secretary of state, Giacomo Antonelli, was the controlling power in the papal administration. This distinguished leader was born on the 2d of April, 1806, and began his brilliant career under Pope Gregory XVI, who observed his extraordinary administrative talents, and successively promoted him to the prelacy, the magistracy, the office of delegate to Oviato, Viterbo, and Macerato, and that of Minister of Finance. Upon the elevation of Pius IX, in 1846, Antonelli was promoted to a still higher position. He was a layman, having "distinguished himself so well," said the witty M. About, "that he escaped by divine aid, the sacrament of orders. He has never said mass; he has confessed to no one; I will not affirm he has confessed himself." It is not necessary to receive priestly tonsure in order to become a Roman cardinal. This is required of the representatives of the fifty principal churches in the "Eternal City" called "Cardinal Priests." Besides these nominal chief ecclesiastics there are six "Cardinal Bishops" who derive their titles from the six inferior bishops of the former States of the Church. The remaining fourteen seats can be occupied, if need be, by laymen or by persons who have received only the first stages of priestly ordination. They are called "Cardinal Deacons," deriving their titles from the fourteen *rioni*, or wards of the city. Antonelli belonged to this last class. He might have sought and obtained holy orders, but he possessed no abilities of a theological or religious kind. Hence

the sacerdotal office was not desirable to him. After being assigned a place in the consistory on the 12th of June, 1847, barely a year after the elevation of Pius IX to the papal throne, Antonelli, from conviction or from policy, adapted himself to the liberal sentiments then prevailing in the Vatican and throughout the country.



ANTONELLI.

Shrewd, affable, energetic, it was not long before Antonelli had made himself almost absolute. In another year he had become prime minister, and no one took a more important part than he in the stirring events of 1848-9. This crisis tried his diplomatic skill. Yielding to the popular will the papal government made a progressive step and then halted. It seemed as if the position of the papacy would hasten the downfall of monarchy every-where. Antonelli was alarmed at the situation, and the court of Rome felt the uneasiness



that pervaded the royal courts of the Continent. The assassination of Count Rossi, the demand of the liberals and the flight of the pope to Gaeta made the situation still more precarious, but Antonelli began to prepare for the restoration of Pius IX, not by the free suffrages of his former subjects, but by the bayonets of foreign troops. The Austrians, against whose occupation of Ferrara a few brief months before he had protested, were now invited to become instruments in the work with the French, Spaniards, and Neapolitans. Louis Napoleon heard and answered the summons, and at his command the French Republic sent its army to suppress its sister Roman Republic. He established a *régime* which consecrated tyranny as a fundamental principle. "All classes of society," said About, in 1859, "hate him equally. Concini was not more detested. He is the only man about whom all the people are agreed."

---

## SIXTH DECADE, 1850-1860.

---

### CHAPTER XI.

#### *THE POLITICAL DEVELOPMENT OF CAVOUR.*

THE ministry of D'Azeglio and his policy of national renovation were earnestly supported by Cavour, who became the leader of the Right Center while Rattazzi was acknowledged to be the champion of the Left. These two parliamentary chiefs who, together with D'Azeglio, occupied such a prominent position in Italian politics when constitutional government was on its trial, were dissimilar in their personal characteristics, but they were subsequently attracted toward each other, as it were, by the "affinity of contraries," though at first differing in their political principles. Rattazzi was an accomplished orator, richly endowed with all those qualities which constitute an able advocate. Cavour was a ready debater of great skill, and possessing those rarer abilities which proclaim the profound statesman. Rattazzi, whether as the strong ally of the administration or the able exponent of the opposition, seldom exhibited the constructive genius of Cavour in originating a policy, while the latter was never contented unless he was at the head of affairs, devising plans for a campaign or organizing a victory. Indeed, he was too self-



reliant and independent to occupy a subordinate place in the cabinet, and disliked to share power and responsibility with others. "Self-conscious and imperious, he demanded instruments, not advisers; machinery, not motive power; subalterns, not peers." While both were equally bold and resolute in the face of difficulties or danger, Cavour displayed the greater tact and sagacity in avoiding the latter and overcoming the former. The many aspects of a question were seen as quickly and as clearly by Rattazzi as they were by Cavour, but the latter examined it more closely, and, challenging it at every point, studied its various relations, calculated its bearings, estimated its disturbing forces, and projected its orbit.

Possessing a mathematical mind, Cavour naturally submitted every question, whether political or moral, to the severest test, as he would if considering the arc of a circle or the segment of a sphere. Rattazzi was gifted with forensic powers, and, after selecting his position, endeavored to fortify it with the strongest arguments. With judicial precision Cavour canvassed the whole range of possibilities surrounding a question, and then, by an act of induction, arrived at a conclusion. "The intellectual process of the one involved an analysis which only contemplated a subordinate synthesis; that of the other a broad and comprehensive synthesis, which implied every possible analysis." Rattazzi was probably a better judge of men as individuals, but no one could excel Cavour in the art of utilizing them as forces. He regarded them, however, as something more than mere instruments, and, after finding in each man's individuality what he could use to make his specialty a success, he appropriated it without seeming to interfere with the man's independence. In fine, Rattazzi ruled his party by the power of his eloquence, as his style was flowing and his diction elegant to a remarkable degree. Cavour, though his utterance was difficult and his elocution painful, controlled the chambers by "the simple force of his genius."

In the reaction which followed the revolution of 1848, when Europe was passing into the shadow of a liberal eclipse, Cavour was more resolute than ever in accomplishing his work of reform. In times of revolution he was a conservative; but, in the days of reaction, he became a radical. After separating himself from the Right he inclined more and more to the Left, though the party of which he was now the chief was small and apparently without any hope of success. Yet by skillful management he made that "little phalanx" influential, and became, in fact, the leader of the parliamentary majority. He was the same frank and simple defender of the constitution

before the crisis as after it. The boasting of impotent revolutionists excited his contempt and antipathy, and, unmoved by their threats, he earnestly supported the government more especially in the critical days, which immediately succeeded the overthrow at Novara until peace was definitely settled, which was only in January, 1850. In the mean time Cavour still remained a bold and active liberal, indorsing and accepting the "statuto" with all its conditions, guarantees, and consequences. In sustaining the ministry he often stimulated and advanced beyond it, and, by degrees, became the chief—the *leader*, if not of the conservative majority, with which he kept pace—at least of the liberal fraction of that majority. He did not favor a conservative policy, because he was naturally a partisan of immobility; but he wished to show that, when exigencies demanded power and action, the moderate parliamentary leader, like himself, possessed the statesmanship to meet the crisis. In order that he might demonstrate this, opportunities were afforded him, as they naturally presented themselves in connection with a policy and a constitutional system which constantly bring parties into collision.

The abolition of "privileged jurisdictions and ecclesiastical immunities in the administration of justice" was evidently one of the simplest results of this system. It was natural that Count Balbo and Count Revel, who were friends of the ministry, and the most conservative and the most religious of the men on the Right, should not doubt the principle, but they did ask that negotiations should be made first with the pope. Such negotiations had been carried on in vain for two years, and any further delay would only weaken the new institutions, and create the impression that in a liberal state there could be two laws, two jurisdictions, and two powers. While there were many other questions of civil reforms and ecclesiastical organizations which infallibly arise from a constitutional *régime*, yet the ministry, under the circumstances, hesitated to advance so far, and in its modesty only proposed the abolition of ecclesiastical privileges, of that which was called the *foro*. Count Siccardi, the minister of justice, introduced such a bill, which was advocated by all the sincere Liberals, contested by some of the ministerial Right, and bitterly opposed by the members of the reaction.

Cavour, among others, had urged the ministry to present the bill, and therefore embraced the opportunity of indorsing it. In discussing the matter he boldly favored the resumption of a "true constitutional policy," by claiming the civil rights of society in the face of the privileges of the Church. He combated those who were

always opposed to reforms—sometimes because the national mind was agitated, at others because it was tranquil. After directing the attention of his hearers to English statesmen, who understood how to change the tide of every revolution by the use of opportune measures, Cavour added: “When reforms are effected in good time, far from weakening authority, they strengthen it, rendering the revolutionary spirit powerless. I would say, therefore, to statesmen: Frankly follow the examples of the duke of Wellington, Earl Grey, and Sir Robert Peel, . . . follow broadly the road of reforms, without fear of their being inopportune. Do not think that it will weaken the cause of the constitutional throne, for it will, on the contrary, strengthen it and will strike such deep roots into our soil that, should revolution spring up around us, not only will it have power to dominate revolution, but it will *gather about it all the live forces of Italy, and conduct the nation to the destinies awaiting her.*”

This speech in favor of ecclesiastical reform was delivered in March, 1850, and marks the turning-point in Cavour's political history, so far, at least, as it regards his popularity. Henceforth his name was to become a tower of strength. Reform became his watchword—Church reform, financial reform, postal reform, reform in the revenue service, in the civil service. He favored “administrative decentralization, so far as consistent with political unity, the abolition of the military commandants, and the complete emancipation of the state from the trammels of the Church.” In this speech Cavour revealed his innermost thought, manifestly proceeding beyond the limits of a special question, and profoundly impressing the public mind with the fact that he was not only the author of a policy, but the very man created to conduct it.

The cruelly embarrassed condition of Piedmontese finance afforded Cavour another opportunity of showing his ability as a statesman. It was not one of those questions which excite every passion of the soul and appeal to the most tender emotions, but the stern, practical fact of a deficit of six millions per annum. He faithfully supported the government, and exposed the puerile charges and chimerical schemes that were brought against it, and yet, in criticising its financial policy, he caused it to feel “the prick of the spur.” First, reviewing the economical position, like a man who was perfectly familiar with the facts, then considering them with clearness and confidence, he said, at the end of the list: “Be careful; if, in the next session, the ministry does not bring forward a financial scheme by which to restore the balance with a reformed custom-house tariff, and the system of tax-



ation which the country needs, I shall deeply regret it; we shall, my friends and I, be compelled to abandon it. . . . Although the condition of our country is serious, it is by no means desperate; we only need a little strength of will and courage to make it accede to the necessary taxation. . . . Let us hear no more of party agitations; the union between the king and the nation is sufficiently close and well established, there is nothing to fear from extreme revolutionary or reactionary parties. I do not fear the spread of either one or the other. . . . Proceed, therefore, banish alarms; you will have the support of parliament and of the country, even in the most distressing portion of our task—the re-establishment of the balance of expenditure and income.”

The great ability, decision of mind, and prompt activity exhibited by Cavour in political and financial matters were now fully recognized, and people discerned in him the earnest man and the wise minister, who is ripe for work and anxious to restore lost time. Hence, when Santa Rosa, the minister of commerce, died unexpectedly in October, 1850, the name of Cavour instantly suggested itself. Indeed, every thing seemed to concur in designating him as the proper successor of the deceased official at a time when surrounding circumstances were somewhat unpleasant. By order of the archbishop of Turin, Mgr. Frasoni harshly refused the last sacraments of the Church to the unfortunate Santa Rosa, who, though a profoundly religious man, incurred the displeasure of the Jesuits, because he had taken part in the introduction, as well as the vote, of the law of the *foro*. How sad the spectacle of a man, on his deathbed, begging for the prayers of the priest, and, at the same time, refusing to utter a recantation which he considered would dishonor his name.

Public opinion was profoundly moved at Turin, and naturally turned toward Cavour, who had been the intimate friend of Santa Rosa, and who, more than any other, had contributed to the success of the law of the *foro*. D’Azeglio himself was delighted with the proposition to introduce into his cabinet such an “able and vigorous athlete,” and when he went to Victor Emmanuel to suggest his appointment, the king, without exhibiting any more surprise than the rest, replied with his usual sagacity, “I will accept him; but wait a little, and he will rob you of all your portfolios.” Cavour had made no conditions, neither concerning men nor things, but simply repeated his old saying of the Villa Bolongaro: “We will do something.” He recognized the fact that a cabinet minister would have what power he is capable of exercising. His acceptance of the portfolio marked a

new era in Italian affairs. It was truly a fortunate circumstance that a country so completely conquered and humiliated should find, in the moment of its greatest need, a noble prince, inspired with patriotism, who, aided by devoted men, resolved to perpetuate constitutional liberty. In view of the almost irreparable disaster that had recently prostrated the nation, its restoration was a complicated and difficult work, that could not be performed in a single day or by a single blow, but was destined to be accomplished after peculiar and severe struggles. It had two prominent phases, the first of which was the ministry of D'Azeglio, which Cavour entered in October, 1850. Occurring soon after the defeat of Novara, this event truly terminated the period of national disgrace and ruin, and inaugurated that of reform. The new ministry, accepting peace as a necessity, devoted its energies to the task of strengthening liberal institutions.

D'Azeglio was a man of great moderation, affable disposition, and commanding dignity, and these qualities were of advantage to him in his efforts to conciliate the European powers. While he was laboring to remove external distrust, and re-establish the diplomatic position of Piedmont, Count Siccardi endeavored to secure ecclesiastical reforms. General Alfonso La Marmora, minister of war, having restored peace at Genoa, proceeded to reconstruct an army which had been demoralized by defeat. He inaugurated a new system of military instruction, and changed military institutions, especially reconstructing officers' corps, by opening the ranks of the regular army to most of the other Italian provinces who had fought with the Piedmontese during the war. He inspired all with the same patriotic spirit, saying, "I trust that from whatever province they may come, the officers are fully penetrated with the national sentiment, which makes all Italians equally devoted sons of the same great country—Italy!" La Marmora did not hesitate to make himself responsible before the Chambers by pushing on the fortifications of Casale, which ten years later (in 1859) were to arrest the Austrian invasion.

In 1851, on the retirement of Nigra, Cavour assumed the portfolio of finance, in addition to that of agriculture and commerce. He was admirably fitted for both these positions, having a profound knowledge of political economy, which rendered him an authority in financial questions. He immediately commenced the difficult task of ameliorating the condition of the treasury, favored the abolition of discriminating duties, and concluded commercial treaties with Switzerland, Belgium, Denmark, France, and England, on the basis of free trade, which, as Bianchi remarks, "were so many decisive bat-

tles against Austria, gained on the field of diplomacy." In this general work of national renovation, Cavour, as minister of commerce and finance, rendered important assistance by emancipating commerce, and establishing combinations of imposts. In securing these economic reforms, he displayed an inexhaustible fertility of resource and untiring activity, which soon gave him a great influence in parliament.

Piedmont entered afresh upon the path of national progress; but, in advancing, it met with two obstacles, which D' Mazade calls "one matter of general policy, and another of parliamentary conduct." It would seem that the question of "general policy" had been decided; but it continued to present itself at every step and in every form, under conditions in which every thing had been modified. At the formation of D'Azeglio's new ministry Cavour, as we have stated previously, was striving to uphold, despite the repulse at Novara, the flag of the "statuto," and the liberal cause of the nation; but, knowing that a warlike and revolutionary opposition was dangerous, he was compelled to dissolve a chamber. A second dissolution of the parliament, however, was necessary, through the intervention of the king, before he could obtain from the country a parliamentary assembly with which he might harmoniously work. There was in this new ministry a very large majority, composed of all shades of conservatism, while the Left represented a minority too small to be feared. This conservative chamber gave Piedmont peace and good order, and saved her from ruin.

An entirely new condition of affairs followed the acceptance and conclusion of peace. The internal state of the country was again considered a question of primary importance, and there was a visible modification and transformation of parties. Such men as Pinelli, Boncompagni, and Castelli, representing a fraction of the majority, and constituting a liberal conservative center, did not hesitate to sustain the ministry in its efforts to secure a wise reform. Balbo, Count Revel, and Colonel Menabrea, of the extreme Right, and a few deputies from Savoy, manifested some opposition. This party, though strongly and sincerely constitutional, and not desirous to separate itself from the government, was, nevertheless, in fact, stationary or reactionary, favoring the "statuto," but not its results, and often embarrassed the government while supporting it.

When the law of the *foro* was presented by the ministry, Count Balbo and his friends opposed it. When reforms in political economy were being accomplished by Cavour, and he was negotiating



with France, England, and Belgium for a treaty of commerce, Count Revel and the conservative protectionists arrayed themselves against his measures. While Colonel Menabrea, at that time a young and brilliant officer of engineers, and an eloquent speaker, did not exactly assume a hostile attitude, he occupied a position somewhat similar to that of a clerical and conservative dissenter. He had abandoned the post of first secretary of foreign affairs when the question of ecclesiastical privileges was first introduced. Mean time, in the opposite camp, a movement in the opposite direction was transpiring. The extreme Left—composed of such men as the Tecchios, the Sineos, and the Brofferios—was deeply excited, and as usual, passionate declamations resounded there. But already a small party was detaching itself from this democratic combination, constituting, as it were, a Left Center, with Rattazzi, Lauza, Cadorna, and Buffa. This Left Center gradually approached nearer to the government, and even sometimes supported ministerial reforms by its votes, though often its tactics seemed to be hostile.

The condition of parliament presented a singular aspect. On the one hand the ministry, having a majority, secured peace; but a part of it either resisted or became indifferent whenever the government adopted a national and liberal policy; on the other, the cabinet encountered opposition, which originated chiefly in 1848 and 1849; but even this was yielding to "the sobering influence of events." Yet these former adversaries might either become useful allies or dangerous opponents. Hence the situation was exciting, uncertain, critical. It was evident that some positive step must be taken. If the Right should dictate the policy of the government, there was danger of its drifting toward reaction, which would one day affect the system of religious reforms, and probably also the liberty of the press, and electoral law. A persistent adherence to the policy that had been inaugurated involved the necessity of obtaining, by other alliances and other support, enough strength to make up for defections in the right. The ministry appreciated the situation; but the question became complicated by the differences of the temperament in D'Azeglio and Cavour, who were both at the same time friends and competitors in the government.

These two men held exactly the same opinions relative to the adoption of a liberal policy by Piedmont; but D'Azeglio, for diplomatic reasons, as well as from personal characteristics, hesitated before precipitating an avowed conflict with the right. He had been elevated to the ministry because of devotion to the services of his coun-

try rather than from taste or ambition on his part, and while in power he remained the same generous and polite gentleman, sagacious and amiable; brave in the midst of dangers; somewhat deficient in energy in overcoming the difficulties of daily life, and easily fatigued by business. Cavour had the activity and perseverance of a public man who had a passion for business matters, and not only foresaw coming troubles, but immediately commenced to counteract or to overcome them. He deeply and painfully felt reluctant to separate from the "friends of childhood," as he called them. On one occasion, in an animated discussion, he was opposed by some old friends, and, though manifesting considerable emotion, resolutely exclaimed, "Yes, gentlemen, I know that in entering on political life, in time of such difficulties as these, one must be prepared for the greatest deceptions. I am prepared for it. Should I be compelled to give up all the friends of my childhood; if I should have to see my most intimate acquaintances transformed into my bitterest enemies, I would not fail in my duty. I will never abandon the principles of liberty, to which I have avowed allegiance." If the cause of national reform could only succeed by arraying his best friends against him, Cavour was willing to endure even that. "I have been accused," he says later, "of having separated from old friends; the accusation is unfounded. I have not left them, but they have left me. I did every thing to retain them and to persuade them; it is they who have refused to follow me. Ought I, then, to have stood alone, rejecting the co-operation of those who were disposed to follow me?"

Those who exhibited any disposition to follow him belonged to the Left Center, chiefly represented by Rattazzi. Cavour well remembered the course pursued by the Left Center in the parliamentary affairs of 1848 and 1849; how he fought them then, and still more recently, and he resolved to do so, when necessary, to the end. He would not, however, permit the recollections of former conflicts to prevent an alliance by which the government might be emancipated and the condition of parliament strengthened. He proposed, therefore, the formation of a party composed of men of extreme opinions, and representing all shades of liberalism. Although these new allies were not harmonious, yet he was confident that he could control them. "It was all deducible," says D'Mazade, "to a question of *à propos*; and Cavour, by a marvel of dexterity, chose for the more decisive affirmation of that evolution of liberal policy meditated by him exactly the moment when Piedmont was compelled to 'reef sail,' and pay an apparent tribute to the reactionary spirit."

While D'Azeglio presided over the cabinet Cavour, by his peculiar tact and ability, was already in reality prime minister. A crisis suddenly arose which demanded the exercise of great prudence. It was when the *coup d'état* of December 2, 1851, burst upon France, and whose echo resounded like the death knell of liberty in Piedmont. A new Napoleon seemed to confront Europe, and the smaller countries, like Piedmont and Belgium, were uneasy, because they sheltered the refugees from Paris, and tolerated the freedom and independence of the press. Indeed, the repressive policy of Louis Napoleon in France was a menace to constitutional liberty wherever it existed, and also an encouragement to the absolutist and reactionary parties. Piedmont especially occupied an embarrassing position, the situation in France being full of peril, and Austria waiting to take every advantage of her, and besides, her trouble and vexation were likely to be increased by the imprudence of the press or refugees.

The cabinet at Turin appreciated the difficulties and delicacies of the situation, and as early as January 7, 1852, it hastened to justify itself to the French government by proposing a law on the press, by which offenses against foreign princes were to be transferred to the ordinary tribunals, and not to be tried by jury. The Piedmontese cabinet was compelled to accept what it could not avoid, and D'Azeglio thus ingeniously stated the case: "Suppose we had to traverse one of those regions where wild beasts abound, and pass close to a den where a lion was sleeping, and that one of our guides told us, 'Do not speak—make no noise, lest you should awaken him;' and if one of us were to begin to sing I imagine we should all combine to shut his mouth. . . . Or again, if notwithstanding all possible precaution and prudence the lion awakes and springs upon us, then, if we are men we must fight." By this striking apologue D'Azeglio expressed the necessity of prudence; but the great work of adjusting the difficulties of the situation devolved upon Cavour, who boldly opposed the reactionists, labored to establish the integrity of Piedmontese policy, and preserve inviolate the institutions of the country. He proposed to accomplish this by uniting the liberal elements in parliament.

The conservative party, with a view of inaugurating the oppressive policy which Napoleon had adopted in France, urged the absolute necessity of modifying the electoral laws and greatly restricting the liberty of the press. The discussion concerning the latter, which occurred in the early part of 1852, will be memorable in the political career of Cavour, as marking his complete separation from the con-



servative party and his coalition with the Left Center, or liberal progressives. In his celebrated speech on the liberty of the press he declared that, though it was one of the most difficult problems of modern legislation, still there was no other effectual remedy for its abuse than public opinion or the press itself. Cavour was criticised and censured for his course on this occasion, being stigmatized as a renegade, who had falsified his past record and become the champion of a policy not his own.

Colonel Menabrea, the representative of conservatism, was alarmed, and more earnestly advocated a greater restriction of the liberty of the press. Ratazzi, on the other hand, defended liberalism, and promised to support the ministry, provided it maintained a law which he regarded as temporarily needful. Cavour was prominent in this parliamentary combat, speaking in favor of the law, exposing the whole policy of the government with remarkable precision and ability, accepting offers of aid from the chiefs of the Left Center, and considering Colonel Menabrea's speech as the declaration of a rupture. The struggle between these leaders was sharp, and in the mêlée the strongest passions were exhibited. The efforts of peace-makers to render the contest less bitter were not entirely successful. The Right proposed a divorce, followed by a new marriage—a *connubio*, as Revel called it, in referring to the events of 1848 for an argument against the new alliance. This sudden change surprised all; and even Colonel Menabrea was astonished at the excitement he had produced, remarking, with some sadness: "The minister of finance wants to set sail in the direction of a new parliamentary coast, and land on another shore. He has a right to act as he pleases, but I shall not go with him." Cavour's reply was: "It is not true that the ministry has directed its helm towards other shores. It has made no movement of the sort; but wishes to go in the direction of the prow, instead of in the direction of the stern." These explanations resulted in greater divisions, and the question of the law of the press, though to some extent insignificant, became the pretext for a decisive battle, that had had been skillfully planned, and was bravely fought out in parliament.

A few members of the cabinet complained of Cavour's daring maneuver because he was pledging the ministry to do more than it was inclined to perform; and D'Azeglio himself did his utmost to moderate the conflict, and explain the words of his impetuous colleague. But the blow had been struck, and was resounding through parliament and through the country. Cavour was now the recog-

nized leader of liberal opinions, having been compelled, as we have seen, to abandon the conservative party, with its reactionary tendencies, because it either could not or would not advance in the path of reform which he had marked out for himself. When his former friends and allies refused to support his measures, he turned to the liberals, believing that a multiplicity of expedients is not inconsistent with unity of purpose. His course, therefore, was not a surrender of principles, but simply a change of political base. He became the representative, not of a new policy, but of a new and more active and decisive phase of Piedmontese policy that rendered the *connubio* more pronounced. The president of the Chamber of Deputies having suddenly died, the minister of finance immediately supported the candidature of Rattazzi for that position, and he was elected. This event, however, produced a ministerial crisis in May, 1852, which seemed to delay the hour of Cavour's complete supremacy, but which, after all, hastened the inevitable result. These sudden changes alarmed D'Azeglio, and he thought his formidable colleague, the "dear inventor of the *connubio*," as he loved to call him, was rather too fast, and might by his extreme course prejudice the outside world against the government.

Cavour, by this "constitutional *coup d'état*," became master of the political situation, and, having the prestige of an ever-increasing authority, he retired for a time, leaving the reigns in the hands of D'Azeglio. After the resignation of the ministry a reconstruction of it occurred, concerning which Cavour wrote to his friend Salvagnoli, in Florence: "It was in my opinion not only useful but indispensable that a liberal party should be firmly constituted. . . . After having at first been convinced of such a necessity D'Azeglio has not accepted all the consequences, and he provoked a crisis, which could only result in my retirement or his removal from power. External policy required that I should be the sacrifice. I think D'Azeglio would willingly have abdicated, but I did my utmost to dissuade him; he stayed, and we have not ceased to be friends, privately and politically. It will next be his turn to retire, and then we can constitute an openly liberal cabinet. In the mean time, I take advantage of my new liberty for a journey to France and England."

Cavour did not visit these countries simply for recreation, but to interview their statesmen, and prepare the way for his own combinations by removing the prejudices existing there against liberal Piedmont. In France, England, and Scotland he was received with flat-

tering marks of consideration, not only at court, but by the most distinguished men of the time. Well might they honor a statesman who "had achieved," says Dr. Spencer, "a bloodless revolution in favor of constitutional liberty, which the *tiers état* and the guillotine have never been able to acquire permanently for France, or *Magna Charta* and the block for England, and which was secured only after centuries of bloody conflict between royal prerogative and popular rights." At the time of Cavour's visit to England Lord Malmesbury was at the head of the foreign office, and he openly expressed his hope that an amicable settlement would soon be made between Cavour and the party he had labored so hard to unite. The most cordial reception, however, was extended to him in Paris, where he had arranged to meet Rattazzi. By his air of easy superiority he won the esteem of the prince-president, Napoleon, and also renewed acquaintance among some old friends of the parliamentary world, one of whom, M. Thiers, said to him, "Be patient; if after they have given you snakes for breakfast they give you snakes again for dinner do not be disgusted." During this visit Cavour made many new friends, and had an excellent opportunity of observing the position of affairs which he might one day have to manipulate.

While in London and in Paris he closely watched the progress of events in Piedmont, and when informed of the unsettled condition of the ministry there he wrote to his friends: "Instead of combating D'Azeglio we should lend him a frank support; but we can not sacrifice our good name to him. . . . As soon as I return we will consult together; we will see La Marmora, and speak bluntly to him. It is time for all this to be settled. If D'Azeglio wishes to remain in power let him say so, and he will have in us sincere allies. Should he be tired of it let him no longer render the problem of government insoluble by his continual vacillations." The fact is, that D'Azeglio was oppressed by the weight of government; while abroad, as at home, Cavour was weighing upon the ministry. If his presence in the government had been a disturbing element his absence was a still greater embarrassment. If the ministry could not live with him neither could it do without him.

On his return to Turin in September, 1852, Cavour was called by the king to form a new ministry that would come to terms with the "Holy See." He frankly declared that he could not and would not become the interpreter of a policy of subserviency to the pope, but subsequently accepted the charge without conditions. Thus, after having passed through a severe conflict, he was crowned conqueror.



## Sixth Decade Continued, 1850-1860.

## CHAPTER XII.

*THE POLICY OF CAVOUR.*

CAVOUR became president of the council and minister of finance November 4, 1852, and his victorious return to public life after a retirement of a few months marked an important epoch in the history of Italy. D'Azeglio yielded his position to his brilliant rival without exhibiting any resentment, and wrote: "I had accepted the helm at a time when it was pointed out to me that better than any other man I could direct it for the country's best advantage. . . . Now, that the ship has refitted, let the winds fill her sails. I surrender my quarter-deck to another. He, whom you know, is possessed of a diabolical activity, fitted for the work, both in mind and body, and it gives him so much pleasure!" Cavour accepted the responsible trust; but he understood the ship of state because he had helped to construct it. As a liberal conservative he had been creating, through a series of changes, and by means of alliances with the "moderates of all parties," a parliamentary position which directed Piedmont and Italy into the track of new destinies.

When D'Azeglio's ministry, which had so patriotically managed public affairs immediately after Novara, was passing away, a final effort, which Victor Emmanuel did not discountenance, was made by Count Balbo to reconstitute a purely conservative cabinet, or, in other words, a ministry of reconciliation with Rome. Victor Emmanuel had consulted Cavour concerning the matter, and both resolved that Balbo should make the experiment. He exhausted all forms of negotiations and overtures, but completely failed, having been refused by his own friends, beginning with Revel, who did not consider himself able to overcome the current of opinion. Cavour's resumption of office, after Balbo's failure, was all the more significant; it settled the way between the two systems which for about three years had been perpetually at conflict in Turin.

The new president of the council having entered parliament under conditions arranged by himself, he proceeded to broaden and

strengthen them. He resolved not to be checked by resistance from the Right, or the clerical party, and at the same time he had no intention of suddenly disturbing political equilibrium, and separating himself from his friends, the moderate liberals. He was careful not to "break the chain," as he called it; and, above all, he was determined to secure the support of the principal members of D'Azeglio's cabinet, whose colleague he had been. "Without La Marmora," he would often repeat, "I could not be minister." According to his view, La Marmora represented military reorganization, just as Paleocapa (an engineer of the greatest eminence) represented that of progress in material works, and Boncompagni that of wise reforms in religious matters. The new ministers of foreign affairs and of the interior, General Dabormida and Count Ponza di San Martino, firmly held to the same traditions. The government was still controlled by the Right Center, and was now directed by a leader who retained simply the

financial department for himself, but was competent to manage any ministry.



RATTAZZI.

After the consolidation of the cabinet at the end of several months a final alliance was made with the Left Center by the elevation of Rattazzi to the ministry of justice. Instead of being at the mercy of the Left Center Cavour absorbed or annexed it, and it showed wisdom in permitting itself to be annexed, since it was promoting the success of a new idea by uniting the whole liberal party under the ablest of leaders. Before the expiration of one year

the country strikingly sanctioned this idea by the immense ministerial majority returned to the Chamber in the elections. From this time Cavour might truly say that he had "raised a barrier sufficiently high for the reaction to be unable to reach above it." Besides the confidence of the king, he had a ministry and a majority, in fact, an entire parliamentary platform constructed by himself, and upon which

he could securely stand in the realization of his plans, and in the development of his policy. The latter was truly the creation of Cavour's genius—his original work, but was not probably the product of his own imagination. It came to him as the gift of circumstances. Others no doubt had thought of it, but it was he who had shaped it and brought it within practical limits. He breathed into it his bold yet prudent spirit, converting into a reality that saying of a conquered but not despairing nation: "We will begin again!"

Cavour was one of the first to perceive the results of this great truth, which he summed up on one occasion by saying: "It is impossible for the government to have an Italian or national policy outwardly without being inwardly reforming and liberal; just as it would be impossible for us to be inwardly liberal without being national and Italian in our external relations." He knew that Piedmont occupied an embarrassing position after her overthrow, and was constantly and jealously watched by Austria. It was evident to him that she must, within her small limits, exhibit all the activity, energy, and wisdom of a great country if she desired to accomplish her designs. "Piedmont," he continued, "must begin by raising herself, by re-establishing in Europe as well as in Italy a position and a credit equal to her ambition. Hence there must be a policy unswerving in its aim, but flexible and various as to the means employed embracing the exchequer, military reorganization, diplomacy, and religious affairs."

In prosecuting the work of national reform Cavour caused matured plans to gradually unfold and become results. A vigorous impulse was imparted to every thing, but economic and financial matters first claimed attention. Like all conquered countries, Piedmont had to pay for defeat. It was oppressed with the burden of two disastrous campaigns which, with the Austrian indemnity, cost it very nearly three hundred millions of francs. Thus the public debt, which before 1848 amounted to no more than five millions per annum (£200,000), was rapidly increased to more than thirty millions. The budget of its expenses, only eighty millions before the war, was above one hundred and seventy-eight millions in 1848, two hundred and sixteen in 1849, one hundred and eighty-nine in 1850, and finally it remained fixed at between one hundred and thirty and one hundred and forty millions. From the very beginning, then, the expenses of the country had doubled, and Cavour was now confronted by a public debt six times as large as before. When we remember that this was the financial condition of Piedmont twenty-seven years ago, when its



population was less than five millions of souls and its resources still undeveloped, these figures represent a weight almost as heavy as that which has been laid upon France under still more tragic circumstances.

\* There were two systems that could be tried, and how often do they present themselves as rivals. One scheme was to practice the strictest and most scrupulous economy, reserving a modest balance by reducing expenses, diminishing the deficit, and increasing only the most necessary taxes. But by adopting this method the army would be made smaller, the most useful public improvements would be abandoned, or, at least, indefinitely postponed, and the country would lose its influence. This plan was prudent in its general provisions, but it was not far-reaching. The most rigid economy would not remove the burden unless the nation could receive some compensation or be assisted in the development of its vitality. It must have help to support a weight which would inevitably become heavier. While Cavour had other plans, he finally settled upon one which inaugurated a new financial system in constitutional and liberal Piedmont, two hundred millions for the railways of Genoa and the Lago Maggiore, Novara, Susa, and Savoy, in works of every description. He favored the spirit of enterprise and association, and accordingly labored to develop interior communications. He was ambitious to realize in "little Piedmont" the great idea of commercial freedom, and, after inaugurating it by a custom-house reform, he further established it by treaties of commerce with France, England, Belgium, and Switzerland. Indeed, Cavour, instead of adopting the methods of a prejudiced, dogmatical free trader, carried out a gradual and practical reform which circumstances required, and which would be profitable to consumers through the diminution of tariffs. To further promote the national welfare he encouraged maritime commerce, stimulated the internal industry of the country by foreign competition, and supported it by the decrease of taxes on raw material, while it opened the way for the exportation of national productions.

To increase expenses instead of retrenching, and to contract new debts by levying new taxes, was assuredly a bold and perhaps rash step, especially in view of the fact that this proposed tariff reform was to immediately follow the postal reform. A reduction of the salt-tax and a deficit in the budget rendered the situation still more precarious. But this complicated and difficult work did not intimidate Cavour, who exhibited undiminished confidence in "liberalism and the marvels it can work," to use his own expression. He was

fully persuaded that these particular expenditures would exert an invigorating influence, and consequently he was willing to be criticized, but did not hesitate to defend his policy against all attacks. By a clear demonstration he plainly showed that an appropriation of one or two millions of francs for the improvement of the ports would bring in not less than five hundred thousand francs per annum, and also that the expenditure of ten millions of francs in piercing the Luckmanier would increase the commerce of Genoa by a third, perhaps by one-half. He urged the importance of taking shares and securing an interest in the railway of Savoy, because thereby fifty millions of francs would be circulated in a province that was in pressing need of capital. "In order to realize our programme," said Cavour, "and profitably cultivate the country's resources, it was necessary to give a powerful impulse to works of public utility, to work our railways with all possible circumspection, while we gave encouragement to other enterprises. . . . In order that the position which for so many centuries the monarchy of Savoy has maintained should not be suffered to decline, it was necessary to reorganize and fortify our army. . . . This scheme made it necessary for us to raise new loans, or rather to contract larger loans than they would need to have been if we acted on the system of modesty and economy. It consequently became necessary to increase the taxation; but that could not be done, nor could the resources of the country be developed without undertaking the reform of our economic system on a large scale."

The introduction of this commercial and financial reform as a matter of diplomacy indicated that Cavour designed to accomplish something more than the development of the country's resources. Piedmont had remained in isolation since its misfortunes, and its great statesman desired therefore to bring it into closer contact with the prominent western nations, with England and with France. Commerce and finance, according to his plan, constituted a bond of united interests which might grow into one of policy and of ideas. Austria was not deceived in regard to the programme. Before his death Prince Schwartzberg, the Austrian prime minister, "with faintly masked ill-humor," remarked, "Piedmont intends with its commercial policy to purchase the support of England for Italy!" While this statement was not absolutely true, yet Cavour no doubt felt confident that, by remaining constitutional and by combining commercial with the other liberties, Piedmont would rapidly gain public sympathy in England, which would give it additional strength.

"England," he said to an intimate friend, "is no longer the champion of absolutism on the Continent, and an English minister would find it difficult to take part with Austria in the oppression of Italy."

Cavour denied that he was influenced by a "hidden policy" in advocating commercial intercourse with England, declared that he sacrificed no principle, and was simply actuated by a desire to benefit the country. He did not, however, conceal his intention of contracting a friendship with France under the veil of a commercial treaty. While that treaty was not satisfactory in every point, he resolved to accept it, even though he should be compelled to make some concessions to the French system of protection, as he believed that Piedmont would gain a political rather than an economical advantage by that course. "The horizon is still dark around us," he said, "and our institutions are not as yet protected from all danger. Something, perhaps, may chance to make us desire at least the moral support of France. Let me say, frankly, in the face of impending possibilities, I think it prudent, conformable with the interests of the country, to be on good terms with France. We have not neglected matters of economy, but merely left them in the background. Views of policy have caused us to accept a treaty which will strengthen a good and cordial understanding between us and France." And Cavour, in still more striking words, that, spoken in 1851, seem almost prophetic, further said: "Is it not possible that complications may arise in which all surrounding nations may be concerned in two great questions, the Eastern and Western? Were this to happen, should we not do well to be on good terms with France?" Thus every thing concurred under the wise and liberal management of one who understood how to use commerce, finance, and diplomacy in placing Piedmont on her feet again.

What Cavour accomplished by his financial and commercial system he not only attempted but effected in a higher moral sphere by his religious policy. The problem to be solved by him was intricate and difficult. The ecclesiastical situation had to be reconciled with the principles of the "*statuto*," and the liberal and national policy of Piedmont maintained in its civil relations with the Church and the court of Rome. The discussion of every new feature of this problem naturally and almost constantly kept it before the country. The decrees of the laws for the abolition of ecclesiastical privileges, that of civil marriages, the law for the reorganization of Church property, and the suppression of certain monastic orders, were each the occasion of strife, which became more bitter with every



new project. The remonstrances of Rome increased the clerical agitation, against which was arrayed the anti-clerical agitation. In parliament the left accused the government of not advancing with sufficient determination and energy in religious matters; while the right complained that no negotiations were entered into with the "Holy See," and that the good pleasure of Rome was not consulted.

Cavour handled these delicate and difficult questions in a manner which indicated that his mind was full of decision, and, at the same time, entirely free from prejudice. His elevation to power was the signal for an unrelenting and uncompromising war on the part of Rome. The clerical party, as we have already stated, was exasperated by the recent legislation regarding civil marriage, and still more embittered by the subsequent suppression of the convents and the taxation of the Church property. Papal Rome employed all its supernatural machinery—absolution, excommunication, purgatory, and plenary indulgence—"to which end its spiritual brokers had obtained an unlimited credit upon the heavenly exchequer, with a view of operating more successfully upon the political stock exchange." A war of deadly hostility was waged against the government, and the contest raged not only upon the floor of parliament but in *salon* and *café*, at the court and on the public square, around the confessionals and in front of the very altars. It invaded the royal household and cast a deeper shadow over the sacred precincts of domestic sorrow. The recent bereavements of the king were interpreted as providential warnings should he still continue to sanction this ungodly crusade against the "Holy Church." Victor Emmanuel, still desiring to avoid an open rupture with Pope Pius IX, was overcome with grief, and, wishing to obey the dying injunction of a venerated mother, determined to make one more effort for a reconciliation with the "Holy See;" but the inevitable *non possumus* would not permit it. Shortly after he subordinated the affection of a son and the loyalty of a Roman Catholic to the sterner duties of a sovereign by recalling Cavour, who in the meantime had resigned, and by granting him full liberty to enforce the policy and consummate the reforms which the clerical party so strenuously resisted.

At first Cavour no doubt believed that he could make an amicable arrangement with the Vatican; but he very soon discovered that it was impossible, especially since the religious reaction which was spreading in Italy as well as in Europe generally, only hardened the court of Rome in its demands and its refusals. Besides, in a short time, he saw the pontificate involved in dangerous fellowship with the

enemy beyond the Alps by the Austrian Concordat. Indeed, he had not any faith in securing favorable terms from Rome for the realization of such reforms as Piedmont earnestly desired, and, as for himself, he had ceased making any effort in that direction. "If we put ourselves in direct relations with Rome," he said, writing to an intimate friend, "we completely ruin the political edifice we have so laboriously erected. If we enter into an arrangement with the pope it will be impossible for us to retain our influence in Italy. Let us not go too far, but neither let us suffer ourselves to retreat even one step. You know that I am not a priest-hater, that I am disposed towards conciliation, and would willingly give the Church greater liberty than she now enjoys; you know that I should be disposed to give up the *exequaturs*, the exclusive management of the universities, etc.; but under present circumstances I am persuaded that all attempts at concord would be to our disadvantage." In the heat of action he uttered a similar sentiment: "We have to fight Austria at Venice and at Milan, and also at Bologna and at Rome."

Cavour regarded the question of ecclesiastical reforms—the relations of Piedmont with the Church and with Rome—not only one of interior order, but of national importance, constituting, in fact, one element of the Italian situation. Any effort to solve that problem by stratagem or compromise would only result in endless weariness, waste of time, and disappointment. Cavour proposed but one solution, liberty and complete independence of civil and religious authority; a grand yet simple idea, which was soon to resolve itself into these few emphatic words: "A Liberal Church in a Liberal State!" He who elevated that standard in a small corner of Italy "was neither a theorist," says D'Mazade, "nor a revolutionist yielding, at the risk of overthrowing interests, beliefs, and traditions, to a fanciful love of novelty; neither was it the work of a puzzled tactician, trying to conceal a parliamentary campaign against clericalism under the cloak of an epigram. Cavour neither had the passion of a leader of a faction, the subtlety of a casuist, nor the flippancy of a thoughtless innovator." He believed that the political freedom of Piedmont, and, indeed, of all Italy, could be secured by the acceptance of a liberty without subterfuges, and which recognized the complete spiritual independence of the Church.

"Oh, that man," said Archbishop Darboy—the same who later fell a victim to the Commune—when at Rome, "that man indeed was of a rare sort; he had not the slightest sentiment of hatred in his heart." This was a true statement. Neither hatred nor vulgar animosity

actuated him in advocating liberalism. The great Piedmontese asserted that he was not a "priest hater," and it was this which gave to his religious policy its originality and superiority. He defended the Church when she remained in her legitimate sphere, and he did not refuse her liberty when she claimed social independence. He acknowledged her to be the entire mistress of her own ground, but at the same time he was determined to carry out the reforms that he had inaugurated, and in which he saw the development of the "*statuto*."

To the request of some members of the Left, Brofferio and Asproni, that the state should supervise the education in the seminaries, he emphatically replied: "If I had to give an opinion as a citizen, and not as a minister, I should say that the government ought not to interfere in the teaching of theology, which is solely the province of the bishops to watch over. Bishops should not have to do the work of members of parliament, nor deputies that of bishops. We are at liberty to believe or not to believe, and to select whom we choose for our spiritual advisers. If we are dissatisfied with the moral teaching of the seminaries, we will choose our confessors from among theologians who have attended the school of Asproni." And he added, more seriously: "How can the clergy become converted to our institutions, and how will they love them if, after having, not unreasonably, withdrawn some of the privileges which they enjoyed under the old *régime*, and just as we are about to deprive them of the few that remain, we should say to them: 'We reform, according to the principles of liberty and equality, all those points of legislation which formerly were favorable to you; but as to your independence and your liberty, we wish to preserve those traditions of the past which we call, so far as they are opposed to you, the glorious heritage of our fathers!' . . . The best way of increasing the political influence of the clergy is to give them an exceptional position, persecute and even subject them to petty vexations."

Cavour was not ignorant of the nature of clericalism when united with politics, because, having been compelled to combat it frequently, he had a good opportunity of observing its theocratic and dangerous tendency. He avoided, however, any thing like retaliation in meeting these aggressions, and continued moderate even in the reforms for which he was so bitterly denounced. This is evident from the policy he inaugurated. The law for the suppression of certain monastic orders caused the greatest excitement, and was by many considered proscriptive; but, while depriving the mendicant and a few other



orders of civil status, it did not affect the rights of religious associations. It sanctioned the teaching and nursing orders, especially that of the Sisters of Charity, which Cavour earnestly defended against the attacks of the left, declaring that nothing should induce him to favor a law suppressing charitable orders. "I would quit the ministry ten times," he said, "rather than bind myself to an act that would in my opinion be immensely prejudicial to our country in the eyes of civilized Europe." Concerning the possessions of the Church, the law simply proposed to create a special fund, which was to be endowed with the revenues of the suppressed orders, and dedicated entirely to the clergy.

This measure relative to Church property was one of the fundamental ideas of Cavour's policy. He had always been opposed to what was called "the *incameration* of ecclesiastical property," or the transformation of the Church into a corps which received salary from the state, and the reason he gave for this opposition was that the measure would create the worst form of despotism—the administrative despotism. "I have," said he, "the misfortune or the good luck—which you will—to be minister where a certain degree of centralization reigns, and where the government has quite enough in its hands. I declare to you, that if you add this one of which you speak to the powers of government you will give what will be threatening to liberty." Such a reason was a strange one to come from a minister; but the chief motive that influenced him was one of "high policy."

The real ground of Cavour's opposition was that the spirit of caste would be extended and intensified by the expropriation of the clergy. "It has been," he said, "carried out on a very large scale in some European countries. In France, before the Revolution, the clergy was, if I am not mistaken, as rich as that of Spain. It was totally stripped, and was not allowed to retain a vestige of its old possessions. What ensued? I have great respect for the French clergy, and I admit that it is more moral and also more zealous than it used to be; but no one can deny that it is also less national and less liberal than was the clergy of the old *régime*. For that was animated by a spirit of independence with regard to Rome, and a certain degree of attachment to national views; it had the instincts of liberty. Now things are different; all facts go to prove that the modern French clergy is infinitely more Ultramontane than our national clergy. It will be said: 'But there is another course that could be pursued: let us leave the followers of the faith to remunerate their own clergy.' Do you know what would be the consequence of this?

A double amount of zeal, fanaticism, and Ultramontanism. Such a system exists in Ireland. There the clergy is unsalaried; its means of existence consist of charity and the voluntary contributions of the faithful. That clergy is both more fanatical and less liberal than the clergy of France."

On this question Cavour's views coincided with those of De Tocqueville. He refused to sanction ecclesiastical expropriations, or to employ any such means for the balancing of his budget. He believed that the secularization of civil society by legitimate and progressive methods would produce religious reform sooner than by hostile legislation. Indeed, Cavour was both a great liberal and a great politician. He resolved that revolutionary passions should not influence these important religious questions, and he was anxious to preserve the liberal movement from the suspicion of interested motives. On one occasion he frankly declared to Sig. Depretis, who had conversed with him on the subject, why he did not wish to cause divisions in the public mind. "It is," said he, "in order that the nation may be unanimous, if an opportunity should present itself, of regaining our lost position by an energetic effort." He was desirous neither to divide public opinion nor to compromise the good name of the country by unnecessary acts of persecution, and consequently he firmly opposed the proposition to subject all students, including those at the seminaries, to military service. "Your proposition," he declared, "will be regarded throughout the country as a revolutionary act. . . . In the present state of things I should consider as a great evil any act that could, even externally, present the appearance of a revolutionary measure." It was not difficult for him to despise party excitement and remain moderate, because he was one of those rare politicians who, without yielding to trifling prejudices, followed out the realization of a lofty scheme. Cavour possessed a genius both practical and tolerant, and instead of wounding the feelings of the clergy by unnecessary words, he endeavored to captivate them by persuading them to accept the reforms which he required of them. He was successful in securing the good will of these ecclesiastics. The head of a religious order from Rome visited him, and expressed his astonishment at the cordial reception he met with. Cavour afterwards remarked with a smile: "On leaving my house that brother has gone to the bishop's palace, where he will certainly not have had such a reception as I gave him. He will compare the two, return to Rome, tell his story, and, if he is honest, he will say that I am not the persecuting minister and diabolical person which at

Rome they imagine me to be." His kindness was genuine, and not assumed for the sake of policy, and he distributed alms spontaneously, and without display or ostentation, to any of the poorer clergy who asked them of him. Often in the morning, when some priests were waiting for their slender pittance, which he and one of his fellow-workers were preparing, Cavour would almost empty his own private purse rather than take anything from the impoverished treasury of the state, at the same time rubbing his hands, and cheerfully remarking: "Ah, if the gentlemen of the Left could see us at what we are doing!"

Cavour's mind, in its very basis, was broad and liberal, yet not skeptical. He never became a scoffing freethinker and ridiculed the faith in which he had been educated. A curious illustration of this occurred seven years before his death, but remained unknown for a long time. When the contest about conventual laws was raging, and a fatal epidemic was prevailing in Turin, he had taken precautions, should he too be stricken, against the painful scenes which had transpired at the death of Count Santa Rosa. He desired to obtain the assurance of his religious instructor that he should receive the ministrations of the Church in his dying hour; and, accordingly, one morning he quietly ordered and prearranged every thing with Fra Giacomo, the parish priest of the *Madonna dei Angeli*, whom he made the confidant of his charities. At the conclusion of their interview Ratazzi, the recently instituted minister of the interior, chanced to come in, and Cavour, after having courteously accompanied the priest to the door, turned to his colleague and simply remarked, "We have arranged every thing together in case any misfortune should befall me." It is a significant fact that seven years afterwards, faithful to his promise in 1854, Fra Giacomo hastened to the death-bed of the Piedmontese minister, then prime minister of Italy. In conducting the religious campaign, which with the exchequer and diplomacy expressed his policy, Cavour exhibited boldness, shrewdness, simplicity, and activity. Difficulties, internal and external, confronted him daily; but he carried out his policy in the face of the most bitter opposition.

In the early part of 1853, almost immediately after he had become president of the council, the relations of Piedmont with Austria sustained the first shock. The latter country concluded to take advantage of a recent Mazzinian uprising at Milan, and accordingly struck a blow at the Lombard *émigrés* at Turin, sequestering the property of the Casati, the Arese, the Arconati, the Torelli, and many others.



Piedmont promptly suppressed the Milanese outburst; and then protested against Austria's measure of spoliation, which oppressed men who not only were manifestly innocent of any offense, but who had become naturalized Piedmontese, and of whom some were members of parliament. The only effect produced by this protest was a coldness which resulted in a reciprocal recall of ambassadors. Thus an incident occurring in less than four years after the conclusion of peace revived the national question. Cavour did not regret that Austria had to bear the responsibility of this bitter provocation, and in his heart he rejoiced that she was condemned alike by France and England. "Austria," he said, "has managed to set public opinion and all the governments of Europe against her. In trying to damage us she has done us service; we will take advantage of it." Although the rupture between Piedmont and Austria was not complete, yet the situation was delicate, and even precarious, causing general anxiety. The reactionists in Piedmont and in Europe did not hesitate to use this opportunity to denounce the cabinet, and to ascribe the difficulties of the hour to the impatient and improvident policy of Cavour, which inspired revolutionary agitation. But greater trials were at hand in the interior, and affairs there were every moment becoming more serious and painful.

In adopting the new system of taxation, securing the financial reforms, and establishing the commercial treaties, there were naturally a clashing of various interests, and even temporary panics. To increase the wide-spread uneasiness there were also bad harvests, and diseases smiting the silk-worms and the vines. If bread advanced in price Cavour and his reforms were blamed. Every unfavorable circumstance was magnified by certain parties or factions, who harangued the crowd, accusing the ministry of starving the people and depriving them of their rights. On the evening of October 18, 1853, in the peaceful city of Turin, an excited crowd or mob, consisting for the most part of laborers and mechanics, and crying, "Death to him!" assailed his residence with a shower of stones, demolishing the windows, and threatening its inmates with personal violence. This skirmish, however, was not a true index of the sentiments of the substantial class in Turin, who repudiated this act of the populace in a most emphatic manner, while letters and addresses of sympathy and confidence poured in from every quarter. The following day Cavour, accompanied by La Marmora, walked through the streets on his usual way to the ministry of finance, and was every-where kindly greeted.

The reactionary papers in Savoy, by comparing the old and new rate of taxes, endeavored to excite the prejudices of the populace and produce discontent. Cavour was publicly accused of crushing the laborer and the artisan with imposts, that he might "prosecute his Utopias about Italy." The municipal council of Chambéry, which was entirely controlled by the reactionary party, almost reached the point of refusal to pay the levy. The national guard declined to be present at the rejoicings in honor of the "statuto." A Savoyard wrote to Cavour: "If you are obstinate, we are doubly so; it is not in Savoy that heads are weather-cocks." The excitement was rendered still greater by the attack that was made upon Cavour's religious policy. While parliament was agitated by warm discussions the country at large was equally convulsed. Threats were made against the government because it was leading Piedmont "to schism, anarchy, and destruction." The enforcement of the law for the suppression of certain convents provoked painful scenes of resistance. Famines and epidemics were declared to be messengers of wrath from Heaven to punish the nation for the enactment of sacrilegious laws. This statement was rendered more significant by the mysterious providence which in the space of a few days removed by death three members of the royal family—the queen's mother, the queen, and the duke of Genoa. Even those who were immediately about the person of the king at the court seemed to regard these sudden occasions for mourning as warnings from Heaven.

While Cavour remained firm in this dark hour, yet he was often anxious. "Policy is becoming more and more perplexing," he wrote to his friends at Geneva; "we have to contend against famine, new taxes, priests, and reactionists. . . . Nevertheless, I do not relinquish hope." Another day he wrote thus from Leri, where he had gone to enjoy a few moments needful rest: "After a desperate struggle, in parliament, in the *salons*, at the court, as well as in the streets, to which are added a number of lamentable circumstances, I found I had reached the end of my intellectual resources, and I have come here to restore them by a few days' rest. Thanks to my natural elasticity of fiber, I shall shortly be able to resume the weight of affairs. Before the week is out I hope to be back to my post, where difficulties await me, giving rise to a political situation likely to become more and more strained." Any other prime minister, of less "elasticity of fiber," would have succumbed in a struggle like this one, whose intricacies and vicissitudes made it laborious and unceasing.

This policy, though stoutly resisted by its enemies, continued to receive strength, manifesting its power in primary result, and in a few years yielding fruit. On every side progress was discernible. La Marmora, by his energy, perseverance, and method, and by the aid of a minister of finance who willingly furnished the necessary money, had already succeeded in reorganizing the military institutions, and gathering an army which, though small, was nevertheless able to sustain with dignity the standard of Italy. This new management in economic matters was not sterile, but produced good results. The spirit of liberty had infused new life into the nation, and activity was apparent in every form of industry and commercial enterprise. The works of public usefulness, when completed, were a source of wealth. At the beginning of 1854 the Genoese railroad was finished and opened, cutting its way through the Apennines to that gulf of the Mediterranean where Cavour was proud to have arrived on the first locomotive. Thus Piedmont gradually acquired an honorable name in Europe, exhibiting remarkable progress for a small country, being full of life, and quick to resist her enemies. In France and England she attracted attention, and won sympathy by her right use of constitutional freedom.

It was also evident that Cavour himself was rising in public esteem. He displayed such great ability in the management of struggles, out of which he always came the stronger, that those around him felt a growing interest and confidence in him. While engaged in all these affairs, he never lost sight of the momentous enterprise before him, but appreciated its serious character, as the following extract from a private letter, which he wrote to Madame de Circourt, in 1854, will indicate:

“Circumstances have led Piedmont to take a clear and positive position in Italy. I know that it is not without danger, and I feel all the responsibility that it imposes on me; but honor and duty have laid the burden on us. Since Providence has so willed it that Piedmont should alone be free and independent in Italy, it is the duty of Piedmont to use that liberty and independence in pleading the cause of our unfortunate Peninsula before Europe. We will not shrink from that perilous task; the king and the country are determined to accomplish it to the uttermost. May be your friends, the doctrinaires and the liberals, who deplore the loss of liberty in France after they have helped to stifle it in Italy, will consider our policy absurd and romantic. I am resigned to their censures, feeling certain that generous hearts like yours will sympathize with our efforts to recall to life



a nation for centuries buried in a frightful tomb. If I should fail, you will not refuse to give me a corner among the eminent vanquished who fly to group themselves about you. . . . Take this confession as the avowal that my whole life is consecrated to one object—that of the emancipation of my country.”

---

### Sixth Decade, Continued, 1850-1860.

---

## CHAPTER XIII.

### *OPENING OF THE NATIONAL DRAMA IN ITALY.*

WHEN Cavour, as early as 1851, advocated a treaty of commerce, as a diplomatic advantage, he was ridiculed by some; but time vindicated his position. The Russian war with England and France was now at hand, and might involve the interests of all countries, and divide “into two camps the East and the West.” From the first Cavour watched the great conflict with an attentive eye, and was confident that it would be extended. In the Spring of 1854, when the armies of France and England were advancing toward the Black Sea, he, in the company of Count Lisio, was spending an evening at the house of his favorite niece, the Countess Alfieri, in whose society he loved to seek repose. He stood silent and thoughtful in the *salon*, when she rallied him by inquiring, “Well, uncle, are we going to the Crimea?” He simply smiled, and said, “Who knows?” Then again, as if reading his thoughts, she would suddenly ask such a question as this, “Why should you not send ten thousand men?” to which he eagerly replied, “Ah, if every one thought that, it would already be done.” This intelligent woman, who well understood her uncle, finally asked him: “Well, are we ready to start?” and he replied, with his usual smile, “Who knows? England is solicitous to conclude a treaty which would give our soldiers an opportunity of wiping out the defeat of Novara. But what would you? All my cabinet is hostile to this expedition. Rattazzi himself, and my best friend, La Marmora, speak of relinquishing the enterprise; but the king is for me, and we two will prevail.”

Cavour was heartily in favor of uniting with the Western alliance, which was thrown open by the Anglo-French treaty of alliance of

April 10, 1854, and had the decision rested only with him, he would have been among the first to take the step. Piedmont had not been in direct relations with Russia since 1848, and therefore felt free to consult her own interests. The Emperor Nicholas desired to please Austria, and no doubt entertained hostile feelings toward the liberal government of Turin. He even returned no answer to the first official notifications of King Victor Emmanuel. There was nothing, therefore, to restrain Piedmont's liberty of action and sympathy for the Western cause; but Cavour was not alone. After first persuading the king to sanction the scheme, he proceeded to win over his colleagues, nearly all stubborn men; next the minister of foreign affairs, Dabormida, then Rattazzi, then parliament, and, finally, public opinion.

The first announcement of this project in Turin produced considerable excitement, and was condemned on every side. It was asserted that the country would not derive any benefit from such a far-off enterprise; that little Piedmont could not occupy an honorable place beside the two greatest powers of Europe, and that the modest Sardinian contingent would appear contemptible among the armies of France and of England. The question was asked, whether it was wise to impose new sacrifices on the country for a ruinous piece of folly at a time when it was so difficult to meet the deficit of the budget? While Cavour was aware of this strong opposition, and could not be entirely independent of it, yet he had no idea of abandoning his purpose. When an opportunity of obliterating the disgrace of Novara presented itself, he was determined to avail himself of it, especially when Piedmont could exhibit the skill of the new Sardinian army, and also obtain both moral and diplomatic credit by securing the support of England and France. He concentrated all his energies in the effort to make his scheme popular and in gaining allies. At one time he felt that another might be more successful in the work than he could be, and accordingly proposed to Massimo d'Azeglio, that he should take his place as president of the council, while he served under his orders, or even, if necessary, abandoned the ministry. "Do what you think best," he wrote; "I will support you through and through, provided you make the alliance." This offer was promptly declined by D'Azeglio, who promised the fullest aid to a policy whose greatness he appreciated, but which he could not carry out as successfully as he who had conceived it.

Although perplexed on every side, Cavour was watching Austria at the time when the news reached Turin that the Viennese cabinet

had signed the treaty of December 2, 1854, with England and France. He perceived that the position of Austria was equivocal, and that Piedmont must take a bold stand. If Austria's scheme was to have her assistance purchased at Paris and in London, by pledging her Italian possessions, it would be necessary for Piedmont to counteract it by an immediate alliance with the West; but if Austria intended to be neutral—and this the penetrating eye of Cavour foresaw—the cabinet of Turin would obviously gain a great advantage by a prompt and resolute movement. Or, if some unexpected event should cause Austria to espouse the claims of Russia, then Piedmont would have every thing in her own hands, and the Italian question would be speedily solved. In any case, hesitation was impossible, and in the critical moment Cavour received encouragement from one who ever remained his warm, devoted friend, Sir James Hudson, the English representative at Turin, to whom an order had just been sent, by his government, proposing, in conjunction with the minister of France, a treaty of alliance with Piedmont.

There were difficulties, however, to contend with in fixing the conditions of the treaty. The cabinet of London seem to have taken it for granted that the Sardinian government would be satisfied by sending a contingent for an auxiliary corps in the pay of England; but neither Cavour, who was determined to maintain the independence of his policy, nor La Marmora, who felt a commendable pride in the small expeditionary corps, of which he was to be the leader, would ever consent to sanction such an arrangement. They refused to allow Piedmont to occupy any other position than that of one ally negotiating with another, desiring to defray its own expenses, and to preserve the "dignity and disinterestedness of its co-operation," thus maintaining equal rights. Nothing was asked of the British cabinet but the facilitation of a loan. It was evident that some kind of guarantee, or at least some visible expression of sympathy, would have been very acceptable to the ministry of Turin. If England and France would have pledged themselves to secure at Vienna the abolition of the decree sequestrating the Lombard estates, Piedmont could have entered into the alliance with more confidence; but neither of these contracting parties would agree to this proposition of the Sardinian government. This question might have become serious had it not been fortunately removed out of the way by prominent Lombard *émigrés*, who, desiring the success of the negotiation, implored Cavour not to trouble himself about them. General Dabormida refused at the eleventh hour to yield the point of the guarantee, and hence



Cavour was compelled himself to assume control of the foreign affairs, in order to sign without conditions. In this treaty, concluded January 10, 1855, it was stipulated that the Sardinian government should dispatch and maintain a corps of fifteen thousand men in the Crimea during the continuation of the war. Cavour saw it was not beyond the range of probabilities that, if Italian soldiers should discount French and English blood before the fortifications of Sebastopol, the solemn obligation at no distant day would be canceled in similar coin upon the fertile plains of Lombardy. In fact, he adroitly introduced into the treaty a secret stipulation to this effect. It was, indeed, a bold, almost desperate, stroke of policy. "*C'est un coup de pistolet,*" exclaimed an Austrian diplomat, "*tiré à bout portant aux oreilles de l'Autriche.*"

[This treaty, uniting Piedmont to France and England, was not only "a pistol fired in the ear of Austria," as Count von Usedom significantly called it, but also the occasion of another parliamentary battle. The Piedmontese intervention was regarded by the right as "a totally unnecessary adventure," which would lead to ruinous results by wasting the public money and by placing the army in a subordinate position. Besides, that which Cavour had labored so hard to accomplish was termed "an act of weakness, the enforced penalty of the revolutionary policy of the cabinet." These opponents claimed that his change to liberalism and his alliance with the left center, or party of action, had led him into extremes. They declared that France and England, in sending their armies to check Muscovite ambition in the East, were not willing to incur the risk of complications in Italy, and had, therefore, insisted on binding Piedmont as a precautionary measure.

The situation in the camp of the left was still more extraordinary and critical. Some of the speakers sneeringly referred to the entry of Piedmont into that "European concert," in which Austria was to be one of the principal "performers," and denounced a treaty with the Western powers as a base desertion of the national cause. "The alliance," said Brofferio, "is economically chargeable with rashness; militarily, it is a piece of folly; and, politically, it is a wicked act." Again he exclaimed, with more than his usual fervor: "If I should allow free scope to the impulse of my feelings, my voice would sound out a grand lament. The sacrifice of liberty, be assured, will be the consequence of victory, whichever side it may favor. May God forefend the fatal augury! But if you consent to this treaty the prostration of Piedmont and the ruin of Italy will be

an accomplished fact." The most determined opposition came from the ranks of the democratic party, who imagined they saw in this ill-starred expedition the overthrow of constitutional government in Piedmont, and an insurmountable barrier to Italian unity and independence. Some of the extreme liberals went so far as to induce a few misled subaltern officers to prepare a protest, in which it was stated that "no government had a right to dispose of Italian soldiers to fight in anti-national war;" and it went on to say: "Let us rise and swear that we will only consent to fight for the unity of Italy and for those people who aspire to defend their nationality." The more moderate complained that no provision had been made under certain contingencies for an armed neutrality, which could seize its favorable opportunity in the midst of the complications with which Europe was threatened. The general feeling in parliament was, no doubt, expressed by Deviry, who, in an address, said: "Gentlemen, the responsibility which we are going to incur at the moment when we shall cast our ballots into the urn is immense, is terrible; for upon that vote will depend, it may be, the future of our country."

These political prophets predicted that Cavour's policy would involve Piedmont in danger and ruin, but in it he foresaw the only hope of his country's safety and salvation. It seemed that neither side in parliament perceived that Italy might be advanced by still another means. Cavour permitted them to ventilate their opinions, and, after listening to them patiently, he presented to them his policy in a speech which was animated with the breath of a new life. He explained to them how that neutrality would be a dangerous retreat into the background, and that Piedmont was more interested than any other nation in checking the progress of Russia toward the Mediterranean. Coming directly to the difficult point of the matter, he asked whether the alliance would be favorable or injurious to Italy. This was the real question.

"We have joined the alliance," said he, "without relinquishing our exterior sympathies any more than our interior principles. We have not hidden our anxiety for the future of Italy, or our desire to see its condition ameliorated. But how, I shall be asked, can the treaty serve the cause of Italy? It will serve it in the only way possible, in the actual situation of Europe. The experience of these last years, as well as that of centuries, shows how little Italy has benefited by conspiracies, plots, revolutions, and futile excitements. Far from bettering her condition, they have been among the greatest evils which have befallen this beautiful portion of Europe, and that

not only on account of the innumerable misfortunes to individuals resulting from them, but because these perpetual schemings, these insurrections and uprisings have resulted in a diminution of the esteem and sympathy which other nations might have entertained for Italy. . . . And now the first of conditions for the good of the Peninsula is the restitution of her good name. . . . To effect this two things are necessary: First, we must prove to Europe that Italy has sufficient civil sagacity to govern herself liberally, and that she is in a position to give herself the most perfect form of government; secondly, we must show that our military valor is still what it was in the time of our ancestors. In the last seven years you have done much for Italy. You have proved to Europe that the Italians can govern themselves sagaciously. . . . But you must do more. Our country must give evidence that her children can fight courageously on the field. Believe this, that the glory our soldiers will know how to achieve on the Eastern coasts will do more for the future of Italy than all the noisy talking in the world."

While speaking thus, and fascinating the Chambers with the patriotism of his ideas, Cavour realized that he was playing a formidable game. After signing the treaty he wrote immediately to a friend, saying: "I have undertaken a terrible responsibility, but come what may, my conscience tells me that I have fulfilled a sacred duty!" From that day of April, 1855, when La Marmora and his fifteen thousand Piedmontese soldiers were advancing toward the Crimea, Cavour was burdened with anxiety, resulting from a consciousness that he was personally responsible. He was deeply moved when the news came that the Piedmontese army, on its arrival, had been attacked by cholera—an enemy more to be dreaded than the Russians. The epidemic produced the most fatal effects in the Piedmontese camp. During the Summer deaths occurred in rapid succession, and the record in Turin embraced Major Cassinis, Victor de Saint-Marsan, and a Casati—all falling victims in the flower of their youth. General Alexander La Marmora, brother to the commander-in-chief, also surrendered his life to the great enemy.

Those prophets of evil who had endeavored to prevent the sending of the expedition more than ever denounced what they called a "mad enterprise," and the real situation of affairs was exaggerated by public rumors. Cavour anxiously watched the progress of events, and writing to La Marmora, said: "We often meet together, and we always speak of you. Our thoughts and our best wishes are with you in that glorious, but hazardous, campaign to which your devotion



to your country has led you." While he never had any doubt concerning the result, yet he was troubled with anxious apprehensions, and the hours to him passed slowly. When sitting one Sunday under the trees at Santena, whither he had gone with Sir James Hudson, Rattazzi, Minghetti, and Massari, he thus expressed his feelings: "I knew it when I advised the king and the country to venture upon this great enterprise; I was sure that we should meet with many heavy obstacles, and be sorely tried; but this battle with disease fills me with alarm; it is an evil complication. Let us not be discouraged, however; now that we have thrown ourselves headlong into the fight, it is useless to look back. I know that, when dying, Rosmini expressed a presentiment that the Western powers would conquer. I hope so; and I, too, believe it. Never mind, we are but under a cloud."

It was evident to those who were around Cavour and heard him that a conflict, both patriotic and dramatic, was raging within him. He had the anxiety of a serious man, but his confidence in the success of his policy was unshaken. The decisive moment in his career had arrived when every thing depended on the success or failure of one event. He had played with fortune, and the result would be either humiliation and disgrace or exaltation and honor. If he had failed, many would have called him an adventurer, but he did not manifest such a spirit in his efforts. He succeeded because he deserved success, and knew how to combine judgment with boldness in his schemes. At the time when victory seemed the most remote to him he was on the eve of triumph, and would soon be permitted to behold his policy coming out of the fiery ordeal and ready to be crowned with success.

On the day following the battle of August 16, 1855, he received this simple message: "This morning the Russians, with fifty thousand men, attacked the lines of the Tchernaya. Our pass-word was, 'King and country.' This evening you will know by telegram whether the Piedmontese were worthy to fight beside the French and the English. We have two hundred dead. The French dispatches will tell you the rest." This good report relieved Piedmont of its heavy burden of fears, and filled the heart of Cavour with zealous, patriotic pride. He gladly welcomed the news of La Marmora's success and rejoiced as if it were his own. The brilliant conduct of that brave leader and of his troops not only justified the treaty, but it also justified the president of the council in the eyes of all those who had accused him of neglecting to settle the position of the Pied-

montese general in the midst of the allied forces. Cavour had employed all the means within his power, and had exhibited great judgment in the most delicate situation. He was confident that if the army proved true to itself and worthy of its country, its commander would naturally be elevated to the position which he had won, and which no one would think of refusing him. If, on the contrary, defeat or disgrace had befallen the Piedmontese troops, all diplomatic stipulations would be in vain. Cavour had reposed confidence in La Marmora and his army, and was now delighted to find that he was not mistaken. The Piedmontese troops presented a fine appearance and made a noble record in the great conflict. They showed themselves worthy to fight side by side with the allies before Sevastopol, and they seemed to instinctively feel that they were there as the representatives of a great idea. On one occasion a poor soldier was struggling with deep mud in the trenches, and a young officer, desiring to encourage him, cheerfully remarked: "Never mind, it is with this mud that Italy is to be made." Besides his military qualifications, La Marmora had a spirit of command which gave him rank with the generals of the allied armies in the Crimea, just as a little later he took a prominent place in a council of war assembled in Paris. Lord Clarendon declared that he possessed the qualities "of a soldier, a gentleman, and a statesman." His skill as a leader, and the bravery of his men on the Tchernaya, secured the military result which formed a part of the scheme of Piedmontese intervention.

As some of the fruits of the Italian campaign in the Crimea the Sardinian troops under La Marmora added new luster to laurels already won upon many a bloody field, the cabinet of Turin gained political consideration among the other cabinets of Europe, Austria was effectually checkmated, and England and France became the assured allies of Piedmont. Meanwhile, to draw still closer the ties of amity and friendship with the courts of St. James and the Tuileries, Victor Emmanuel, accompanied by Cavour, visited Paris and London in the latter part of 1855. The cordial welcome extended to them indicated how far Piedmont had advanced in a short time. Once it was regarded as an obscure and insignificant state, concealed at the foot of the Alps from public attention and almost forgotten; but now it was coming into notice, and other nations were talking about it. Victor Emmanuel was every-where honored as the sovereign of a small kingdom which had boldly taken a great and important step, and was gaining a firm footing on the European platform.

He soon became very popular in Paris, and in London the highest respect was paid to him not only because he was a Crimean ally, but also because he was a constitutional king—the legal prince who had made Piedmont into “a small England in Italy.”

Victor Emmanuel was also accompanied in his travels by D’Azeglio, to whom Cavour had assigned a special mission. “His presence

is necessary,” he said cheerfully, “to prove to Europe that we are not infected with revolutionary leprosy.” D’Azeglio carried out his part of the programme with a delicacy and affability that made him a host of friends. Cavour himself, who was naturally one of the party, had his share in the rejoicings and ovations of the occasion. He was once more in Paris, which he had not visited since 1852; but he now entered it as a negotiator for the French alliance. After consulting with the chief men of the day at the Tuileries he went to the



D'AZEGLIO.

house of Madame de Circourt, where he often met the representatives of the defeated parties.

“From six o’clock in the morning until two hours after midnight,” he wrote, “I am always about; I have never led so unquiet a life or one so useless; patience, however. . . . The king is in good health and in the best of tempers. To-day there is a grand review, to-morrow a ball at the Hôtel de Ville, and Thursday we leave. I send Cibrario the programme of our stay in England; it is not an amusing one. When I shall reckon up my various rights to a retiring pension I hope that the present trip will be counted as a campaign. . . . I have seen Thiers; he approves of the war, but he would now desire peace. He despairs of his party, and almost despairs of parliamentary rule. Cousin has become a fusionist. . . . I chanced to meet with Montelambert, and, notwithstanding the small amount of sympathy existing between us, we shook hands. I



have also seen the Nuncio, and told him that we should wish for an agreement on the same basis as the French system; he pretended not to understand me."

Cavour became acquainted with every branch of Parisian society, and he often expressed regret that he could not escape the confusion and anxiety of official visits and attend places of amusement. In all these diversions, however, he embraced every opportunity of discussing Italian affairs and proposing some practicable remedies for ameliorating the unhappy condition of Italy. This one essential point engrossed his thoughts. After a lengthy interview between him and Napoleon III at the Tuileries, the latter closed the conversation by asking a question that was pregnant with interest for Cavour, "*Que peut on faire pour l'Italie?*" It was the first time that he had ever heard those words, "What can be done for Italy?" and though perhaps only lightly spoken as a mere formal expression of courtesy and sympathy, they made a deep impression upon his mind on that day in December, 1855. If the visit of Victor Emmanuel to London and Paris should produce no immediate results, Cavour felt that it was the sign of a new era for Piedmont, and a prologue or preparation for the more important moral victory that he was about to secure at the approaching congress of Paris, by means of the general negotiations which were for a time to restore peace to Europe.

After the fall of Sevastopol on the 8th of September, 1855, which was in reality the termination of the Crimean campaign, the situation of affairs was serious. Previous to that time the war had been circumscribed in the East, but now it was difficult to determine whether it would be rekindled in a still more violent form, where it would begin and what new direction it would take. There was a conflict of interests, and whether warlike or pacific measures would be adopted was a question not easily determined. To pay for her defeat Russia seemed willing to make concessions in the East. England was the least anxious to lay down her arms, but she could not do any thing without France, and France, disposed to favor peace, appeared to be the mediator. As Austria had not engaged her army she felt herself compelled to take some decisive step, and therefore, like France, advocated a settlement. The final result was an armistice with the preliminaries of peace.

Believing that intervention and diplomacy were only a delusion, Cavour was at heart opposed to an armistice, and, beside, the Italian cause would be greatly promoted by a continuation of the war. He resolved, however, to make the best use of the situation, whatever it

might be ; and when the European congress was appointed at Paris he prepared himself for the work of negotiation which was about to commence. At Turin there was considerable perplexity concerning the selection of a suitable agent, and D'Azeglio was mentioned as the probable plenipotentiary. Indeed, the public mind was somewhat alarmed by the difficulties that must certainly arise from this new diplomatic crisis. It soon became evident that Cavour was the only man who could successfully manage a matter which he had been chiefly instrumental in promoting and directing. He was accordingly appointed chief Sardinian plenipotentiary to Paris, and, after hesitating, concluded to accept the trust. From the moment of his arrival there he had to settle important questions. "What part was Piedmont to play?" "What was to be her position in the congress?" Nothing had as yet been decided. Cavour resolved to do for diplomacy what he had done for La Marmora in the Crimean war, and accordingly said: "When the king's government signed a treaty of alliance with England and France it did not think fit positively or particularly to state the position to be assigned to Sardinia in the congress. The government was convinced that with nations, as with individuals, influence and public esteem depend on conduct and reputation more than on diplomatic stipulations."

In Paris Cavour depended upon his natural resources, as he had relied on the Piedmontese general in the Crimea, and he was not deceived. In the opening session of the Congress he insisted that Piedmont should be placed upon an equal footing with the great powers in the deliberations, while Austria vainly endeavored to persuade France and England that Piedmont could take part in the war, and not have a right to be represented in the congress, because she was only a state of the second order, and an intruder in European affairs. [The objection of Austria was overruled, and neither France, England, nor Russia would consent to the humiliating exclusion of Sardinia. The "acquired status" of the latter was acknowledged; and thus Cavour achieved a victory in the very beginning. Although entering the congress on the same level as the representatives of the greatest powers, he occupied a delicate and difficult position, because his right to a place there was contested, and he soon expected to introduce something more objectionable than himself—the Italian question. The admission of Piedmont caused Count Buol, the Austrian plenipotentiary, to say that he would now have "a web to unravel." Cavour was elevated for the first time to the highest political position in Europe, and brought face to face with the grav-

est questions; yet he was able to mount with the occasion. Whether as arbitrator of war or of peace, he proved himself equal, without any apparent effort, to every thing required of him. He was courteous to all, possessed great shrewdness, displayed remarkable patience, and was perfect master of himself. At the first few meetings of the congress he preferred to keep in the background, speaking only occasionally. When it became necessary for him to express an opinion on the matters under discussion—the free navigation of the Danube, or the neutralization of the Black Sea—he stated his views concisely and clearly, always advocating the liberal side. He very soon won golden opinions from his colleagues, who were astonished at the variety, justice, and depth of his mind. Finding himself in an assembly where conflicting interests, antagonistic policies, and bitter jealousies met, Cavour had no difficulty in marking out a clear course, and in taking advantage of the affinities and antipathies in different natures, always avoiding any thing that might have a tendency to separate himself from France and England.

As conditions had already been imposed upon Russia, and peace seemed almost inevitable, Cavour was unwilling to wound her pride and feelings by making additional demands; and the more Austria was tenacious in insisting the more lenient he became. Austria had not sacrificed a man, and yet she assumed in the congress a rigid and inflexible position against Russia, while Piedmont, which had bravely sent her soldiers to the Crimea, maintained a perfect moderation in the common victory of the allies. This singular contrast, together with the striking difference in the attitude of the representatives of these two countries, was observed by the Russian plenipotentiaries. Count Orloff felt grateful to Cavour, with whom he had a friendly understanding. One day the question of the neutralization of the Black Sea was introduced, and during the discussion Count Orloff turned to Cavour and said, loud enough to be heard, "Count Buol speaks as though Austria had taken Sevastopol!" On another occasion, when Count Buol was insisting on the subject of a small cession of territory—which by a "diplomatic euphemism" would be termed a "rectification of frontiers"—in Bessarabia, Count Orloff said to Cavour, in a significant tone, "Austria's plenipotentiary does not know how much blood or how many tears this rectification of frontiers will cost his country." Of course, the Piedmontese diplomat made no effort to soften the resentment of Russia towards Austria.

While the congress was considering the question of the East and the Black Sea Cavour, by his frank and affable manners, had established



his position and acquired real authority, and before the expiration of a month his superior abilities were acknowledged by all. He performed his part in the official negotiations which culminated in the treaty of peace of March 30, 1856; but besides this he had a special work to accomplish. He had interviews with the emperor at the Tuileries, with Lord Clarendon, Lord Cowley, and the representatives of Russia. Some promised him support and others co-operation, or at least a "benevolent neutrality." Indeed, Cavour was anxious to have the Italian question brought before the congress; but as it had no official existence it could not be presented under a regular diplomatic form. There was no one authorized to represent the "principle of nationalities," and therefore the Italian question was not discussed. If the plenipotentiary of Victor Emmanuel had complained that the "yoke of the foreigner" rested heavily upon his country Austria would have had the right at once of protesting against the discussion of such a matter in a congress assembled to consider the Eastern question. There, indeed, was the difficulty; but it was not insurmountable. The situation in Italy was a permanent violation of the treaties established by diplomacy as the basis of European tranquillity. The fact that a French army occupied Rome indicated that the papal government was not able to support itself. The legations had been held by the Austrians ever since 1849, and Bologna still remained in their hands. While the Austrian dominion existed in Lombardy as a legal government it was extended by an abuse of treaties to the duchies of Modena and of Parma, as well as to Tuscany. The king of Naples could only maintain his position by acts of extreme arbitrary power. This condition of affairs produced confusion and violence, which resulted in revolutionary intrigues, and even menaced Piedmont. At this point the Italian question was vulnerable, and might be brought under the notice of diplomacy. Cavour recognized this, and from the moment of his arrival in Paris he labored indefatigably to have the matter discussed in the congress.

To the question which Napoleon III had asked him, "What can be done for Italy?" the Piedmontese minister replied by preparing, at the suggestion of Lord Clarendon and Count Walewski, the English and French plenipotentiaries, a memorandum similar to the one addressed to Napoleon III two months before. In addition to this statement, which was remarkably vigorous and lucid, he sent, on the 27th of March—a few days before the signing of peace—a note to his allies, France and England, presenting Italy in a new aspect. Desiring to make a start, he submitted plans for the Roman states—

at least for the legations—and, though impracticable, they were a step in the right direction. The farther the congress advanced on the road to peace the more earnest Cavour became, fearing that the opportunity which had cost him so much might escape him. But he succeeded in arousing Napoleon III and fascinating Lord Clarendon, and, to strengthen his position, obtained from Count Orloff assurances of at least a “favorable neutrality” on the part of Russia. On the 8th of April the emperor, convinced by Cavour that the time had arrived for introducing the Italian question into the conference, commissioned Count Walewski to take the initiative, which he accordingly did. Thus, eight days after the signing of the treaty the powder which Cavour had gathered was ignited, and a sudden explosion occurred which startled Austria, and compelled her to hear for the first time the announcement that after Russia she might have to pay the expenses of the next war.

The session of that day had its curious features, and was memorable from the results which flowed from it. Count Walewski, the French plenipotentiary, invoked the aid of every “diplomatic euphemism,” taking advantage also of the congress to provoke “an interchange of ideas on different subjects which were waiting to be settled, and which it would be well to take into consideration in order to prevent fresh complications.” He mixed all the questions together—the occupation of the legations by the Austrians, the occupation of Rome by the French troops, the situation of the kingdom of Naples, the excesses of the Belgian journals, and the anarchy of Greece. It was not difficult to perceive the real question, but Austria was the last to appreciate it. Count Buol immediately denied the competency of the congress, and declined all discussion on Italian affairs. He protested, temporized, and, as a final expedient, declared that in the absence of instructions he had no power to consider so delicate a question. He made no explanation and gave no opinion whatever, resolving to maintain an attitude that would prevent the possibility of a practical solution. Perceiving whence the blow came, he could, to a certain extent, officially evade it, but he could not any longer restrain an outburst in the congress. In the height of the stormy discussion of that memorable session, of which the protocol, subsequently issued, furnishes a very imperfect and emasculated account, Lord Clarendon, thoroughly aroused by the defiant attitude of the Austrian envoys, exclaimed with great vehemence and warmth: “If your intention is really to make no promises, to give no pledges, to enter into no engagements with regard to Italy, it will be to throw

down the gauntlet to liberal Europe, that at no distant day may take it up. This question will then be decided by the most energetic and vigorous measures. It is a great mistake to suppose that our forces are exhausted."

Count Walewski spoke in severe terms concerning the interior government of the king of Naples, and he admitted that the situation of Rome and the Roman states being under foreign rule, was "abnormal." Lord Clarendon was still more caustic in his remarks relative to the king of Naples, and boldly declared that the pontifical government was the worst of all governments. He also referred to the frightful condition of the Romagna, which was between a stage of siege and one of brigandage, and added, that the only remedy for these evils was "secularization, liberal reforms, and an administration conformable to the spirit of the age." Cavour could afford to remain silent while others were ably playing his game, but when his time to speak came he corroborated all that had been said and claimed that still more must be done. He demonstrated that the "abnormal" was not only the situation of the pontifical states and of Naples, but of the whole Peninsula; and that Austria, by extending her dominion from the Ticino to Venice, by encamping at Ferrara and Bologna, and by her control of Piacenza and her garrison at Parma, destroyed the political equilibrium of Italy, and was a source of permanent danger to Sardinia. "The Sardinian plenipotentiaries," he said, as he faced Count Buol, "therefore think it their duty to call the attention of Europe to a state of things so abnormal; that which results from the indefinite occupation of a great portion of Italy by Austrian troops."

A few days later, on the 16th of April, Cavour addressed a communication to France and England, in which he reiterated the sentiments that he had uttered in the congress, declaring that Piedmont would not submit much longer to foreign oppression, and that unless something was done she, like the other Italian states, would be compelled to choose either the despotic rule of Austria or war. "Internally troubled," he proceeded to say, "by the action of revolutionary passions instigated around her by a system of violent compression and by foreign occupation, menaced with a still greater extension of Austrian power, the king of Sardinia may from one moment to another be compelled by an inevitable necessity to adopt extreme measures, of which it is impossible to foresee the consequences." In these words the real situation was described by an earnest man, who was burning to champion his policy before all Europe. It seemed



that only an "empty protocol" would be the result of his efforts, but even this momentary triumph indicated the gravity of the Italian question. Cavour, no doubt, expected something better than a protocol, and the disappointment disturbed his mental balance. He manifested considerable impatience, and sometimes during these "hot moods" acted strangely, but he could quickly control himself. Conscious of these peculiar tides of feeling, he refers to them in a hurried letter written to Turin, explaining all that he was doing or attempting. "I trust," he says, "that after reading this you will not imagine that I have brain fever, or that I have fallen into a state of delirium; on the contrary, the condition of my intellectual health is excellent. I have never felt more calm; I have even obtained a great reputation for moderation. Clarendon has often told me that Prince Napoleon accused me of being wanting in energy, and even Walewski praises my behavior; I am really persuaded, however, that boldness might not be unattended with success." Cavour had accomplished all that was possible at that time, but thought he had not done enough. Hence his mental agitation.

During a part of April, 1856, he revolved in his mind various plans, not even hesitating to favor an immediate war with Austria, because he believed that he would be supported by France and England. The character of his secret diplomacy is revealed chiefly in two letters written immediately after the congress. "Yesterday morning," he says in one of his letters, "I had the following conversation with Lord Clarendon: 'My lord, that which took place at the congress proves two things: 1. That Austria is determined to persist in its system of oppression and violence towards Italy. 2. That diplomatic efforts are quite inefficient to modify that system. The results to Piedmont are extremely injurious. What with party irritation on the one hand, and the arrogance of Austria on the other, there are but two courses open to us, either to become reconciled with Austria and the pope, or to make preparations for the declaration of war with Austria at no distant period. If the first alternative is the better, I ought, on my return to Turin, to advise the king to call to power the friends of Austria and the pope. If the second is preferable, we shall not fear, our friends and I, to prepare ourselves for a terrible war—for war to the death!' Here I stopped, and Lord Clarendon, without expressing either surprise or disapprobation, then said: 'I think you are right; your position is growing critical. I can imagine that an outburst may become inevitable; only the time to speak it openly has not yet come.' I replied: 'I

have given you evidence of my moderation and prudence; I think that in policy one should be excessively reserved as to speech and exceedingly decided as to deeds. There are positions in which less danger will be found in an excess of audacity than in one of prudence. With La Marmora for our commander-in-chief, I am persuaded that we are fit to begin a war, and if it should last long, you will be forced to come to our assistance.' Lord Clarendon eagerly replied: 'Oh, certainly, if you should be in trouble you can rely on us; you will see how energetically we shall hurry to your aid.''' As Lord Clarendon was naturally a reserved man, Cavour believed that his words indicated the willingness of England to assist in a war for the freedom of Italy; but their real meaning, as the sequel showed, was exaggerated by the Piedmontese minister.

In another letter, written about the same time, Cavour describes a visit he made to the emperor, and also refers to the relations existing between the Sardinian and the Austrian plenipotentiaries. "I have seen the emperor," he says, "and I said much the same thing to him as I had said to Clarendon, only putting it a little more mildly. He listened courteously, and added, that he hoped to bring Austria to a better view of things. He told me that, on the occasion of last Saturday's dinner, he had said to Count Buol that he deeply regretted to find himself in positive contradiction to the emperor of Austria on the Italian question; upon which Count Buol immediately went to Walewski to tell him that Austria's greatest wish was to comply with the emperor's wishes in every respect; that France was her only ally; and that it was, therefore, imperative that she should follow the same policy. The emperor appeared pleased with this mark of friendship, and he reiterated that he would take advantage of it to obtain concessions from Austria. I showed myself incredulous. I insisted on the necessity for adopting a decided attitude, and I told him that to begin with I had prepared a protest which I would hand to Walewski the following day. The emperor hesitated long and finally said: 'Go to London, come to a clear understanding with Palmerston, then come and see me.' The emperor must have spoken to Buol, for he came to me with a thousand protestations about Austria's good feeling toward us, her desire to live peaceably with us, and to respect our institutions, etc., etc., and more humbug of the sort. I replied that he had not given much evidence of such a wish when at Paris, and that I was leaving with a conviction that the understanding between us was worse instead of better. The conversation was a long and animated one, but always in a tone of urbanity and court-

esy. . . . At parting he shook my hand, saying: 'Allow me to hope that *even politically* we shall not always be adversaries.' I conclude from these words that Buol is somewhat uneasy at the exhibition of opinions in our favor, and possibly, also, at what the emperor may have said to him. . . . Orloff made a thousand protestations of friendship; he agreed with me that the condition of Italy was insupportable. . . . Even the Prussian speaks ill of Austria. After all, if we have not gained any thing practically in the eyes of the world, our victory is complete."

Cavour soon realized that his favorite idea of a coming war was not popular in Paris, and he did not anticipate any encouragement from that visit to London, which the emperor advised him to make. He was warmly received by the queen and the prince consort, accepted an invitation to be present at a naval review, and heard protestations of sympathy from Tories as well as Whigs for the Piedmontese constitutional government; but, beyond a manifestation of general interest, the English were somewhat indifferent concerning the national question. He saw but little of Palmerston, and did not have in London a renewal of such an interview as he had in Paris with Lord Clarendon. The steady, penetrating mind of Cavour soon appreciated the situation, and though he had been prematurely dreaming of kindling the flames of war, immediately after a recent peace, the illusion was only momentary. While he could not obtain all that he desired, he felt nevertheless that something real and practical had been gained. The arms of Piedmont had been united with those of the greatest nations on earth, and she obliterated the painful record of her defeat at Novara by the bravery of her soldiers on hotly contested battle-fields, presenting the spectacle of what one of the French generals, Bosquet, called "a jewel of an army." She had been permitted to take her seat round the green table of a congress beside France, England, Russia, Austria, and Prussia. She had made herself one of the European powers, and demonstrated that the importance of a country is measured rather by its ability and valor than by extent of territory. She had acquired the right to discuss questions previously forbidden, to speak in behalf of all Italy, and, indeed, to make herself the plenipotentiary of the entire country. What more could Cavour wish?

When he returned to Turin after the congress, he met with the same opposition which had assailed him before the Crimean campaign; but, while his enemies endeavored again to annoy him by asking what he had gained, he pointed to the results of his bold, consec-



utive policy and quietly replied: "We have not reached any very definite object, it is true; but we have secured two things: In the first place, the anomalous and unhappy situation of Italy has been laid before Europe, not by demagogues or hot-headed revolutionists, nor again by excited journalists, but by the representatives of the highest powers of Europe; by statesmen who govern the greatest nations, and who are accustomed to take council of reason rather than emotion. In the second place, these very powers have declared that it was not only in the interest of Italy, but in that of Europe, that the ills of Italy should be remedied. I can not believe that a judgment passed and a counsel given by such powers as those of France and England can be barren of good results. The principles which have guided us in these last years have enabled us to make a great advance. For the first time in the whole course of our history the Italian question has been broached and discussed in a European congress; not as formerly at Laybach and Verona, with a view to aggravate the evils Italy had to bear, and put new chains about her neck; but, on the contrary, with the openly avowed object of finding some remedy for her oppressed condition, and to exhibit the sympathies of great nations towards her. The congress is ended, and now the cause of Italy is brought before the tribunal of public opinion. The action may be long and the shiftings many. . . . We await the issue of it with an entire confidence." Thus spoke Cavour before the Chamber at Turin; and parliament almost unanimously approved the course pursued by the Sardinian envoys throughout the conference. All the Italian provinces sent in congratulatory addresses, and statues, busts, and medals were raised by public subscription in honor of the man whose name was henceforth to become synonymous with Italian unity and independence. He was every-where recognized as the representative of a revived and strengthened Piedmont, and Italians hailed him as the hope of Italy.

But Cavour's work was not yet completed. During the two or three years following the congress of 1856 he labored to destroy Austria's influence, to maintain the liberal ascendancy of Piedmont, to rally Italian patriotic sentiment around the banner of Victor Emmanuel without committing himself with the different governments, to obtain allies by any means, to create sympathy, and to prepare for war under cover of peace. It was difficult to pursue all these objects in the midst of conflicting parties, but Cavour was equal to the task, being, as Manzoni once said of him, "every inch a statesman, with all a statesman's prudence and even imprudence." He

was deeply interested in the material advancement of Piedmont, and resolved to improve its fortifications. Notwithstanding the heavy drain upon the national exchequer, he created a great marine hospital at Spezzia, fortified Alessandria, and urged on the boring of the Mont Cenis tunnel. He believed that the latter enterprise would be of incalculable commercial advantage to Piedmont. One day, on the *Piazza d'Armi*, of Turin, pointing in the direction of the Alps, he observed to his friends: "If Louis XIV said the Pyrenees would be no more, I hope some day to say with more truth that the Alps are no more."

While promoting the material interests of the country, Cavour, at the same time, continued to strengthen his policy. He received some moral support from the national society formed at this period by Giuseppe La Farina, a Sicilian emigrant, who proposed to liberate Italy by less violent means than those adopted by Mazzini. The latter was at Genoa in 1857, superintending the popular outbreak there. The insurrection also extended to Leghorn and Naples, but there was a division in the republican ranks. Manin and other leaders were opposed to the movement and the result was failure. Cavour was not in sympathy with Mazzini's methods, and hence his indorsement of La Farina's society. When in Paris, at the congress of 1856, the Piedmontese minister had an interview with Manin, who, during an exile of seven years, had been supporting his family by giving lessons in Italian. He still advocated independence and national unity for Italy, and occasionally expressed his views in the *Presse Siècle* and *Estafette*, newspapers of Paris, in the *Times* and *Daily News*, of London, and in the *Diritto*, of Turin. He was broken by family affliction, having lost by death his wife, and then an accomplished daughter, who was in his eyes the pathetic image of his beloved Venice. These bereavements, together with a malady which had long impaired his health, hastened him on to the close of life. Cavour found him no less devoted to Italian independence than in the past, but he accepted the Paris negotiations and expressed his willingness to favor any policy that would lead to national freedom and unity, and especially to a republic. The great statesman of Venice died on the 22d of September, 1857, and was buried at Montmartre. The French government did not interfere with the publicity of the funeral, which was attended by a vast concourse of people, including many strangers from Paris.

The public mind was deeply moved by the attempts of misguided individuals to assassinate crowned heads. A powder magazine and vessels of war were exploded at Naples, and a soldier named Agasilas

Milano sought to take the life of the king. It is true that the despotic acts of that monarch had been so rigorous that France and England, in 1856, engaged in a diplomatic intervention to restrain him, yet few of his subjects favored violent means to secure relief. The national policy of Cavour was seriously embarrassed by the effort of Felice Orsini, an Italian, to assassinate the emperor and empress of France as they entered the Opera House in Paris on the evening of January 14, 1858. The papal nuncio had not hesitated to tell Napoleon that "these were the fruits of the revolutionary passions fostered by Count Cavour." The ambassador of the Emperor Francis Joseph had immediately asked whether the time had not yet come in which to "establish between France a mutual understanding, in order to constrain Piedmont to leave off protecting the machinations of the refugees and the license of the press." Soon after Orsini's rash attempt Victor Emmanuel sent General della Rocca to congratulate the emperor on his escape, and also, perhaps, to appease him. Soon afterwards the king wrote a confidential letter to Napoleon, and the latter in reply expressed his satisfaction with the attitude of Piedmont. The emperor's anger was gradually disappearing, and he even admitted that if there were any conspirators it was not Piedmont, but the hazardous situation of Italy, to blame. At the Tuileries it had come to be repeated that, "So long as there should be Austrians in Italy there would be attempts of assassination in Paris; that Count Cavour was in the right and ought to be seconded."

Napoleon desired that the Italians should understand his views of the situation, and he actually sent the letters which Orsini had written to him from his prison to Count Villamarina, with orders to send them to Turin. They were published in the *Moniteur* at Paris, and the following extract indicates their contents: "Let your majesty call to mind that the Italians, among whom was my father, shed their blood freely and joyfully for Napoleon the Great, that they continued faithful to him until his downfall. Let it not be forgotten that the peace of Europe and that of your majesty will remain a mere chimera as long as Italy is not free. If your majesty will but deliver my country the benedictions of twenty-five millions of men will resound from generation to generation." Orsini was executed, and his letters appeared in the official gazette of Turin. Then followed a strange diplomatic scene—the meeting of Napoleon and Cavour at Plombières on the 20th of July, 1858. An alliance was agreed upon, embracing a war with Austria, the formation of an Italian kingdom of eleven millions of souls, and the cession of Savoy and Nice to France.



## Sixth Decade, Continued, 1850-1860.

## CHAPTER XIV.

*ITALY BEFORE AND AFTER THE PEACE OF VILLAGRANCA.*

WITH the beginning of the year 1859 the national drama of Italy was hastening to its crisis. In the early part of 1849, on the 23d of March, Piedmont, conquered and humiliated, fell on the battle-field of Novara, holding in her hand only a torn flag and a broken sword. She was destitute of allies, and the comparatively few friends she had were more inclined to blame her rashness than to sympathize with her in her misfortune or to render her assistance. Austria had been successful through her powerful armies; and the triumph of the reactionary party in the Sardinian parliament was secured by magnifying the dangers of disorderly revolutions. For a considerable length of time the prospect on the other side of the Alps was gloomy; but in the first days of 1859 the Italian situation had changed. The attention of Europe was again directed towards Piedmont, and the Italian question was the absorbing topic both in diplomatic and popular circles.

The policy inaugurated at Turin ten years previous, and vigorously pursued, had guided Piedmont from Novara to the Crimean War; from the Congress at Paris to the negotiations of Plombières. Austria had been isolated within her contested dominions; a united Italian sentiment rallied around a national monarchy; the question of independence had been separated from that of revolution; and the foreign ministers had been awakened to a realization of Italy's situation. These were some of the results of this ten years' policy, which a remarkable combination of circumstances made successful. There were displayed wisdom in its inception and courage in its prosecution, and when the proper time arrived friends came forward to be the supporters of one of the most difficult enterprises. Napoleon and Cavour, though different in position, character, and mind, supplemented each the other. The resemblance between them was slight, and they stand before us on the historic page in vivid and strange contrast with each other. They came into collision more than once, and yet they mutually attracted each other, because each felt that the other was necessary to him.

Cavour regarded Napoleon III as a powerful and perhaps dangerous ally, the ruler of one of the most prominent European countries, and the head of an army still considered invincible. Napoleon III found in Cavour the model foreign minister, and the instrument of his peculiar views concerning Italy; "the man best calculated," says De Mazade, "to sweep him on, to oppose him, if necessary, and ease him of the burden of his irresoluteness by putting pressure upon him, in offering him, in a variety of ways, the occasion of deciding, and acting upon his decision." It is said that during the interview at Plombières the emperor, then believing that he had unlimited power, remarked to Cavour: "Do you know that there are but three men in Europe: we two, and a third I will not name?" No one knew what person was meant by the "third;" but the other two met in the little town of Vosges, and the result was a coincidence in the beginning of 1859—the scene at the Tuileries on the 1st of January, and the thrilling speech of Victor Emmanuel in the parliament at Turin, on the 10th of the same month. The king, at the opening of the chambers, said: "Our horizon is not at all clear. Our country, small indeed territorially, has yet become influential in Europe, through the greatness of the ideas it represents and the sympathies it inspires. This situation is by no means without its dangers; for while we would respect treaties, we can not remain insensible to the cry of anguish which reaches us from so many parts of Italy." Victor Emmanuel would not have spoken with such boldness unless he had received definite promises from Napoleon III, and the latter no doubt had known and approved of it beforehand. It was a part of his tactics that his ally should say what he would not, or could not, as yet say himself. Cavour understood the meaning of the words carelessly spoken by the emperor to M. de Hubner, and on hearing them he remarked with a smile: "The emperor means to go ahead, it appears."

In a few days subsequently the public mind was startled by another incident of great political significance. It was known almost simultaneously that Prince Napoleon, accompanied by General Niel, had left Paris for Turin, and that the marriage of a Bonaparte with the Princess Clotilde of Savoy was accomplished. Before the 30th of January all was settled at Turin, where the excited populace discussed this union of the dynasties and interpreted it as the promise of events at hand. The personal and implied understanding which had previously existed between the emperor and the king assumed a more distinct form, diplomatically, after the 18th of January, and became a regular alliance in anticipation of an attack on the part of

Austria. On the morrow of the marriage of Prince Napoleon and the Princess Clotilde there appeared suddenly in Paris a startling pamphlet, "Napoleon III and Italy," known to be inspired by the emperor. It contained a whole programme of Italian reorganization, by national federation, without foreign interference.

How rapidly consecutive events crowded each other, and how marked the changes within a short period! The speech of Victor Emmanuel was a supplement to the words spoken by Napoleon III to Baron Hubner, and these two public acts were crowned by the family alliance, and by the imperial manifesto, which brought the problem of the destinies of Italy before Europe, as though the treaties of 1815 were not in existence. The crisis reached its culmination in a few days; but nothing was decided, and it was uncertain whether the knot would have to be finally cut by the sword or untied by diplomacy. Indeed, all Europe was deeply agitated during the Winter of 1859, as the result of the struggle between the pacific and warlike elements. The situation was truly singular; a conflict seemed inevitable, and yet the real question of the hour remained obscure. Diplomacy did not know how to take hold of this Italian problem, and it was evident that, from various considerations, the difficulties could be adjusted only by an appeal to force. Even Cavour, who alone of all the actors in the great drama fully realized how much Italy had at stake, spent nearly four months of this curious phase in Italian history without apparently accomplishing anything for the national movement. At one time he would pursue a course that promised satisfactory results; at another, he seemed to yield to the projects of negotiations coming from every direction; and these perplexities caused him to advance more slowly than usual.

If Austria had taken the initiative and manifested a conciliatory spirit she might easily have divested the question of its difficulties and confused her enemies. She seemed once disposed to adopt a policy of reconciliation, and, accordingly, in the year 1858, the Archduke Maximilian was sent by the cabinet at Vienna as viceroy to Lombardy on a mission of peace. This ill-fated prince, doomed to the sad Mexican tragedy, arrived at Venice and Milan full of liberal views and designs. He had much in his favor—youth, amiability, and dignity. For his support he had Austria, and for wise counsel he had the prudent Leopold, of Belgium, whose daughter he had just married—thus securing, also, through this king the best wishes of England. Maximilian entered upon his work earnestly, and perhaps hopefully. During an excursion on the Lago Maggiore, and in a con-



versation with the Prussian minister at Turin, Count Brassier de Saint Simon, he spoke of Cavour in the warmest terms. "I greatly admire Count Cavour," he said, "but as the business in contemplation is a policy of progress, I shall not let him outstrip me." Cavour, always vigilant and profiting by every circumstance, watched this movement of the Archduke Maximilian, and subsequently he acknowledged that it might have defeated all his plans.

Austria could have been magnanimous, because her territorial possessions and military power were so great that she could make concessions without being considered dishonorable. By conforming to a liberal policy she might have weakened the national Italian sentiment, and by an administration less rigid she would have convinced Europe of her generosity toward Italy. Maximilian himself might have ruled the disputed territory with mildness. How different then might events have been from the war of 1859 to the war of 1866, and all that since occurred—not forgetting Mexico! If Austria had not succeeded in this policy, it was at least worth an experiment; but she became alarmed too soon, and discovering certain indications of a public crisis, she fell back on her "traditions of immobility and repression." This was not the first time that she had taken the wrong step, which in every case led to heavy losses. She not only canceled the mission of the Archduke Maximilian, but also exaggerated her military rule in all her Italian possessions. Before January 1, 1859, she had already commenced her preparations for war, and on the morrow of this date she sent army corps after army corps into Italy, organizing her forces as on the eve of a campaign, and even taking a position on the Ticino, in the face of Piedmont. Some of her officers permitted their belligerent dispositions to lead them into imprudent actions of a serious character, and at their banquet tables in Milan they talked confidently of a speedy departure for Turin, which they declared was to be the first stage of a march on Paris.

Austria seemed blind to the fact that her haste and feverish manner exposed her from day to day to a fit of rashness by the excess of her military display and of her expenditure. Those who were endeavoring to secure peace were disarmed in advance by her position, and she was unconsciously playing the game of her enemies. At any rate she had given Piedmont a pretext for war, and the latter country resolved to profit by it. The fortresses of Alessandria and Casale were made ready, and the regiments scattered on both sides of the Alps were brought together. The parliament voted a loan of two millions sterling because it was rendered necessary by the

“provocation of Austria;” and thus the two powers were already face to face, opposing armament to armament, and demonstration to demonstration. The vexed question of peace or war was about to be solved. The wish was strongly for peace, and diplomacy endeavored to preserve it; but what could be done in such a state of affairs? All these incidents had inflamed public sentiment, which was on the verge of explosion.

England, represented by the Tory ministry of Lord Derby and Lord Malmesbury, was more anxious for peace than the other powers. All Europe was divided, and England herself, who was expected to take the lead in the discussion and negotiations, was deeply perplexed. She was unhappily in an embarrassing position, desiring to maintain her traditional Continental policy, which held her to the treaties of 1815 and Austria, and yet sympathizing with the cause of freedom in Piedmont and Italy. The growing intimacy of France with Turin made England uneasy, and she was anxious about her commercial interests. In order to secure peace she wished to remove that which menaced it, and therefore endeavored to conciliate all the parties concerned—Austria, France, and Piedmont; but she failed to observe that her urgent requests of each imperiled her chances of success with them all.

When England appealed to Vienna Count Buol Schauenstein, minister of the Emperor Francis Joseph, replied, impatiently: “You are mistaken. It is not here that you should come with your entreaties and your counsels: go to Paris and Turin, and speak your mind out plainly there. Let the Emperor Napoleon learn that if his army crosses the Alps England will not look on quietly; let the king of Piedmont know that England sanctions no plundering of the Austrian possessions in Italy. If the queen’s ministers hold a resolute language we shall have no war. Italy is not in want of reconstruction; let them cease to stir her up, and we shall hear no more of it.”

The English cabinet then consulted the authorities at Turin, and was advised if it desired peace to apply to Vienna, whose dominion in Italy was the source of existing difficulties because it menaced constitutional liberty in Piedmont, and constantly excited revolutionary passions. Besides, it was claimed that, even admitting Austria to be on the legal ground of 1815 in her control of Milan, she was not so in her occupation of Bologna and Ancona for a period of ten years, reducing the central duchies to a condition of vassalage, and converting Piacenza into an imperial fortress on the frontier of Piedmont.

England, in her peaceful mission, was encouraged by the emperor of France, who disavowed the very idea of an aggressive policy, and assumed the position of a judicious adviser and friend, declaring that she endeavored to interest Russia and Germany in her cause by extending the war and opening the conflict on the Rhine as well as on the Po; but she was not successful. A warlike feeling had made her reckless, and, wishing to bring the matter to a definite point, she resolved without further delay to send an ultimatum direct to Turin, summoning Piedmont to disarm, and allowing her three days to consider the question. This step delighted Cavour, and his only regret was that Austria did not proceed further.

On the 19th of April the ultimatum was ready to be launched at him from Vienna, but Cavour could not know it. On the 20th, however, the first indications of the coming *coup de theatre* were apparent to him. He was in the Chamber of deputies, at the Carignano Palace, on the 23d of April, when a word hastily written by one of his intimate friends informed him of the arrival of Baron Kellersperg, bearer of a communication from Count Buol. At half-past five o'clock on the same afternoon, while at the ministry of foreign affairs, Cavour received from the hands of the Austrian envoy this communication, which commanded Piedmont to disarm. Three days later, at the same hour, he delivered the reply of the Piedmontese government to Baron Kellersperg, whose hand he courteously pressed when he assured him of the happiness he would have to meet him again "under more favorable auspices." He immediately gave his final orders to Colonel Govone, who was appointed to accompany the Austrian officer to the frontier, and then, addressing himself to some friends who witnessed the scene, he exclaimed, with a friendly familiarity, and in a natural tone peculiar to him, "It's done; *Alca jacta est!* we have made some history—and now to dinner."

Austria, no doubt, felt that she had been compelled to adopt extreme measures by the pressure of circumstances. This vexed Italian question annoyed and threatened her on every side, and she desired to defend herself by having it decided *vi et armis*. It was her misfortune, however, to provoke actual war, alienating Europe, chilling England, and strengthening Piedmont, whose cabinet instantly received this message from Paris, "The fullest aid from France."

On the morning of the 30th of April the first French columns descended from the Alps and debouched in the Piazza Castello of Turin, in the midst of an excited population. Cavour was standing



on the balcony of the ministry of foreign affairs with other distinguished persons, French and Italian, and also Sir James Hudson, the English minister. The brave Italian statesman, who had worked ten years and had gone to the Crimea and to Plombières to hasten this "crucial hour," beheld in this thrilling spectacle the triumphant march of his policy. A few days later Napoleon III, who personally commanded the main body of the French army, which had sailed from Marseilles, disembarked at Genoa, and when he met Cavour said to him, "You ought to be satisfied; your aims are being realized." In one sense war was a blessing to Cavour, because he was delivered from the anxieties and uncertainties of a long diplomatic imbroglio; but another aspect now presented itself. Instead of talking about it, he must engage in the conflict of arms, thus emerging from a ten years' dream into a living reality. This change was simply laying down one burden and taking up another. The position of Cavour was not one of ease, especially in the earlier period of the war, when the enemy might have appeared at any time before Turin. Indeed, if the Austrians had been more aggressive they might have defeated the combinations of their adversaries before Piedmont and France could have united their armies.

When the formal demand of Austria that the Sardinian army should be reduced to a peace footing was refused, the Austrian troops immediately crossed the Ticino and entered the Piedmontese territory. If they had taken advantage of their superior numbers, and marched boldly on Turin, Piedmont and her allies would have met with a disaster in the very beginning of the conflict. But Austria, having committed an error of diplomatic rashness, added to it the greater blunder of military delay. Marshal Canrobert fortunately succeeded in deceiving and intimidating the Austrians by throwing out, on the 29th of April, his first French lines to Casale. Cavour was prepared for the worst, neither hesitating to defend Turin to the last, nor, if necessary, to inundate the Lomellina for the purpose of arresting the progress of the enemy. Having challenged this war, he bravely met its risks and difficulties.

During these perilous and anxious days his labors were herculean. Remaining alone at Turin, while the king and General La Marmora went to the camp, he was at the same time president of the council, minister for foreign affairs, minister of the interior, minister of marine, and minister of war. He was truly every thing, and equal to all his arduous duties. Having resolved to stand in the center of these weighty responsibilities he was pressed on every side, and even

transferred his bed, for which he seemed to have but little use, to the war-office. The battle-field in which he constantly fought was his bureaus, and there he exhibited remarkable energy and tact, protracting his labors far into the night, hurrying from one department to another in his dressing-gown, dictating dispatches, transmitting orders, overseeing the equipment of the volunteers, directing the operations on the field, and at the same time conducting a voluminous correspondence. He stimulated the dilatory, encouraged the despondent, and inflamed the lukewarm with a portion of his own fire and patriotism.

Nothing could intimidate or perplex him. On a certain day in the month of May the French army was reduced to extremities; but Cavour solved the problem in twenty-four hours. The Piedmontese government had entered into a special contract to provide food for the French army up to a given date. The day arrived, and the French military administration was seriously embarrassed in view of the morrow. This intelligence surprised and annoyed the emperor, who was in camp at Alessandria, and he sent Cavaliere Nigra, whom he kept near him, to Turin. Cavour was vexed at the bad management, and hastened to amend it. The mayors of all the communes within reach of the lines of railroad were immediately ordered to obtain all the meal they could find, heat the bakeries, and make as much bread on the spot as they could, without a moment's delay, and then transport it to the nearest stations. The result was that next morning there was more provision at Alessandria than was needed! This is one case among many illustrating the activity and promptness of Cavour in civil and military affairs.

"Courage, my friends," he exclaims, "and we will give to Italy the regeneration dreamed of by Gioberti." Republicans turned their backs upon Mazzini, and, rallying under the leadership of Daniel Manin, replied, "Regenerate Italy, and we are with you." The *Società Nazionale* inscribed upon its banners, "Independence, Unification, and the House of Savoy." The flower of the Italian youth flocked around the standard of Garibaldi, where it floated from the crest of the Apennines, asking for nothing more than the privilege of fighting and dying for Italy; while thirty thousand volunteers, with swords half-drawn, impatiently awaited the signal to launch themselves upon the legions of Austria, whose arms were glittering upon the banks of the Ticino. While Napoleon III espoused the cause of Sardinia he was careful to state his reasons, so that the other powers might understand the position of France. Hence, before

leaving Paris, he issued a proclamation containing these words: "Austria has brought things to such a pass that *she must lord it up to the Alps, or else Italy must be free up to the Adriatic*; for in that country every nook of earth holding independence is a danger to the power of Austria. . . . The aim of this war is to restore Italy to herself, not that she should change masters; and we shall have on our frontiers a friendly power, owing their liberty to us." The emperor added, also: "We do not enter Italy to foment disorder, nor to shatter the authority of the Holy Father, whom we have replaced on his throne, but to relieve it of a foreign burden weighing upon the whole Peninsula."

The first battle of the campaign was fought at Montebello, a small village in Sardinia, on the road which passes from Alessandria and Voghera through Casteggio to Piacenza, about five miles south of the Po, and one mile west of Casteggio. The allies, whose headquarters during the month of May were at Alessandria, endeavored prior to crossing the Mincio at Turbigo and Buffalora to create the impression that they intended to attack by Pavia and Piacenza, and with this view concentrated a large part of their force in that direction. The Austrian commander, Count Gyulai, deceived by their movements, accordingly ordered General Stadion to cross the Po below Pavia with twenty thousand men, and march along the south bank of the river, in order to make a reconnoissance in force. About eleven o'clock two brigades of his detachment, under General Urban, reached Casteggio, which they found occupied by a regiment of Sardinians and five hundred men of General Forey's division, belonging to the corps of Baraguay d' Hilliers. These were soon overpowered and driven back through Montebello and Ginestrello toward Voghera; but, re-enforced by the arrival of successive detachments from Voghera, they rallied and obliged the Austrians to fall back upon Montebello. Here a final stand was made. General Urban, by his rapid advance, had deprived himself of the assistance of most of the remainder of Stadion's force, while the French continued to receive accessions—train after train arriving by railway, discharging its hundreds, and hastening back for more. General Forey, bringing up his left to the north of the village, opened there an effective fire of artillery, while his right wing was engaged in a hot hand-to-hand conflict on the south. The Austrian brigades of Bils and the prince of Hesse at last came up; but the allies continued to maintain a superiority, and about dusk the Austrians retreated. They were not pursued. Their loss, in killed, wounded, and missing, was officially



stated as twelve hundred and ninety-one, and that of the allies as eight hundred and fifty. The Austrians, according to French accounts, had thirteen thousand men in action, while the allies had seven thousand. Both sides claimed the advantage of the battle. The result of the five hours' struggle was that the Austrians learned the strength of their adversaries, while the allies confirmed Count Gyulai in the belief that they were about to march toward Pavia.

This victory of the allies on the 20th of May was followed by another at Palestro on the 30th and 31st of the same month. But on the 4th of June, 1859, the Austrians met with a more disastrous defeat at Magenta, a town of Lombardy, situated about five miles from the east or left bank of the Ticino, and fifteen miles west of Milan, with which city it is connected by railroad. It is also the first stage on the road from Novara to Milan, being nearly equidistant from the two places, and has about six thousand inhabitants. Before the decisive battle of Magenta occurred, the opposing forces fought at different places. The French, wishing to deceive the Austrians, marched from Alessandria eastward in the direction of Piacenza, and, on the 31st of May, suddenly crossed the Po at Casale, and, while the Sardinians menaced the enemy's position at Mortara, midway between the Po and Ticino, the French moved toward the north, occupied Novara, and threw three bridges across the Ticino at Turbigo, about eight miles above Magenta. The Austrian troops thereupon withdrew across the river into the Lombard territory, and fortified the bridge of Buffalora, over which passes the road from Novara through Magenta to Milan; but on the 2d of June they were compelled to retire before a French corps under General Espinasse, after an unsuccessful attempt to destroy the bridge. On the 4th of June M'Mahon's corps, followed by a division of the imperial guard, and a division of the Sardinian army, having crossed at Turbigo, marched along the left bank toward Magenta, while the emperor in person advanced with the grenadier division of the imperial guard to occupy the bridge of Buffalora, leaving orders for Canrobert to follow. The latter was delayed, but the grenadiers began the contest unassisted, at noon, and, after two hours' desperate fighting, captured the position, and took possession of the heights on the canal, in the face of an Austrian force, estimated by the French at one hundred and twenty-five thousand.

The Austrian commander, Count Gyulai, at once dispatched Baron Reischach to retake the bridge; but after a conflict of two hours more, in which it was seven times taken and lost, the arrival of Can-

robert, Regnault de St. Jean d'Angely, Neil, and Vinoy turned the scale in favor of the French, though not until great loss had been suffered on both sides. The third Austrian army corps was ordered up from Abbiate Grasso on the south, and assailed the French flank with much spirit, but was finally compelled to fall back upon Robecco. In the mean time M'Mahon's advance from Turbigo had been several times checked by the enemy, who, on evacuating Buffalora, concentrated the principal part of their force between him and Magenta. A large detachment attempted to separate the divisions of La Motterouge and Espinasse, but was finally driven back by the voltigeurs of the guard under General Canou, while the forty-fifth regiment of the line made a heroic and successful attack upon a farm-house, defended by two Hungarian regiments, and General Auger planted a battery of forty guns on the railway, from which he poured a tremendous fire upon the Austrians in flank. On reaching the town of Magenta M'Mahon found it occupied by seven thousand of the enemy under Clam-Gallas, and the second army corps under Prince Liechtenstein. The combat here was terrible. Both sides felt Magenta to be the key of the position, and the attack and defense were conducted with equal bravery and determination. The French took it house by house, losing, by their own account, fifteen hundred men, but making five thousand prisoners and placing ten thousand Austrians *hors du combat*. At half-past eight o'clock in the evening Gyulai ordered a general retreat, leaving four guns in possession of the French. His official report gave his own loss at nine thousand seven hundred and thirteen, killed, wounded, and missing, and that of the enemy at six thousand killed and wounded. The French accounts acknowledge a loss of four thousand nine hundred and fifty-seven, and estimate that of Gyulai at twenty thousand, including seven thousand prisoners. The French generals, Espinasse and Clerc, were among the killed. The immediate results of the battle were the evacuation of Milan by the Austrians and its occupation by the allies. General M'Mahon was mainly instrumental in securing this victory, and the emperor conferred upon him the titles of marshal of France and duke of Magenta.

On the 8th of June Victor Emmanuel and Napoleon III entered Milan in triumph. The latter addressed serious words to the Italians, saying: "Providence sometimes favors a people by giving them the opportunity to spring to life at a blow; but it is on the condition that they shall know how to profit by it. Profit, then, by the good fortune offered to you! Unite in a common aim, the deliverance of

your country. Give yourselves military organization. Fly to the banner of Victor Emmanuel, who has so nobly shown you the path of honor; . . . and, animated by the sacred fire of patriotism, be but soldiers to-day, to-morrow you will be citizens of a great country." These prophetic words were soon fulfilled. In the last days of April, at the opening of the war, Tuscany, Modena, and Parma rose in revolt, and their dukes fled to the Austrian territory. Victor Emmanuel was proclaimed dictator of Tuscany. He declined the title, but took command of the Tuscan army, which was united with his own forces. Towards the middle of June, 1859, the Austrians, anxious to have all their troops on the Adige, hastily abandoned the papal territory, Ancona and Bologna, which they had occupied for ten years, and the Romagna immediately and spontaneously joined the movement.

Thus, without a struggle, "a half-emancipated Italy," following in the track of the armies, looked toward Piedmont. Cavour regarded this as the most delicate question connected with the war, and he therefore closely watched it—marking day by day the successive steps in the work of liberation. He deeply sympathized with it, and desired to direct it to the best advantage, because it was one of the sources of his strength. He had sent Count Palieri to Parma, the devoted and ardent Farini to Modena, and the sagacious Boncompagni to Florence. The position at Bologna was a difficult one, and Cavour reserved for it Massimo d'Azeglio, whose lofty mind and noted loyalty gave to his name an authority which was calculated to exact obedience. These provinces had thrown off the Austrian yoke, and the men whom Cavour sent to govern them received these instructions: "Repression in the cause of order, activity on behalf of the war; what remains leave to the future." He wrote to Signor Vigliani, a Piedmontese magistrate of a liberal and conciliatory disposition, whom he had appointed governor of Milan, "We are not in 1848; we permit of no discussion. Take no notice of the excitement of those who surround you. The smallest act of weakness wrecks the government."

The lieutenants of Cavour were every-where, even in the camp of Garibaldi, whither he had sent a young Lombard, Emilio Visconti-Venosta—who has since been minister of foreign affairs—who there served as royal commissioner with the Chasseur of the Alps, with whom he made the campaign. While adhering as much as possible to the imperial programme, Cavour directed the whole Italian movement, military and diplomatic. But serious difficulties con-



fronted the allies. In approaching the Mincio and the Adige, the French and Piedmontese armies, besides skirmishing, were compelled to engage in the heavier work of conducting sieges and carrying formidable positions. In a short time the impregnable Quadrilateral would frown upon them. The situation was rendered more complicated, however, by European diplomacy, which appeared disposed to interfere. Prussia, without exhibiting any hostility, seemed inclined to take a more active part. The provinces of the pope were disturbed by these successive Italian movements, and the animosities and suspicions that were excited against what was called "Piedmontese ambition" were felt in Paris, and all these circumstances had their effect upon Napoleon III, whom they soon reached at headquarters in the heart of Lombardy. The policy that could not prevent the war now endeavored to limit and stop it as much as possible by arousing the doubts and fears of the emperor, who, already past fifty years of age, experienced the fatigue resulting from the oppressive heat of a torrid season.

But the culminating point was about to be reached in the bloody and decisive battle of Solferino. After their defeat at Magenta, the Austrians, unwilling to risk a defense of the lines of the Adda and Oglio rivers continued their retreat along the north bank of the Po, within the quadrangle of the fortresses of Peschiera, Verona, Mantua, and Legnano. Gyulai had been deposed in consequence of the defeat of Magenta, and General Count Schlick was his successor. The allies kept the northerly road, and crossed the Adda and the Oglio without opposition. On the 22d of June both armies were so nearly face to face that a conflict seemed inevitable. The allies were encamped between the Chiese and the Mincio, occupying Lenato, Castigliona, and Montechiara, and having their left wing resting on the high ground near Brescia and the southern end of the Lake of Garda. At their extreme left was General Garibaldi, who, with the *Cacciatori delli Alpi*, a body of volunteers, after a most daring and brilliant series of maneuvers round the extreme northern frontiers of Lombardy, had come down on the Lake of Garda. The Austrian forces were on the left bank of the Mincio, resting with their right on Peschiera and Verona, and with their left wing on Mantua.

On the 23d of June the Austrians poured out their numbers from Mantua, Verona, and Peschiera, and, led by their young emperor, Francis Joseph, who had assumed the command-in-chief, in the course of the evening crossed the Mincio at four different places, confident of defeating the allies, and driving them beyond the Chiese.

On the 24th of June, 1859, one of the bloodiest battles on record occurred. The Austrians began the attack at daylight, and by ten o'clock the whole of the two armies had come into collision. There were four French corps engaged, under Marshals Baraguay d'Hilliers, MacMahon, Canrobert, and Niel; and four divisions of the Sardinian army, under the command of Victor Emmanuel. The battle lasted fifteen hours, and extended along a line of nearly eighteen miles, from the neighborhood of Brescia down toward Mantua. The right wing of the Austrians occupied Pozzolengo, where they met the Sardinians; their center was at Caviana and Solferino, while their left wing marched on Guidinolo and Castel Goffredo, and for a time succeeded in repulsing the French.

The day was decided by a concentrated attack made about three o'clock in the afternoon by the French emperor on Solferino, a village in the province of Lombardy, twenty miles south-east of Brescia, having a commanding position, which the Austrians had fortified. After several hours of desperate fighting, the place was carried by the French, who, thereby breaking the Austrian center, moved large masses against their left wing, which, having pushed on almost to the Chiese, was in danger of being surrounded and cut out. Late in the evening, the young emperor of Austria, with tears in his eyes, saw that the day was irretrievably lost, and gave the order for the retreat beyond the Mincio, which was accomplished under the protection of a violent storm.

Few battles in modern history have been marked with more slaughter and horror. More than three hundred thousand human beings were engaged in this terrible combat, and at night thirty-five thousand of them at least were dead or dying. The French, according to their own statement, had twelve thousand seven hundred and twenty killed and wounded, and the Sardinians, five thousand five hundred and twenty-five. The Austrian loss, which was put by them at eleven thousand, two hundred and thirteen, is generally asserted to have exceeded eighteen thousand. Numerous prisoners, thirteen pieces of cannon, two flags, and large quantities of arms and ammunition fell into the hands of the allies; and Napoleon III slept at Solferino, in the very same apartment which Francis Joseph had occupied the previous night. After the battle of Solferino, the command-in-chief of the Austrians was given to Baron Hess, who offered no opposition to the passage of the Mincio by the allies. On the 1st of July the latter received a re-enforcement of thirty-five thousand men, brought by Prince Napoleon through Florence and Modena.



While the Sardinians were investing Peschiera, a French division was at Goito to watch Mantua; Garibaldi's *Cacciatori delli Alpi*, supported by General Cialdini's division, were moving to close up the



GENERAL CIALDINI.

valley of the Adige; and the emperor, with the main body of the army, was approaching Verona, the startling news was received that Napoleon III had sent General Fleury, on the evening of the 7th of July, to the Austrian camp at Verona, to propose an armistice, and



that commissioners had been actually appointed to agree upon its terms. Events presented a more pacific appearance. "Indeed, the glorious and bloody battle of Solferino," says D'Mazade, "was but the final *coup de soleil*, which, so to say, ripened the situation." It seemed doubtful to the emperor whether the Austrians could be driven from the famous "Quadrilateral," and the frightful carnage he had already witnessed made him less disposed to continue the war. "I have lost ten thousand men," he said on a certain day, soon after the conflict, and the tone of his voice indicated the intensity of his feeling. He received from Paris the news of the threatening attitude of Prussia, and feared that she might, as the ally of Austria, appear on the scene.

All these considerations profoundly moved the mind of Napoleon III, and he found himself face to face with a serious embarrassment. He had entered into the war with a sincere determination to deliver all Italy from the Austrian yoke; but the participation of Prussia in the conflict as the enemy of France would compel him to make extraordinary efforts to protect his eastern frontier, and would oblige him to leave Italy at the mercy of Austria, which was more than a match for her. Other powers might be drawn into the struggle, and there was a very decided probability that, in a general European war, Italy might lose all that had been won. It appeared best to Napoleon, therefore, as the disinterested friend of Italy, to bring the war to a close, and to rest satisfied with what had been gained. Accordingly the two emperors met at Villafranca, on the road to Verona, and there, on the 11th of July, signed a treaty of peace, the basis of which was thus vaguely announced:

"Italian confederation under the honorary presidency of the pope. 1. The emperor of Austria cedes his rights to Lombardy to the emperor of the French, who transfers them to the king of Sardinia. 2. The emperor of Austria preserves Venice; but she will form an integral part of the Italian confederation. 3. General amnesty."

These preliminaries included several details. Austria surrendered to France all of Lombardy, except the fortresses of Mantua and Peschiera, and this territory was ceded to Sardinia, which had to pay for the conquest forty-two million dollars. Venetia, though remaining "under the crown of the emperor of Austria," was allowed the privilege of becoming a member of the proposed federal league. One of the worst features of the arrangement, and one that subjected the French emperor to considerable adverse criticism, was the provision that the grand duke of Tuscany and the duke of Modena

were to return to their states. The question concerning Parma was not decided. Peace having been made on these conditions, the French army withdrew from Italy, and Napoleon III really believed that he had performed a great act in the presence of Europe. To secure peace, he had been compelled, as he stated, to "cut off from his programme the territory stretching between the Mincio and the Adige." While he disappointed Italy by halting midway in the execution of the plans projected in the alliance of Plombières, yet he deprived France, temporarily, we admit, of benefits that could have been obtained on her side of the Alps. But the peace thus concluded was precarious, leaving many problems unsolved, and satisfying neither Italy nor France.

The emperor had conceived and executed his plan without consulting his ally, the king of Sardinia. The latter, a short time previous, had summoned Cavour to the Mincio for the special purpose of tranquillizing Napoleon III, who was disturbed by certain events taking place in the legations. Thinking that he had been successful, the great diplomatist returned from the army deeply impressed by the spectacle of Solferino's bloody field, but never suspecting an armistice. On the 6th of July he had written to Marquis Sauli, Sardinian ambassador to St. Petersburg, who had mentioned the possibility of a mediation: "A mediation at present could bring nothing but bad consequences. Austrian influence must entirely disappear from Italy before we can have a solid and durable peace." Cavour had been occasionally troubled by the difficulties and dangers of the situation, but he never anticipated a *coup de théâtre* such as actually burst upon him. The idea of direct negotiations between the belligerents had not entered his mind, and yet at that very moment the emperor had decided to ask for an armistice.

On the 8th of July Cavour received a dispatch at Turin from General La Marmora announcing a cessation of hostilities, and La Marmora confessed that no one knew "how or by whom the armistice had been proposed." - He started immediately for the camp, and when he reached the headquarters of Victor Emmanuel at Pozzolengo he found a peace, not yet fully established, but containing provisions which destroyed his hopes and defeated his policy. The details of it were communicated to him only on the 11th of July by Victor Emmanuel, who came from the imperial camp at Valeggio, bearing the deed which he signed with this formula or singular reserve: "As far as I am concerned." The scene was truly dramatic. He threw off his uniform, and, with a serious face, sat down in his usual soldierly

attitude, and commanded one of the four persons present to read the preliminaries aloud. When Cavour heard the contents of the documents he exhibited a violent passion, and became so intemperate that Victor Emmanuel, unable to calm him, intrusted him to La Marmora. After all, Cavour was convinced that the king had done only what he was compelled to do. The question presented to him for decision was whether he should alone prosecute an unequal war or accept a peace which rescued Lombardy, though leaving some points unsettled. He did not hesitate nor could he have done so under the circumstances, and in submitting to what he could not avoid he exhibited some *finesse*, manifesting his grief but concealing his resentment.

Cavour himself, though indignant, would not have advised the king to pursue a different course. As for him, he disclaimed the responsibility of the peace and refused to hold power, thereby sanctioning a cruel deception. "I saw him on his return from Villafranca," says his private secretary, "pale, care-worn, broken down, and grown several years older in the space of three days." When things had become settled he resolved to retire from the cabinet, believing that to remain would be inconsistent with his honor and his policy. Overcome with chagrin and grief he handed his resignation to the king and hastened to his villa at Leri. When he passed through Milan many persons, and among them the governor, Vigliani, were at the station impatient to see him, but his exhausted nature was in the embrace of a deep sleep. He was weary, and his friends would not awaken him. It was the first time that he had truly slept during that sorrowful excursion to the camp.

While on the Mincio Cavour had not seen the emperor, and the latter was not anxious to have an interview with him. A meeting at Valeggio would have been different from that of Plombières. Some days later Napoleon III, when returning to France, passed through Turin, and while there expressed a desire to meet Cavour. These two great men had a pleasant interview, and the Piedmontese statesman became more reconciled to the situation. In the evening he went to the palace, and on the way said to a friend who accompanied him through the most deserted streets of the city: "I have been invited to a court-dinner, but I refused. I am not in a state of mind to accept invitations. To think that I had done so much for the union of the Italians, and that to-day all may be compromised. I shall be reproached for not having consented to sign the peace. I was unable absolutely, and I can not sign it."



Cavour was determined to seclude himself in the mountains of Switzerland, leaving La Marmora to form a ministry with Rattazzi and General Dabormida. On the 22d of July he addressed a letter to Madame de Circourt, stating that he would gladly accept her hospitality if she did not reside at Paris, and confessing that he preferred some retired spot. The heart of the great statesman was almost crushed with disappointment, and the same deep and poignant feeling was shared by every patriotic Italian citizen. But when the first outburst was over they calmly surveyed the situation, and discovered that it was not hopeless. Napoleon III, before leaving the Mincio, had uttered these strange words in the presence of Victor Emmanuel: "Now we shall see what the Italians can do unaided." Toward the close of 1859 the question of the annexation of Central Italy to Piedmont had assumed a prominence which surprised even Cavour. Deputations visited Victor Emmanuel with offers of the crown of Italy, but while promising to defend their rights he could not yet take the title of their sovereign. The people of Central Italy were firm, and the provinces by their assemblies decreed the deposition of their princes and proclaimed in favor of annexation.

Napoleon III, by a double *coup de théâtre*, astonished Europe and speedily changed the aspect of affairs. In a letter written on the 31st of December, 1859, he proposed to the pope to place the legations under the viceregency of Victor Emmanuel, and by the publication of a pamphlet, "The Pope and the Congress," he contrived to render a congress for the adjustment of Italian affairs impossible. Cavour was called back to Turin, and he reappeared on the scene as the only man who could meet the crisis and lead Piedmont and Italy on the road together. He was consulted on all sides and became the center of the general activity, though not in power, cordial with every one, counseling prudence or boldness as the occasion required. His return to Turin and the emperor's change of policy indicated the beginning of a new era.

## SEVENTH DECADE, 1860-1870.

## CHAPTER XV.

*THE ANNEXATIONS—THE REVOLUTION IN SICILY.*

ON the 20th of January, 1860, Cavour again took up the reins of power. His great mission was only interrupted, not abandoned. One of his first acts on his return to the helm was to counsel Victor Emmanuel, notwithstanding the opposition of Russia and Prussia, and the reluctance of France to favor the annexation of Tuscany and Emilia. On the 11th of March the voting in the central provinces occurred, and on the 18th a decree established the result by pronouncing the annexation to be confirmed. It was a bold and daring movement, but it inaugurated a new era in Italy. It struck a key-note to Cavour's subsequent policy—the annexation of provinces by means of popular suffrage. It was the first decided step in favor of Italian unity. To Victor Emmanuel was intrusted the sword of Castruccio Castracane, the Ghibelline leader, who had left it as a legacy to whoever should become the liberator of his country, and the king of Sardinia was virtually proclaimed from henceforth king of Italy "by the grace of God and the will of the people."

Cavour knew that the annexation of Central Italy meant the cession of Savoy and Nice, though nothing had been said on the subject since the peace of Villafranca. His merit was to perceive a necessity and frankly accept it, and accordingly he wrote to Count Pepoli, saying: "The knot of this question appears to me to be no longer in the Romagna and Tuscany, but in Savoy. Although I have not received any communication on the subject from Paris, I have seen that we were on the wrong road and I have taken another direction." The idea of the sacrifice of Savoy had in reality been part of Cavour's programme on his resumption of power. It was soon to bear the title of "an incident of his policy." In the Winter of 1860 Baron de Talleyrand, the French representative at the court of King Victor Emmanuel, received a dispatch from Paris charging him to announce to Cavour the wishes of France concerning Savoy, and the recall of the French army from Lombardy. This official

communication stated that while France did not counsel the annexation of Central Italy, yet, regarding it as accomplished, would not offer any opposition, but simply asked the price which had been promised, so that the imperial forces could be recalled from Lombardy.

The *plebiscitum* in Tuscany and Emilia was a triumph over the last hesitations of Napoleon III; but it placed upon Cavour the most solemn responsibility of his public life. On the announcement of the annexation of these provinces, on the 18th of March, the French emperor peremptorily demanded the cession of Nice and Savoy to his kingdom. Italy was not yet recognized in the great family of nations. Austria was strongly intrenched on the Mincio and the Po, Prussia and Russia were not friendly to the Italian kingdom, and nothing was to be hoped for from England more than English neutrality. Besides, a Bourbon army threatened it in the rear. To have refused to France, its only remaining ally at that time, the territory of Nice and Savoy would have been madness and ruin. Still Cavour hesitated. "For charity's sake, sign the treaty," wrote Bixio, "if you do not wish to lose all sympathy of France for Italy." For once Cavour was unmanned. In common with D'Azeglio, he said adieu to Savoy painfully; but it was not a matter of sentiment with him. He resolved to perform a duty required by his policy, by cutting the "knot of the question," as he called it. Cavour walked up and down his cabinet thoughtfully and gravely, not on this occasion rubbing his hands as he listened to the reading of the treaty. He then affixed his signature to the deed in silence, and in so doing experienced the bitterness of death; but in a moment after, recovering his habitual sprightliness, he went up to Baron de Talleyrand, and said to him, with a significant smile, "Now we have you for accomplices!"

Thus on the 24th of March, 1860, the ill-starred treaty was signed and sealed. Feeling that the cession was a supreme necessity, Cavour met it by rising to the heroic sublime of personal sacrifice and self-abnegation. Having consecrated himself upon his country's altar, he made no reservation of his fame or popularity. It was in such a perilous crisis as this that he exclaimed, amidst the silence and solitude of his chamber, "Perish my name, perish my fame—only let Italy live!" One evening during the height of the political excitement, referring to the treaty in a conversation with his confidential secretary, he said: "If the king were to nominate me duke of Leri, as the Austrian journals predict, I would not exchange for that title my name of Count of Cavour. I have *quattrini* sufficient for my wants,



although I am not as rich as is generally believed, and will never be so popular as after the battle of Magenta and on the eve of that of Solferino. . . . I have the ambition to serve Italy. For her I cheerfully risk my fame and my popularity. If I had aimed at nothing less than private advantage, instead of persuading Italy and Europe to consent to the cession of Nice and Savoy, I would resign, and, satisfied with a glory cheaply acquired, I would retire to Leri, and leave the country to be rent in twain in this dangerous political crisis."

On the 25th of March the election lists were opened for the chambers in all the provinces of the new kingdom; so that it was no longer before the Piedmontese parliament, but before the first national Italian parliament, that the question was to be laid which embodied for the moment the policy of Cavour. The head of the cabinet, in April, 1859, after a parliamentary session that had voted full powers on the eve of the war, said, "I have left the last Piedmontese chamber—the next will be that of the kingdom of Italy." One year only had passed away, and Cavour's prediction had been fulfilled. He felt confident that an assembly which owed its life to him would not refuse to support his policy. This new body was composed of the *élite* of Italy, and in its spirit represented to a remarkable degree the national liberalism which for ten years had carried through Piedmontese measures. Hence Cavour had a strong governing force to sustain him when he asked for an indorsement of the treaty ceding Savoy and Nice. The discussion, however, which was unrestricted, developed every form of opposition, and presented many curious features, even the most eccentric. Guerrazzi, the former Tuscan chief, prodigal in sarcasms, threatened Cavour with the fate of Clarendon, condemned to exile for having ceded Dunkirk to France; but the opposition containing the greatest elements of danger were centered in a man in whom Cavour found an adversary both impassioned and self-contained, all but an enemy—Rattazzi. The latter had evidently been deeply mortified by his fall in the last ministerial crisis, and the elevation of Cavour awakened in him an implacable animosity. It is said that all personal intercourse had ceased between these two men, notwithstanding their former intimacy and parliamentary alliances.

In his speech Rattazzi impeached the policy of Cavour, denouncing in bitter terms the treaty ceding Savoy, and particularly Nice, and calling the whole affair—the principle, the proceedings, the negotiations—"unfortunate" and "miserable." He declared that the

Italian provinces could have been united without yielding to a powerful ally, as the emperor, no doubt, would have finally consented to the annexations; but now Savoy, an important conservative factor in a national crisis, had been given up, and Nice, an Italian city, was lost. The Italian programme had been abandoned, and a policy of territorial barter had taken the place of the policy of nationality. Rattazzi still further affirmed that the price of the annexation had been paid without even a guarantee in exchange. This shrewd tactician, under an appearance of moderation, refrained from personal attacks, and did not, like Guerrazzi, speak of Clarendon, "severe to the king, scornful of parliament, and believing in his pride that there would be no check to his authority;" he did not hurl such angry taunts at Cavour, though he sarcastically alluded to the latter's retirement in July as "an excellent method of escape from a dilemma, no doubt, but of small use in solving the difficulties."

The president of the council, believing that these sharp, though polished, shafts were aimed at him, proceeded to justify his honor and the character of his policy before the Italian parliament, now for the first time assembled at Turin. The struggle was not equal, because facts sustained Cavour; and he promptly seized the advantage, to the confusion of his adversaries. He replied to Guerrazzi, and said that if Lord Clarendon could have defended his conduct by pointing to several millions of Englishmen delivered by him from a foreign yoke, and several counties added to the English dominions, the parliament would, probably, have been more merciful, and perhaps Charles II would not have been so ungrateful towards the most faithful of his servants. "Since the honorable deputy, Guerrazzi," remarked Cavour, "has thought proper to give me an historical lesson, he should have given it complete. After telling us what Lord Clarendon did, he should have told us who were his enemies, what sort of men his accusers, who shared the spoil they had torn from him. He should have told us that these enemies formed the famous coterie of men possessed of no antecedents in common, no community of principles, no ideas, and who were actuated by nothing but the most impudent egotism; men fallen away from every party, professing all opinions—Puritans, Presbyterians, Anglican Churchmen, and papists, each in turn; to-day republicans, royalists to-morrow; demagogues in the street, courtiers in the palace; radicals in parliament, reactionists in the councils of the king—men, in short, whose coming together produced the ministry stigmatized in history as that of the *Cabal*. So much being said," Cavour added,

"I leave it to the chamber and to the country to consider what may be thought of the present case." The assembly, electrified by this grand fulmination, broke forth in loud and long acclamations.

The great diplomatist denied the accusation of the sarcastic Guerrazzi that he had sold cities, and he repelled the insinuation of Rattazzi that he had abandoned the national programme. He plainly and honestly stated to the chamber the real cause of the cession of Savoy, saying, "The true ground for it is, that the treaty is an integral part of our policy, the logical and inevitable consequences of a past policy, and an absolute necessity for the carrying on of this policy in the future." In his speech Cavour declared that the French people believed that the provinces of Savoy and Nice naturally belonged to them, and hence their cession was indispensable to keep France in friendly relations with Italy. The latter, he affirmed, had been aided by the former, and it would be ungrateful and unjust to refuse reasonable demands. At the conclusion of the address, which captivated the assembly, Cavour gained the vote for the treaty by a majority of two hundred and twenty-nine; only thirty-three protested against it, and twenty-three members obeyed the signal to abstain from voting given by Rattazzi.

Before the meeting of parliament, and in the interval of these exciting discussions, Cavour had taken time to visit some of the provinces. He had gone with Victor Emmanuel to Milan during the Winter fêtes, where he met the venerable Manzoni, who reminded him of the conversation that had taken place one day in 1850 in the house of Rosmini, at Bolongaro. He had desired to see some of the cities of Lombardy—Cremona, Brescia, Bergamo,—and every-where he had received ovations of all kinds. Shortly after the annexation, still accompanied by the king, he had also gone to Tuscany and the Romagna, and for the first time beheld those provinces. As yet he had not known Florence or any of those delightful Tuscan country sides. While at Pisa, one morning he awoke at break of day in the silence of the still slumbering city, and taking Signor Artom with him, visited the Campo Santo. After remaining speechless a moment he exclaimed: "How pleasant it would be to repose here!" Signor Artom informed him that he would find himself on holy ground, for that this earth they trod upon had been brought from Palestine in the period of the Crusades. Cavour answered gayly: "Are you sure they will not one day canonize me?"

Italy had scarcely become tranquil when a new campaign was preparing across the Mediterranean, and already Cavour's eyes were



on Sicilian and Neapolitan waters. At length the drama suddenly opened, and while on the 5th of May, 1860, the parliament in Turin was discussing the cession of Savoy and Nice, Garibaldi, followed by



CATHEDRAL AND LEANING TOWER OF PISA.

his companions-in-arms, the "thousand" sailed from the "Villa Quarto," near Genoa, to cross the Mediterranean, with the intention of raising Sicily, Naples, and still more, perhaps, to the echoing cry

of "Italy and Victor Emmanuel!" The history of Garibaldi's expedition reads like a legend. Leaving the gulf of Genoa at night in his pair of vessels, the *Piemonte* and *Lombardo*, he swept through the Neapolitan cruisers, landing at Marsala on the 17th of May, and "conquering kingdoms at a gallop." Garibaldi had gone with an angry heart, easily won over to the Sicilian insurrection by resentment at the cession of Nice, and on starting he had let fly a barbed arrow at Cavour in a letter, in which he said to Victor Emmanuel: "I know that I embark on a perilous enterprise. If we fail, I trust that Italy and liberal Europe will not forget that it was undertaken from motives pure of all egotism and entirely patriotic. If we achieve it, I shall be proud to add to your majesty's crown a new and perhaps more brilliant jewel, *always on the condition that your majesty will stand opposed to councilors who would cede this province to the foreigner, as has been done with the city of my birth.*"

Cavour had not encouraged the expedition of Garibaldi because, without doubting his sincerity, he dreaded his rashness; but when the enterprise was inaugurated, he resolved to obtain from it richer fruits than those he had been gathering. During the previous year, on the death of King Ferdinand and the accession of young Francis II, son of a princess of Savoy, Cavour had seized the occasion to send Count Salmour on a mission of peace to Naples. It was an offer of amity and support to an administration in its infancy. Early in 1860 the cabinet of Turin had renewed the attempt by sending Count Villamarina, formerly ambassador at Paris, to Naples, with instructions to bring about an understanding, if possible. Both with Rome and Naples Cavour would gladly have had dealings and arrangements; but those governments of the south were too much influenced by their prejudices and passions to accept wise counsel. The fanatical "fire-eaters" at Rome declared that they would reconquer the Romagna, and an army, composed of all classes of papists, was organized and placed under the command of General Lamoricière. At Naples the unfortunate Francis II disregarded the advice of "revolutionary Piedmont" and the admonitions of France and England. These southern courts were under the control of Austria, and by their blindness in rejecting reasonable offers unconsciously aided the cause of Italian unity.

Fearing that Northern Italy might at any moment be placed between the Austrians encamped on the Mincio, commanding the Po, and Lamoricière leading an army from the south, Cavour allowed Garibaldi to go forth and "bear the spark to the fiery elements of



the south." Naples had declined his offers of conciliation, and he had heard of the march of a Neapolitan corps in the Abruzzi. Hence, without having advised it, he did not prevent the expedition of Garibaldi, but even protected it. His agent, Persano, obtained supplies and covered the passage of new convoys of volunteers under Medici and Cozenz. Cavour, while encouraging the popular chief, beloved of Italy, was careful not to compromise his position before Europe by too open a support. "Hence came a policy," says De Mazade, "mixed up of audacity and stratagem, perfectly unfathomable, the natural issue of a complicated situation."

Garibaldi reached Palermo on the 27th of May, and, though opposed by a Bourbon army of twenty-five thousand men, he soon made himself master of Sicily. After establishing a provisional government he passed the Straits of Messina on the 21st of August, and was at Naples on the 7th of September. Truly many exciting events had occurred in Sicily in the short space of six months. The despotic acts of Francis II having enraged the people, they rose in revolt at Palermo, Messina, and Catania in the month of March, hoping to be successful like their brethren of the Peninsula. The Sardinian government, to which they looked for assistance, did not deem it prudent to interfere; but Garibaldi's sudden appearance at Marsala, proclaiming himself "Dictator of Sicily in the name of Victor Emmanuel of Italy," and the defeat of the troops of King Francis at Melazzo, inspired the Sicilians with wonderful enthusiasm. Such a rapid conquest surprised every one except Garibaldi himself, and the astonished populations even declared that it was miraculous. While the latter welcomed the conquering hero as their deliverer, Francis II was alarmed, and appealed to Victor Emmanuel to put a stop to the invasion of his kingdom; but the Sardinian king, who had secretly connived at the expedition, stated that he was not responsible for the attack upon the king of Naples. A little later, fearing the tendencies of Garibaldi's republican sympathies, Victor Emmanuel ordered him to take no steps against Naples until the people of Sicily should decide by their votes whether they would become a part of the Sardinian kingdom. Garibaldi refused to obey this order, and, on the night of the 20th of August, crossed his force from Sicily to the main-land at Spartivento. Pushing on he defeated the Neapolitan troops at Reggio and San Giovanni, and moved forward towards the capital.

The success of this little army was remarkable, and the history of its progress seems fabulous. Setting out with a mere handful of



men, denounced as a filibuster, his expedition branded as piracy, and his troops as bandits, in the course of only four months Garibaldi had routed and dispersed a large and well appointed army of regular troops, overthrown a proud and haughty, if not powerful, dynasty, and been proclaimed by acclamation dictator of the kingdom of the "Two Sicilies." His enthusiastic volunteers, barefooted and in rags, in want of provisions, in want of transportation, without tents, without even cartridge-boxes, other than their caps, seem unmindful of hunger or thirst or repose. Urged forward by an irresistible impulse as they shout, "On to Naples!" the intrepid band gathers strength as it advances, until one man becomes a score, a battalion, a brigade. The disorganized Neapolitan troops exchange the blue waistcoat for the red shirt, shake hands with the volunteers as they pass, and shout with the rest, "Long live Garibaldi!" As their idolized commander pushes forward far in advance of his troops, who no longer advance in regular columns, but precipitate themselves in disorganized masses, multitudes remain standing entire days and nights with a hope of seeing him pass. Those who were so fortunate as to have caught a glimpse of the popular idol were regarded as persons of mark. Any one to whom he had spoken became an object of curiosity, and whatever he touched was at once transformed into a relic.

Francis II fled from Naples to Gaeta in a Spanish man-of-war, and, on the 7th of September, 1860, Garibaldi, accompanied by only seven officials, entered the city in a hired hack, passing directly under the guns of the fortifications, though manned by soldiers of Francis II, who so far forgot their duty to their royal master as to present arms. The capital suddenly became delirious with excitement. All Naples was at the windows or in the streets. As the living tides surged along the crowded thoroughfares or debouched into the public squares, all distinctions were alike forgotten. The citizens were beside themselves for joy. They laughed and wept, they shouted and embraced, amidst enthusiastic cries of "Long live Italian unity!" Had the blood of St. Januarius suddenly liquefied in special recognition of the auspicious event, the excitement could not have been greater than it was. As for Garibaldi, he inaugurated a provisional government; with his usual impetuosity, he launched one proclamation after another, expelling the Jesuits, confiscating the goods of the clergy, establishing juries, and abolishing lotteries. The conquering hero did not hesitate to undertake any thing, however impracticable or visionary, and even proposed, after the reduction of Capua and Gaeta,

to march upon Rome, then liberate Umbria and the Marches, and with the battle-cry of "Italian Unity and Victor Emmanuel!" to advance from victory to victory, until he should unfurl the tricolor from the standards of St. Mark, and proclaim Victor Emmanuel king of Italy from the summit of the Quirinal. But his rapid and successful advance was suddenly arrested before the stronghold of Capua and Gaeta, where Francis II, with the remnant of his army, defended himself with great spirit and obstinacy. The volunteers, who had achieved such brilliant victories on the march, were hardly prepared to conduct the operations of a siege. Then, too, there were evident signs of reaction. The popular enthusiasm began to ebb. The royalists, recovering from their panic, commenced to rally, while the besieged Bourbon army, emboldened by partial successes, attempted to break through the enemy's lines with a view of marching upon Naples. Affairs had evidently reached a crisis.

Garibaldi's extremity was Cavour's opportunity. While the illustrious captain had been winning success upon the field of battle the prime minister had been rendering equally effective service upon the field of diplomacy. He had succeeded in preventing foreign intervention until he could present to Europe a *fait accompli*. He resolved to secure and consolidate the results of the revolution in the interests of Italian unity by substituting a regular for a provisional form of government. He accordingly advised Victor Emmanuel to push forward the Italian troops across the papal frontier with a view of co-operating with the army before Capua. It was a bold, hazardous movement. France showed her disapproval by recalling her minister from Turin; Russia did likewise; while Prussia remonstrated in the most energetic terms. Cavour, as usual, succeeded in pacifying diplomacy with a memorandum, while the battle of Castelfidardo, the liberation of Umbria and the Marches, and the capitulation of Ancona hastened the decisive event. On the 26th of October, 1860, the troops of Victor Emmanuel formed a junction with those of Garibaldi before Capua, a victory followed, and the Bourbon rule in Naples ended.

## Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

## CHAPTER XVI.

*CAVOUR AND THE UNITY OF ITALY.*

AT the commencement of the year 1861 Italy was in a transition state. Tuscany, Modena, Parma, Umbria, and the Marches, which had, after the war of 1859, sought to annex themselves to Sardinia, resolved, by solemn vote, in popular suffrage to consummate the annexation, and, in accordance with the royal order issued on the 3d of January, they elected deputies to the Sardinian parliament, which was to assemble on the 18th of February at Turin. On the 1st of January the king of Sardinia sent forth an address to the people of Italy, recommending prudence, patience, and, above all, harmony. The election of deputies ordered resulted in a triumph of the liberal party, in opposition to the clergy, who, except in the old kingdom of Sardinia, had reviled and resisted the annexation and the measures which would be likely to follow it.

The speech of the king at the opening of parliament on the 18th of February was well adapted to promote harmony and judicious action. "To your wisdom," he said to the deputies, "I commit the concerns of a free and almost wholly united Italy." After enumerating the claims of England and France to their grateful remembrance, he added: "In the consciousness of its power, the kingdom of Italy can follow the counsels of prudence. I have hitherto raised my voice for acts of daring and even rashness; but it is as wise to *wait* at the proper moment as to dare at the present moment. Devoted to liberty, I have risked for her my life and my crown, but no one has a right to put at hazard the existence and the destinies of a nation." Count Cavour sustained the pacific policy of the king in the parliament, and asked that the title of "King of Italy" should be conferred on Victor Emmanuel, that thus the unity of Italy might be consecrated in the royal person. The law enacting this as the royal title passed the senate on the 26th of February, by a vote of one hundred and twenty-six yeas and two nays, and the chamber of deputies unanimously, on the 11th of March. On the same day the king assumed the title, which was recognized by England on the 30th of



Marci, and subsequently by Switzerland, Greece, Denmark, Portugal, and the United States. The recognition of France was given on the 10th of June. Austria protested against it, but without effect.

The Roman question was of course the most absorbing one with the Italian parliament, and it was involved in great difficulties. Since 1848 the Roman government had chiefly been maintained by the over-awing force of Austrians in the legations and the French army in the capital. The defeats of the Austrians by the French and Sardinians at Magenta and Melagnano, in the Summer of 1859, were immediately followed by the evacuation of the States of the Church by the Austrian garrisons. Upon this, several of these states at once revolted from the pope, and proclaimed Victor Emmanuel king, or dictator. As was stated in a previous chapter, the efforts of the papal army to reduce these states to their former condition of obedience were unsuccessful. But Pius IX, though deprived of nearly all his territory, was as defiant as ever, and vehemently exclaimed as usual, "*Non possumus!*" Hence the Italian parliament of 1861 was confronted with the complex Roman question, which affected every thing, from the very constitution of Italian unity by the choice of a capital, to the beliefs, interests, and traditions of the Roman Catholic world through the temporal power; and by the prolonged presence of a French garrison at Rome, it affected the most intimate relations with France. It was at once a national and universal, a religious and diplomatic, question; and it is here that Count Cavour displayed, indeed, the powers of a mind marvelously clear and penetrating, showing himself a master in the art of contriving and combining, absolutely free from vulgar prejudice, and pursuing, by the aid of liberalism, the solution of an apparently insoluble problem.

During the preceding twenty years this question had thrust itself before him, and when he was only the representative of "little Piedmont" he could not fully meet it face to face; but now, as minister of united Italy, he did not shrink from it. He believed that the settlement of it would result in the complete transformation of the political conditions of the papacy. He had one advantage, which belonged to his open and liberal mind, and it had often come to his assistance in all these delicate religious affairs, and that was the absence of any animosity or prejudice as regards the Roman Catholic Church. At the same time he looked upon the temporal power as incompatible with Italian nationality, and even as detrimental to religion. He spoke of it publicly and temperately, like one having a great problem to solve and no sectarian passions to appease. Looking abroad from the

height of a lofty policy, he accepted whatever was in harmony with the object he had in view, and was even anxious to offer the Roman Catholic Church the fullest compensation in liberty and independence for its lost temporal power. One day, about this period, he wrote to a confidential friend: "There are to my mind two methods: the one above board, the other secret. The first would be resolutely to submit the matter to the public judgment: for instance, if I or another member of the cabinet, or the king himself, were officially to declare, either in public speech or before parliament, the views of the government in relation to religious affairs. The second would be to dispatch a secret agent to Rome, whose presence would be unknown to our adversaries, and Antonelli among them: this agent to have the fullest confidence of the government, in a manner to impress the belief that he is the bearer, and may be the receiver, of serious proposals." Cavour had employed both these methods alternately, sometimes simultaneously, as a man who joined to a purely logical mind the rarest flexibility in practical issues.

In the sharpest of these struggles and crises Cavour had communicated secretly with Rome. Early in 1860 the king's private chaplain, Abbate Stellardi, was sent to the pope with the mission to propose a Vicariate, stretching to Umbria and the Marches, as well as over the legations. Pius IX listened suavely, even with some manifestation of emotion, and went so far as to discuss certain points, but finally ended by refusing his consent. When the Marches were being annexed, or shortly afterward, Cavour, instead of widening the breach, did his utmost to moderate the wrath of Rome. He gave orders for the unconditional release of the prisoners, and wrote, towards the end of October, to Dr. Pantaleoni, a friend of his, established in Rome: "I send a person to Rome deputed to yield up the captured *gens d'armes*. The same person is commissioned to inquire whether the Holy Father begins to perceive the necessity of coming to an understanding with us, which the Roman court will do well to do, and by which its spiritual independence will be far better assured than by foreign arms." The same idea had struck Dr. Pantaleoni, and of this came a secret negotiation, continuing up to the close of 1860 and the first weeks of 1861, Father Passaglia speedily becoming associated with it.

There were other concurrent negotiations; but that conducted by Dr. Pantaleoni was the main one. Cavour did not conceal any thing from the French emperor, who had his own projects; but ended by entering into the mysterious business on hand, whose aim was to

sweep away quietly the temporal power. The pope was to remain sovereign, with all a sovereign's prerogatives, rights, inviolability, and honors, retaining a large patrimony in real estate in the kingdom, and absolute ownership of the Vatican, and other palaces and residences. The Church was to be completely free and independent in its spiritual ministry. The state renounced all rights of intervention in the affairs of the Church. It was the notable treaty of peace long dreamed of by Cavour, and summed up in his famous phrase: "A free Church in a free state." If the court of Rome was not serious in this negotiation, it certainly at one time regarded it with some favor. Father Passaglia was the most active intermediary between Rome and Turin, and Cardinal Santucci accepted the office of negotiator. One and the other had interviews with the pope, who listened to them, insomuch that Cavour one day received the following dispatch at Turin: "Cardinal Santucci has thought fit to tell the pope every thing; he has spoken to him of the certain loss of the temporal power, and the friendly propositions that have been made. The Holy Father has shown himself resigned. Antonelli has been summoned; he began with a lively opposition, then became equally resigned, and requested the pope to absolve him and Santucci from the oath, that they might treat of the possible surrender of the temporal possessions. They are to see Passaglia, and the latter asks me, on their behalf, for some one to be indicated here, or sent from Turin, to negotiate. It is desired that the person selected be not a lawyer."

The news was immediately telegraphed to the emperor of France, who, though anxious for success, seemed to have little hope of it. Cavour, perceiving this open door, believed that it was only a step to the altar of compromise within, and he accordingly redoubled his efforts. (After designating the negotiators that had been asked of him he wrote to Father Passaglia, saying, "I entertain the belief that before next Easter you will be able to send me the olive-branch, symbol of peace between the Church and the state—between the papacy and the Italians.") But a sudden change occurred, and at the moment when the first step to a negotiation seemed to be made the question assumed an entirely different aspect. It was evident that Cardinel Antonelli had either pretended to yield for the purpose of controlling the designs of his enemies, and of finding the means to combat them, or else that his hope of evading the necessity had revived, and he thought he saw symptoms of coming events in Europe, signs of a possible intervention of the Catholic powers. The pope, who appeared to be half inclined to reconciliation, was



held back by his wily adviser, and the latter went so far as to give orders to Dr. Pantaleoni to leave the Roman states within twenty-four hours! The enemies of peace, by their intrigues, had achieved a victory for the time, and every thing was in suspense. Cavour had not succeeded by the "secret means;" he had the "public means" to try—the parliament; and he found occasion in March, 1861, in an interpellation addressed to him on the affairs of Rome. This opportune interpellation was for him but another manner of taking up and continuing the negotiation in the light of day, in the face of Italian and universal opinion, and frankly avowing to its full extent and in its grandeur the policy whose realization he had never ceased to prosecute.

Cavour had said in parliament, "The star now directing us is this, that the 'Eternal City,' upon which twenty-five centuries have cast glory of all kinds, should become the capital of the kingdom of Italy." What he had already said he confirmed with more precision and breadth in March, 1861. He was not led astray by imagination and artistic enthusiasm, but confessed that the plain, straight streets of his native town were more attractive to him than all the monuments of Rome. He loved Turin, and it was with regret that he thought of sacrificing it, even exclaiming, "Ah, if only Italy could have two capital cities: one for Sundays, the other for the days of the week!" He made this resolution entirely on political grounds, because the name and majesty of Rome alone could dominate the rivalries of Italian cities, and so put the definite stamp on unity; and he believed that it was a prime necessity to inform Europe that Rome was regarded by the whole nation as vitally the capital of the country. "No city but Rome," he declared, "can be the capital of Italy; but, here we come upon the perplexities of the problem. We must go to Rome, but on two conditions: that we are acting in concert with France, and that the great body of Catholics in Italy and elsewhere do not see in the reunion of Rome with Italy the source of the subjection of the Church. In other words, we go to Rome, but not to restrict the independence of the sovereign pontiff—not to bring spiritual things under the yoke of civil authority."

The plan which Cavour proposed was unquestionably a difficult one to execute, but not an impossibility as regarded France. Cavour said, plainly: "It would be madness, in the present state of Europe, to think of going to Rome in spite of France. . . . We owe France a great debt of gratitude; but there is a graver motive for being in harmony with her. When, in 1859, we called France to

our aid, the emperor did not conceal from us the engagements by which he was bound to the court of Rome. We accepted his assistance without protesting against the particular obligations he had imposed on himself; and now, that we have won so much from this alliance, we can not protest against the engagements to which up to a certain point we have consented." Cavour believed that there was but one way of disengaging France, and quieting with her the whole Catholic world, and that was by giving the Roman Catholic Church what a pretended temporal power—painfully sustained for twenty years by foreign arms, incapable of supporting itself or regenerating itself by reforms—could not give it. This was by establishing the dignity with the independence of the sovereign pontiff and of the Church, by the separation of the two powers, a large application of the principle of liberty in relation to civil and to religious society. "It is clear," Cavour continued to say, "that if this separation were distinctly and irrevocably accomplished, if the independence of the Church were thus established, the independence of the pope would be much more securely based than it is to-day. His authority would be more efficacious, being no longer bound by concordats and all those bonds and treaties which have been and must remain indispensable so long as the pope is a temporal sovereign. The authority of the pope, far from diminishing, will be greatly extended in the spiritual sphere, which is his own. . . . Whether or not an understanding with the pope precedes our entrance into the 'Eternal City,' Italy will no sooner have declared the fall of the temporal power than she will separate Church and state, and establish the liberty of the Church on the broadest foundations."

Cavour sincerely believed what he said, and he was confident that what he asked was in the interests of the Roman Catholic Church, as well as in the interests of Italy. One day when his intimate friend, Signor Artoni, was expressing his doubts and fears, he exclaimed, with his usual vivacity: "I have more faith than you in the effects of liberty. Do you not see that the time has come to settle the question of the temporal power, which has ever been the stumbling-block in the way of Italian nationality, and that the only way to settle it is to reassure the Catholic world as to what Italy will do with the papacy? Injustice is done to Catholicism when it is urged that it is incompatible with liberty. On the contrary, my conviction is that as soon as the Church shall have tasted liberty she will feel herself renewed in youth by that wholesome and fortifying regimen. When Europe shall have been convinced that we are not striving

against Catholicism she will find it natural and fitting that the Italian rather than any other flag should float over Rome. The enterprise is not easy, but it is worth being attempted."

Cavour viewed Catholicism in a purely spiritual light when he denied that it was "incompatible with liberty." He was a liberal Roman Catholic, and desired to promote the welfare of the Church in its religious operations; but the secular, political policy of the papacy was condemned by him, not only because it was hostile to Italian unity, but also because it was the enemy of liberty everywhere. He sought to overthrow the temporal and preserve the spiritual power of the Church. More than any other man, he was made to attempt it. He had not yet succeeded, it is true; but after disentangling a revived Italy from her disorders and divisions he had marked on the horizon a final aim, while shaping the road to reach it. "He himself," says De Mazade, "had touched the supreme point in human destiny, when a man made powerful by freedom, begirt by a solid popularity, though still with struggles before him, can only be stopped by death surprising him in harness, and in the hour of victory."

---

### Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

---

## CHAPTER XVII.

### *CAVOUR'S POLICY VICTORIOUS—THE STATESMAN'S DEATH.*

WHILE the Roman question continued to be a disturbing element in Italian affairs, yet it was only a part of the difficulties which the new situation developed. The more serious and immediate complication was in those southern provinces suddenly annexed to the north. The Bourbon standard, fixed on the rock of Gaeta until the 13th of February, 1861, represented but a vanquished cause, and therefore this military protest, being without response or hope, did not cause the Italian government any uneasiness. The moral condition of that southern region, which was passing through a kind of stormy transition, was a source of discord and danger. The annexation of Lombardy, Tuscany, the Romagna, or Parma, was a safe measure; but the extremity of Italy, at that time, constituted an entire kingdom, separated from the north by manners, customs, and



traditions, and contained a rebellious, ungovernable population. The passionate, exuberant Neapolitans had been so long oppressed and kept in ignorance and degradation by the grinding tyranny and demoralizing influence of the Bourbon kings, that they seemed hardly fitted to appreciate the liberties they had gained. Every element of anarchy remained, and excited in part by the emissaries of Francis II, whose residence at Rome gave him ample opportunities for such intrigues, disorders, and tumults, soon burst out. In this revolutionary interregnum each party, abusing the privileges of an unbounded liberty, naturally took advantage of the fanaticism, the passions, and rebellious instincts of an impressible population, easily arrayed against laws, taxes, and the whole new order of things. The defenders of the fallen *régime* organized a veritable system of brigandage, and covered it with a political cloak. In vain the cabinet of Turin endeavored to bring order out of this chaos by sending a succession of lieutenants—first Farini, then the prince of Carignano, with Cavaliere Nigra; next Signor Ponza di San Martino; but these Piedmontese representatives, who succeeded one another at Naples, confessed their inability to manage these provinces, which, though not really hostile to the government, were undisciplined and turbulent. Indeed, the late Neapolitan kingdom threatened to become another Ireland, so that Cavour was brought face to face with every external and internal complication of an unfinished work.

The great statesman was not yet satisfied with his conquest, and therefore could not rest. He had simultaneously to adjust the relations of a new Italy with Europe, to fix his policy in Venice and Rome, to continue to pacify the southern provinces, assimilate the legislation and administration of all these different provinces, reorganize the army of the new kingdom, and unite six or seven budgets into one, which, from the very first, presented a deficit of five hundred millions of francs! With all his natural vitality and vigor to sustain him, he sometimes yielded to despondency, and asked himself whether he could perform the herculean work on which he was bestowing his energies and his life; but banishing these apprehensions, he soon took courage again. He was assailed by many and serious difficulties—divisions, personal resentments, things, and men; often men in the highest position opposed him, and he was bitterly denounced because he would not consent either to a dictatorship to simplify the work of unification, or a state of siege to quiet Naples. Against all these hostile influences, which arose from the many questions of organization that he directed and settled, he braced himself,

and, though the trials yet in store for him might be severe, yet he hoped to succeed through discussion. His strength was in the parliament and in the confidence of the people, in his immense influence on the popular mind, and in the support of the liberals. His weakness consisted in a situation still unsettled and undecided. Some sudden outburst of fanaticism, or the daring of some popular leader might wreck his policy by rushing headlong into a rash adventure in the direction of Rome or Venice.

In the Spring of 1861, one of those stormy Springs of that period, which, to use Lord Palmerston's expression, "came in like lions," a pretext was given for the revival of the unhappy struggle which had occurred between Cavour and Garibaldi in October, 1860. The question that precipitated the conflict was the dissolution or the reorganization of the army of the south; that is to say, of those volunteers who had gone through the campaigns of Sicily and Naples with Garibaldi. General Fanti, the minister of war, did not consider such an irregular military force a safe thing in a time of high national enthusiasm, and therefore would not have it in the interests of the army; while Cavour would not consent to retain it, because he deemed it inimical to the interests of diplomacy. Great consideration was shown to the officers, and men like Nino Bixio, Coenz, and Medici, who proved worthy of their rank, were made generals, and many others were offered prominent positions in the national army. Although the principle of volunteer service was maintained, yet the southern army was virtually disbanded. The action of the minister of war, who, in the execution of these delicate matters, did not display the highest wisdom, awakened the indignation of Garibaldi.

Cavour, however, was held responsible, and, though desiring to avoid a conflict, he saw that it was inevitable, having been but inefficiently settled in the previous October, and therefore liable at any moment to kindle again with all its fury, and with all its dangers likewise. The prospect of its renewal troubled Cavour, but he accepted it with as little animosity as weakness. After the failure of his plans with regard to Rome and Venice, Garibaldi retired to his island of Caprera, disappointed but not dismayed. He had arranged to meet his companions the following Spring, and, in the mean time, from the depth of his retreat, which he had not even left to attend the meeting of parliament at Turin, he continued to arouse his countrymen by sending forth stirring appeals. He defended the southern army and the volunteers, and advocated a general arming of the people. To a deputation of Milanese workmen, who pre-

sented an address to him at Caprera, he said, among other things: "For\*the holy redemption of this land I rely on the rough hands of men of my stamp rather than on the *lying promises of false politicians*. Notwithstanding the sad effects of a *vassal policy unworthy of the country, and notwithstanding all that the crowd of lackeys upholding this monstrous and anti-national policy may say*, Italy must stand; she must live." While this popular soldier and idol of the people permitted his impetuous patriotism sometimes to lead him to utter intemperate, and perhaps imprudent, expressions, yet there were extenuating circumstances. Garibaldi was the exponent of the popular feeling which, at that time, almost unanimously demanded the speedy completion of Italian unity by the annexation of Rome and Venice. It was also natural that he should feel indignant when the army which he had created, and with which he had become the conqueror of the Two Sicilies, was disbanded at the very moment when it was needed to achieve other victories. Believing that the policy of Cavour was too conservative, he did not hesitate to condemn it, and yet at heart he felt confident that its author was a sincere patriot, though timid.

Shortly after the interview with the deputation from Milan, Garibaldi, in accepting the presidency of the "Association of Italian Unity," delivered another speech, and exhorted his countrymen to fortify themselves against "that cowardly fear which those seek to inspire who have dragged Italian honor in the dust." These fiery declamations produced intense excitement throughout the country, and in the southern part particularly stirred up the passions of the people. With one blow he struck the king, the army, and the parliament of which he was himself a member, reproving them for what he regarded as their subserviency to France. Accustomed to use the most forcible, and at times even violent, language, perhaps he did not calculate the effect of his words; but, as might be expected, they created a profound sensation at Turin and in the chambers. The government was offended, and the deputies declared that the parliament, for the honor of liberal institutions, should protect its good name, and maintain its dignity though it should strike the popular hero. Some of his enemies denounced his course as an outrage, and insisted that he should not have impunity in abuse. Thus this singular conflict began to assume serious proportions; but the question was, Who shall take the initiative? The government, in its official character, hesitated; the president of the council disliked to acknowledge that these offensive words, intended mainly for him, demanded from him a reply;



and if an obscure or unpopular deputy had attempted to assail Garibaldi the movement against him would have been led astray or failed in its object. At length the government party found a champion in the person of Baron Bettino Ricasoli, who had labored earnestly and decisively in the cause of national unity, and possessed an independence both of station and character which qualified, to some extent, to measure swords with Garibaldi, with whom he had intimate relations during the interregnum in Central Italy.

The former dictator of Florence had recently arrived at Turin, and on his first appearance in the chamber his proud and grave aspect, the natural dignity and severity of his manner and person, made a deep impression, inspiring mingled feelings of curiosity and respect. Like many others, the Florentine baron had been wounded by Garibaldi's violent utterances. He proposed to ask the government for explanations on the measures it had taken, or was about to take, with regard to the southern army and the development of the military forces of the nation. But before proceeding to the consideration of these measures he resolved to attack Garibaldi's course, and accordingly, on the 10th of April, 1861, in the midst of an excited assembly, he rose to his feet, all being instantly hushed about him. In spontaneously undertaking to defend the government Ricasoli felt the gravity of the position he had assumed while the chamber waited with anxiety for his *début*, not knowing any thing about him as a public speaker, but simply as the dictator at Florence. With a clear vibrating voice and an imperious tone which gathered fire as it went, he uttered the following words: "A calumny has been circulated abroad concerning one of the members of the assembly. Expressions hostile to the majority in parliament have been attributed to General Garibaldi. They can not have been uttered by him. I know him, and I shook his hand when he was about to take command of the central army. We were then animated by the same sentiments—we were both equally devoted to the king. We both swore that we would do our duty. I have done mine. . . . Who is it, then, that could proudly claim for himself the exclusive privilege of devotion and patriotism, and exalt himself above his fellows? One head only has the right to be higher than any other among us—that of the king. Before him we must all bend, and any other attitude would be that of a rebel. . . . Victor Emmanuel has made our nation. . . . Italy's liberator being the king, and all Italians having marched to liberty under the command of a chief so magnanimous, one citizen is not above another. He who has had the good

fortune to do his duty more generously in a wider field of action or in a manner more profitable to his country, and who has perfectly fulfilled it, a greater duty still lies before him, and it is to thank God for allowing him the inestimable privilege which is granted to so few, of being able to say: 'I have served my country well, I have absolutely done my duty.'" The whole assembly was moved by these words, emphasized by the impressive bearing and vibrating delivery of the speaker, and at times his thrilling sentences called forth enthusiastic acclamations.

Cavour had never before heard his austere Florentine ally and rival speak, and had not always found it easy to deal with him in the affairs of Central Italy, and he listened rather curiously at first; but he soon began to share the universal excitement, and in leaving the house he said to a friend: "To-day I have understood and felt the nature of true eloquence." Others have declared that he said: "Were I to die to-morrow my successor is found." The government was highly pleased with this vindication of royalty, parliament, and the dignity of the nation, and Ricasoli himself felt that he had simply discharged a conscientious and patriotic duty; but he certainly did not express the sentiment of the Italian people in intimating that Garibaldi was a rebel. Ricasoli denounced the intemperate language of the brave general, and yet did not restrain himself. The hero of the Two Sicilies could not decline the challenge, but hastened to Turin, and immediately published a letter disavowing all intentions of censures either towards the king or the national representatives. A collision in parliament was now unavoidable, and the presence of Garibaldi made the scene still more dramatic. For more than a week Turin had been filling up with volunteers, who hurried thither to escort and support their leader. Some feared a conflict between the citizens of that sturdy Piedmontese city, faithful to its king and the followers of the conqueror of Naples; but this was not probable when all were striving to secure the unity of their beloved Italy.

On the day appointed—the 18th of April, 1861,—the sitting was opened with an unusual solemnity. The diplomatic corps had wished to be present, and even the tribunes bent under the weight of an excited crowd. A few moments elapsed, and then Garibaldi appeared in his singular costume—the legendary red shirt and South American poncho. As he entered the galleries burst forth in shouts of welcome, but the chambers remained immovable and cold. When the excitement had subsided Baron Ricasoli, taking up the thread of his former subject, questioned the government as to the southern army,

and the military reorganization of the nation. The minister of war, General Fanti, in his reply, gave a detailed statement of the measures he had adopted and had found necessary. He stated that he had done all he could do for the officers and volunteers of Garibaldi's army, which he claimed was an institution born of the circumstances of the time, and that he could not have pursued a different course without introducing into the regular army a disastrous spirit of rivalry or wounding military feelings and interests.

At this point Garibaldi arose and proceeded to address the assembly. In the beginning he seemed to be embarrassed on this new stage, entangling himself in laborious phrases; but he soon dispensed with circumlocution and went straight to the question at issue. In reply to the charge of antagonism to the government, made by Ricasoli, he said: "I have not given any occasion for *dualism*. It is true that plans of reconciliation have been proposed to me; but these have only been in words. Italy knows me to be a man of deeds, and deeds have always been in opposition to words. . . . Whenever *dualism* could have damaged the cause of my country I have bowed and shall always bow. . . . But I leave it to the consciences of the Italian representatives here present to state whether I can give my hand to one who has made me a stranger in Italy." The scene now became animated, and the assembly was disturbed by loud interruptions, when Garibaldi, returning to the subject of the southern army, which he stated was "the principal object of his presence in the chamber," added with growing excitement: "Having to speak of this army, I should, above all, relate its glorious deeds. The wonders it achieved have been darkened only when the cold and inimical hand of the ministry has made its evil influence felt. When, through love of peace and horror of a fratricidal war, provoked by that same ministry—" At these words, before the sentence was complete, the tempest burst out and protestations were shouted on every side; the real struggle had come at last.

Cavour, who was seated among the ministers, could scarcely restrain himself, and, full of indignation, at length exclaimed: "Such insults as these are not permitted; we can not suffer them; see that proper respect is paid to the government and representatives of the nation. We demand a call to order." Rattazzi, the president, sadly perplexed and almost extinguished in this storm, requested Garibaldi to express his opinions in a form less offensive. Cavour cried out: "He has said that we provoked a fratricidal war; this is far more than an expression of an opinion." "Yes, a fratricidal war!" Garibaldi



vehemently replied. The assembly was now convulsed with an extraordinary agitation. The deputies loudly shouted for a call to order, while the friends of Garibaldi, who crowded the galleries, made the Chambers resound with frantic applause. Violent invectives and abusive challenges crossed each other in rapid succession, and the confusion became so great that the president was compelled to adjourn the sitting until order could be restored. After some minutes the debate was resumed, and Nino Bixio, one of the band of heroes of Sicily and the Volturno, delivered an address in which he endeavored to palliate the violent language of his ancient chief by invoking a patriotic return to reconciliation. "Count Cavour," he hastened to say, "has undoubtedly a generous heart. The earlier part of this day's session should be forgotten. It is a misfortune that it has happened. Let us banish it from our minds."

Cavour, though he had been wounded by Garibaldi's words, and experienced emotions he was unable to repress, controlled himself sufficiently to reply to Bixio's request that the insult should be overlooked, and to enter into an explanation. "It is not," he replied, immediately, "that I flatter myself with the hope of seeing the friendly feeling spring up again which the honorable member, Bixio, has just entreated us to entertain. I know there is one deed which has put a gulf between General Garibaldi and me. I thought to accomplish a painful duty—the most painful I have ever known—in urging upon the king and parliament the approval of the cession of Nice and Savoy to France. Through the pain it caused me I can realize that which General Garibaldi must now feel on the subject, and if he is unable to forgive me for that deed I can not hold it to be a reproach to him." Garibaldi in his turn became more calm, expressing a desire that, according to him, would have a tendency to moderate their dissensions. He said: "Although my sentiments towards Count Cavour are those of an adversary, I have never doubted that he also is the friend of Italy. My wish would be that the honorable count should make use of his powerful influence to cause the law which I propose for the national armament to be adopted; namely, to dispatch the forces remaining of the southern army to a point wherein they might serve Italy by combating a reaction daily growing more threatening. This is my desire."

Cavour was ready to do all he could to relax a situation of extreme tension and to promote reconciliation. After the first moment of indignant feeling had passed away he quickly recovered his coolness, and calmly surveyed the field. He feared that these rashly

kindled conflicts might descend from parliament to the country, and produce civil war, to the destruction of the dawning unity. Hence no effort was too strong for him, and no sacrifice too great. He was even willing to forget personal injuries, and to make concessions in particulars. There was but one thing—the essential one, it is true—that he positively refused, because in it he saw another danger, the external danger. He would at no price, while appearing to submit to Garibaldi's desire, favor a sort of active organization of volunteer corps, in the positive acceptation of the word, believing that such a measure would have the appearance of preparation for an offensive war, and might ruin all his labor of diplomacy, of which he alone had the secret. "We decline to do," he said, resolutely, "what would be a real provocation, because we do not think ourselves bound to follow a provocative policy." Believing this to be the question at issue, Cavour fought with consummate skill for three days, not to win over the Chamber, because that body was already in sympathy with his schemes, but to obtain a clear and decisive consideration, so that the vote might be intelligently given.

Cavour, rising high above the sense of a personal conflict, addressed the Chamber, declaring that the ministry had so often proclaimed to Italy, and also to the whole of Europe, the policy of the government, that they must be familiar with it. He reaffirmed the opinion that the Italian question would not be settled until the independence of the Peninsula was thoroughly established, and the relations of Rome and Venice satisfactorily arranged; but he opposed any adjustment of the Roman question which involved hostility or discord with France. He stated that while the present condition of Venetia was incompatible with a durable peace, yet European interests, and the counsels of friendly governments and powers which had aided Italy in critical times, should be considered. A general war could easily be precipitated; but Cavour expressed his belief that such a policy at that time would be dangerous. At the close of this address the vote for an order of the day, proposed by Baron Ricasoli, was accepted by the government. Thus ended a conflict which began in a wild tumult and uproar, and might have culminated in a serious crisis had not wiser counsels prevailed. After the drama had quietly closed it was followed by an epilogue due to the diplomacy of Victor Emmanuel, who used all his influence to secure a personal reconciliation between Cavour and Garibaldi. He succeeded in arranging a meeting between them in one of the private apartments of the palace. A few days later Cavour wrote as follows to Count Vimercati, at Paris:

"My interview with Garibaldi was courteous, though not warm; we both kept within the limits of reserve. I acquainted him, however, with the line of conduct which the government intends to follow, as regards Austria as well as France, assuring him that on these points no compromise is possible. He declared his readiness to accept the programme, and to be willing to engage himself not to act contrary to the views of government. He only asked me to do something for the army of the South. I gave him no promise; but I told him I would seek a means to provide, as well as might be done, for the future of his officers. We parted, if not good friends, at least without any irritation."

This note, written on the 27th of April, 1861, describes the last interview between these great men. Garibaldi disappeared to return to his Mediterranean island, and Cavour resumed the herculean labors which were rapidly undermining his physical constitution. During his contest with Garibaldi he seemed to be full of vigor, and exhibited a sort of new brilliancy that indicated a generous maturity. As his work became greater and more complicated his resources of strength and activity appeared the more inexhaustible. But the strongest and most robust constitution could not endure the strain to which Cavour was subjected. In winning his last and decisive victory over Garibaldi he had received a heavy blow, the storm of excitement having told seriously upon his nervous system. Excess of work of every kind could hardly be other than murderous to his health. At one and the same time he was engaged in establishing the relations of Italy with Sweden, Denmark, and Portugal; he was in the heat of negotiations with the emperor of the French on the subject of Rome; he was minutely observing the troubled affairs of Naples; he was regulating the finances and attending to the navy of the new kingdom; and every day he was in parliament, taking his part in every discussion. It was not necessary for him to struggle for a majority; but, having it, the responsibility of directing it and preventing the adoption of imprudent measures rested upon him. On the 29th of May he was in parliament, earnestly discussing a project that was to be turned into a sort of manifestation in favor of the republicans fighting at Rome in 1849, and on that day he was more excited and impatient than usual. That evening, on returning home, he seemed weary and gloomy. "I am exhausted," said he; "but I must go on working, for the country needs me. Perhaps this Summer I may be able to take some rest in Switzerland." That same night he was seized with violent indisposition, and grave symp-



toms began to be manifested. For a moment it seemed to be conquered by early care and bleeding—the habitual remedy at Turin—and even Cavour thought himself all right. On the 31st of May he was again able to assemble about him his colleagues of the ministry. He worked with Nigra and Artom, but at length was compelled to yield. After the 1st of June the remedies ceased to be effectual, and all hope vanished. The 2d of June had been appointed by the government as the national fête-day, in commemoration of the achievement of Italian unity; but, amidst the public rejoicings from one end of the Peninsula to the other, Cavour was attacked by his final illness.

As the news of his dangerous sickness spread through the capital the residence of the prime minister was besieged by a silent, anxious, and sympathizing crowd that thronged the court, the vestibule, and even the grand staircase, until long after the hour of midnight, while the telegraph was busy in transmitting the medical bulletins of the illustrious sufferer to the various sovereigns and cabinets of Europe. In this last struggle between life and death Cavour passed from fits of delirium to lucid moments, during which all that had been occupying him came to his mind. As in health and activity, so in the closing hours of life, the welfare of his beloved Italy was ever uppermost in his thoughts. In his paroxysms of delirium he discussed questions of state policy and from time to time called for his private secretary, with a view of dictating dispatches. To his physician he said: "Cure me promptly; I have Italy on my shoulders, and time is precious." With his niece, the Marchioness Alfieri, always attentive at his pillow, and with his friends, Farini and Castelli, he spoke of all he had yet to do, of the loan of five hundred millions which was impending, of the recognition of the kingdom of Italy by France, a letter expected from Count Vimercati in Paris, and of the navy it was necessary to create. He was anxious about Naples, and spoke of it urgently.

"Northern Italy is established," he said. "There are no longer Lombards nor Piedmontese, Tuscans nor Romans. We are all Italians; but there are still Neapolitans. Oh! there is much corruption in their country. Poor people! it is not their fault, they have been so ill-governed! . . . We must impress the country morally: but it is not by abusing the Neapolitans that they will be brought to reason. . . . Above all, there must be no state of siege, none of the measures of absolutist governments. Any one can govern with a state of siege. I will govern them with liberty, and I will show what ten years of liberty can do for these fine countries. Twenty

years hence they will be the richest provinces in Italy. No, have no state of siege; that is my advice to you." Victor Emmanuel wished to visit his illustrious minister, and standing by his bedside affectionately pressed his hand. Cavour, recognizing him, exclaimed: "Oh, your majesty, I have many things to communicate to you, many papers to lay before you, but am too ill, it will be impossible for me to come and see you; but I will send you Farini to-morrow, he will give you all particulars. Has your majesty received no letter from Paris? The emperor is friendly to us now." Sometimes Cavour complained of confusion in his brain, imagining that there was the seat of his malady; he felt that the power of thinking was rapidly leaving him.

After taking leave of his friends and domestics, he requested that the priest of the *Madonna dei Angeli*, the Fra Giacomo, with whom he had seven years previously made every arrangement, should be sent for; and accordingly, at the summons of the Marchioness Alfieri, the priest hastened to the death-bed of the great man, and spent half an hour alone with him. After the padre's departure, Cavour called for Farini, and said to him: "My niece has summoned Fra Giacomo; I must prepare for the great passage into eternity; I have confessed and been absolved. I desire that it be known, that the good people of Turin should know that I died the death of a good Christian. I am without anxiety; I know that I have injured no man." That same day the "good people of Turin," who were anxiously watching the course of the illness, tearfully followed the priest, who carried the viaticum to the dying statesman. The priest himself, it is said, comforted a relative of the count, by reminding her that "no man in this world had known better how to succor and pardon than that one." After administering extreme unction Fra Giacomo recited at the bedside of the illustrious citizen the prayer for the dying, when Cavour, pressing his hand, significantly whispered: "*Frate, frate, libera chiesa in libero stato.*" It was almost in pronouncing these words that, at a quarter before seven o'clock on the morning of the 6th of June, 1861, Count Camillo Cavour "rendered to his God one of the noblest souls that ever animated a mortal being." He passed away in the fifty-first year of his age, a victim of overwork and untiring devotion to his country. He seemed to have been struck down in the heat of action, as on a battle-field on the morning after a victory, which had been secured by the moderation and the greatness of his intelligence. Massari states that "he who did not see Turin that day knows not what is meant by the grief of a people." The town

was filled with mourning. The tribunes of the chambers and the standard on the palace were veiled with crape.

The sorrow occasioned by his death was universal throughout Europe, and in his own beloved Italy the grief of the people was intense beyond expression. His funeral occurred with more than regal pomp. In spite of the rain, which fell in torrents, as if the very elements were in sympathy with the mournful event, an immense concourse of people, with every manifestation of sincere and profound sorrow, thronged the sidewalks or followed in the procession. In all the large cities business was entirely suspended. Even his political enemies recognized his death as a national loss, while the friends of Garibaldi, burying their resentments in his newly opened sepulcher at Santena, followed silently and respectfully in the wake of his funeral car. He died early, but he lived long enough to witness the assured triumph of the policy to which he had dedicated his life and consecrated his genius. What he failed to accomplish himself, with singular prevision he clearly foreshadowed in his speeches. Among the latest of these delivered in parliament was the celebrated one upon the Roman question, which at that time was invested with peculiar interest. Referring to Rome as the capital of Italy, he said: "Our destiny, gentlemen—I declare it openly—is to make the 'Eternal City,' upon which twenty-five centuries have accumulated every species of renown, the splendid capital of the kingdom of Italy. But perhaps this will not satisfy the honorable interpellant who has asked by what means we are to attain this desirable end. I would reply: If you will first inform me as to what will be the condition of Italy and Europe within the next six months I will respond; but if you can not furnish me with the data, I fear that neither I nor any one of the mathematicians of diplomacy will be successful in finding the unknown quantity you seek."

He, however, indicated some of the more rational means to be employed in the solution of this difficult question—as the establishment of a compact and powerful government at home, the modification of public opinion abroad, and the growing conviction in modern society that liberty is eminently favorable to the development of true religious sentiment. He predicted that the time would soon come when "the large majority of sincere and intelligent Catholics will recognize the fact, that the august pontiff, who represents the head of the Catholic religion, would be able to exercise in a manner much more free and independent his spiritual functions guarded by the love and respect of twenty-two millions of Italians than defended by



twenty-five thousand bayonets" of mercenaries and foreigners. He subsequently added: "The moral world is subjected to laws analogous to those of the physical world. The attraction is in proportion to the mass; and, by as much as Italy becomes more strong and compact, by so much will the attraction which she exercises upon Venice (and Rome) become the more powerful and irresistible."

The friends and enemies of the departed statesman alike regarded his death as a national calamity, and even the great men of other countries pronounced glowing eulogies upon his character. In the English House of Commons, Palmerston, following Brougham in the Lords, and Milnes, said: "The name of Count Cavour will live forever, embalmed as it were with gratitude and admiration in the memory of the human race. And when I speak of Count Cavour I do not simply mean to praise him for those administrative acts which have most astonished the world; that is to say, for the unity of his country. He has done many other things that make him no less great. The foundation of the constitutional government in which Italy now rejoices was laid by him; it is he who managed all the affairs of the Peninsula, and secured inestimable benefits to those who are living and to all who will live after us." The sudden death of Cavour awakened a deep and sincere feeling of sorrow in France, and, without doubt, hastened the recognition of the new kingdom of Italy by the French government. "Italy a nation," says De Mazade, "is the legacy of Cavour. The fruit of a policy starting from an idea of independence and patriotism, and embracing internal order, economical interests, religious affairs, and diplomacy, developing and enlarging itself daily, by the help of the most astonishing mixture of dexterity and daring, justice and high-mindedness, practical good sense and un baffled energy in contrivance."

In reviewing the character of the illustrious Italian statesman, and in studying his policy, we are reminded of the remark of one of his distinguished contemporaries, who said that Cavour possessed the two most essential qualities of a great diplomatist—"prudence and imprudence." He was generally cautious, but when a bold movement was necessary to turn the trembling scale in his favor he did not hesitate to inaugurate it. In mediæval Italy, under the shadow of the Roman hierarchy, he advocated the largest liberty and became the champion of free trade, free press, free speech, free schools, and a free Church in a free state. "All the world," he exclaimed, "knows how to govern by martial law; I would govern by means of liberty." He persistently refused to restrict the freedom of the press, though no

one suffered more from its unbridled license than he. And yet, notwithstanding his liberal tendencies, he was always in favor of a monarchical rather than a republican form of government for Italy as better adapted to the temper of her people, and more in accordance with the genius of her institutions. He often repeated that "the form of republic best adapted to the customs and needs of modern Europe has still to be discovered. It presupposes in any case the accomplishment already of that great task of popular education which will be the work of our century."

Cavour was rich and of a noble lineage, but he attached very little importance to birth and position, rarely wore decorations, and did not highly esteem those who delighted in the "pomp of ribbons." In speaking of the gravitating tendencies of modern society, he predicted that within fifty years there would not be a knightly order in Europe. Still he believed that an aristocracy might be useful to Italy, and "*noblesse oblige*" was one of his favorite mottoes. He was generous and conciliatory in his bearing toward all parties, and promptly recognized the good qualities of his opponents. His adversaries of to-day became his allies to-morrow. He was ever ready to extend a friendly hand to any one, irrespective of party antecedents, who was willing to co-operate with him in achieving Italian unity and independence. Like Macchiavelli, he acted upon the principle that the rules of morality which ought to govern the intercourse of individuals are not binding upon societies or applicable to international relations. Hence the dangerous maxim that "the end justifies the means" is painfully conspicuous in his creed as a diplomatist.

"In his personal appearance," says Dr. O. M. Spencer, "Cavour was of medium stature, with a tendency to corpulency, quick and energetic in his movements, with a forehead broad, high, and spacious; his eyes partially closed by weakness, and further concealed by spectacles; his mouth not well formed and somewhat voluptuous, over which played an ironical smile, the joint offspring of mirth and disdain. Nevertheless, the *tout ensemble* of his countenance was expressive of benignity."

## Seventh Decade Continued, 1860-1870.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

*WALDENSIAN MISSIONS IN ITALY.*

WHILE the period from 1860 to 1870 will ever be recognized as an important one in the history of Italy's progress toward national unity and independence, it will also be regarded as a decade of religious awakening. The battle of Solferino made an opening in the ramparts of despotism and superstition, and through it the Bible entered Italy. Before the sound of the cannon had died away "the sword of the Spirit" was unsheathed in the midst of the nation and was smiting "the man of sin." The colporteur, with the sacred volume in his hand, seemed like a prophet come down from heaven, or rather come up from the sepulcher, to reveal truths long concealed from the eyes of the sons of Italy. The Waldenses, who had worn the crown of martyrdom for many ages, were now honored by the God of their fathers, with a grand mission—the spreading of the Gospel throughout the entire land.

Startling events followed one another in rapid succession during the year 1859, and each enlarged the mission field of the Waldenses. Scarcely was the blood of the three great battles—Montebello, Magenta, and Solferino—dry before Austrian Lombardy, Tuscany, Modena, Parma, and a large part of the pontifical dominions had annexed themselves to Piedmont. In 1860, during the brilliant campaign of Garibaldi in Sicily and Naples, the sword of the hero routed armies, put kings to flight, and added Southern Italy to the magnificent dominion of Victor Emmanuel. The Peninsula was subject to one constitution, which granted toleration to the Waldensian Church, thus giving to her, as a field of labor, the whole of Italy from the Alps to Etna. The cannon which vastly extended the area of constitutional liberty also made a wider field of action for the Gospel; and the Waldensian Church, looking down from her native mountains and beholding the country thrown open to Protestant effort, ventured down from her abode of ages, though she had reasons to doubt that uncertain political sky in which the clouds had so often returned after the rain.



At its meeting in May, 1860, the Vaudois synod resolved to establish its college in Florence. In the following Autumn two professors, M. M. Revel and Geymonet, with their families and eight students, departed from La Tour in the "Valleys" and settled in the capital of Tuscany. From the glens of the Cottian Alps to the city of Cosmo was "not a step, but a stride." Truly it was a significant event when the Church of eighteen centuries and of thirty persecutions planted herself on the banks of the Arno. Through the liberality of a few Christian friends the Pallazzo Salviati, a magnificent structure, and the former residence of an archbishop of Florence, became the headquarters of the Waldensian school. Indeed, under its spacious roof the Waldenses found room for all the agencies of their mission. They converted one part of the venerable building into a college with its class-rooms; they formed another part into an elegant sanctuary, capable of containing from three to four hundred hearers. They selected another portion as dwelling-places for the professors; a fourth they destined for schools, and a fifth for the Claudian printing-press, which was now brought from Turin and set to work in the old literary capital of Italy. The purchase money of the building was four thousand pounds, and the alterations and repairs cost two thousand more. This measure, which gave a material foothold to the work of evangelization in Florence, was mainly carried through by Dr. Stuart, of the Scotch Church.

When the Waldenses descended from their mountains they sought not to occupy prominent places, but to perform a great and difficult work, which they were willing to accept with all its responsibilities. They felt that their mission was to evangelize the whole field from Mount Blanc to Mount Etna. In the early part of 1860 they organized a mission station in Leghorn. This city, until eclipsed by the growing prosperity of Genoa, was the chief seaport of Italy. It is truly a race of mosaics and creeds, and under the wise and liberal policy of Cosmo I and Ferdinand I, grand dukes of the Medici family, was noted for religious toleration and unfettered commerce. In the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries it was a general city of refuge to the persecuted and oppressed of all climes. Here fled the Jews in great numbers, chased from every part of the Spanish empire by the pitiless bigotry of its counsels. In 1860 they formed about a fourth of the population, and comprised more than a fourth part of its intelligence and activity. To this city also came many families from France, driven out by religious persecutions or civil wars. Many inhabitants of Corsica, impatient of the Genoese yoke, took

refuge in Leghorn. At the time when the Waldenses visited it to preach the pure Gospel it contained an English church, a Scotch Presbyterian chapel, a Greek temple, a Turkish mosque, and a Jewish synagogue, and the addition of another to its already numerous "rites" should have been an easy matter. Yet it was in the free city of Leghorn that the most violent opposition was offered to the establishment of a Waldensian mission station. A young evangelist was sent there, and he began to hold small meetings in a private apartment. When this fact became known the owner of the house was deprived of his situation and his wife, a dressmaker, of her customers. After great difficulty a hall, which could contain a hundred and fifty persons, was rented. The opposition became more violent, and the audience more numerous. Night after night hundreds went away because they could not obtain admission. The proprietor of the hall was coaxed, threatened, and tempted in every way to cancel his agreement, but he refused. The Society of St. Vincent de Paul, the new form which the Jesuits had assumed, had previously established a branch in Leghorn; hence the excitement of the public mind, the disturbances of the peace, and the deeds of violence which followed.

The Waldensian evangelist was resolved to have a place for worship which he could control, and accordingly leased a piece of ground, upon which he built a wooden shed that could be used as a church until a stone fabric should be erected. The Protestant cause had now obtained a foothold in Leghorn, and its enemies raged still more fiercely. The Jesuits went from house to house arousing the faithful children of the "Mother Church," and urging them to expel the plague of heresy from their city. Bitter complaints and foul calumnies were fulminated from the papal press, and even the slumbering pulpits awoke and began to thunder against Protestantism. Friars, celebrated for their learning and eloquence, were brought from a distance and hired, like Balaam, to curse this new people from the heretical regions of England and the Cottian Alps. But, in the midst of this storm of excitement and clamor, many were silently investigating the doctrines of this sect, every-where spoken against. The Protestant tracts and pamphlets, which had been scattered among the people, had produced a good effect, as the increasing attendance at the wooden shed testified.

Ribet, the young evangelist, was a man of remarkable zeal, undaunted courage, and keen intelligence. He was not in the least intimidated by this opposition, but went to the cathedral and list-

ened to the philippics which the priests uttered against Protestantism. On the next evening he replied, in the presence of a large audience assembled in his own church. This method of conducting the war was not agreeable to the priests, and they determined to employ other weapons. Ribet was warned by several persons, who had learned of the plot, that sixty men had united in a conspiracy to take his life by stabbing him in the dark, and throwing his body into the nearest ditch. While it may have been a *ruse* designed to alarm the evangelist and induce him to leave the city, the report was believed, and henceforward a select number of his hearers escorted him home every evening, and were not satisfied until they saw him safe in his own dwelling. But now the matter was carried from the street corners to the higher tribunal of the government offices. Beneath these noisy discussions there was an important principle. The question at issue was whether the law or the priest should rule the country. The law said, "Protestantism must be tolerated." The priest said, "It must be suppressed." A regular application had been sent to Turin for the government sanction to the opening of the new Waldensian church, and it was now to be decided which was the supreme power in Italy, the constitution or the papacy. Cavour was then at the head of the nation, and, though not a Protestant, he felt that Protestantism must be tolerated as a logical necessity of liberty. He therefore sent down an order to the officials at Leghorn for the opening of the Waldensian temple; but unfortunately the administrators of the law were against the law, and the order from Turin remained a dead letter. Cavour was requested to send another, which was placed in the hands of the same authorities; but it was treated with the same contempt as the former. It seemed as if the constitution could not make effectual its article which guaranteed toleration. A third time Cavour was asked to protect the Protestants in the enjoyment of their rights, and after some delay and many difficulties, a third order was dispatched, this time not to the Leghorn officials, but to Dr. Revel of the Waldensian college at Florence, and the result was that the new church at Leghorn was opened in June, 1861.

The details of this conflict are given, not only because they show the true state of the public mind at that period, but also because issues were involved which concerned the entire Italian nation. Toleration had been inserted in the national code, but not as yet in the opinion and practice of the people. The firmness of Cavour made this a test-case in the working of the constitution, proclaiming, as



it did, that that instrument was able to confer the religious liberty which it promised. It is a significant fact that the signing of the third order which established religious freedom in Leghorn, and prospectively throughout Italy, was among the last acts of that great man and minister. He had devoted his life to the grand work of securing the unity and independence of his country, and now, at the close of his earthly career, he is permitted to practically enforce the policy expressed in those favorite words, uttered by him so often during his public life, and breathed to his spiritual guide in the dying hour: "*Libera chiesa in libero stato.*" By the official recognition of the little Waldensian chapel in Leghorn he opened the door of the "free state" for the admission of the "free Church."

In a letter, written by Dr. Revel of Florence to a clergyman in America, on the 4th of November 1860, encouraging statements relative to the progress of the Gospel are found. "As we have already," he says, "in Central and Northern Italy more than forty colporteurs, and as the kingdom of the Two Sicilies is now open to free intercourse, and by consequence to the free circulation and preaching of the Word of God, I have thought that I would look after one or two colporteurs, and send them to Sicily, where some friends, who are under the banner of Garibaldi, write us that much could be done as well in the military hospitals as in the midst of the population. But, as I have said, it would be necessary for me to find some one already accustomed to the business. I have at length found two colporteurs, who have labored in Lombardy and the duchies, and whose engagements with a German committee of Elberfeld terminate with the month of October. These colporteurs are the two brethren, Joseph and John Cereghini, two cousins belonging to those remarkable families of the Cereghini of Favale, a small commune in the mountains at the foot of the Apennines, about fifteen or twenty miles from Genoa. They were led to the knowledge of the pure Gospel ten years since, and have given the best proofs of fidelity in the service of Jesus Christ in the midst of many trials. I have great confidence that they will discharge their duty well, and that God will bless their labors. They set out for Palermo, where a friend recommends them to persons of his acquaintance. They are furnished with necessary books, and there is already a Bible depository in Sicily. They have desired to go both together, and we find that this is better, especially in a distant country, and one that is not very well known. If you would be willing to bear the expenses of one, I hope to find readily the means of paying the other."

On the 6th of November, 1860, Dr. Revel, in a letter to Rev. A. E. Campbell, D. D., Secretary of the "American and Foreign Christian Union" at New York, gives some interesting facts concerning the evangelization of the Peninsula. "You know," he says, "that we have added to our old stations for Italian evangelization—to-wit: those of Pignerol, Turin, Casale, Alexandria, Genoa, Favale, Courmayeur and Aosta—the stations of Milan, Pisa, Leghorn, and Florence. We are now hoping to send a minister to Bologna and one to Naples, where they have written us that a Waldensian minister is a great desideratum. The reports which we receive from our evangelists are exceedingly interesting, and full of encouraging facts. To mention only one station, that of Courmayeur and Aosta, the evangelist tells us that he has in the former place an audience which reaches fifty, and in the latter a congregation which sometimes amounts to one hundred and fifty. He reminds us that Calvin made his appearance at Aosta in 1536, and wrought such a religious movement that the Reformation came within a hair's breadth of being established in the whole province. An order of death arriving from Turin compelled Calvin to flee, and ruined for a long time the evangelical cause. Calvin had only five minutes to save himself. There are inscriptions and a monument in the city of Aosta, which are destined to perpetuate the memory of his flight. It is this which explains the custom of the clergy of striking the noon bell at eleven o'clock, this being the hour at which Calvin fled. They inflicted the severest cruelties on the adherents of the Reformation. Some they burnt alive on the public square; as for instance, Nicholas Sartorius. The greater part, terrified, returned to Romanism. Only three families remained steadfast, and they continued to exist to within forty years ago. Two of them bore the name of Bruno, and the name of the other was Savoie. They are now extinct except one of the Brunos, whose son attends our meetings. Our evangelist says that he has often heard the piety and steadfastness of the aged Savoie spoken of in the highest terms of praise. He was blind; but he did not fear, forty years ago, to assemble his friends at his house to explain to them the Word of God, and to pray and encourage the faith of his brethren. Five priests labored to convert him in his last moments. But this was in vain. He continued steadfast to the end, confounding the priests, and received here below from men, as a reward for his steadfastness, a burial in the place appropriated to suicides and the vilest felons."

The wonderful opening in Italy in 1860 for the spread of the

pure Gospel attracted the attention of philanthropists and Christian workers every-where. Among these was the Rev. John M'Clintock, D. D., a learned and eloquent minister of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and at that time the pastor of the American chapel at Paris belonging to the "American and Foreign Christian Union." In a letter written at Paris on the 6th of November, 1860, he says: "The direct effect of the vast political changes that have taken place in Italy is to open that country to Protestant agencies. If there was a field calling for immediate and energetic labor on the part of the Protestant Church that field is Italy; and *the time is to-day*. Every month that passes now without improvement is equal to a year of ordinary time. I trust that the AMERICAN AND FOREIGN CHRISTIAN UNION will throw itself boldly into this work, trusting that American Christians will sustain them in grand enterprises for the planting of earnest, practical Protestantism in the chief cities of Central and Southern Italy. But besides the direct effect of political changes there is a great controversy waging in the bosom of the Church itself on the question of the temporal power of the pope. The bishops and great functionaries of the Church affirm that the temporal sovereignty is necessary to the independence of the pope; the Italian people, on the other hand, demand the city of Rome and the 'patrimony of St. Peter' as part of the territory of the new 'kingdom of Italy.' Liberal Roman Catholics all over Europe sympathize with the Italian people; and there are many, both of the clergy and laity, who believe that the Roman Church itself will be greatly strengthened by the abolition of papal sovereignty. This doctrine is energetically maintained in the *Observateur Catholique*, a journal in the interest of Gallicanism, edited by the Abbé Guettée, and published twice a month. It deals vigorous blows, not only against the temporal power of the pope, but also against the new doctrine of the Immaculate Conception, and against the Ultramontane theories generally. This journal must find a good many persons in the Roman Church to sympathize with its views, as it has managed to live for five years, and appears now to be more vital and active than ever before."

Dr. M'Clintock, in another letter to the secretary of the "American and Foreign Christian Union," written on the 10th of December, 1860, refers to the instrumentality that was being employed for the regeneration of the Italian people. "The evangelization of Italy," he says, "is now, perhaps, the greatest and most pressing question for Protestantism. Italy is no longer the land of the past



or of the dead. Grand as her history has been, none of its pages are nobler than the latest. Instead of the decrepitude of age, which the world has supposed to be her condition, she is showing the power, the vitality, the energy of youth. The Waldensian Church seems to have been preserved and disciplined by Providence in order to its preparation for the great part which it now seems destined to play in the work of introducing and establishing the Gospel in Northern and Central Italy. The question of its adaptation to this task is discussed with great judgment in the *Chrétien Evangélique* of Lausanne, for November. I beg to submit to your readers a few of the points of this discussion. A French Protestant journal some time since made the remark that the Waldensian Church can not do the evangelizing work now called for in Italy for the reason that, 'in spite of their Italian patriotism, they have neither the blood, the character, nor the habits of Italians.' This charge is answered by Pastor Meille, of Turin, who, while admitting that the Waldenses are not, indeed, *such* Italians as the inhabitants of Naples, Rome, or even Tuscany, shows that they *are* the Italians of the mountains; and in point of patriotism and love of country have through many ages shown no inferiority to the people of the plains. As for *habits* and manners, Pastor Meille thanks God that the Waldenses are *not* to be identified with the southern masses trained up in Romanism; but, instead of finding in this a disqualification, he sees in it the strongest reason why they should be employed in rescuing their less fortunate brethren from the degradation into which ages of superstition have reduced them. He concludes by expressing the belief, in which I think most American Christians will agree with him, that the 'Church of the Waldenses, as an Italian Church, is destined for this work, both by right and by duty; and that she would show herself unfaithful to her mission if she did not place herself at the head of the movement.'

"Let the post of honor, of duty, and of trial be granted to this long-suffering, persecuted, but faithful Church of Christ. Instead of disputing her *right* to this post, let us hold up her hands, and give her all the moral and material support in our power. And what we do let us do quickly! The time is now more favorable for Christian effort in Italy than it has been for centuries. But who knows how long this bright day may last? Let us use it, at least, for the *sowing of seed*. Whatever may happen in the political world, the seed will not be wasted; God will take care of it, and it may germinate in the darkness, if not in the sunshine. A writer in the same journal

classifies the Italians with reference to their susceptibility of religious impressions as follows: The upper and more cultivated classes are so preoccupied with the great political questions of the time that they are for the present almost inaccessible to appeals on the side of personal religion. They see that the papacy stands in the way of Italian liberty and unity, and they are therefore learning to hate the papacy. But they are *not* learning to love Christ. The reaction from Rome, for the present at least, and during the 'storm and pressure period of politics' amid the birth-throes of the new Italian empire, is likely to carry them into the domain of indifference, if not of infidelity. In the opposite extreme are the very poor, the lowest classes of the Italian peasants. Their ignorance and superstition are very great. A low and sensual type of religion satisfies them, and it is very difficult to awaken their minds to hear or think of any thing better. Between these extremes there is a middle class, consisting to a large extent of mechanics and working-men in the towns and cities. They are better informed than the country people, and therefore less submissive to the commands of the priests, and less superstitious. They read, talk politics, and are profoundly interested in the Italian movement. And the same activity of mind which makes them eager for newspapers inclines them to listen to colporteurs, to receive, buy, and read Bibles and Testaments. It is among this class, to all appearances, that the foundations of the new Protestant Church of Italy are to be laid. And among this class the intelligent, sober, diligent Waldensian evangelists and colporteurs have found a hearty welcome. Their 'success,' to cite the language of one of their own number, 'if not brilliant, has certainly been thus far highly encouraging.'

"What has been done in Piedmont in the last ten years certainly augurs well for the rest of Italy, now that it is open to the zealous men who have labored so faithfully in the North. But the field is vast, and the laborers are few. The feeble Church of Piedmont can not do this work alone. There is room in Italy for the activity of every Christian Church in England and America; and the Waldenses, instead of repelling foreign aid, welcome it—even implore it. The British and Foreign Bible Society is doing a noble work in the distribution of the Word of God in Italy by the agency of twenty-four colporteurs. The Edinburgh Bible Society employs eight. The American Bible Society, wisely acting through the Geneva Committee, employs ten. The Waldensian Church is scattering its evangelists and colporteurs, both on the main-land and in Sicily. Considering that it was safer to offer Bibles and to preach evangelical

religion in Turkey two years ago than in Central and Southern Italy, we may well exclaim, in view of the present state of things, 'What hath God wrought!' I trust that the AMERICAN AND FOREIGN CHRISTIAN UNION will find many ears open to listen to its appeals for aid in this crisis of Italian evangelization."

Soon after the establishment of the Waldensian mission in Leghorn a student, of the name of Gregori, having written a religious tract, was indicted for attacking the religion of the state, and brought to Lucca for trial. He was acquitted, and on the same evening thirty citizens of the town waited upon him, and prayed him to remain there and instruct them. Services were held in a hall; but the landlord, fearing the bigoted populace, turned the evangelist and his flock into the street. A house was offered for sale, and they resolved to buy it. The bargain was concluded, the title-deeds were signed—when, to their surprise and joy, they discovered that the house which they had purchased was the identical building in which their fathers three centuries ago had worshiped God. They had obtained one of the old temples of the Reformation.

This church was opened several months afterwards, and the little handful of Protestants had a place, despite the intrigues of the monks and the subserviency of the landlords, where they could regularly assemble for worship. The first service was largely attended because the priests, desiring to ridicule the occasion, had announced that, according to custom, the *evangelici* would sacrifice an ox in honor of the devil. The result was that the country people in great numbers flocked to town, anxious to behold the wonderful scene. They waited until the close of the service, expecting every moment that the animal would be led forth and slain; but no such event occurring, the spectators retired in disappointment and disgust, denouncing in the strongest terms those who had deceived them.

Thus, after three centuries of darkness, the light of the Gospel returned to Lucca. The first ray shone upon it in the sixteenth century, when Peter Martyr proclaimed the truths of the Reformation there and organized a Church. In no other city did so many distinguished families embrace the Protestant cause. Driven into exile, these illustrious men carried with them to Geneva the light which their native town did not appreciate, and while the city of their adoption was radiant with the glory of evangelical truth a deeper gloom enveloped Lucca. But in 1862 a spark from the altar of the Waldensian Church fell upon it, and, fanned by opposition, became a religious flame. But three hundred years did not remove the big-



otry and poverty of the inhabitants. The Waldensian evangelist found in its population of less than thirty thousand a priest for every thirty-three inhabitants, and also twenty convents. He, no doubt, saw the *Volto Santo*, of which the Lucchese are proud, a crucifix which they affirm Nicodemus attempted to paint, but, not having sufficient skill, an angel, it is said, snatched the pencil from his hand and completed the work! The superstitious residents of the city boast of a standing miracle in the river, which once flowed near Lucca, but is now about two miles distant from it. They claim that St. Fredian diverted the stream from its course to prevent the inundation of the city. Macchiavelli, in his "History of the Florentine Republic," states that the bed of the Serchio was changed, not by the saint, but by the spades of the Lucchese, who, hearing that the Florentines, with whom they were then at war, had contrived to dam up the Serchio and drown Lucca in its own river, hastily dug a new and more distant bed for its waters.

The Waldenses did not have any serious opposition to the work of evangelization in Milan. Indeed, the capital of Lombardy has always been more progressive religiously, intellectually, and politically than any other city in Italy. The famous edict of Constantine the Great, which closed the era of primitive persecutions, and extended toleration to Christianity throughout the Roman Empire, was issued from Milan, A. D. 313. Here lived St. Ambrose, one of the most renowned fathers of the early Church, and a man of deep piety and great courage. By his religious influence he maintained the purity and independence of the Church of Milan, and made his metropolitan see, of which he was archbishop for more than twenty-two years, paramount in the councils of Christendom. He died A. D. 397; but his earnest, devout spirit long survived him, and several of his hymns are still sung in the churches of Milan.

The character of the people of Lombardy must have been different from, and perhaps superior to, that of the other races that have inhabited Italy from age to age. If climate and scenery have a controlling influence upon men, it is not difficult to explain why the Milanese have always desired civil, religious, and intellectual freedom. The city is surrounded by a vast plain, majestically guarded on one side by the snowy Alps, and on the other by the blue Apennines. In every direction fadeless verdure and inexhaustible fertility can be seen. The writer climbed the central tower of the Duomo, and beheld that lovely plain—worthy to have been the site of Paradise—extending from the snow-clad Ortler-Spitz, which rises like a

dome in the east, to the shining pyramid of Monte Viso on the border of the Waldensian land, at least a hundred and fifty miles to the westward. It is impossible to look upon the enchanting scene without feeling that no other garden on earth can be more lovely. Raurmer, the historian, says: "Milan stands in a sea of green trees, as Venice stands in a sea of green waters." For miles around, the landscape is a mosaic of ruddy grape and golden grain, of sycamore and mulberry woods, in which are half-concealed white villas and old historic towns. Through this measureless expanse flow noble rivers, which the suns of Summer release from their prison of Alpine ice to water the plain, and to be the "Gihon" and the "Hiddekel" that adorn this modern Eden; while the mountains which defend it on the north, pure and white as alabaster, and almost touching the heavens in their loftiness, seem, says the eloquent Dr. Wylie, "to be the gates and towers set up by the great Architect of all to inclose" what was lovely enough to have been "the seat of primeval innocence." The rugged scenery of the Alps and the invigorating air which circulates on the plain at their feet impart to the Milanese that activity and independence of character for which they have always been celebrated.

While the proximity of the Alps has been a source of material benefit to the people of Milan, it has, without doubt, conferred upon them moral blessings. In the Alpine valleys of Piedmont the Waldenses have preserved the pure faith of the Gospel since the apostolic days, and they also endeavored to propagate it among their neighbors. The heaven of truth manifested itself among the Milanese at a very remote period, and it seems probable that the Waldenses on their borders secretly deposited it there. Hence, Milan was in a favorable state for the reception of the Reformation in the sixteenth century, and under the labors of the distinguished Celio Secondo Curio the Protestant cause rapidly advanced in that city. When the Inquisition subsequently began its bloody work there, martyrs were not wanting who could endure the most terrible sufferings, and then die in the triumphs of that faith which they refused to abjure. For many a dreary century the night of idolatry covered the capital of Lombardy; but the darkness of priestly tyranny is being dispelled. Its glorious past will be followed by a yet more glorious future. It was the first of all the cities of Italy to raise its voice in behalf of a religious reformation. One of its journals, in the Summer of 1861, discussed the question in a series of able-spirited articles, in which the doctrines of the papal Church were boldly impugned, and a

reform of her faith as well as a reconstruction of her government demanded.

After the planting of a mission in Milan by the Waldenses in 1859, the truth spread rapidly, and entered the towns and villages on the plain around. Intra, Como, Monza, Varese, Caravaggio, Bergamo, Brescia, Cremona, Parma, Guastalla, Modena, Pavia, Bologna, and Ferrara were visited by evangelists, and Northern Italy heard the pure Gospel for the first time since the suppression of Italian reformation. The Protestant religion also penetrated the remote Valley of Aosta, a continuous winding path of beauty and grandeur, which extends from the plain of Piedmont to the glaciers of Mont Blanc. The oldest mission station in the valley is Courmayeur, at the foot of Mont Blanc. A minister of the Free Church of Scotland, in search of health, visited it in 1856, and by his efforts a religious interest was first awakened among the people. In the midst of opposition, a little Church has grown up, and there, on the verge of the eternal snow, these faithful disciples maintain family worship in their humble cottages, and, by the distribution of Bibles and other evangelistic agencies, endeavor to win the simple mountaineers around them to the Protestant faith. Another station is the town of Aosta, and, though its population is not much over one thousand, it had forty priests at the time when the Waldensian colporteur first visited it in 1861. It is said that during the three ensuing years these naturally indolent teachers actually preached more sermons than during the previous thirty. They discussed but one topic, and that was Protestantism, and their whole aim seemed to be the warning of their flocks against the dangers of heresy. Fearing that their hearers might be tempted from the "old paths," these papal shepherds occasionally burned Bibles in the public square. It is not strange that they were alarmed when fifteen hundred copies of the Word of God were sold in Aosta in 1861. In the same year the attendance at the Protestant service amounted to one hundred and thirty persons; but the audience was diminished by the troubles resulting from the burial of the colporteur Doro, who was thrown into a grave at night where only criminals are interred. Soon after the congregation numbered eighty persons, and in the surrounding villages the evangelists found many present to hear the Word. The third station in the Valley of Aosta is Montestrutto, and around it several smaller stations are clustered.

There are many spots in Italy where the sixteenth century sowed and the nineteenth reaps. Among these is Aosta, where John Calvin



resided for some time. When he departed, he left behind him a few disciples of the Reformation. The footprints of the great reformer were not entirely obliterated at the end of three centuries, for when the evangelical movement entered the Valley of Aosta one or two Protestant families were found there who had in their possession some heir-looms of the Reformation in the shape of works which had escaped the keen eyes of the inquisitors of Rome. These links that connect the past and present are full of thrilling interest because they are striking illustrations of the providence of God. The earnest, faithful servant of Christ should be encouraged to persevere in the work of sowing the good seed. These fruits of the Reformation show that the seed will not perish, and, though it may remain below the surface one, two, or even three hundred years, it will finally spring up. Every particle of it will rise again in the coming glorious harvest of the earth; and all who have sowed from Paul to Augustine, and from Augustine to our own day, shall reap together in joy. The battles of the past in Italy, which were fought to promote civil and religious liberty, and the blood of martyrs, which the earth drank up, were the seed whose fruitage is now beginning to appear.

The island of Elba, in the Tuscan Archipelago, celebrated as the spot where the conqueror of Europe resided a short time before his last great struggle, was first visited by an evangelist in 1861. As early as 1855 some sailors from the town of Rio carried a freight of charcoal in their *speranzella* to Nice, where they became acquainted with M. Say, a Waldensian evangelist, and Francesco Madiai. When they departed, the captain of the vessel was presented with a Bible by Madiai, which he carried with him to his home in the island of Elba. This Bible first converted the captain, and then several of his neighbors; and soon a small company of believers gathered around the sacred volume, which was to them a pastor. They were persecuted, but their numbers increased. In 1861, when the country became free, Dr. Stuart, of Leghorn, sent them an evangelist. The priests and monks excited the passions of the people, declaring that the devil had invaded the island, and that, unless expelled, terrible judgments would befall the inhabitants. When the evangelist appeared on the street he was pointed at, insulted, frequently stoned, and if he crossed the threshold of a dwelling the holy water of the Church was brought to wash out the pollution. The little flock endured every species of persecution short of death; and by their firm attachment to the Gospel, their courageous, patient, and loving spirit, and their simplicity and dignity of manner, they finally disarmed the op-

position which the priests had raised, and, without the interference of the civil authorities, secured protection from their fellow-citizens.

The territory extending from Ravenna to the southern extremity of Italy was, previous to 1859, under the dominion of the pope and the king of Naples. It was a region of thick darkness, where ignorance and superstition prevailed. In the early part of 1861 the people of Naples manifested a great desire for the Word of God, and purchased many copies of it from the colporteurs. The sword of Garibaldi had recently brought to them political liberty; but only the "Sword of the Spirit" could deliver them from spiritual bondage. In the *Strada Toledo*, the most crowded street in that city, a lad sat behind a "stand," that resembled a "tray," filled with Italian Bibles and Testaments, and called out, in a broad Neapolitan accent that arrested the attention of all, "Il Libro! Il Libro!"—The Book! The Book! The clergy, of course, were opposed to the unrestricted circulation of the Bible. To many of them it was almost an unknown book, and therefore they naturally believed that it was dangerous for the masses. The only Bible in the Italian language that the priests of Central and Lower Italy, and particularly what was called the "Kingdom of the Two Sicilies," had seen previous to the Summer of 1860 was Martini's version, with notes, in several large volumes, which could be found in the book-stores. There were a few priests, however, who seemed to be delighted with the distribution of the Bible and religious tracts. A printer in Naples, having obtained a copy of the famous "Letter of Dr. Desanctis to Pius IX," was so pleased with it that he issued it in the form of a broad-sheet tract, and posted a large number on the corners of the streets. It was eagerly read by the people, who openly indorsed its sentiments. On one occasion a colporteur from Tuscany was touched on the shoulder by a priest, who came up behind him as he stood in the crowd reading this remarkable document. "Buy it, buy it," said the priest, "and keep it as long as you live, for it is the truth." Sometimes a Garibaldian soldier, as he passed along the street and heard a bigoted priest denouncing a colporteur or Bible-vender for selling the Word of God, would express by his words and looks great displeasure at such conduct, and frighten away the "son of the Church," for the amusement of the bystanders.

Another indication of the progress of reform at Naples was the organization of a committee of priests under the appellation of the "Union of the Ecclesiastics of Southern Italy." Their programme comprised: *First*. The creation of an ecclesiastico-political journal,

aiming solely to instruct the people, and to propound and formulate projects of reforms in discipline. *Second.* A uniform system of preaching, with a view to attain the double political and religious end, the extinction of hypocrisy and superstition, with national unity under Victor Emmanuel. *Third.* Gratuitous instruction in religious and political duties, for all classes. *Fourth.* Assistance for the sick in the hospitals, and a method of assisting and succoring prisoners. Gavazzi, who had been preaching in the city for some time, addressed this association of liberal priests, and in his speech attacked the spiritual as well as the temporal power of the pope. An uproar was threatened if he should be permitted to preach any more in the cathedral, and his friends, desiring to avoid a disturbance, advised the ex-Barnabite monk to desist for a short time.

In an interesting letter written by Dr. Revel, of Florence, on the 22d of January, 1861, and addressed to Dr. Baird, corresponding secretary of the "American and Foreign Christian Union," the statement was made that all the stations of the Waldenses in Tuscany were in a hopeful condition. A minister who had been recently sent to Pisa reported an attendance of sixty regular hearers, and the organization of an elementary school. He was assisted by a young Tuscan teacher, who went through his preparatory course in the normal school at La Tour. The special meetings that were opened for the young people were productive of good; and the Sabbath-school was a blessing to the children, and also to the parents. The congregation at Florence rapidly increased, varying from eighty to one hundred and twenty, and including about sixty communicants. The school for boys, and the one for girls, containing thirty-five scholars, the Sabbath-school, and the Christian Union for the young gradually advanced, and the theological students by their punctuality and industry rendered themselves useful.

Dr. Revel, while communicating these facts to Dr. Baird, thanked him for an appropriation to support colporteurs and students of theology, saying: "I am under special obligations to you for all the efforts you feel yourself called to make in order to excite the active and the generous sympathy of the friends of the Gospel in the United States in favor of this work of Italian evangelization, so wonderfully prepared by the Lord, contrary to all human foresight. I hope that the friends of the Lord in the British Isles and the United States will succeed in combining their efforts with ours, so as to accomplish a work whose foundation shall be clear, sure, and Biblical, and shall have a *future*. For, if the Lord permit us to-day to labor



with a great degree of liberty and in comparative peace in the extension of his kingdom in this Peninsula, to-morrow, perhaps, the storms will descend on us, and if the spiritual edifice has not been founded on a rock, and built of incombustible materials, the fire of affliction will destroy the whole superstructure." The same writer, who was chairman of the Waldensian Missionary Committee, stated that in the Summer of 1861 eleven ministers, eleven male and female teachers, and four evangelists, not ordained, were employed in the missionary work. Besides these there were a dozen colporteurs, who received as compensation eighty francs each per month, which amounted to twelve hundred francs each per annum, or two hundred and forty dollars. Dr. Revel estimated the number of colporteurs then at work in Italy at about forty, and also declared that the Waldensian Churches could furnish many capable men to sell and distribute Bibles and religious tracts, and that the synod had at various central points, such as Turin, Leghorn, Perugia, Milan, Bologna, Naples, and Palermo, ministers and other laborers, who could superintend and direct them.

One of these colporteurs visited the mountains and valleys of Piedmont with his *permit to sell*, delivered by the intendent of Pignerol. With a pack of books on his back, he went from place to place, and when his stock was reduced, he came to Turin and replenished it at the central depot, or *Evangelical Library*. From thence he passed to Alexandria, Placentia, Reggio, and Bologna; then crossing the Apennines, he arrived at Florence, where he remained several days, selling in the city and its environs; and filling his pack, he pursued his journey through Arezzo, Perugia, Foligno, Spoleto, Monte Calvo, Sora, Iserna, Capua, and other places until he came to Naples. In the latter city he made another halt, again supplying himself at the depot recently established there, and resumed his Bible-pilgrimage through Salerno, Policastro, Cozenza, Monte Leone, and Reggio. From thence he proceeded to Messina, where he made good sales, and then visited Palermo, where a depository had been established. He subsequently made a tour through Trapani, Marsala, Girgenti, Noto, Catania, and Messina, having traversed the Italian peninsula from one extremity to another, selling the Book which the Romish priests opposed with fury, without having been *molested* in one place, and every where *protected* by the civil authorities.

The death of Count Cavour on the 6th of June, 1861, was deeply felt and deplored by the Protestants of Italy. The monthly

journal called, *La Buona Novella*, published at Turin, and, in a sense, the organ of the Waldensian Churches, appeared in mourning, on the 15th of June, and contained a brief editorial notice of the great statesman, showing his claims to the regard and gratitude of the Italian Protestants. The latter, however, were encouraged by the appointment of Baron Ricasoli to succeed Cavour as prime minister of Victor Emmanuel, because they believed that he would maintain the existing liberal policy toward them. Another recent event of importance was the meeting of the Waldensian Synod at La Tour. Besides the regular members, comprising ordained ministers, whether pastors, professors, or missionaries, and two elders from each of their fifteen Churches in the "Valleys," there were present the Rev. Messrs Stuart and Young from Leghorn, Murdoch from Nice, M'Dougal from Florence, Viaux of Genoa, and delegates from Christian bodies in the Canton de Vaud, France, and England. Among the persons present was the noble and venerable General Beckwith. The services continued several hours each day, and were extremely interesting. Full reports were read relating to the interior condition of the Churches as well as the work of evangelization and colportage in Italy. The receipts of the *Table*, or committee *ad interim* of the synod for salaries of pastors, professors, schools, hospital, orphan asylum, etc., were 140,335 francs, or nearly twenty-eight thousand dollars, and the payments were 134,757 francs, or nearly twenty-six thousand eight hundred dollars. The receipts of the *Commission of Evangelization*, of which Dr. Revel was chairman, were 83,457 francs, or sixteen thousand five hundred dollars, and the payments 79,692 francs, or fifteen thousand seven hundred and fifty dollars. This comprised the receipts and expenditures for colportage, as well as the employment of missionaries. The donations for mission work exclusively were 52,642 francs, or about ten thousand five hundred dollars, the larger portion of which came from Christians in Great Britain, the United States, Germany, Switzerland, Holland, and Sweden.

In the Summer of 1861 Gavazzi visited England to interest British Christians in the good cause of Italian evangelization. At a *conversazione*, or familiar meeting of friends in the drawing-rooms of the Dowager Countess of Ducie, he spoke of the state of religion in Italy from a threefold point of view:—1. As affecting and affected by the government; 2. In relation to the people; 3. In reference to the work of evangelization, then progressing. He cherished the most hopeful expectations as to the tendencies and policy of the new gov-

ernment. Indeed, with Ricasoli he had even greater hopes than with Cavour, because the former was reputed among the Tuscans to be himself a Christian man. He described the extraordinary eagerness to hear the Gospel which prevailed among the people. But though for the most part only nominally Romanists, it must not be therefore concluded, he said, that they would readily embrace the truth, or openly disconnect themselves from the papacy. He dwelt on the difficulties arising from popular prejudices and antipathies to certain names, such as "Protestant," and illustrated in his characteristic style the mode in which these difficulties could alone be met. He next gave details with regard to preaching and Bible circulation in different parts of Italy, and urged in the conclusion, that the most pressing want of the moment was more evangelizers to enter on the field, so "white unto the harvest." He stated that one of his principal objects in coming to England was to obtain means for the purpose of training up such men, and he therefore earnestly appealed for the aid and co-operation of British Christians. He declared that, under the blessing of God, a Church would soon be established in Italy, which would, he trusted, become truly national—having for its basis justification by faith without the deeds of the law. It would recognize the necessity of a regular ministry, with a confession of faith—articles, doctrines, and discipline, and, with a view to uniformity, a liturgy, not however, compulsory, but voluntary. A liturgy would be required for baptisms, the Lord's-supper, etc. This constitutional organization of their Church was essential in order to present to the government some kind of regularity. Nowhere had the papacy so weak a hold on the affections of the people as in Italy, and if Rome could be gained for the Gospel it would be more easy to evangelize all Europe from Rome than from any other spot. After appealing to the ladies present to aid his cause by forming the nucleus of a "Central Ladies' Committee," the eloquent Italian closed his address by asking all present to remember his fellow-laborers and himself in prayer. He hoped the time might come when they could say, "Italy is evangelized, and we have ourselves contributed to such a blessed work."



## Seventh Decade Continued, 1860-1870.

## CHAPTER XIX.

*ITALIAN MISSIONS OF THE "AMERICAN AND FOREIGN CHRISTIAN UNION."*

IN April, 1861, the Board of Directors of the "American and Foreign Christian Union" issued an appeal in behalf of the evangelization of Italy, signed by Thomas De Witt, Esq., President, and Rev. Robert Baird, D. D., Corresponding Secretary. In this document, which was published in the *Christian World*, the organ of the society, the Board declared its purpose to establish a mission in that country, and, having appointed Rev. E. Edwin Hall, of Guilford, Conn., who had spent three years as their chaplain at Rome, to be their missionary in Italy, they asked for financial help to send him to the field as soon as possible. The city of Florence was designated as the center of the proposed mission, and among the duties assigned to Mr. Hall was that of promoting the spiritual interests of his own countrymen, who in large numbers visit that city every year, and make a longer or shorter sojourn there. It was stated that the most important of his labors would be to direct and superintend the society's work in Italy, embracing the appointment of colporteurs, evangelists, and ordained ministers as missionaries in that country. He was also expected to do something toward the education of pious Italian youths for the ministry, for which Florence furnished great facilities, since the Waldenses had removed their theological seminary, with its professors and students, to that city.

In addition to the work of the living missionary, the Board proposed to employ the press as a means of disseminating the truth by the publication of books and tracts, and also occasional papers or periodicals, made properly attractive and instructive for the youth as well as the adult classes. The Board expressed a desire to organize an "Evangelization Committee" at Florence, composed of Italian, American, and English brethren, of which Mr. Hall would be secretary as well as a member. They also hoped that Drs. Revel and Geymonat, the professors in the Waldensian Theological Seminary at Florence, would consent to be members of the committee. The

latter would be authorized to receive the funds for the missions, select and employ the missionaries, and transmit to the society full details and reports of their labors—their successes as well as their trials—in order that its friends and supporters might know what was done with their money, given to advance the kingdom of Christ in that country.

This appeal “to those who desire and pray for the salvation of Italy” closes with these earnest sentences: “But what need is there of words? Dear friends, is it not clear that now is the time to work in Italy? The door is now open to spread the Scriptures in all Italy (including the islands of Sicily, Sardinia, Corsica, Malta, Elba), with the exception of Venetia, and the small part of the Patrimony of St. Peter, over which the pope still bears rule. The Word of God may now be given to twenty-three millions of people in Italy. This has been so far the first time in twelve centuries within the last six months. Who shall take hold of this work if our American Churches do not? Have we not a right to do it? Are we not able to do it? If we are not, who are more able? Are our brethren of England, who are responsible for more than two hundred millions of the human race that are now under her sway? Are our French and Swiss brethren, with all their burdens? Certainly not. It is we that ought to bear a great part in this work.”

The Rev. E. Edwin Hall sailed from New York with his family on the 27th of April, 1861, and on the 14th of June announced to the Board his safe arrival in Florence. He stated that he had engaged two excellent Bible readers from the “Valleys of Piedmont”—the home of the Waldenses—whom Drs. Revel and Geymonat strongly recommended for both Bible-readers and Bible-distributers. The recent arrival of two young ex-priests, intelligent and promising, was also reported, and the hope expressed that, after receiving suitable instruction in the “theological seminary,” they would be valuable laborers in the evangelical cause. A few months later Mr. Hall employed, at the suggestion of Dr. Revel, a colporteur and Bible-reader, who was a member of the Waldensian Church, to labor in several villages between Aosta and Turin. Another excellent worker, M. Peccenini, was sent into Elba, the beautiful and populous island off the coast of Italy, so well known as the home of Napoleon Bonaparte for a year. As the way had been prepared by another colporteur, M. Peccenini commenced his labors with much encouragement at Portoferraio, one of the principal towns of the island. Soon he had a congregation of two hundred deeply interested hearers. From two other places he received pressing invitations to come and preach

to them. The priests prevailed on the governor to forbid his preaching; but, nothing daunted, the missionary instantly resolved to appeal to Baron Ricasoli, the prime minister of Victor Emmanuel, under whose dominion the island was then placed. A petition, signed in a few hours by sixty persons, including thirty heads of families, and asking that the governor should not only be forbidden to hinder his preaching, but required to protect the missionary in his work, was forwarded to Ricasoli, who soon granted the request of the petitioners.

In a report, made by Mr. Hall on the 16th of November, he refers to the growth of the mission in the island of Elba, and states that the room then rented for public services was too small. Two buildings in Portoferraio, the property of a widow who was favorable to the evangelical cause, were offered for sale, either one of which was suitable for the meetings. One of the members visited Mr. Hall at Florence to urge the purchase. On the 9th of December, M. Daniel Lantaret, the colporteur, stationed at Verres, in the valley of Aosta, sent an encouraging statement of his work. He held Sabbath services in three villages—Verres, Viarena, and Châtillon—and during the week visited different places, entering the homes of the people and engaging in religious exercises whenever permitted. In that region many professed to be dissatisfied with the Roman Church, and said to M. Lantaret that they expected at no distant day to hear the Gospel preached in the temples where now the mass was celebrated. Some of these persons, especially at Mount Jovet, belonged to the influential class. The number of those who regularly attended Protestant services was not large, but they were active and faithful. One of them, the father of five children, whose necessities demanded his constant care, found time to devote hours, and sometimes a day, to those who lived in the little hamlet in the mountains, reading and explaining the Word of God, which he had read with so much profit to his own soul.

When Mr. Hall reached Florence, in the Summer of 1861, he found less religious intolerance than had prevailed during the past decade. Ten years before (August 17, 1851), Francesco Madai, two other Florentines, and an English gentleman were arrested and thrown into prison on the charge of reading the Bible. The police searched the house of Madai on the Sabbath, and captured two Bibles and these four heretics. The Englishman was released at the end of twenty-four hours through the efforts of the British legation, the two Florentines were banished, but Madai was detained in his gloomy



cell. On the 27th of August his wife, Rosa, a poor, sickly woman, was also imprisoned in the Bargello, and separated from her husband. The lawyers feared to defend them, but finally one noble, talented young man called Maggiorani, volunteered to plead their cause. The trial, however, was delayed until the 5th of June, 1852, and, after two days, a decision was pronounced by the judges, sentencing Francesco Madiai to four years and eight months' solitary confinement and hard labor in the prison at Volterra, and Rosa three years and ten months of the same in the dreadful Ergastola at Lucca. At the close of the sentence the husband and wife shook hands, smiled on each other, embraced, and in a few moments disappeared amidst the bayonets of their guards.

It is an interesting historical fact that the "American and Foreign Christian Union," which sent its missionary, Mr. Hall, to Florence in 1861, first issued the call for a public meeting of the "friends of religious liberty" in the city of New York, to express sympathy with the "Madiai" family and others imprisoned in the grand duchy of Tuscany, and to devise measures for their relief. Not until the highest judicial authorities of Tuscany had refused to release the prisoners did the Protestant world interfere. Maggiorani appealed the case to the supreme court; but the judges, violating the true interpretation of the "Leopoldine Laws," confirmed the sentence of the first court. Peter Leopold (or Leopold I) who was grand duke of Tuscany from A. D. 1765 to A. D. 1790 secured remarkable reforms in the civil and criminal administration of justice. "In his new code," says Spaulding, "the criminal section was especially bold, inasmuch as it swept away at once torture, confiscation, secret trial, and even the punishment of death. . . . All privileged jurisdictions were destroyed, and the public courts fortified in their independence. . . . Leopold's ecclesiastical reforms were equally daring, and gave deep offense to the papal government."

The learned Maggiorani demonstrated that the general tenor of the "Leopoldine Laws" was to confer on the Tuscans personal and ecclesiastical freedom of action, and to render *public* all the proceedings of government. He also, in reply to Bicchierai, the public minister, showed from the writings of Nani, Poggi, Cremani, Negroni, and other celebrated Italian expounders of the penal code, that impiety, to be considered as a civil crime, must be committed in public. But the Tuscan judges were only interpreters of the will and wishes of the grand duke, and the prisoners were not released. Their situation excited the sympathy of all Protestant nations. In

England, Scotland, and elsewhere meetings were held; and a deputation of distinguished men, representing the Protestants of England, France, Germany, Holland, and Switzerland, proceeded to Florence in the latter part of October, 1852. They addressed a letter to the duke of Casigliano, the Tuscan secretary of foreign affairs, stating the object of their mission, and requesting the privilege of an interview with the grand duke; but permission was not granted.

The meeting in the city of New York, on January 7, 1853, was an imposing demonstration, and among the resolutions adopted was one asking the president of the United States to intercede in behalf of the imprisoned Tuscans. The king of Prussia and the queen of England also sent private letters to the grand duke, imploring him to liberate the sufferers. At length, on the 22d of March, 1853, they were released and sent to Leghorn, where Francesco and Rosa met after their long separation. They were not allowed to remain in Italy, but were immediately placed on a French steamer, which conveyed them to Marseilles. Thus terminated one of the most remarkable and thrilling cases involving religious liberty which this century has produced, and the full history of it, published by the "American and Foreign Christian Union," reveals the hostile spirit of the papacy to the Bible.

---

### Seventh Decade Continued, 1860-1870.

---

## CHAPTER XX.

### *THE ITALIAN CABINET—GARIBALDI—PROTESTANT WORK.*

ON the 2d of March, 1862, Victor Emmanuel, who, to his subsequent regret, had been completely under the influence of Rattazzi, sent a communication to Baron Ricasoli, which led him to convene his cabinet and submit to them the propriety of resigning office. The motion to resign was unanimously carried, Cordova being the loudest in his consent, and the portfolios tendered to the king the same day, though at first declined, were afterwards accepted. On the morning of the 3d of March, when the ministers waited upon the king to surrender in person the seals of office, they found Cordova closeted with the monarch, and arranging for his retention in the cabinet. Rattazzi fulfilled his promise to Garibaldi by appointing

Persano and Despretis, professed friends of Garibaldi, to positions in his cabinet, and subsequently selected other of his friends to be prefects in Sicily and Naples. Of the other members of the cabinet, three belonged to the French party, and two were of the old Piedmontese aristocracy. On the 7th of March Rattazzi, having completed his cabinet, announced to the parliament "that the principles of his government would be a largely conciliatory spirit to all true Italians without regard to personal differences, the removing of all dualism between government and nation, a policy of non-isolation from foreign powers, economical management of the finances, and a cordial alliance with France, whereby that completion of Italy would be best achieved, which, as the wish of every patriot, was naturally the cherished wish of the ministers."

It was inevitable that a cabinet constituted from such discordant materials, and hampered by pledges to parties so diametrically opposed to each other, would very soon fall into difficulties. Indeed, the Rattazzi administration would not have been continued through the first month of its existence had not the patriotic majority in the parliament been induced by a strong sense of duty to sustain the appointees of the king. Baron Ricasoli withdrew into the country, and his friends, not wishing to embarrass Victor Emmanuel, voted down as inopportune a motion of direct censure, offered only twelve days after the cabinet was announced. Rattazzi soon found himself compelled to intimate to Cordova and Mancini, two of the members of the cabinet, the necessity of their resigning, and to supply their places with men more acceptable to the parliament.

Garibaldi had previously sought to hasten the redemption of Italy from Austrian and papal rule by an appeal to the Hungarians to rise against their old oppressors, and had, after considerable forbearance on the part of Ricasoli, been warned that, if an expedition which he had planned to attack Austria through Hungary were not given up, the government would be compelled to arrest it by force. The ex-dictator had submitted reluctantly, and with a feeling of hostility, which Rattazzi had carefully stimulated. On the 12th of April parliament was adjourned to the 3d of June, and soon after the king and the premier visited Naples, accompanied by Garibaldi, who, with their apparent approval, was already organizing his schemes and enlisting his bands of volunteers. In Lombardy, during the month of May, he had gathered a considerable body of riflemen, and made some feints of attacking the Tyrol. Probably at the instigation of the French emperor, Rattazzi, between the 12th and 15th of May,



ordered the arrest of several of Garibaldi's confidential officers and a large number of the men he had enlisted, and committed them to prison, sequestering their arms, all the while professing the greatest regard and respect for Garibaldi himself, who, he affected to believe, was not cognizant of their doings. Garibaldi, furious at this unexpected act, avowed his responsibility for their conduct, denounced the arrest, and demanded their release, but could get no reply from the government.

On the 16th of May a collision occurred at Brescia between a mob, who endeavored to set the arrested force free, and the soldiers, in which several persons were killed. The government soon after published a circular, declaring in direct contradiction to his own asseverations that they had good grounds for believing that Garibaldi had not participated in the enterprises for which these men had been arrested, and that his name had been improperly used. Meantime the crafty minister had persuaded Garibaldi to return to Caprera, and on the reassembling of parliament took to himself great credit for having suppressed an insurrection, which threatened the public peace, reading a professed letter from Garibaldi, to sustain his position. He was destined, however, to receive from Crispi, a deputy, who was a friend of Garibaldi, a castigation, which would have driven any other man to tender his resignation.

Garibaldi, meantime, was projecting new schemes and was still deceived by the promises and maneuvers of the wily premier. He had gone to Palermo, and in the presence and with the sanction of the prefects whom Rattazzi had appointed, presented his plan for an expedition to attack Rome from Sicily. He aroused the enthusiasm of the Sicilians by his proclamations, and, co-operating with Mazzini, commenced organizing a small army of invasion, believing that the measure had the full sympathy of the government, which, indeed, had furnished it with means and arms. Napoleon III began to protest, and Garibaldi and Mazzini denounced the emperor without stint. Thus passed the month of July, without remonstrance from the Italian government. At length, on the 3d of August, Victor Emmanuel issued a proclamation to the Italian people, warning them to take no part in any such enterprise as was proposed, as it would be regarded as revolt and civil war, and pledging himself to secure for them eventually the possession of Rome. This proclamation under Rattazzi's secret explanations Garibaldi regarded as a ruse, and went on with his preparations. The emperor sent war vessels to blockade the Sicilian coast to pre-

vent his passage to the main-land, and Rattazzi finally sent General Cugia with orders to prevent the ex-dictator from marching toward Rome, but not to interfere with him if he wished to go anywhere else. Garibaldi, meantime, had moved forward to Catania, on the 18th of August, adopting as his watchword, "Rome or Death!" On the 24th and 25th of the same month he succeeded in crossing the strait near Cape Spartivento, having had a slight skirmish with some Italian troops, in which he lost a few prisoners.

Garibaldi had at the time of crossing a force of about twenty-three hundred men; and five hundred, whom he had left at Catania, were taken prisoners on the 26th of August. It was not a part of his purpose to come into conflict with Italian troops, and he accordingly passed, by mountain routes, from Mileto and Reggio toward Aspromonte, encountering on the 27th of the month a small force under General Cialdini, and losing forty-two of his men as prisoners. On the 29th he occupied a strong position at Aspromonte, where he was attacked by Colonel Pallavicini. He directed his men not to fire at Pallavicini's troops; but the royal commander was not so forbearing, and twelve of Garibaldi's men were killed, and two hundred wounded, among whom were Garibaldi himself and his son Menotti. Two thousand prisoners were taken and conveyed to Spezzia. Garibaldi requested to be put on board an English ship: but Rattazzi refused to grant this, and he was kept as a prisoner. His wounds were painful, and one of them (a ball in the foot) was considered dangerous. The knowledge of his being wounded and taken prisoner produced great excitement throughout Europe. An eminent English surgeon was sent to Spezzia to attend him, and his expenses were defrayed by a public subscription. After some months of suffering the ball was extracted. The Italian government found itself greatly embarrassed with the prisoners thus taken. The brave chief, who had given Victor Emmanuel the kingdom of the Sicilies, was not treated as a common prisoner, even though taken in arms against his king; nor was it to be believed that he was at heart disloyal to that king; he was rather the dupe of the prime minister, and had believed himself really doing the king service. From all quarters came an appeal for an amnesty for him and his followers. At the wedding of Princess Pia, the second daughter of Victor Emmanuel, and Louis I, young king of Portugal, on the 27th of September, both the bride and bridegroom, and Prince Napoleon and the Princess Clotilde, the eldest daughter of the king, added their prayers for the amnesty, which was granted on the 5th of October.

The arrest of Garibaldi's expedition intensified rather than checked the feeling of the whole Italian nation that Rome must become their capital. This feeling found expression in the circular of the minister of foreign affairs, Signor Durando, to the representatives of Italy at foreign courts, on the 10th of September, in which he said that Garibaldi's watchword ("Rome or Death!") was but the declaration of a national necessity, more imperious now than ever. It found a still stronger expression at the reassembling of the parliament, when the chamber of deputies adopted an address to the king, in which, after thanking him for the amnesty decreed to Garibaldi and his followers, they proceeded to say, "the time for action, for the acquisition of Rome is delayed; for the present we will strengthen our finances by an active industry; we will increase our army to 400,000 men, and then, sire, with you at its head, we shall see who will withhold Rome from us!"

The Rattazzi cabinet fell in November, at the reassembling of parliament, under the withering scorn of a nation's representatives, having sunk so low in reputation that no respectable minority could be found to support it. The premier, in his intense desire for a prolongation of his power, even for a few weeks, begged the king to prorogue the parliament, so that a new ministry might not be confirmed; but Victor Emmanuel, to his credit, firmly refused. The new cabinet consisted of Signor Farini, premier; Peruzzi, minister of the interior; Mughelti, minister of finance; Amari, minister of public instruction; and Manna, minister of commerce. This was a cabinet of great ability and high character. The political condition of the country, however, excited deep anxiety, and financial affairs particularly awakened apprehension of trouble—the expenses in time of peace exceeding receipts from all sources by a very large amount. The parliament, from the commencement of the session, was occupied only in hearing charges against the ministry. Rattazzi himself was compelled to acknowledge that, after all his cringing to the French, the policy of the emperor was hostile to Italian unity. The late circular of the French minister of foreign affairs discouraged the progressive party in Italy, and inspired the court of Rome with a stronger hope than it had entertained for many years. Indeed, after this assurance of French protection, the pope threatened the most extraordinary measures against a vast body of the priesthood which expressed sympathy with the policy of Victor Emmanuel.

While the papacy resisted every effort for the annexation of Rome, it could not prevent the spread of liberal ideas. During the



year 1862 the evangelical press was very active in Italy. Many works, some small and some of considerable size, were published, such as "Amico di Casa," a popular almanac; "Historic Improbability of Peter's Voyage to Rome;" Dr. D'Aubigné's "History of the Reformation in the Sixteenth Century," and others. Professor Geymonat prepared a "History of the Waldenses," so that the Italians might understand the true history and character of that people, and also the faith which they had held since their origin in remote ages. At Naples the friends of the Gospel were active in bringing forth controversial treatises on the errors and superstitions of the Roman Catholic Church. Dr. Desantis edited a publication in the form of a weekly dialogue, which had an extensive circulation; and Rev. Mr. M'Kay, a Scotch minister at Genoa, issued an illustrated periodical called "*Letture di Famiglia*," or "Family Readings," which exerted a salutary influence. And still further, to advance the good work, an association was formed in the early part of January at Florence, under the name of "The Italian Evangelical Publication Society." The semi-monthly periodical "*Buona Novella*," hitherto published at Turin, was transferred to Florence, and edited by Signor Tito Chiesi, a lawyer, and Professor Geymonat.

Rev. E. E. Hall, the agent and missionary of the "American and Foreign Christian Union" at Florence, reported that, in February, 1862, two laborers under his direction were employed in that city, visiting from house to house, and selling every day some religious tracts and Testaments. Rooms were hired both at Verres in Piedmont and Portoferraio in the island of Elba, and furnished with plain cheap chairs and tables. The Bible reader at Verres met with some opposition in his field. He was twice attacked in returning from his evening meetings by "lewd fellows of the baser sort," who seriously wounded him with stones thrown in the dark. After describing the assault made upon him, he stated that he loved "to think that the wounds on his limbs were in a better state than the wounds on the consciences of his enemies," and hoped "that the Good Samaritan, with oil and wine, will visit them with spiritual healing." This persecution indicated that the Gospel was advancing. The work at Portoferraio was very prosperous, both the evangelist and colporteur writing encouraging letters, and declaring that the preaching service was profitable, though the number of attendants had been diminished by local causes. The colporteur being well known and popular, had ready access to the people, and sold many Bibles and other religious books. He preached and exhorted daily

in the public square, in the shops and coffee-houses, and every-where found hearers and occasionally made converts from Romanism.

The evangelist at Portoferraio, Melchior Peccenini, on the 18th of January wrote an interesting letter to Mr. Hall, in which he referred to the decreased attendance at public worship, attributing it partly to the pleasures of the Carnival, and partly to the action of Count Guicciardini, general director of the salt works, who threatened to dismiss his workmen if they continued to attend the evangelical meetings. The arch-priest who had in his hands the "pious legacies" or the dowry fund for poor young girls, declared that he would withhold this from any who were seen conversing only once with Protestants. He also influenced other employers so that they refused to hire any except Roman Catholics. All these causes operating simultaneously apparently retarded the progress of the Gospel; but M. Peccenini, asserted that nearly two-thirds of the population in their hearts rejected the Romish creed; and though, from certain considerations, they absented themselves from public worship, yet they expressed their belief in evangelical truth and defended it in the squares, coffee-houses, and other places. Many said that when Rome was captured by the Italian government, and all power to injure taken from the priests and "codinis," they would openly renounce the Roman Church. From Capolivere, Longone, and Rio Marina favorable news was received indicating the steady growth of the Protestant cause, and in the latter town a believer, named Quottrini, promised, if a church should be opened there, a small contribution from himself and others, as they were not able to make large donations. The enemies of the truth at Portoferraio confiscated a little tract entitled "*Buon Capo d'anno*," and published by M. Peccenini; but he printed others at night, and sent them all over the island, the people gladly receiving them and demanding more. "As long as the Roman question is undecided," said the evangelist, "these abuses of power will exist. Let us pray that the downfall of Rome may soon come. In divers ways all our affairs suffer greatly from it."

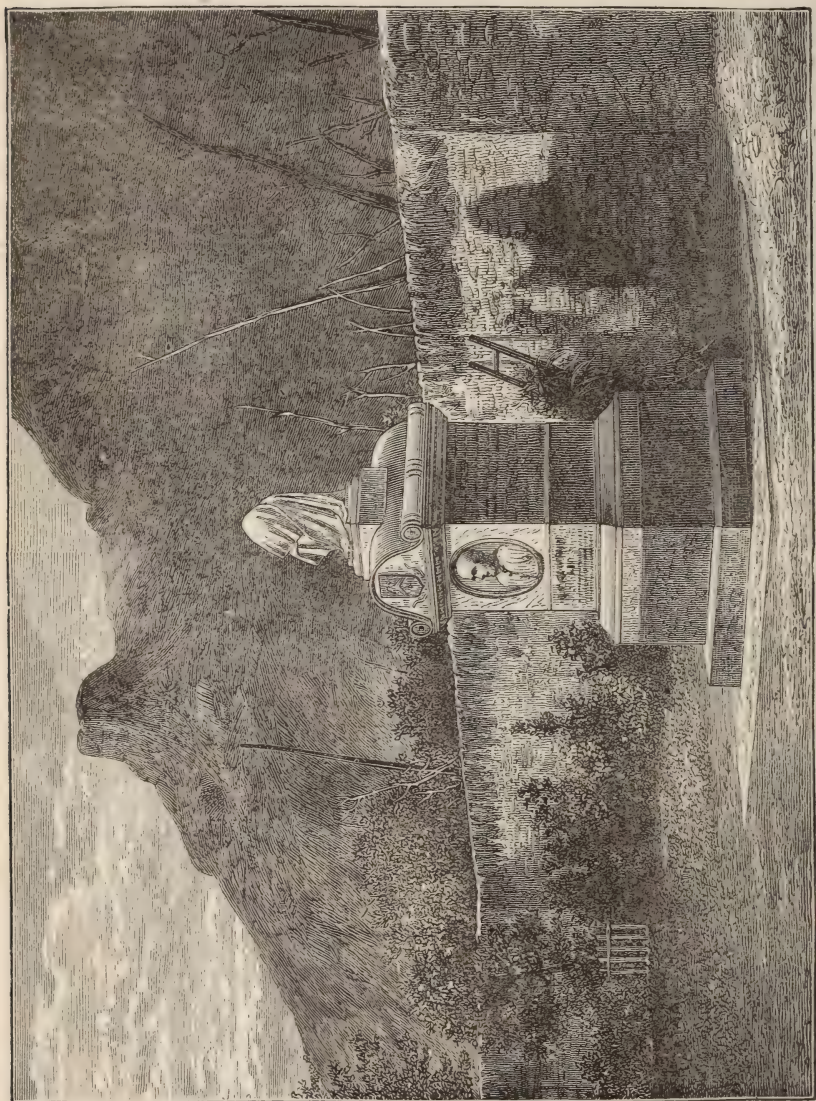
The Wesleyan Methodist mission in Italy made some advancement during the year 1862. Rev. H. J. Piggot had been assisted by Rev. Richard Green; but the failure of the latter's health compelled him to return to England. Benedetto Lipolo, an Italian evangelist, labored at Ivrea, and fifty persons regularly attended his ministry there. A revival occurred at Baijo, and more than a hundred people were attracted to the meetings. In other villages the work of reformation was commenced, and not without encouraging indications.

The "Italian Church" also made considerable progress, having two or three chapels in Florence, one at Genoa, one at Turin, one in Pisa, and in other places. Count Guicciardini visited the various stations, and reported that religious services of some kind were maintained in twenty-five cities and villages. The largest number of communicants was found in Florence, the membership there amounting to over three hundred and fifty; and in Milan at least seven hundred persons were accustomed to meet for conference and prayer-meeting. Conversions occurred among the soldiers of the garrison in Pavia, two evangelists gathered an interesting congregation in Bologna; while the laborers in Brescia, Novara, Pisa, and other localities were successful in their efforts to build up the cause of Christ. Signor Mazzarella and Dr. Desanctis gave their united ministrations to the Church in Genoa. The former was once a Neapolitan lawyer, and embraced the true religion of Christ at Turin, when in exile in that city some years previously. In 1862 he was a member of the Italian parliament, and had been professor in the University of Bologna. He and Dr. Desanctis opened a theological school in Genoa, to qualify in as short a period as possible evangelists to meet the constantly increasing calls for such laborers in all parts of Italy.

The death of Major-general John Charles Beckwith, the brave English officer and philanthropist, which occurred at La Tour, Piedmont, on the 19th of July, 1862, was a sad event to the Waldenses. His efforts in behalf of the temporal and spiritual welfare of these people have already been described, and his intimate friends believe that he expended from his private resources not less than fifty thousand dollars. He did not possess a fortune; but his salary as a colonel of the British army was handsome, and his mode of living simple and inexpensive. In 1846, encouraged by the liberal policy of Charles Albert, he determined to attempt the nationalization of the Waldensian Church. The Vaudois had since A. D. 1620 spoken French, and used it in their schools and religious services. He resolved to introduce the Italian language into both school and pulpit; and for this purpose sent six young pastors to Florence to acquire the pure Tuscan dialect. This accomplished, they taught the teachers of the schools in the "Valleys," and in about two years the people became sufficiently conversant with the language to use it in their religious services. In 1848 permission was given to erect a Waldensian church or chapel at Turin, and Colonel Beckwith raised the amount necessary to build a large, convenient, and attractive edifice on the Viale de Rei, himself donating the liberal sum of six thousand



dollars. In 1850 he became by regular promotion a major-general in the British army, and soon after sold his commission for a large sum of money, which he carefully invested.



TOMB OF GENERAL BECKWITH.

General Beckwith made Turin his Winter residence, though his Summers were spent in the "Valleys," visiting his schools, and acting as the father of the people. In one Waldensian family at La Tour he passed a large portion of his time very agreeably, and

became deeply interested in a little girl, who often sat on his knee, and shared much in his affections.' Having made a provision in his will in her behalf, he deemed it proper to communicate the fact to her parents, who were both surprised and troubled, fearing that the matter would excite discontent, if not envy, among their poor neighbors and friends. The noble and venerable philanthropist soon removed the difficulty by marrying the object of his tender regard, who had become a young lady.

---

Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

---

CHAPTER XXI.

*THE BRIGANDS—THE LIBERAL PRIESTS—MISSIONS.*

AT the beginning of the year 1863 brigandage in the Neapolitan provinces was still very active. A committee appointed by the chamber of deputies for examining the subject traversed the disaffected localities, offering full pardon to all the insurgents who would submit. At the end of February a detachment of sixteen soldiers was surprised by sixty men of the band of Chiavoni and completely exterminated. The democratic deputies (the "Left") of the Chamber of Deputies proposed the formation of corps of volunteers to disperse the brigands; but this plan, combated by the ministry, was not adopted by the Chamber. The presence of General La Marmora in the infested districts in April was followed by good results. The insurgents were driven from the mountains of Castellamare, Sorrento, and Amalfi, and about two hundred were captured. But in June the devastations by the brigands began anew on a large scale. The province of Benevento, in particular, became the headquarters of the gangs of Chiavoni and Caruso. This time the French troops in the papal states in favor of the Italian government, and many of the brigands were seized at Rome, Civita Vecchia, and other places of the papal states, and either imprisoned or handed over to the Italian authorities. On the 10th of July the prefect of Genoa, Gualterio, seized five insurgent chiefs on board the French vessel *Aunis*; but this act the Italian government soon disavowed as a violation of a convention concluded between the two countries in 1862, and the



five prisoners were conducted to France. Subsequently, however, on the 10th of September, upon a demand made by Italy for their extradition, the brigands were surrendered by France.

The report of the committee of the Chamber of Deputies on the "Brigandage in the Neapolitan Provinces" charged the papal government with giving the greatest possible support to the insurgents. It declared that the brigands "consist of foreign adventurers, or of bad characters and men in the lowest state of misery, who have come from the Neapolitan provinces," and that the papal police have no eyes to see these preparations for war, and allow them to be carried out tranquilly without offering the least opposition; that these brigands, after being defeated by the government troops "have always been at full liberty to recover and reorganize themselves by recrossing into the Roman territory; that the papal government "assists them with arms and money, and, in order not to be discovered, it employs every species of artifice."

On one occasion, for example, it supplied several hundreds of military great-coats, and, in order to carry out its purpose, the minister of war advertised them for sale at public auction. A French priest made his appearance at the auction as the mock purchaser. No sooner had he obtained them than he consigned them punctually to the brigands for whom they were destined. The Bourbon committee of Alatri, Frosinone, Ceccano, Velletria, and Pratica were unceasingly engaged in the work of assisting these desperadoes. In the Bourbon committee of Frosinone there were of persons connected with the papal government a judge, a chancellor of the episcopal court, two canons, and a curate. In that of Ceccano there was a person of Cardinal Antonelli's own household; in that of Alatri there were several canons; in that of Pratica there was an archpriest who sometimes accompanied the brigands on their raids. At the abbey of the order of the Passionists in Ceccano there resided a papal gens d'arme in active service and two gens d'armes living on their pensions, who acted as the regular guides to the robbers.

In a volume entitled a "Historico-political Account of the Brigandage on the Pontifical Frontier from 1860 to 1863," it is clearly shown that the plan of the brigandage was devised at Rome, and that the operations were directed from that city. The writer was Count Saint Jorios, who was head of the staff of the general-in-chief on the station; and as the whole correspondence between the French and Italian commanders and the pontifical authorities passed through his hands, he had the very best opportunities of knowing the facts which he



presented. "The brigands are publicly enlisted at Rome," said Saint Jorios, "by the druggist Vanozzi in the Campo de' Fiori, and by a certain Piccirilli, ex-sergeant in the former Bourbonic army, and captain in the band of Chiavoni; by the Abate Ricci, and the priest Gonella, formerly sacristan of Santa Restituta, in Sora, who was named a colonel by Francis II, and put at the head of a band of brigands; and by many others, whose names it is not so easy to discover. These brigands are collected and publicly formed into bands in the piazza Montanara, at Rome, and are afterwards distributed under their several captains, by whom they are paid, clothed, and accompanied to the frontier. The above-named Piccirilli and Pietro Rondelli of Pescolisodo and Bernardo Mancini of Campoli are the ordinary conductors of these small detachments of brigands to the frontier."

Count Saint Jorios also declared that arrangements similar to those in Rome were made at Ceprano, Frosinone, and Villettri, and other places in the papal states, for equipping, lodging, and paying as many brigands as could be raised, and sending them off to the mountains for the purpose of laying waste the frontier. A department of the Communal Hospital, at Ceprano, was also converted into a barrack, and occupied by twelve soldiers of the papal cavalry and fifty brigands. In many localities buildings belonging to the Romish Church were freely placed at the service of the robbers. Numerous convents in the Neapolitan territory were stored with arms, ammunition, and provisions, and became simply centers of brigandage. On the 26th of February, 1862, as many as two thousand of these outlaws left Rome in a body, and proceeded to the frontier, of course separating into small parties before crossing. Priests were also taken fighting in their ranks, and in some of the churches a service was instituted, termed the "Brigand's Mass," and for expedition's sake, those for whom it was intended were permitted to enter the church on horseback. The brigands were often found decorated with the medal of the Immaculate Conception. The leader of one of these infamous bands, Pasquale Romano, who had held the district of Gioia in terror, was slain on the 5th of January, 1863. On his body and in his portfolio were found papers, "the importance of which," said the report of the commission to the Italian parliament, "it would be impossible to overestimate." Among others, the copy of the "oath" taken by the brigands, with their names subscribed, was discovered. The oath consisted of six clauses, of which the second was as follows: "We promise and swear always to defend with our blood,

God, the supreme pontiff, Pius IX, and Francis II, king of the Two Sicilies, and the commander of our column, whose orders we shall obey, as God may aid and assist us ever to fight against the rebels of holy Church."

Not less significant were the confessions of a brigand leader, Pasquale Forgione, on the 23d of February, 1863, before a committee appointed to examine him. His admissions showed that the oath was no mere form; that the brigands acted thoroughly in its spirit, and that they regarded their worst crimes as sanctified by the cause in which they are done. When asked why he should inflict such ravages on an unoffending community, Pasquale Forgione replied, "We fight for the faith." The committee then inquired, "What do you mean by the faith?" The brigand responded, "The holy faith of our religion." The committee asked this question, "But does not our religion execrate the robberies, burnings, murders, cruelties, and all the impious and barbarous deeds which you and your companions have committed?" Forgione answered, "We have fought for the faith, and have been blessed by the pope; and if we had not lost the paper which came from Rome, we should have been able to convince you that we have combated for the faith." The committee asked, "What paper was that?" The reply was, "It was a stamped paper which came from Rome." "What did that paper contain?" inquired the committee. The brigand replied, "It said that he who combated for the holy cause of the pope and of Francis II committed no sin." Forgione was asked one more question, "Do you recollect what else that paper contained?" He answered, "It said that the real brigands are the Piedmontese, who have taken away the kingdom from Francis II, and are excommunicated; but we are blessed of the pope."

When the operations against the brigands were first commenced, the French were in the habit of sending those they captured across the frontier, and delivering them up to the papal troops, but soon every one of them was equipped anew and sent back. Sometimes the brigands, being hard pressed, came down to Ceprano and hastened to Rome on the train, where comfortable lodgings awaited them. The notorious Crocco, who had committed untold robberies and murders, avoided capture by repairing with five Spanish followers to the papal frontier, where he demanded to be taken to Rome. Instead of being sent in chains as a malefactor, he was furnished with a railroad ticket, and journeyed openly, with every sign of wealth about his person. He wore a gold watch, a massive gold

chain traversed his breast, precious jewels sparkled on his fingers, and a profusion of military medals decorated his person. At Rome this worthy supporter of the throne and the altar was received with marked attention. These few of the hundreds of facts that could be produced show that the papal government sanctioned this wholesale system of robbery and murder. Indeed, the pope and his ministers, in order to restore the dynasty of the ex-king of Naples, enlisted brigands, furnished them with arms and pay, and sent them forth with the Church's blessing to spread rapine and slaughter over the Neapolitan provinces. Hence the committee of investigation appointed by the chamber of deputies placed the responsibility upon the authorities at Rome, where it belonged. In their report the members of the commission stated that the war against brigandage from the 1st of May, 1861, to the end of March, 1863, caused the loss of twenty-one officers and two hundred and eighty-six soldiers of the Italian army, "a painful sacrifice," as the report observes, "when the character of the victims is compared with that of the murderers." As to the brigands the number of killed, arrested, and voluntarily surrendered, exceeded seven thousand.

On the 8th of September, 1863, the brigand chiefs, Crocco, Minco, Nanco, Carusa, and Fortora, presented themselves at Kionero to the commandant of the Italian troops, requesting a safe-conduct for two hundred and fifty other brigands, who had promised to give in their submission to the government. The chiefs left Kionero for Lagopesole with cries of "Viva Victor Emmanuel!" and displaying the national flag. On the 22d of December the Chamber of Deputies adopted a motion, by one hundred and fifty-nine against fifty-one votes, to the effect that the law for the suppression of brigandage should be postponed to the end of February, 1864. On the following day the *Official Gazette* of Turin published a decree pronouncing the postponement of the law to the time indicated by the Chamber of Deputies. The royal mandate proclaiming an amnesty had been previously issued. It annulled the penal punishments awarded in the Neapolitan provinces for all crimes excepting those connected with brigandage and ordinary offenses against the press laws, and all persons who had evaded the conscription, or acted in contravention of the laws relating to the national guard. The report preceding the decree stated that the enthusiastic reception and other manifestations which the king met with during a recent journey proved how deeply the desire for the unity of Italy was rooted in the mind of the population. Having nothing more to fear from the efforts of enemies,



the ministers declared that it was their duty to second the generous idea conceived in the heart of the king.

Some measures which the government adopted in Sicily in order to prevent disturbances and carry out the conscription laws induced Garibaldi and several other deputies of the "Left" to send in their resignation on the 21st of December. Garibaldi, in the following letter, written at Caprera, explained his reasons for taking this step: "To my constituents at Naples: When I saw two hundred and twenty-nine deputies of the Italian parliament confirm by their votes the sale of the Italian soil I had the presentiment that I should not remain long in the assembly of those men who blindly tore asunder the limbs of the country which they were called to reconstitute. However, the counsels of friends, the hope of reparatory events, and an unshaken sentiment of devotion toward my constituents, kept me at the post. But now, when I see succeeding to the sale of Nice the shame of Sicily, which I should be proud to call my second country by adoption, I feel myself, electors, compelled to restore to you a commission which enchains my conscience, and makes me indirectly the accomplice of the faults of others. It is not only the affection which I owe to Sicily, the courageous initiator of so many revolutions, but the thought that they have wounded in her the right and honor in compromising the safety of all Italy, which has led me to take this resolution. There is, however, nothing in this which will prevent me from finding myself with the people in arms, on the road to Rome and Venice. Adieu." The majority of the "Left," however, preferred not to abandon their posts, but to remain in the Chamber; and a manifesto explaining the motives which determined their course of action received twenty-nine signatures.

The Italian government in 1863 was not any more successful in its efforts to bring about a reconciliation with the court of Rome than it had been in previous years. In order to avoid as much as possible any conflicts with the Church, a circular, issued on the 25th of March, recognized the right of clergymen to omit the name of the sovereign from public prayers, provided they did not substitute for it those of the former rulers. The government also declared itself against a motion made in the Chamber of Deputies by the liberal priest, Father Passaglia, to require all priests to take an oath of loyalty to the king and the constitution. In opposition to this motion the government advocated liberty of conscience and the principle of "a free Church in a free state," and the Chambers concurred in the views of the government. But, notwithstanding all the precau-

tions to mitigate it, the contest between the civil and religious power became more and more exciting. The despotic authority of archbishops and bishops over the inferior clergy of the Roman Catholic Church was used very extensively to prevent any expression of patriotic sentiment or sympathy with the government of Italy on the part of the priesthood. Many priests who openly approved the course of the government were suspended from official acts, and as a consequence their ordinary means of support withdrawn. Many others were restrained from manifesting any sympathy with the political sentiments of the people generally through fear of being deposed and condemned to beg for a living.

As a means of protection from this episcopal despotism the more liberal members of the clergy in all parts of Italy organized societies for mutual aid. A monthly payment was required from every member; and in case of suspension by the archbishop or bishop, for any other causes than offenses against morality, the suspended member received a monthly allowance from the common fund. These societies proved to be very useful, and gave the means of subsistence to many whom arbitrary suspension had exposed to absolute want. The bishops evinced their hostility to all who were connected with these mutual aid societies by refusing to promote them or appoint them to any vacancies whatsoever. The pope, probably taking courage from the apparently reactionary course of Louis Napoleon, ordered the bishops to suspend and starve the nine thousand eight hundred and forty-three Italian priests who signed the Passaglia petition for the abandonment of the temporal power. In obedience to the mandate the archbishop of Florence suspended from their sacred functions all who refused to yield absolute submission to the court of Rome. These priests appealed to the government for protection and redress. Rattazzi, when prime minister of Italy, did not interfere with the bishops because he was the tool of France; but when Farini became prime minister he would not permit them to be oppressed, and consequently the archbishop of Florence was prosecuted by the crown lawyer for deposing the liberal clergy of his diocese.

On the 1st of January, 1863, the presiding judge of the court in Florence notified the archbishop that by a decree of the council of state one month would be allowed him in which to defend himself against the charge of abuse of power in suspending so many priests for political reasons. At first he would not condescend to answer the call of the king's attorney, but finally concluded to do so. The minister of worship directed the proper officers to restore the sus-

pended priests immediately to their administrative rights, their revenues, including all arrears, and their benefices, and hereafter to execute no decree of suspension without first being provided with the royal *exequatur*. This important step on the part of the government was designed to prevent the bishops from depriving the inferior clergy of their stipends for merely political or civil reasons. To the surprise of all liberal men the state council, before whom the case of the archbishop was tried, acquitted him. In other words, the ministry and crown lawyer of Victor Emmanuel were for progress and liberty, but his state council favored the pope and despotism. The latter tribunal had come down from the days of Jesuit rule in Sardinia unreformed, and it seemed strange that the king did not make it conform to the new constitution, as he did with the old laws in the courts of Tuscany. In this conflict Francesco Liverani, the ex-chaplain of the pope, and twenty years a member of the papal court, and Carlo Passaglia, the pope's popular champion of the "Immaculate Conception," represented the liberal Roman Catholics; and public sentiment was still more intensified by the revelations of Gennarelli, who published in two volumes the epistles in the private archives of the ex-grand duke of Tuscany. In them Pius IX, Antonelli, emperors, princes, archbishops, statesmen, priests, and confessors were shown up to the world in extracts from confidential letters, in which they speak their desires, intentions, and plans freely. These publications were opportune; for they exposed the arts, concessions, and fawnings by which the papacy obtained foreign aid in extinguishing every ray of light and liberty in Italy.

The annual meeting of the Waldensian synod in May, 1863, was one of deep interest. There was a very full representation of the Vaudois Churches, and also delegates from ecclesiastical bodies in England, Scotland, France, Switzerland, and America. The "Committee of Evangelization" reported that there were, outside the "Valleys," twenty stations, in which thirty-nine laborers were employed, embracing sixteen ministers, seven evangelists, and sixteen teachers. At least twenty of these earnest and efficient workers were supported by the "American and Foreign Christian Union." Signor Peccenini, who was transferred in October, 1862, from Portoferraio to Naples, received encouragement from the increasing congregations which assembled twice every week in the hall of St. Thomas Aquinas. Four schools were organized, consisting of one for religious instruction; one of catechumens, with eighty-six attendants, including an evening school of fifty adults; a Sabbath-school of forty small chil-



dren; and a day-school, which numbered about forty pupils. Signori Appia, Cresi, and Buscarli also opened schools in various parts of the city, in which not less than one hundred and seventy boys and girls were instructed in reading, writing, arithmetic, geography, the evangelical catechism, and singing. In the beautiful island of Elba, at Florence, Perugia, Bologna, Modena, Reggio, Genoa, Brescia, Milan, Favale, Pavia, Turin, and other places, flourishing congregations and schools were established.

In 1863 Milan was selected as the center of operations for the English Wesleyan mission in Italy, and Revs. H. J. Piggott, Thomas W. S. Jones, and Benedetto Lipolo were the stationed ministers. A girls' boarding-school and a book-depot were opened, and Signor Bosio preached regularly in the school-room. The mission which Mr. Piggott had organized the previous year at Parma continued to prosper. The ordinary congregation numbered more than two hundred and fifty persons; and often twice as many assembled to hear the evangelist, while hundreds stood in the streets, unable to gain admission. In the villages on the shores of Lago Maggiore and Lakes Lugano and Como the Gospel was proclaimed, and some abandoned the Romish system.

---

### Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

---

## CHAPTER XXII.

### *THE ROMAN QUESTION—THE ITALIAN PRESS.*

IN the beginning of 1864 Garibaldi issued an address to the Italian nation, announcing the formation of a committee to promote the unity of the country; but his manifesto, which was published on the 18th of January in one of the democratic papers of Turin, was not responded to as cordially as he expected. He was a candidate at the elections held at the close of the month, but was defeated at Palermo by Signor Robanda. The moderate party was generally successful, but the progressives were greatly strengthened by Garibaldi's visit to England in April, where he was received with immense enthusiasm. The minister of the interior, in reply to speeches from several members of the opposition, stated that it was not for the government to declare its intentions respecting

General Garibaldi and his party, but that it was, above all, necessary to know how they would act. The same speaker also expressed the hope that, after Garibaldi's ovation in London, and the eulogy pronounced by him on English institutions, and the respect paid by the English nation to the queen and the laws, no one, apart from the king and the government, would speak in the name of the country or pursue a policy differing from that of the government and in opposition to the constitution.

During the year the relations between the Italian government and parliament on the one hand, and the pope and Italian bishops on the other, remained unchanged. The government often expressed a desire to come to an understanding with Pius IX, but it was not willing to abandon the plan of Italian unity to satisfy the pontiff. In February the minister of justice presented to parliament two bills, one for the suppression of all religious corporations, and the other for the suppression of ecclesiastical tithes. By the former, not only all convents, but all chapters of collegiate churches, and all ecclesiastical benefices were suppressed. Nuns were allowed to live in their convents, but when their number in any one establishment was reduced to six, they were transferred to another. Monks received a life interest varying between three and six hundred francs. According to the "*Opinione*" of Turin the total income of all the ecclesiastical property falling within this law amounted in 1864 to over seventy-six millions of francs. These new decrees were denounced by the clerical party, and intensified the bitter feeling between the pope and the government.

In September, 1864, the ministry was reconstructed as follows: president of the council of ministers and minister of the exterior, General Alphonse Ferrero de la Marmora; minister of the interior, Dr. John Lanza; minister of worship and justice, Vacca; minister of war, General Aug. L. Count Pettiti Bagloani di Proreto; minister of finances, Quintino Sella; minister of public instruction, Baron Joseph Natoli; minister of public works, Peter Jacini; minister of commerce and agriculture, Torelli. Signor Natoli, the new minister of public instruction, by a decree shut up all the ecclesiastical schools as the bishops refused to submit to the common law, which provided that the government inspectors should watch the system of education followed in the colleges, no matter whether they have been founded by the state or are private institutions. The minister, also, decreed that the schools of the seminaries should henceforth be subjected to the established regulations.

On the 15th of September a convention, which had a great influence on the politics of Europe, was concluded between France and Italy. The text of the agreement, as published by the official gazette of the kingdom of Italy, is as follows:

ARTICLE. 1. Italy engages not to attack the present territory of the Holy Father, and to prevent, even by force, every attack upon the said territory coming from without.

ART. 2. France will withdraw her troops from the pontifical states gradually, and in proportion as the army of the Holy Father shall be organized. The evacuation shall nevertheless be accomplished within the space of two years.

ART. 3. The Italian government engages to raise no protest against the organization of a papal army, even if composed of foreign Catholic volunteers, sufficing to maintain the authority of the Holy Father and tranquillity as well in the interior as upon the frontier of his states, provided that this force should not degenerate into a means of attack against the Italian government.

ART. 4. Italy declares herself ready to enter into an arrangement to take under her charge a proportionate part of the debt of the former States of the Church.

As a corollary to this document, it was agreed also that the capital of Italy should be removed from Turin to Florence. It soon became apparent that the two governments had not fully determined what policy should be pursued in case the people of Rome should rise against the papal government and demand annexation to Italy. A long diplomatic correspondence followed on this subject. On the 30th of October the French minister of foreign affairs, M. Drouyn de L'Huys, addressed a note to the Italian minister at Turin, in which he explains the obligations, which, according to the French cabinet, the recent convention regarding Rome imposes upon King Victor Emmanuel. The Italian government is to be restricted from employing, among other "violent means," against the pope "the manœuvres of revolutionary agents upon the pontifical territory, as well as all agitation tending to produce insurrectionary movements;" and the "moral means" are to "consist solely in the forces of civilization and progress," while the only "aspirations" to be considered legitimate by the court of Turin are to be "those whose object is the reconciliation of Italy with the papacy." The transfer of the Italian capital from Turin to Florence is to be "a serious pledge given to France;" and to suppress this pledge would be to destroy the contract." Finally, "the event



of a revolution breaking out spontaneously at Rome, is not foreseen by the convention ;” and “ France reserves her liberty of action for this eventuality,” while the Italian cabinet is to follow the policy of Count Cavour, who “ declared that Rome could only be united to Italy and become the capital with the consent of France.”

On the 7th of November General La Marmora addressed a note to Chevalier di Nigra, Italian ambassador at Paris, in consequence of the publication of the dispatches of M. Drouyn de L’Huys in the *Moniteur*. General La Marmora stated that the present ministry accepted the convention of the 15th of September because its clear and precise text could not give rise to any doubt, and because they thought that, taken literally, it was advantageous to Italy. As the convention provided by positive assurances for the relations and exigencies of the papacy with regard to France and the Roman Catholic world, he declared that the Italian government repelled the thought of ever resorting to secret dealings, which it regretted to have seen mentioned by M. Drouyn de L’Huys. It had entire confidence in the influence of civilization and progress in the removal of difficulties ; and while both powers might have their own opinions concerning the consequences of this act, it did not believe that they could legitimately make it the subject of practical discussion. Italy insisted upon a strict execution of the treaty, and would not violate it to secure even the triumph of a cherished policy. The king’s government, whatever might be its aspirations, independently of the question at issue, would abide by the decision of the convention, believing that the aspirations of a people belong to its national conscience, and therefore can not form the subject of an international discussion. General La Marmora also affirmed in this note that the government had always desired a reconciliation between Italy and the papacy, and he expressed the opinion that the convention would contribute to such a result ; but since M. Drouyn de L’Huys had taken the initiative in suggesting the possibility of a spontaneous revolution in Rome, and of the fall of the temporal power, Italy would reserve, as France did, her liberty of action for such a case.

On the one hand, the convention was severely denounced by the Roman Catholic party, which saw in it a new danger for the temporal power of the pope ; and on the other, it was condemned by the progressive party, headed by Mazzini and Garibaldi, which regarded it as a cowardly submission to French dictation, and as abandonment, at least for the present, of the fondest hope of the

Italian nation. Garibaldi in reply to a letter from his friend, General Avezzana, who declared himself as emphatically as possible against the convention, wrote from Caprera, October 10th, 1864, as follows: "My Dear Avezzana. Like you, I deplore the massacre (uccidio) of the brave people of Turin. Like you I grieve (lamento) to see our country so badly and so shamefully (vergognosamente) governed. From the state of things generally, I think I need not for the moment quit Caprera."

But the great majority of the Italian statesmen and a majority of both houses of the Italian parliament heartily indorsed the convention. Baron Ricasoli, former prime minister of Italy, and undoubtedly one of the greatest of Italian statesmen, thus expressed his views about it:

"I regard in that covention rather what it does not say than what it does say. The retreat of the French from Rome within a prescribed term, and the principle of non-intervention proclaimed by that fact, are of themselves no slight matter; but events will prove that what at present remains unseen will be of still more importance. Besides, what have we to gain without the convention? And at this day, what do we lose with it? The condition of the transfer of the capital from Turin to Florence has taken the effect on me of a thunder-bolt from a clear sky. But who could fail to see, on a second view, the innumerable effects which will flow from it? These effects, I think, will all be in favor of our constitution. The difficulties of obtaining possession of Rome have not been augmented by the convention. It is eventually certain that the Italians will count amongst their finest jewels, the noblest and greatest of all, the city of Rome. When will this come to pass? I know not; but that this will come to pass I know. We are in effect taking Rome daily. I will say more, daily Rome is coming to us of herself. The convention, instead of opposing, aids this movement. Let not the Italians throw up this great game, and the result will not fail. It will be such as religion and civilization unite in claiming."

The announcement of the convention produced considerable dissatisfaction in Turin, which culminated in formidable riots; and the foreign friends of Italy distrusted it, because they believed that its real meaning was the renunciation of Rome as the capital of the Peninsula. The convention was also warmly discussed in the Italian parliament, which was reopened on the 24th of October. Generals La Marmora and Cialdini delivered very impressive speeches in favor of the project. Both declared that with this convention Italy would

go forward toward a solution of the Roman question, prudently and slowly, yet without intermission. With regard to Venetia, General La Marmora expressed the hope that some solution might yet become possible, and that the mind of the emperor of Austria might be brought to new conclusions relative to this subject.

On the 19th of November, 1864, the Chamber of Deputies adopted the bill for the transfer of the capital to Florence by a vote of three hundred and seventeen to seventy; and, on the 9th of December, the bill was passed in the senate by one hundred and thirty-four to forty-seven. On the 11th of December, it was sanctioned by the king, and the royal indorsement, in the following words, appeared in the official gazette:

"The Senate and the Chamber of Deputies having approved, we have sanctioned and hereby publish as follows:

"ARTICLE I. The capital of the kingdom shall be transferred to Florence within six months of the date of this present law.

"ART. II. To meet the costs of the transfer, a credit is opened in the extraordinary portion of the house budget, and under a special head of seven million francs, divided as follows: two millions in the budget of 1864, and five millions in the budget of 1865.

"The ministers of the interior, of finance, and of public works are especially charged with the execution of the present law. We order that these presents, furnished with the seal of state, shall be inserted in the official collection of laws and decrees of the kingdom of Italy, and ordain that all persons shall observe and cause them to be observed as a law of the state."

This document was signed by Victor Emmanuel, and countersigned by all the ministers.

Both the government and the majority of the national party seemed to be fully determined that, during the two years yet remaining of the occupancy of Rome by the French troops, no effort to interfere with the papal power should receive the least countenance from them, as both were convinced that a rupture of friendly relations with France would produce disastrous consequences. The government found it very difficult to prevent the sympathy of the Italians with Venetia from rushing them into a new war against Austria. In October, 1864, insurrectionary movements broke out in Venetia; but the government regarded them as utterly hopeless and useless, costing Italy men and money without the least chance of success. The *Diritto*, of Turin, was seized by the government for publishing a proclamation of Signor Carioli calling upon the people to



support the insurrection in Venetia. On the 16th of November, the troops of the Italian government had a severe engagement with a band of insurgents, or, as they were called in the reports from Italy, with the Garibaldians, at Bagolino, in Northern Lombardy, in which both sides lost many men in killed and wounded, but which terminated in a capture of a part and a dispersion of the rest of the insurgents.

The Austrian government issued a proclamation on the 15th of November, declaring martial law in eighteen districts of the provinces of Friuli and Treviso. Sentinels and patrols were ordered to fire upon assemblages after the first summons to disperse. The penalty of death was remitted to all those who voluntarily surrendered themselves, or who were given up by the populace. These measures resulted in the suppression of the insurrection.

While the year 1864 did not witness many remarkable events in the political affairs of Italy, yet it was a period of agitation and conflict. The war of ideas raged throughout the Peninsula, from north to south, from east to west, in the parliamentary debates, in the columns of the daily press, in the discussions on the piazza, in the conversations of every household, and in the thoughts of every heart. We may take the press as one of the most reliable exponents of the political, social, and religious condition of the country at that time. The skirmishes which occurred every day in its columns indicated the existence of two Italies—the one that was passing away, and the other that was rising. The growth of the press itself was conclusive evidence of the progress of liberal ideas. After the enfranchisement of the pen in Italy by the revolution of 1848 and the sword of Napoleon in 1859, papers of various kinds were started, and, in 1864, every party had its literary organ. The Ultramontanes, being more expert at fingering their rosary than the compositor's stick, were the last to come into the field. Necessity compelled them to take this advanced step, and they resolved to be in the front ranks, having commenced the publication of seven journals in Florence alone, in the Summer of 1864.

The rapidity with which newspapers sprang up in every part of the country was marvelous. There was not a city, and scarcely a third-rate town, which did not have its daily journal, more frequently two, and, in some cases, as Turin, Florence, and Naples, almost a dozen. The Italians made the press of England their model. They conducted their discussions with increasing intelligence and excellent temper, though often enlivening them with raillery, or spicing them with bitter sarcasm. The political situation was the great topic dis-

cussed by them, and the priesthood the principal class assailed by them; not that they desired to attack the doctrines of the clergy, but to criticize their inconsistent lives, or, as in many cases, their political opinions. Both parties, lay and clerical, appealed to the Bible in their daily controversies, and thus a book, which had almost passed into oblivion in Italy, emerged, as it were, from its sepulcher; and some of its readers turned away from the morning newspaper to the colporteur's depot.

*Il Temporale, Giornale Politico-Morale*, published in Florence, vigorously assaulted the temporal power of the pope almost every day, and the emissaries of the hierarchy, not wishing to have its errors publicly exposed, replied to the logic of this fearless paper by occasionally throwing a bomb-shell into its office window. In the number issued on the 24th of June, 1864, we find this address to the codini and legitimisti: "You have raised your voices to the utmost pitch in condemnation of the wickedness of the age; you have rent the very heavens with your protestations against the violation of divine right; and, in proof thereof, you appeal to the thirteenth chapter of Paul's epistle to the Romans, where it is said, 'The powers that be are ordained of God.' *Benissimo*. Constitutional kings and republican presidents, being powers regularly constituted, are powers ordained of God. In France it is Napoleon III who is to be obeyed; in the United States of America it is President Lincoln who is to be obeyed; and in Italy it is your duty to submit yourselves to the law of Victor Emmanuel as the power ordained of God. Signor Fanatico Legitimisto, you have pronounced against yourself. Monsignor Prete, you know how to quote the letter of the Bible; its consequences you can not divine, and into its profounder meaning you are unable to enter."

This article provoked a sharp reply, and the journalist was reproved for his presumption in interpreting the Bible. He was asked why he, a layman, should endeavor to explain its true meaning, when this power belonged to those only upon whom it was conferred by the Church. The Jesuitical writer advised the heretical editor to throw away a book which he did not understand, and which he might wrest to his own destruction. To this suggestion the journalist responded by asking the priest why his Church had a territory, an army, a crown, ambassadors, and tax-gatherers, when Christ said, "My kingdom is not of this world;" and why the pope seats himself in the Prætorian camp surrounded by his guards, and beholds his troops defile past? Christ's servants did not fight, but the papal soldiers went forth to slay men, though, "it must be confessed," says

*Il Temporale* of the 19th of July, 1864, "that, of late, they have won no laurels, save such as they have gained over the unarmed Romans." The editor expressed the opinion that the papal kingdom was decidedly of this world, that its charter would show that it was not established by Christ, but by Pepin.

The priests were greatly excited by these articles in the free press, and endeavored to silence the objectors by urging the old argument that the temporal power is necessary to the independence of the spiritual office. "What an admission," exclaimed the liberal writers; "then are the present race of popes and bishops but cowards. Why can not you fulfill your mission unless you have a park of artillery behind you? Why are you courageous only when you speak from the midst of bayonets? The first pastors went forth to proclaim the Gospel in the face of axes and stakes. Why should you, their successors, shirk duty to save your dainty limbs? Did Christ say to the first evangelists, 'I send you forth as sheep among wolves; but fear not, I appoint unto each of you twelve battalions of infantry and six squadrons of cavalry as a body-guard: be strong and of a good courage?' Were the prophet of Mecca to look up, how astonished he would be to find the sword which he had thought was laid by, with his ashes in the tomb, drawn from its scabbard by the Church, and as vigorously wielded by her priests as it ever was by his Saracens. 'Verily,' would Mahomet say, addressing the pontiff, 'I recognize in you a worthy successor, and I hereby duly enfeoff you in the chair in which you sit; and no one has a better right to do so than myself seeing that chair belonged to me and not to Peter.'"

These independent writers in the free press also addressed the cardinals, congratulating them on their greatly improved position since the days of Peter the fisherman and Paul the tent-maker. These modern princes of the papal Church were reminded of the fact that when the latter apostle visited Rome he was not seated in a "gilded chariot, drawn by coal-black steeds," like those brilliant equipages in which their eminences display themselves on the Pincian, or dash at thundering speed along the Corso. When Paul terminated his long and tedious journey on the Appian Way, and reached the "Eternal City," he was no doubt "foot-sore and travel-soiled," and not in a condition to be introduced at court, or to be presented even in the palace of a senator. He could truly exclaim, in the midst of the grandeur of the pagan metropolis, "Not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called;" but in the same city, under papal rule, the servants of Christ assume the titles



of nobility, exercise civil authority, and amass almost unlimited riches. Becoming bolder in their attacks, these advocates of a "free Church in a free state" proceeded further, by saying that if Peter ever visited Rome, in his fisherman's coat and with his Galilean accent, and signed all his edicts with the fisherman's ring, he must have been a greater potentate than the emperor. Did the latter abdicate in his favor? or was he sleeping, or on a journey, while Peter was acting as a sovereign at Rome? After discussing the question, and showing that contemporaneous history is silent about it, these writers declared that Peter's visit to the "Eternal City" should be placed "in the same category with Aristolfo's journey to the moon."

The priests denounced these wicked sarcasms, not hesitating to call them "horrible blasphemies," and solemnly consigned their authors to the regions occupied by Korah, Dathan, Abiram, and similar individuals. These papal shepherds not only interpreted the Bible to confirm their position, but also interpreted the providences of God when an opportunity occurred. When the wife, brother, and other relations of Victor Emmanuel died, the priests declared that the constitutional views of the king had brought upon him the judgments of God. The death of Cavour was also regarded by them as a visible manifestation of the divine displeasure. A melodramatic incident at Fontainebleau was not overlooked by these interpreters of passing events. The emperor of the French accidentally fell into the lake in the palace grounds, and, after a thorough soaking, was rescued. It was said that this was a warning from God to Louis Napoleon that if he did not adopt a different policy toward the papacy a greater calamity would befall him. "Transformations," said Signor Margotto, in the papal organ, *Il Solito Dito*, "such as that of Nebuchadnezzar, are not confined to Old Testament times. Louis Philippe fled from France in a little *fiacre*, and his successor may be obliged to leave it in even a more humble guise. The first Napoleon was constrained to sign his abdication in the same palace of Fontainebleau where he had kept the pope prisoner, and compelled him to abdicate. Napoleon III has in the same palace signed decrees which are not worthy of a Christian emperor and a loyal son of the Church, much less a canon of the Lateran; and the Most High has given him a warning that if he does not use his empire for his glory and the good of Catholicism he may yet terminate his career of success and power at the bottom of a miry pond."

The lay journalists, in commenting on this article, pronounced its logic excellent and ingenious, but claimed that it could be applied to

priests as well as to kings. As an illustration, *Il Temporale*, in its issue of the 4th of July, 1864, referred to an accident which occurred shortly before that at Fontainebleau. The pope had visited the convent of St. Agnes, at Rome. A great crowd was present, and, the rafters being somewhat decayed, the floor suddenly gave way, precipitating the whole assemblage into the apartment below, with the exception of the pope and one or two others, whose chairs, fortunately, were placed on a portion of the flooring that remained firm. Beneath was a confused mass of monks and nuns, groaning and struggling, and covered with dust and broken timbers, while the pope and his companions sat in their safe niche, "like stone saints in a cathedral wall," and looked down compassionately in the gulf below. "Now," said *Il Temporale*, "let us put in practice the lesson in logic read to us by Signor Margotto. A manifest monition does Christ tender to you, his vicar. When you were a fugitive at Gaeta the French restored you to your diocese. You entered Rome over the bodies of your slaughtered flock; you mounted to your throne on steps covered with blood; but now God tells you that if you do not repent of your wickedness, lay down the temporal power, and use your office for his glory, a worse thing will befall you than happened to the poor nuns of St. Agnes."

These extracts from the radical and the clerical press indicate the nature of the conflict which raged in Italy in 1864. The discussions were not ecclesiastical, as involving the priesthood, or any doctrine or practice of the Roman Catholic Church, but simply as to the temporal power of the pope. Italy had not at that time the high-class magazines devoted to religion, literature, and science, but she had numerous low-priced papers, which circulated among the masses, and educated them in the principles of political freedom. The public mind was deeply agitated by these controversies, and conflicts between the government and the *codini* priests frequently occurred. Eleven of them were arrested for treasonable language spoken and printed in a call at Carassai for contributions of money to the pope. They were tried in Turin, and each one condemned to ten days' imprisonment and one hundred francs' fine. For a long time a serious disagreement had existed between Mgr. Caccia, of Milan, who filled the office of archbishop of Lombardy, on the one hand, and the municipal authorities on the other. After months of annoyance and forbearance on the part of the authorities and people of Milan, a petition, signed by many notabilities of the city, was sent to Turin, asking the interposition of the government for their relief. Mgr.

Caccia was called to Turin, and, after making fair promises of conciliation and loyalty, was permitted to return to Milan. His first acts, however, were in violation of his promises, and in defiance of the wishes of the government and people. Soon after the prime minister sent again for the monseigneur, who, according to the report in a Milan paper, "obstinately refused to go to Turin to give any explanation of his conduct." He arrived, however, the next day, under a military escort acting by order of the prime minister, and found a home in the convent of the Barnabites, where he had abundant time for reflection. These events seemed to be preliminary to the entire destruction of the great hierarchy, which, like a millstone, hung about the neck of Italy for centuries.

In the north of Italy, in the early part of 1864, many violent demonstrations were made by the priests, who were alarmed at the progress of liberal ideas. Four young men, who went from Milan to Monza, were suddenly surrounded by a crowd of men and women of the lower class, who cried out, "Death to the Protestants!" These young men were taken for Protestants, though they were not in reality. Three of them escaped; the other fell into the hands of these fanatics, and his life was saved only by the intervention of some citizens. The civil authorities inquired into the reason of this fury of the people against the Protestants, and found that a priest had been preaching against what he called heretical doctrines, at the same time urging the people to unite and compel the authorities to suppress an evangelical school in their community. The sub-prefect of Monza, justly excited by this attempt against liberty of worship, guaranteed by the constitution, entered a complaint against the priest, in order that he should be prosecuted under certain articles of the penal code. A colporteur, selling Bibles on the public place, was surrounded by some people, who bought several Bibles, and then with matches attempted to burn them. Others reproached them for these acts of violence, when they became still more excited, and overturned the table of the colporteur, and tore in pieces all his Bibles. The police interposed, and arrested one of the guilty party, who confessed that a priest had furnished the money and excited them to these acts of violence, promising that they should gain paradise! A Turin paper, speaking of these acts of violence, said: "Wherever these acts occur there is always found behind the curtain the hand of a provoking priest. But the civil authority will energetically protect the liberty of worship threatened by these odious demonstrations. The Italian soil is a



free soil, and the first conquest of liberty is liberty of conscience." As an illustration of the disregard of the Italian government of the spiritual power of the papacy, there were in the Summer of 1864 fifty-six bishops and priests on trial before the courts for attempting to serve the pope without due attention to the rights of the people.

---

### Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

---

## CHAPTER XXIII.

### *RELIGIOUS PARTIES IN ITALY—THE PAOLOTTI.*

IN 1864 Italy contained three parties, divided by the religious question, and each distinct from the other. The first consisted of those who viewed Church reform from an exterior and political stand-point. The flag around which they rallied had upon it Cavour's maxim, "A free Church in a free state." Their whole purpose was simply to separate the ecclesiastical from the civil jurisdiction. The papacy was asked to surrender its privileges and exemptions only so far as these gave it the right or pretext to interfere in civil affairs; and the state, in return, pledged itself to guarantee to the Church the absolute and independent exercise of her own authority. This party did not propose to accomplish any change within the Church, neither in doctrine nor discipline, and even declared that the Church must be guarded from the desecrating touch of innovation. They insisted that she must be separated from the state, so that the spiritual could be emancipated from its vile subjection to the temporal. This change, they affirmed, would complete the liberty of both powers, and bring to them a new era of prosperity.

The second party was composed of those who looked at Church reform from an inner and ecclesiastical point of observation. They coincided with the first on the question of demanding of the pope the surrender of the temporal power, believing that this step was essential to the progress of the Church. Their theory was that if she could be removed from the engrossing influence of politics, and delivered from the agitation of earthly passions, her former dignity and purity would be restored, and instantly her faithful children would respect and love her as in the past. As to ulterior reforms,

they proposed a certain kind of separation between the ecclesiastical and temporal authorities, and a reformation to some extent in the discipline of the Church. But they contended that the pope must remain the spiritual head of Christendom, though they declared that his power should be more nominal and diffusive. This party did not favor the continuance of all jurisdiction and rule in the hands of the pope; but, on the contrary, believed that the "Church,"—or, more properly speaking, a "Council,"—should be made the supreme judge in ecclesiastical matters. They opposed, however, any reformation in the doctrines of the Church, or any interference with the "dogmas," which had flowed from the fount of infallible authority, and must go down to the latest age of the world undisturbed and unpolluted. While advocating more latitude in "opinions," they claimed that the clergy alone had the inalienable prerogative to judge of truth, and that the indisputable duty of the people was to believe and obey. It appears, therefore, that this party made a compendious classification of all rights and all duties on both sides, leaving the one "still in possession of irresponsible infallibility," and preaching to the other "the doctrine of unquestioning submission."

Although strenuously opposing any change in the "authority" and the "faith" of the Church, this second party admitted that many abuses had crept into the administration of her discipline, which they desired to correct. They accused the bishops and higher dignitaries of robbing the lower clergy of their rights, and of oppressing them in various ways. These fortunate prelates monopolized nearly all the revenues and power of the Church, and hence the redistribution of both was loudly demanded by the parochial clergy. The latter also asked for the restoration of the rights and liberties, of which they had been despoiled, with the additional benefits of a more adequate income, a participation in the government of the Church, and the privilege of marrying. These reformers, who were mostly priests, predicted that such a policy would make a purer clergy, a more vigorous Church, and a deeper impression upon the world.

The third party called themselves the *Evangelici*, or the Evangelical Church of Italy. They believed that the "pagan usages," the "scholastic dogmas," and the "idolatrous ceremonies" of the Roman Catholic Church were the fatal heritage of the past to Italy, and, therefore, they desired to inaugurate a reform in doctrine, in worship, and in discipline, and thus annihilate the antagonism, of which the Italians were conscious, between Romanism and civilization. They proposed to abolish the papal system of the Middle Ages, and replace

it with the pure Catholic faith of the first age. By this method alone, they claimed, could there be at once a complete and permanent reconciliation between religion and progress, Christianity and civilization.

In 1864 the more thoughtful of the Italian people were anxiously discussing the important question as to which of these parties could solve the problem of the nation's deliverance. It was not a matter of mere speculation, but, as they believed, one which involved the life or death of their country. The papacy continued firm and defiant, creating a still more bitter antagonism between the religious faith of the nation and its political and social progress. The longer the Italians pondered over this problem the more inextricable it became; but they resolved to persevere in their efforts, because to abandon their purpose would be the giving up of a grand opportunity and welcoming national ruin. "Behind us," once exclaimed the minister La Marmora, "is the abyss." They could not retreat without throwing away all that they had already achieved. Hence they must advance, and look to one of the three parties, then in the field, to meet the emergencies of the hour by establishing order and consolidating their liberties.

Previous to 1860 the Italians were entirely occupied in discussing the political question, and desired only the *statuto*. When this was granted, a speedy adjustment of their difficulties followed, and the most sanguine among them were surprised at the glorious victory so suddenly won. But they discovered soon after that their liberties were still incomplete, and that their country was a house divided against itself. They wondered why the fires of revolution smoldered beneath them, and why the sword of war was yet suspended over their heads. At length, the truth flashed upon their minds that a mightier obstacle than the political question obstructed their path. They almost unanimously came to the conclusion that the papal Church was the great hinderance. Although artfully disguising its true character under a spiritual aspect, nevertheless it made its power effectually felt. The Italians then naturally wished to know why there should be antagonism between religion and progress, and whether this hostility was attributable to the inherent nature of religion, or was simply the outgrowth of a vicious ecclesiastical system.

The newspapers and other publications of that period reveal the actual state of public sentiment regarding the various expedients which had been proposed for the solution of Italy's grand problem—



the removal of this antagonism, and the reconciliation of the national Church with civilization. In the months of June and July, 1864, *La Perseveranza* of Milan contained able discussions of this great question. The writer first reviewed the position of the party who have for their motto, "A free Church in a free state." He asked whether the state could consistently permit the Church to define the limits of her own powers. If so, then it must abandon its functions, and return to the dark ages. The state, he argued, must itself define its limits. It finds that it has certain interests and rights in matters not exclusively secular, as Church property, religious corporations, the power of bishops, and the parochial clergy, universities and schools, baptismal registers, marriages, and burials. These rights, he asserted, belong to the state, and it should, by its own laws, maintain them, and even recover them by force, if they happen to be taken from it. The state can only be called free as regards the Church when all these rights have been restored to it. But the Church denies the power of the state to abolish the religious orders, to appropriate ecclesiastical domains, to enact civil marriage, to frame a national system of education, and to do other things, which, at that time, this writer declared, it was actually doing. The state understood liberty to mean one thing and the Church construed it to mean another. How then, he asked, can we determine which of the two liberties are referred to in the motto, "A free Church in a free state?" The two are contrary, because if the state is free the Church is bound, and *vice versa*. In this article, entitled, *La Questione Religiose in Italia*, the author, Aristide Gabelli, touched the whole difficulty of the question, and, in closing his argument expressed the opinion that the formula, "A free Church in a free state," would remain a dead letter unless the Church herself should undergo an essential change.

In his eloquent *brochure*, *La Chiesa Romana e l'Italia*, or "The Roman Church and Italy," F. De Boni, presented similar views. "Incredible to be told," said he, "we sport with the honor, the life, the future of our country under the formula, 'A free Church in a free state.' It is repeated on every occasion, but each takes it in his own sense. . . . It is vaunted as a maxim in which lies wrapped up in the salvation of the country. This is not quite so evident. One of the two must contain the other, or there must be an absolute separation between them. The Church must conquer the state, or the state must make the Church completely subordinate, or state and Church must live in a complete

divorce, and flow in channels as far apart as those of two rivers, which empty themselves into different oceans." After enlarging on the dogmas, and the methods she adopts to compel belief of these, he declared that the Roman Catholic Church had brought miseries on Italy, "enough to make the stones cry out," and closed by saying, "After all this, it is necessary to repeat, that the maxim, 'A free Church in a free state,' is for Italy an impossibility. The phrase is simply equivalent to this other, 'A Church free to attack the free state.'"

The second party occupied an intermediate position, advocating a separation between Church and state, and a scheme of ecclesiastical reform which was truly a limited one. They were regarded as innovators by the Church, and despised by the laity, who considered them behind the age. While proposing to abate a few of the grosser scandals of the papacy, they did not seek to remove the cause of these evils. At one time they would denounce the temporal power of the pope, and create the impression that they were with the evangelicals; at another, they would defend the spiritual papacy, and talk like Ultramontanes. Their position was neither consistent nor logical, because if the Church be infallible, as they maintained, then they advanced too far; but, if she be not infallible, which they practically conceded when they said that she had become tyrannical in government and corrupt in practice, then they did not proceed far enough. The idea prevailed in England and America that a large party among the priests, favorable to enlightened scriptural reform, existed in Italy at that time; but such was not the case. Their views were misunderstood, and they received credit for more liberal sentiments than they really entertained.

Filippo Perfetti, formerly secretary of Cardinal Marini, librarian of the University of Rome, and, in 1864, professor of Italian literature in the University of Perugia, was a prominent representative of this class. He was considered one of the most advanced of the ecclesiastical reformers of Italy, and, better still, a true disciple of the Lord Jesus Christ. "Papal Rome," he declared in his *Delle Nuovi Condizioni del Papato*, or "New Conditions of the Papacy," "is a more abnormal fact, and, by consequence, a more impious fact than Islam." Again he said, "The throne of the pope will fall to-day or to-morrow; the sooner the better, the better for the good of Italy and the character of the papacy." "The people," he continued, "have not been able to see what a jewel the Gospel is, because it was set in a metal too base, the same of which their

chains were made." In a more recent work, *Il Clero e la Societa, ossia della Riforma della Chiesa*, or "The Clergy and Society," he asserted that the priests had ceased to make converts, and thus related his own experience: "I have asked of all those Christians to whom that which is seen and felt was but a shadow—those Christians, who felt in the life that decays, the inner life that endures—the way by which they were brought to Jesus Christ and to peace. Some have indicated to me the Bible, some have spoken to me of the traditions contained in the writings of the Fathers, some have pointed me to the heaven above, some have answered like the mystic in his simplicity, *Via crucis, via lucis*, but hardly one has pointed me to the priest."

It would seem that a man like Perfetti must be antagonistic to the pope, repudiating forever the authority of Peter's chair, and laboring heart and hand to erect in his native Italy a free and independent Church, having no head but Christ, and recognizing no infallible standard but the Bible. Strange as it may appear, neither this leader nor any of his followers contributed their influence toward the erection of this glorious temple, but simply endeavored to remove one or two clumsy buttresses from the old edifice, though desiring to preserve the edifice itself. Perfetti and his party bowed humbly before the spiritual throne of the pontiff. "The pope," says Perfetti, in the work already referred to, "is not a subject of the king of Italy, or of any king or emperor. The pope has an office which has been committed to him by God, and which is not derived from man." "The pope is free and independent, not by the laws of the state, or in virtue of any convention, but by recognition of his own divine right." After making these statements he declared that "no political government can circumscribe or intervene in the action of the pope, or control his relations with the Catholic world." He next proceeded to weigh Protestantism and Catholicism in his balance, and decided that the latter was immensely superior to the former. "On that account," he asserted—that is, on account of its subjectivity—"Protestantism is inferior, immeasurably inferior, to Catholicism. Protestantism can not absorb Catholicism because it is not organic; Catholicism, being divinely organic, is able to absorb Protestantism, which in its essence is too spiritual and mystical. Catholicism is the man and the Church—the man in the Church and the Church in the man; that is to say, the man in union to Christ and in communion with the saints, and Christ manifested in him."

Such were the views of these Neo-Catholics, who endeavored to



occupy a middle-ground on the question at issue between the Church and the state. The result was that they were exposed to a cross-fire—the Church which they had abandoned attacking them, and the state but feebly defending them. They did not have that clearness of view, that comprehensiveness of breadth, and that energy and boldness of action which were essential to awaken the sympathy and command the confidence of the nation. The more enlightened Italians could not, therefore, depend upon this party to solve their problem, not knowing whether the new Catholicism would be less antagonistic to civilization than the old. De Boni, in his work, “*The Inquisition, or the Calabrian Waldenses*,” no doubt expressed the popular feeling when he said: “We must adapt our arms to the character and strength of the enemy. The Church has confiscated Italy in the name of God, chaining our country to her own altars; and we shall not be able to break either the country’s chains or our own without overturning those altars, which are based on the cupidity of a caste and the ignorance of the people. . . . The Church of Rome is immortal rebellion, pitching her tent, in God’s name, in Italy; and it is impossible to escape the dilemma: Italy, or the Church must perish.”

While these three parties favored a reformation, more or less, in the Roman Catholic Church, there was another in Italy which resisted all progress. The Paolotti, or the Jesuits, made their presence every-where felt, though the sound of their footsteps was not heard. The word “Jesuit” had filled Italy and the rest of Europe with terror because it represented a malignant power, surrounded with impenetrable darkness, “hearing with its ear,” says Dr. Wylie, “all that was said, and seeing with its eye all that was done.” As an army which meditated a night attack would not light signal-fires and beat drums, so the Jesuits, in order to accomplish certain results in Italy, discarded their odious name, and adopted one not so suggestive of their dark record. Hence they desired to be known as Paolotti—in other words, the members of the order of St. Vincent de Paul. “The order of Jesus and the order of St. Vincent de Paul,” said a Turinese journal in 1864, “have come out of two separate eggs, but one mother has sat on both—the Roman curia.” “In every Paolotto,” observed another, “we behold a Jesuit. The wolf has lost his skin; he has not lost his teeth or dropped his visor.”

Although differing in name, the Jesuits and the Paolotti were essentially the same in their moral principles and political aims. The maxim of both was that “the end justifies the means,”—a code not

only concise, but also convenient, raising no troublesome questions about the violation of oaths, and finding no sins in acts of perjury or deeds of blood. According to their creed the Church was the one society for which all others existed, and to promote her welfare was ever the paramount consideration. Hence, whatever means were employed for this purpose were sanctified, crimes even becoming virtues, and the worst classes of men being transformed into public benefactors. Such were the ethics of the Jesuits, and the newspapers of Turin and Florence in 1864 asserted that such were the ethics of the Paolotti. They possessed the same spirit of intolerance, and seized every opportunity to rectify whatever they regarded as erroneous in the opinions or institutions of the age. Their growth in Italy was remarkably rapid. They sprang up, we might say, in a night, like the prophet's gourd, and their portentous shadow soon darkened the whole Peninsula from the snows of the Alps to the fires of Ætna. Just as the Jesuits were called into existence by the Reformation, so the awakening in Italy brought the Paolotti upon the scene. Their work was to extinguish every spark of mental freedom and spiritual light that shone in Italy, and to lead the nation, once more blindfold and fettered, to the foot of the pope's throne and the shrine of the Madonna. To accomplish their purpose, they first resolved to overthrow the *statuto*, and then restore the Bourbon.

It seems almost marvelous that such a vast confederation should come into existence in so short a time. According to reliable accounts, the numerous membership and perfect organization of the Paolotti were the creation of a few short years. After all, it was not very difficult to extemporize such a society when the materials for its construction were so plenty in Italy. The diplomacy of Cavour and the sword of Garibaldi had made a united kingdom; but they could not create a united sentiment in the Peninsula. The old parties, with all their ignorance and prejudices, remained, and could not be banished from the country as easily as the dynasties. There were, first of all, the old and well-known parties of the Codini and Sanfedisti, composed of the prominent Roman Catholic families, who were conservative from wealth, and still more from tradition and aristocratic connection. They were still warm friends of the fallen dynasties, which misfortune had rendered more sacred than ever to them. Then there were the employés of the former governments, many of whom, while living upon the bounty of the present, reserved their best wishes, and when an opportunity occurred their best efforts, for the old. The next class consisted of the pensioners of the priest-

hood, who were numerous, as might be expected from the decay of agriculture and the ruin of trade. Finally, there were the fanatics, who were strong in number and revolutionary in spirit. When the new constitution was suddenly launched upon the political sea composed of so many diverse elements, it produced great commotion, shocking prejudices, and producing a conflict of interests. In this state of society, when old ties were being dissevered, and enemies, secret and open, were appearing on every side, faction was strong, and, like the fabled warrior, had only to stamp with its foot, and an army rose from the ground.

Each club of the Paolotti was under the direction of a president and a secretary. The communal clubs reported to the provincial centers, and the latter reported to Rome, where the head of these confederated societies resided and directed all. They professed to do religious work exclusively, bestowing alms on the poor, and administering consolation to the sick. To teach the young the wholesome lessons of the *Dottrina Christiana*, and to comfort the dying with the last rites of the Church, were special duties which they seldom neglected. Belonging to every rank of life from the noble to the beggar, practicing every trade and profession, advocating every shade of politics, and wearing every disguise, they understood how to open every closed door and to enter the most secret places. They even insinuated themselves into the bureaus of government, and while eating the bread of the state were plotting for its overthrow. The workshops and working-men's clubs swarmed with them; but their greatest desire was to be tutors and school-masters, so that they could control the rising generation.

"In Leghorn," says *Il Temporale* of the 12th of July, 1864, "this sect has insinuated itself in great numbers into every place. We do not speak of the offices of government, where they may be seen lounging in their easy-chairs, reading the *Armonia* and the *Campanile*; but in every establishment of public instruction, in every orphanage, in every institution of charity, and even in the associations of the operatives, in the municipal offices, and in the communal council itself, they have their agents, acting upon the immoral maxim that 'the end justifies the means,' supporting every wickedness, and by every base means attempting to enlist members and acquire power." In the same paper, of the 12th of May, 1864, we find a speech delivered by Signor Siccoli in parliament a few days previous. "This society of St. Vincent de Paul," said he, "enjoys the sympathy of the rich families, who abundantly aid them with money. In Tuscany



the infant-asylums are under their charge. They make it their business to train servants, merchants, school-masters; and hardly has a vacancy taken place before the society has found a suitable member of its own to fill it. By these means, a Paolotto was made president of the bank of Tuscany; a Paolotto was made secretary of the chamber of commerce at Florence; a Paolotto was named for employment in the secretaryship of the public accounts. We have Paolotti," said Signor Siccoli, in conclusion, "in this Chamber."

In its issue of the 4th of September, 1864, the *Avisatore Alessandrino* said: "The Paolotto is found in the court, in the ministry, in the parliament; the Paolotto is found in the prefecture, on the tribunals, in the courts of appeal, in the dogga, in the barracks, in the navy, in the schools, in the lyceums, in the administration of the savings'-bank, the lottery, and the hospitals. The Paolotto is found in the democratic club, in the operative association; in short, he is every-where. This race of chameleon Jesuits conspire in secret, and sow by the deadly talk of their mouths the seeds of a clerical and Bourbonic reaction. Do you demand a proof? Wherever reaction has taken place in Italy, there first has come the Paolotto. This powerful body, with its numerous affiliated branches, is spread not only over all Italy but over all Europe."

"This wolf in sheep's clothing," said Domenico Bomba di Roma, "is committing great ravages on the coast of Liguria. The order of St. Vincent de Paul has two associations in Genoa, whose operations ramify through affiliated clubs over the whole seaboard on both sides of the city. The traveler who visits the Riviera on the working days is struck with admiration at the rising trade and teeming populations of the numerous towns which line the shore; but let him revisit these places on a festa, and he will be still more struck with dismay at the superstition of the people, as gross as any he may have witnessed in the far south among the lazzaroni on the shores of the bay of Naples. And yet the population of the Riviera have been now twelve years under a free constitution." The writer ascribed the low state of the people in moral enlightenment to the influence of the Paolotti, and complained that while the government fettered other societies, it gave unrestricted liberty of action to an "association which tramples on every law, abuses every privilege of human intercourse, whether of the family or of friendship, and forms one of the mightiest existing obstacles to the stability and independence of the kingdom of Italy."

It appears, therefore, that there was a sacerdotal army in Italy as well as a royal one, and perhaps the former was larger than the

latter, but its muster-roll was not within reach of the public, and consequently its numbers could only be approximated. The soldiers were admirably drilled, and were ready for the great conflict which seemed to be rapidly approaching.

---

Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

---

CHAPTER XXIV.

*PROTESTANT MISSIONS ADVANCING.*

WHILE the first and second parties described in a previous chapter were striving to secure their favorite reforms, and the Paolotti were resisting both, the third or evangelical party endeavored to preach the doctrines of a pure Christianity, believing that God's truth, diffused among the masses, would finally regenerate Italy, politically and religiously. This important work was greatly accelerated during the year 1864, through the agency of the Waldenses, aided by the "American and Foreign Christian Union." The latter society, in the beginning of 1864, sent Rev. W. Clark to Northern Italy to superintend its missions there. Its organ, the *Christian World*, in referring to his departure for that field, expressed itself hopefully concerning the new center of missionary effort at Milan. Although Northern Italy was more enlightened and more forward in asserting political freedom than the central or southern part, yet she did not accept the Bible and the evangelist as cordially as might have been expected. The people, both high and low, desired liberty but, influenced by Gioberti's teaching, they strangely hoped for deliverance at the hands of the pope. The Upper Chamber at Turin had been ruled by a bigoted aristocracy, who clung to the idea of a reconciliation between Pius IX and King Victor Emmanuel. Both in Piedmont and Lombardy, all classes, except the Waldensians, were reluctant to cast off the pope and take the Bible, which is the acknowledged antagonist of the papacy. Even in Central Italy the Bible had a more extensive circulation than in Piedmont.

But by the operation of certain potent influences a great change had come over Northern Italy, which rendered it a promising field for Protestant effort. The whole of that fertile region, extending

from the bay of Genoa to the confines of the Venetian territory, including, perhaps, nearly half the great basin of the Po and the Adige, and likewise the long valley of Aosta, stretched out their hands for the Bible. Prayer-meetings multiplied, and were fully attended, and even preachers were called for with increasing earnestness. This revolution in public sentiment was in part caused by the pope's persistent "*non possumus*" reply to every proposal favorable to liberty. This reply—"it is impossible"—to all petitions for the inalienable rights of humanity, wearied and digusted those who meant to hold both liberty and papacy, and showed them that the union of the two was indeed "*impossible*." Then they commenced to study the Bible, and, abandoning the pope, accepted the sentiments, practices, and men sanctioned by God's Word. This auspicious indication was further noticed by the *Christian World*, which said: "Surely the time of commencing our new enterprise is most opportune. May we not hope that Mr. Clark, establishing his female seminary, preaching himself in Italian, and organizing a corps of native colporteurs and evangelists, will be the instrument in God's hand of great usefulness, not only to Northern Italy, but also to portions of Austria, now also open to the truth of God? Will not our readers accompany this new undertaking with special supplications to God for his richest blessings upon it?"

Soon after his arrival at Milan Mr. Clark reported that he was greatly encouraged with the prospect of doing good. He was informed by a Bible-woman that she was kindly received in all parts of the city by the people, who gladly listened to the reading of the Word. In his letter to Dr. Campbell, secretary of the "American and Foreign Christian Union," he said: "Would that I could make known to you and your committee fully my own view of the importance of aiding just now the work of evangelization in this great central city of Italy. Day by day I am impressed more and more with the conviction that now the opportunity is afforded if Christians abroad desire to help onward the work of religious reform in this land. Providence has thrown the door wide open, the Church may now apply her power to effect great results. As this city, with its population of two hundred and thirty thousand, is one of the principal centers of Italian freedom, and the strongest bulwark of this land against Austrian despotism, so it has become the most important center of evangelization. In no other city in Italy is there so large a number who listen to the preaching of the Gospel on the Sabbath, and in no other city has evangelical labor been so abun-



dantly blessed. Five places, in different parts of the city, have already been opened for public worship, and the sixth is greatly needed. Most of these are crowded with eager and attentive listeners to the truth, and often many go away for want of room. These places of meeting are obtained with great difficulty, owing to the opposition of the priests, and when obtained it is necessary to convert four or five rooms into one by partially removing the intervening walls. In consequence of this they are, after all, quite inconvenient, many not being able to see the speaker, or understand well his words. On account of these places being so humble and plain, many of the higher classes are deterred from coming; yet the preaching of the Word is attended with great power, and its influence widely felt through the city.

“The preachers are not men distinguished for learning, or power of eloquence, but they are men who have felt the power of the truth in their hearts, and hence can preach to the hearts of others. But on account of the increasing eagerness on the part of the people of this city to hear the truth, the work of these preachers has become exceedingly onerous. Three or four times on the Sabbath, and nearly every evening during the week they are required to give instruction to the people. A work so arduous they can not long perform, and already one of the most popular native preachers is beginning seriously to fail in health. The instrumentality here in the work of evangelization is wholly inadequate to the work to be performed. If multiplied tenfold it would hardly be sufficient to meet the demand. But feeble as it is, we are continually astonished at the results which follow. The light is spreading from this center into all the densely populated region around. The cities and towns on the east and west, on the north and south, are all receiving the truth, and asking for evangelical teachers. Every-where the preacher finds those who gladly listen to his words. If there were men to go forth in great numbers preaching Christ it would seem all Italy might easily be reformed and led to embrace the religion of the Gospel. And here is the great want: Christians abroad must help create here in Italy a native agency; raise up and qualify a host of young men and women, who will become the evangelizers of the country. Nothing to my mind is more evident than the fact that the duty of the Christian Church in America and England lies here; that is, in applying her power, aid, sympathy, and prayers to accomplish this work. It can be done. The material is here that can be worked into an agency that will overthrow superstition and set up the kingdom of

Christ through the whole extent of this beautiful land. May the Church awake to her mission in Italy and nobly perform it."

In the early part of 1864 Rev. Theodore Meyer, a Protestant minister, residing at Ancona, had a novel and interesting experience in a monastery. The superior of one of these institutions had expressed to a friend of Mr. Meyer his desire to see an evangelical preacher. Knowing that Mr. Meyer was about to visit the southern part of Italy, this friend informed the superior when the evangelist would reach the depot nearest the monastery. The monk was there with a donkey to convey the visitor to the building, which was two hours distant among the mountains. He entreated Mr. Meyer to go with him, declaring that for years he had prayed the Lord to bring him in connection with a Gospel minister. The evangelist consented, and spent two days there, preaching the first evening from a window to some members of the monastery, and a company of laymen from the neighborhood, who hearing of his arrival had come to serenade him with music. His text was John viii, 32, "If the Son, therefore, shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed." The sentiment of this text, illustrated and enforced, struck the right chord. The people cried, "Long live the Gospel!" and the superior clasped the preacher in his arms, while tears of joy streamed down his cheeks.

To the regret of Mr. Meyer, the people went to the house of the principal priest in the district, and cried not only, "Long live the Gospel!" but added, "Down with the pope—down with superstition!" On account of this demonstration, the evangelist declined a serenade which they wished to give the second night. During his visit he was almost constantly engaged in conversation with those who desired to know more about the Gospel of Christ, and especially with the superior, who dated his conversion from that time. The latter, after the arrival of Mr. Meyer at his home, addressed him the following letter.

"Dearest Brother in Jesus Christ—many, many thanks to you that you have been so kind to honor this monastery with your presence, and have thus become as it were, the first apostle into these regions. Not many days will elapse, and the people of Abruzzi, freed from their superstitions, will publicly confess Jesus in the light of the Gospel; and then your name will be blessed by the people, and your memory dear to them like that of Paul. . . . I hate and abominate the abject falsehoods of the Church of Rome, which are an insult to human reason and an offense to God. I have always shuddered in my

heart on account of these impostures; I have always made conscious of them my students, and spoke of them to all those persons of education with whom I came into contact. I have done so amidst unspeakable persecutions. But now I have got faith publicly to confess Jesus and his infallible doctrine, and neither hunger, nor nakedness, nor thirst, nor sword, nor life, nor death shall separate me from the evangelical Church, in which is Jesus our only Savior. What do I care about the persecutions which the Roman priests are preparing and raising against me? They have already conspired against me, and think of burning me alive, solely because I have received you, who are a minister of our Jesus, who is humble, and meek, and lowly in heart. Not wishing to grieve you, I will not speak of the terrible vexations which I have to suffer.

“Besides other cruelties, they have now ordered me to leave the monastery. Yes, I shall leave it, and shall walk, begging from door to door, till our gracious Lord brings me into your arms, being sure that the same Lord who made you the means of my conversion will also indicate to you some way in which I may gain a livelihood. I see very well that I have lost my social position and all the advantages flowing from it. But what matters it? I have instead found Christ and his precious faith, which are much better than all the treasures of the world. Without regret, yea, full of spiritual joy, I shall leave the monastery, not taking any thing with me but the poverty of the cross. The providence which clothes the lilies and provides food for the birds will take care of me also! Poor and lonely, but full of faith and with Jesus in my heart, I shall come to you. The Lord, who has used you as the instrument for my conversion to the holy law of the Gospel, will also through you open up to me some way for gaining a livelihood. Meanwhile I close, thanking the Lord Jesus Christ for the grace he has shown to me in revealing himself to me in his Gospel, and enabling me to confess him publicly. I am sure that by my example many will be induced to join the evangelical Church. There are here many seeds promising abundant fruit. . . . I shall stay here a few days more and then I shall at once come to you. You need not write to me, as your letters will not find me. All your brethren here greet you especially.”

Rev. E. E. Hall, of Florence, in a letter written on the 15th of January, 1864, referred to the death of Mr. T. Meek, a young man, who attended lectures at the Theological Seminary in that city, and who, though not permitted to preach the Gospel himself, exerted a great influence on one who expected soon to enter the field as a



minister of Christ. He recognized Mr. Meek as instrumental in awakening that love of truth in his heart which is so necessary in one called to preach the Gospel. Hence it could be said of the young man, that being dead he yet speaketh.

Mr. Hall received encouraging accounts from the various laborers employed by the "American and Foreign Christian Union," stating that God's blessing attended the efforts made to give the light and knowledge of salvation to those who sit in darkness and in the region and shadow of death. The refusal of a monk publicly to discuss some religious questions with one of the colporteurs directed the attention of many persons to the Bible, and almost every day some one requested instruction. Many expressed surprise that a simple colporteur and Bible reader should have such a knowledge of the Word of God as to be prepared for a discussion with a monk, who was learned in Roman theology. The humble servant of Christ informed them that the wisdom of God—not human wisdom—conquers error, and that the Lord can use weak instrumentalities to beat down the strongholds of Satan.

Another colporteur had an interesting conversation with a Roman Catholic priest, who was convinced of the errors of the Church of Rome and of the infallible truths of the Gospel, but, while he hoped that the people of Italy would soon awake to the necessity of a reformation, he hesitated, perhaps on account of age and poverty, openly to embrace the Protestant cause. In a certain family the husband obeyed the teachings of the priests, but the wife was inclined to be a Protestant. This disagreement threatened to produce a final separation, but the husband, having been induced to attend the meetings of the colporteur, was soon converted, and immediately all discord disappeared from his household, in which the peace of the Lord subsequently reigned. The minister at Como reported that the meetings there were well attended, and that the audience was generally composed of workmen, who in the stations of evangelization are the first to be reached by the truth. In their humble, and often difficult, position they deeply feel the need of spiritual consolations, which the Gospel alone can give. Hence at Como they opened their hearts to the Word which imparts strength for the trials of life. Meetings were held regularly on Sunday, Monday, Tuesday, and Wednesday evenings. On Thursday the evangelist visited Argagno, a little village some hours from Como, where about twenty Protestants assembled for worship, some from neighboring places often uniting with them. Returning to Como, the evangelist held

a meeting on Friday evening, and on Saturday evening he gave a familiar exposition of the Bible, interspersed with sacred music, to a class of thirty or forty young people. This programme indicates how earnestly the work of evangelization was prosecuted in Italy at that time.

Mr. Clark, writing on the 1st of February, refers to the girls' school in Milan, which was connected with the "Free Italian Church," and had been under the care of Mrs. De Sanctis, of Genoa. This lady addressed a letter to Mr. Clark, stating that the school depended entirely upon voluntary contributions, and that, in view of the great inconvenience which attended this irregular mode of support, she was anxious to have it placed upon a more certain and permanent basis. She earnestly requested Mr. Clark to make better provision for it, and he urged the mission committee at New York to become responsible for its support, inasmuch as the "American and Foreign Christian Union" desired to commence the work of female education in Northern Italy. He declared that female Christian teachers were greatly needed there, and that while the one then in charge was faithful and efficient, yet an American lady of energy and piety would make the school a real evangelizing agency by training the Italian females to become teachers. Mr. Clark also stated that among the causes which had operated against it were the want of constant superintendence, as Mrs. De Sanctis resided in Genoa, its connection with the boys' school, and its unfavorable location; but he expressed the belief that with liberal aid and good supervision it could be made larger and of a higher grade. He estimated the cost for the first year, to secure the necessary changes, pay the teacher, rent the room, and provide for contingencies, at the small sum of two hundred and fifty dollars.

In urging the committee to accept the school, Mr. Clark promised to obtain aid from various individuals in Milan, and mentioned the important consideration that such a course would give the society a great advantage in that city. The field was comparatively unoccupied, but would not remain thus very long, because its promising character would attract other agencies, and these might not harmonize with those already at work. He deprecated the introduction of new sectarian movements, which would produce jealousies and divisions, but advocated "a working agency energetically sustained by Christians abroad." While conceding that important assistance had been rendered by various societies and individual Christians, yet he asserted that no one society or association had taken hold of the work in Italy as vigorously as the case demanded. After stating that

no more inviting field than Lombardy could be offered to the Christians of America through the "American and Foreign Christian Union," Mr. Clark said: "If the Christians in America will now come forward to aid the Waldensian and Free Evangelical agencies, now so well at work, a greater blessing than can be told will be conferred upon this land. . . . These two agencies are sufficient in number, and any new foreign sectarian instrumentality introduced would be most unfortunate. Then let all the sympathy and aid possible be given to these two, and it is just now they greatly need all that can be given. The work of evangelization they have before them is immense, and they loudly call for help."

In March, 1864, a favorable report was received from Sienna. After months of prudent preliminary labor, a place of religious worship had been recently opened in that city under the direction of Rev. W. G. Moorehead, who had charge of that field. Two faithful men, Signor De del Bono, an evangelist, and his companion, a colporteur, for more than two months visited the people to become acquainted with them, and to win their confidence. This personal effort proved a most important preparation for the more public preaching of the Gospel. At length, after many discouragements, a suitable room for public services was secured, and those who, by means of private conversations had become interested in the Gospel, were ready for a more open manifestation of their interest, and at once connected themselves with the assemblies for religious worship. From the beginning the place of meeting was filled to its utmost capacity, and if a room capable of holding a thousand persons could have been obtained it would undoubtedly have been filled. While the opening of evangelical meetings attracts a variety of characters, many of whom cease to attend when their curiosity has been satisfied, yet the interest at Sienna continued to increase. The work was commenced with prayer, and a weekly prayer-meeting was maintained with special reference to the success of the Gospel in that city.

Sienna is somewhat celebrated for its university and high-schools. Its inhabitants, being generally intelligent and more thoroughly religious than those in other parts of Tuscany, were more likely to remain steadfast in the faith of the Gospel after embracing it. The priests and some others were deeply excited on account of the evangelical services. Some threatening messages were sent to those in charge, but they did not anticipate any serious interference, because the laws protected them. The government allowed a large degree of religious liberty; so that the bloody violence of other ages and the



prisons of the late grand duke were no more to be feared. More than three hundred and twenty years had passed away since Ochino preached at Sienna, and became the instrument in the conversion of many souls. Paleario, another eloquent preacher, and one of the most eminent of the Italian reformers, proclaimed the doctrine of justification by faith in the same city with great success. Having published at Venice, A. D. 1543, his book on the "Benefits of the Death of Christ," he was accused of heresy, and compelled to leave Sienna. But these old methods of opposing the progress of the Gospel were not tolerated by Victor Emmanuel, who maintained substantial freedom of thought and speech in Italy. As former efforts to establish an evangelical service in Sienna had been unsuccessful, the aspect of things in the Spring of 1864 was highly encouraging. During four months the efficient and faithful colporteur sold a large number of Bibles, Testaments, and religious books, though there had been other colporteurs there more or less of the time for three years.

The evangelist at Casale informed Mr. Hall that he was still laboring to revive the work which had been abandoned two years previous. A small number had remained faithful, and continued to meet for reading the Scriptures and mutual edification. By the efforts of the evangelist the number was gradually increasing, and there were indications that a prosperous and permanent mission could be established in that city. The evangelist was encouraged by invitations to preach the Gospel in two neighboring places. There were some persons in Vercelli who had been reading the Bible, and desired a Protestant minister to instruct them. At Livorno there was a Christian brother, around whom ten or twelve persons had gathered to receive the bread of life. The evangelist resolved to visit both places every week, and also continue his work at Casale. In the valley of Aosta meetings were held in four or five places, and the regular laborer there preached to about sixty persons, besides superintending a school of twelve children. The field was a difficult one to cultivate, but many professed to be greatly benefited by the services. The report of religious progress in the island of Elba was gratifying. The Church, consisting of three stations, had an increase during the preceding year of forty-nine members and twenty catechumens; and the schools were attended by fifty-four children, who also received instruction on Sabbath mornings. The minister performed two marriages, baptized six infants, and attended two funeral services. He reported that the temple at Rio, which was commenced in May, 1863, would soon be opened, and also that he had

secured two cemeteries, one at Longone and the other at Rio. The capacity and simplicity of the new place of worship at Portoferraio were favorably mentioned, and the Christian benevolence of the congregation highly commended. After subscribing more than twelve hundred francs for their temple, the people contributed largely and cheerfully to the expenses of worship, to the relief of the poor, and to the expense of printing some tracts in defense of the truth. The children also made an offering of their little savings, amounting to thirteen francs, and desired it to be used by Mr. Revel at Florence for the Sabbath-school paper and for Italian evangelization.

On the 30th of April Mr. Hall received some additional facts from the island of Elba, indicating still more significantly the prosperous condition of the mission there. New faces were visible in the new temple every Sabbath, and the meetings on Thursday evening particularly were well attended, many women, under one pretext or another, escaping from their houses and coming with their heads covered to hear the Word of God, and to sing his praises. In connection with this Church at Rio Marina there was a Sabbath-school of thirty children and a day-school of thirty-four. After repeated applications to the authorities, and after renewed promises by them to arrange a cemetery for the Protestants, the latter resolved to construct it themselves, looking to the municipality for the small pecuniary aid promised. The members of the Church and generous friends, forgetting the sacrifices they had made for their house of worship, at once subscribed more than three hundred francs for the cemetery. The 10th of April was an interesting day in the new church at Portoferraio. Six persons, four women and two men, were received as members, and there were thirty communicants at the celebration of the Lord's-supper. The place of worship was crowded with friends who manifested a deep interest in the services. The school formerly had twenty-two children, lost some through the intrigues of the priests, but, having an excellent, zealous Christian teacher, it was destined to prosper. At Campo, a new missionary locality, some earnest friends of the truth had been found, and many religious books distributed among the people. The inhabitants of Longone were rejoicing in the establishment of an evangelical school among them, and the civil authorities had also nearly completed a cemetery for the non-Catholic population.

In the early part of April a petition was sent from Grosse to Mr. Hall at Florence, asking for an evangelical pastor. It was signed by fifty-two persons, among whom were many proprietors and men of

influence, and one of the parish priests favored and approved the movement. The petitioners declared that the preaching of the Gospel by a Protestant minister would be a blessing to them and to their community. In response to this call a laborer was sent, a place of worship rented, and regular religious services established. The people appeared to be well-disposed, and there were no indications of serious opposition or persecution. The inhabitants also expressed a desire to have a school organized there. Grosseto is near the Mediterranean Sea, on the railroad between Leghorn and Civita Vecchia, and had at that time a population of three or four thousand. From Como good reports continued to be received. The influence of the mission was felt in the neighboring villages. In spite of many discouraging obstacles, the meetings in Como were attended by from sixty to one hundred persons, and often the place of worship would not accommodate the audience. "We can only express our gratitude," said the minister in charge, "for the many reasons we have for encouragement, both here and in the Valley of Intelvi, where the two congregations of Argegno and San Fedele are increasing, and developing an earnest Christian spirit. We count among our friends in this valley, besides a number of employés of the government, the syndic of Dizzasio, who exerts a very good influence in that region. I hope we may soon establish a congregation in this village, and for this purpose I go there every week." Even from the Valley of Aosta the intelligence was cheering. On the first Sabbath of April the members from different localities assembled together for the celebration of the Lord's-supper—about twenty at Carema and thirty at Baia. A meeting held at Bourg by the evangelist was attended by over twenty-five persons.



## Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

## CHAPTER XXV.

*EVANGELICAL WORK IN ITALY.*

IN a letter of the 24th of January, 1865, Mr. Clark, of Milan, reported that the people of Sondrio, in the Valtellina, desired the appointment of an evangelist and the opening of a chapel in that city. The Valtellina is one of the richest and most charming valleys in Europe, situated at the foot of the Alps, in Northern Italy, and leading from the Lake Como to the Tyrol. It almost unites the products of Sicily with those of the North, combining the severe beauties of the Alps with the mild sky of Italy. The snowy Bernina separates it from the Swiss Engadina on the north, and in its varied climate are found the chestnut, the almond, the fig, olive, and mulberry; and the Valtellina grapes in ancient times were so sweet that it is recorded that the Emperor Augustus had them brought to Rome for his table. The people of this lovely valley, always noted for their intelligence, at an early period manifested a remarkable interest in the Gospel. Indeed, during the persecutions of the Italian Protestants in the sixteenth century many from the central and the southern parts of the Peninsula sought refuge in the Valtellina; and afterwards, A. D. 1620, scores of families—men, women, and children—were massacred for their attachment to a pure Christianity. “Carlo Borromeo, the saint,” said Mr. Clark, “who now lies a hideous corpse in a crystal coffin in the vault of the beautiful cathedral at Milan, was the chief cause of this butchery. Sondrio is the largest city of this charming valley; and here are found many families who are continually entreating our colporteur to urge me to come to their help, and they have waited so long their last message was: ‘Are we forgotten? are we abandoned? We have called so long, and no help has come; we are almost discouraged.’”

After referring to this state of painful suspense in many parts of Northern Italy, Mr. Clark declared that a great increase of effort and expenditure was absolutely demanded to furnish evangelists and open places of worship. He also expressed the opinion that the colporteur must give place to a stronger and more permanent agency, and



CATHEDRAL AT MILAN.



that if twelve or fifteen thousand dollars could be expended in the next twelve months untold blessings would be conferred upon Italy for generations to come. An intelligent Italian professor said to him: "If America and England would give Italy their religion, and make her a living nation in Europe, it must be done and it can be done now; and if *not* done a dark and fearful conflict is before us. All moral and religious elements in society are to be terribly shaken, if not altogether swept away, by infidelity. We beseech you, give Italy the Gospel immediately." Other intelligent and serious-minded Italians stated that the people were being forced by the pope and his encyclicals to despise and reject the papacy, and that if a true spiritual faith was not soon given them they would reject all religion.

The efforts of the colporteurs to circulate the Bible and other religious books were generally successful, though in Lugano and Belinzona, towns in Canton Tessin, severe opposition was encountered. At the time of the great annual fair, which continued for many days, and always brought together a great crowd of people from the country around, an evangelist and his brother, a colporteur, placed their Bibles and tracts upon a table in the public square of Lugano, in common with all other articles exposed for sale. So many Bibles and religious books, however, were bought by the people that the priests became enraged, and day after day besieged the authorities, demanding that the sale of such pernicious books should be stopped. At first their protests were in vain; but finally, by bribes and entreaties, they persuaded two members of the municipality to send an order of prohibition. The evangelist and colporteur quietly removed their table, protesting, however, and appealing at once to the grand council of state, then in session. Two of the principal lawyers of the city volunteered to present and, if necessary, advocate their cause. The trial at once occurred, and resulted in the censure of the two members of the municipality, who gave no other reason for their prohibitory order than that the priests opposed the sale of the books because they were injurious to their Church. The evangelist said to the council that he was ever ready to yield to the laws, but not to the priests. After an examination, which excited great public interest, the governor of the council not only gave the evangelist and colporteur liberty to sell during the fair, as before, but publicly ordered the police to protect them. He also took occasion to issue by his secretary a public order, causing it to be published in the principal journal of the city, granting permission to these Protestant laborers to sell their books freely in every part of



the canton. The evangelist was cordially welcomed in Lugano, even by many families of influence, among which he did an excellent work. Not having a hall for public services, he visited the people in the city and in the region around, holding private meetings as opportunity offered.

The colporteur had almost precisely the same experience in Belinzona as he had in Lugano. A table was hired from the *café*, and placed in the public square of the town. The priests informed the vice-mayor that Bibles were displayed on the table, and he immediately sent the police to prohibit their sale. The colporteur resisted, declaring that he had the law on his side. A crowd assembled, and soon became tumultuous, half being in his favor and half against him. The vice-mayor also appeared, with three large, fat priests as his body-guard, and was greatly enraged that his orders had not been obeyed. The colporteur in the mean time, however, had appealed to the mayor, whom he knew to be friendly, and the latter sent an order not only permitting him to sell as long as he pleased, but also that he should be protected in so doing. The vice-mayor, who was a mere tool of the priests, was exceedingly angry, and at once began to denounce the colporteur in vile and abusive language. While thus doing he turned suddenly to leave, but, making a wrong step, he fell with his face violently striking the pavement. His nose was broken, and when he rose his face was covered with blood. Thus rebuked, he and the priests left the field, humbled and vanquished.

On the 23d of January, 1865, Rev. W. G. Moorehead wrote that his little Church at Carrara was in a flourishing condition, the meetings being well attended, and composed of some Roman Catholics and "indifferents," besides those who were interested in evangelical religion. A small Sabbath-school had been organized three weeks previous, and was held in a side room of the chapel. On the first Sabbath nine children and two men were present; on the second, fifteen children and four men; and on the third, nineteen children and eight men. Mr. Moorehead had charge of the school, and his wife, though she had been in Italy only six weeks, and had but a limited knowledge of the language, assisted in the instruction of an interesting class of poor, ragged, ignorant children, who could not read. The scholars were annoyed by urchins of their own age, who, no doubt sent by the priests for that special purpose, laughed and hooted at them, often gathering around the door of the school-room and shouting, "*Protestanti scomunicati*" (excommunicated Protestants), etc. The Italians are exceedingly sensitive of the name

*Protestant*; and on this account do not call themselves by that name, but always by the appellation of "Evangelici." They have been educated from infancy to regard the name *Protestant* as synonymous with *Satan*. Hence some of the children keenly felt the taunts of their bigoted companions, but did not leave.

Mr. Moorehead also held evangelical meetings at Torano, a small village near Carrara; and on Wednesday evenings and Sabbath afternoons the room was crowded with a deeply interested audience, sometimes every nook and corner being filled to overflowing, and many standing closely around the little stand erected for the speaker. The people manifested their anxiety to hear the truth by hiring the room themselves, and fitting it up at their own expense with seats and lights, a very unusual circumstance in the work of evangelization in Italy. Another encouraging feature of the mission was the presence of many women at the meetings, who listened to the preaching of the Gospel with wonderful interest. Generally speaking, the women are the last, except the priests, whom evangelical truth reaches in Italy; but in Torano nearly one-third of the audience were women. The people there asked for schools, daily and Sabbath, for the organization of a Church, and for the circulation of Bibles and other religious literature. Mr. Moorehead, after speaking of his encouragements, closed his letter by saying: "May the Lord, who hath in his mysterious providence led us to this place, bless and multiply more and more his own work. We ask your prayers, for ourselves, for our brother and fellow-laborer, Signor Perazzi, and for our work."

In the Summer of 1865 the evangelist at Como, in his report to the "American and Foreign Christian Union," stated that eighty persons composed the congregation, of whom forty-seven were communicants. Ten children attended the day-school, thirty the evening, and all were members of the Sabbath-school. This important agency strengthened and established the work of evangelization by instructing the young in the knowledge of the Gospel, and thus preparing them to become at some future day faithful witnesses for the truth. In the Val d'Intelvi there were between fifty and sixty who called themselves evangelical, and twenty-eight of these were communicants. At St. Fedele the Sabbath-school had fifteen scholars; but these statistics do not truly indicate the real strength of evangelical religion at that time. The Divine Word had penetrated the hearts of multitudes; and the good seed, under the quickening influence of the Holy Spirit, was growing, though not many persons openly identified

themselves with the Protestant movement. Besides the evangelist of the "American and Foreign Christian Union," the Geneva Committee also sustained an evangelist and a colporteur in Como, who not only conducted the regular services of preaching to a congregation of one hundred and forty persons in the city, but also visited several towns and villages near the lake, where many were inclined to accept the Gospel and follow its simple teachings. Thus, after two years of more or less regular evangelistic effort, the two congregations in Como had made substantial progress.

In all that region around the lake, as well as in most parts of Lombardy, the common people gladly received the Gospel, and there appeared to be less indifference and skepticism in that portion of Italy than in Florence and elsewhere in Tuscany. The selfishness of the priests, and the worldliness and unbelief of the laity caused some of the more intelligent and moral of the community to renounce the Roman Catholic Church. An incident published in a political journal issued in March, 1865, indicates the prevailing spirit of the priesthood. A woman in Cagliari, the mother of two little children, poor and dependent on charity for the necessities of life, was called upon to mourn the death of one of her boys after a short illness. She sent for the parish priest to bury him, but this so-called Christian minister absolutely refused to do so unless the poor mother should first give him a dollar and a half. She told him that it was impossible for her to pay this amount, and entreated him to bury her dead child. He would not do it, and she was compelled to solicit from friends and strangers, in small contributions, the amount demanded. After receiving it, the priest performed the usual funeral rites. A few days subsequently the other child died, and the mother went again to the priest beseeching him to conduct the customary service, saying that she was not able to give him the regular fee. "If you do not pay me," he exclaimed, "I will not bury your son." She begged him for pity's sake to grant her request, and, in reply to his demand for money, said: "Oh, sir, I can not; I have but one dollar, which alone remains to save me from starving, is not that enough for you? Is not one dollar enough? do you demand more of me? To her continual pleading and weeping, he said at last, "Bring me the dollar; as you are so poor, I will bury your child for one dollar." The editor of the paper, in commenting on this incident, remarked: "We could wish not to believe this fact; and for the honor of human nature we wish it had not occurred. O priests! why do you pretend to preach the Gospel?



why do you pretend to teach charity? You are unworthy of the name of priests, which you usurp. You are liars and hypocrites; you are the shame and disgrace of humanity."

Considerable excitement was produced in the cities and towns of Italy by the visits of an eccentric priest, Don Ambrogio, who exercised the functions of a preacher and colporteur at one and the same time. This extraordinary man continued to preach and suffer imprisonment by turns. He moved about from place to place, and harangued the multitude, who flocked around him, drawn by his eloquence, from market places and from the steps of cathedrals and churches. In Milan he preached to the people from the door of the cathedral and intended to leave the city. A rumor was, however, circulated that he would speak again. A great crowd collected, and he was entreated to deliver an address, though unprepared. While he was speaking, the roar of cannon at a distant review was heard, and he could not refrain from uttering a word or two about liberating Rome. He was immediately arrested and imprisoned. At Ivrea the people were so charmed that they lifted him on their shoulders and set him down in the pulpit of the parish church, from whence, at their earnest solicitation, he preached a thrilling discourse. The priests sued for fifteen hundred francs and a long imprisonment, but the court granted only fifty francs and three days of confinement. The priests appealed. The higher court reversed the sentence, and they not only lost the small sum, but had all the costs to pay. At Varsena, on St. Bartholomew's day, he entered the church, and placed himself opposite the priest, who through fear, dared not go on with his tirade against Protestantism. Ambrogio then invited the congregation outside, and preached to them from the parapet of the church.

The colporteurs that every-where followed him made large sales, as he called upon every one to read and study the Bible. The priests dreaded him, for he constantly cried out, "Don't give your money to the priests, but to the poor, for Christ, by his death, has brought us the pardon of our sins." The writings of Ambrogio were numerous, and had an extensive circulation. One of these half-penny fly-sheets had a drawing of himself, or of the Free Italian Church, represented by a female with the Bible in one hand, and the cross in the other, at the top of the page. One series was entitled "Plagues of Italy"—the first mentioned being the pope-king—the second, the monks and nuns, the celibacy of the priests—the fourth, the retrograde upper clergy. Another series con-

sisted of hand-bill dialogues between a priest of the Italian Church and a priest of the Papal Church. Then followed in order the headings, "160,000 Priests too Many," "The Brigand Priests," "Purgatory, Confession, etc." Each one closed with an appropriate prayer, and so large was the sale of these series that the citizens could be seen reading them as they walked along the streets. While these documents attacked in a fearless manner the errors of popery, they did not in the least countenance skepticism, but were sound in their reference to the Bible as the only rule of faith, and the Lord Jesus Christ as the only Head of the Church, and his atoning sacrifice as the only ground of hope for sinners. The aged father of Ambrogio, with the promise of great reward, was sent to bring him back to Romanism. He stood the test, but acknowledged that it was the severest ordeal through which he had ever passed.

In May, 1865, Gavazzi visited Milan, and preached every evening to very large audiences, multitudes being unable to gain admission to the hall. He de-

livered two sermons on the Bible, one showing that it alone revealed the way of salvation, the other, that while it was the oldest book in the world, it contained no principles opposed to modern science, but in exact accordance with it. This eloquent advocate of the truth also addressed a lengthy letter to Dr. De Sanctis on the subject of a union of the Churches, deeply



GAVAZZI.

regretting the divisions existing among the Christians of Italy. He expressed the opinion that the cause of these unhappy strifes could not be found among the Italians themselves, but among the foreign agencies that had been introduced into the country. All intelligent and religiously inclined Italians, he affirmed, had almost precisely the

same views and wishes with regard to the evangelization of their native land. All felt its necessity, all desired it, and nearly all entertained remarkably clear and harmonious opinions as to the manner in which this great work might be accomplished, but they firmly believed that the introduction of any foreign religious system or denomination into Italy would retard the progress of the Gospel.

An American clergyman, after a residence of nearly two years in Milan and a careful study of religious reform in Italy, communicated similar views in his letters to a friend at home. "It has been a great obstacle," he declared, "as well as a misfortune, in the work of religious reform in Italy that foreign societies and committees have not been satisfied with simply proclaiming the Gospel, but have sought in addition to bring their Church systems. This has given great offense to Italians and has led them to regard with suspicion all foreign agencies. It is frequently asserted that the Italians are jealous of foreigners and of their assistance. Nothing is more unjust. Never have I met with a people more cordial or generous, or that could better appreciate assistance, or felt more grateful for it when received, than the Italians. They have, however, a remarkable love of liberty and independence, and wish to be left free to adopt such forms of Church organization as they may choose. . . . They greatly desire and pray for assistance, and feel truly grateful for it; but are strongly opposed to any attempts to FORCE upon them a peculiar denominational system. They say, 'we want the Gospel and not denominations. We ask Christians and Churches to give us the Gospel of Christ, but not their Church systems.' The Italians are exceedingly sensitive upon this point. . . . If denominations or societies will consent to be only *assisting agencies* to the Italians, bringing to them the Gospel, preaching Christ and Him crucified, the work of evangelization will go forward gloriously; but if evangelization is secondary and ecclesiasticism primary, the truth will not make progress and all effort and expense will be in vain."

The same writer also stated that while the Waldensian and Wesleyan agencies were sustained with great liberality and zeal, yet unfortunately they did not throw themselves into the current of Italian sympathy by lowering their denominational standard before the standard of a common evangelism. The result was that separate Churches were formed, called Evangelical, or Free Italian Churches. At first they received but little foreign assistance, and struggled on in the midst of poverty, opposition, and contempt, at home and abroad.



Their evangelists were poorly educated, poorly supported, and with many little esteemed; and yet, notwithstanding all these difficulties and discouragements, their Churches had become in 1865 quite numerous, and their evangelists rapidly won the sympathy and esteem of the people. They were represented by their enemies at home and abroad as Darbyists, Plymouthists, and even Rationalists; but the American clergyman, already mentioned, who was acquainted with every phase of religious thought in Italy, said: "Having seen and heard many of their principal evangelists, I know them to be truly sound, faithful, and godly men. They preach the Gospel, for they have experienced its power in their own hearts; they eloquently preach Christ as the only Savior, and the people, who thirst for the waters of life, flock to hear them."

These Free Italian Churches, some with and some without evangelists, were scattered over various parts of Italy, and soon became more numerous than those of other organizations. After ascertaining the true character of their work, many English Christians contributed liberally to its support, the funds, when directed by the donors, being transmitted by a committee of gentlemen in Geneva and by a similar one at Nice. In connection with these Churches there was, in 1865, a spiritual movement of wonderful power, indicating that they were destined to be a great instrumentality in the regeneration of Italy. Already, with the very little assistance they had received from abroad, they were in a far more prosperous condition than those of any other agency. In Milan alone the "Free Italian Church" had about eight hundred members, and among these were some twelve or fifteen promising young men, who greatly desired to become evangelists, but were too poor to educate themselves.

Mr. Clark, of Milan, in his report of evangelical work in that city during the Summer of 1865 gave some strong proofs of its marked progress. The Roman Catholic authorities acknowledged that there had been a falling off in Milan of seventy thousand during the preceding year of those who regularly came to mass and to confession. This was a loss of a little more than one-fourth in a population of two hundred and seventy thousand. Another significant circumstance was the almost total failure of the festival of "Corpus Domini," one of the most solemn and magnificent of the Roman Catholic Church. At first the authorities were inclined to restrict the celebration of it that year to the brotherhood, but at length they decided that the public might participate. The citizens, however, almost entirely neglected it, the procession being composed of the clergy, some peasants from the

country, and a few of the rabble. Nothing could better indicate the growth of liberal ideas and the decay of Romanism at that time. Another sign of progress was the increased access of the evangelical agents among the Roman Catholic families. The few Bible-women in Milan, supported by friends in America, did a noble work among that class, and also those who had not openly declared themselves Evangelical. They were constantly invited to visit families that they had never before seen, and when they entered these homes, sometimes they were constrained to spend the whole day in answering questions eagerly put to them, and in explaining the principles of the Evangelical religion. There were so many who desired to know the truth, and yet would not venture to the place of public meeting, that the Bible-women seemed indispensable to this large and interesting class. These faithful women were truly evangelists, who went from house to house preaching the Gospel, and from whose labors much precious fruit was gathered. Many, through their instrumentality, were brought to Christ, and many, very many who, when taken sick, were bigoted Roman Catholics, gladly listened to the prayers and instructions of these Bible-women and died rejoicing in Christ, their only and all-sufficient Savior.

The number of those in the educated class in Milan who were favorable to reform appeared to be large, and constantly increased. The teachers and professors of the colleges and schools were, in many cases, firm and sincere friends of the truth, and expressed a desire to leave their employment, and consecrate themselves directly to the evangelization of their country. But unfortunately this class of professors and teachers in Italy embraced very few who were rich. The great majority were poor, their compensation, whether by the government or municipality, being so small that often with difficulty could some of the best and most learned professors in Italy support their families, or rise above actual want. One of them said to Mr. Clark: "We want pecuniary assistance from England and America to carry on this religious reform in Italy. We evangelists are all poor, yet we have talent, ability, and heart to work. Let but England and America enable us *to work* in this reform, and we will gladly bear the burden of faithful and successful labor. But we want means. We have no money with which to rent or build school-rooms and chapels, no money to buy our own bread while we give ourselves to this work; what shall we do? Why will not England and America help us?"

Mr. Hall, of Florence, received encouraging facts from nearly all

the colporteurs and evangelists under his supervision. One of them reported that he was often permitted to converse with country people, who generally received religious instruction with pleasure, and listened attentively to the reading of the Word of God. He endeavored to make them understand the differences between the disciples of Christ and the disciples of the pope, informing them that those who put their confidence in man would perish, but that those who trust in God and obey his Word, should find peace on earth and eternal blessedness in heaven. He also declared that no power of the priests could deprive their hearts of the joy of believing on the Lord Jesus Christ. Another laborer stated that, having entered a house filled with people, he began to speak to them of the Church of Christ; but, discovering that he was an Evangelical, some commanded him to leave, and others urged him to continue his discourse. This difference of opinion produced great excitement, and the missionary, fearing some serious results, proposed to offer prayer. They all became silent, and he called upon God to direct them in the light of the truth. When the prayer was ended, all appeared to be changed—there was no more opposition, and he was requested by the entire audience to proceed with his remarks on the subject first presented, or some other religious topic. He sold many tracts, the most of which were purchased by those who had opposed him. Another evangelist, who had been laboring in the neighborhood of Ivrea for three and a half years, said: "It is for me a subject of real joy, and a reason for encouragement to see that the Lord is working in the field intrusted to my care." He preached in a number of small villages and visited families somewhat isolated in the surrounding country. According to his ability and his opportunities he faithfully scattered the seed of truth, and persevered in his work amidst many difficulties. In a letter to Mr. Hall he referred to two persons recently admitted to Christian fellowship and communion. One of them gave great satisfaction to the assembly by a simple, but clear, statement of his faith, and the reasons which at length led him to abandon the Roman Church. The other, also a Romanist, after a regular attendance at the meetings in Borgofranco for several weeks, expressed a fixed determination to enter into communion with the Evangelical Church. Her decision and confession of the truth greatly encouraged the little brotherhood of that place.

At Torano, a village near Carrara, which has already been mentioned as a new but hopeful field, Mr. Moorehead organized a Sab-



bath-school, consisting of twenty-four pupils, all young men, who seemed deeply interested in the study of the Bible. The evangelist stationed at Vercelli had a congregation numbering from sixty to one hundred persons, and of these between twenty-five and thirty publicly professed faith in Christ, and became members of the Church. Four services were held during the week. There were also three small but interesting congregations—distant from Vercelli, one an hour, and the other half an hour by the railroad. At Livorno the religious services were regularly attended by from forty to fifty persons, and of these fifteen united with the Church. Others were gradually overcoming their timidity, of whom the missionary said: "I have good hope, and those who really know the Lord Jesus are, in their sphere, true evangelists." About twenty made a profession of their faith at Casale, and when the evangelist could not be present they held meetings for mutual edification, reading the Scriptures, exhortation, and prayer.

The evangelical cause at Milan was greatly strengthened by the efforts of Professor Oddo, a literary celebrity and a popular speaker of remarkable power. His lectures on the history of Italy made a profound impression, and the enthusiasm of his audiences was excited to the highest degree when he discussed the differences between the Roman Catholic and Protestant Churches. He arraigned the papacy as the enemy of Italy, and declared that he had no faith in any pretended reform of that ecclesiastical system. This eloquent lecturer also expressed his opinion concerning the school of atheism, affirming that few in Italy advocated it, and fewer still believed it, because the Italians are a people of religious habits, and the Italian philosophy itself is, in a certain sense, always Christian. Yet skepticism, resulting from want of faith in the Romish doctrines, prevailed, and the legitimate fruit was indifference, which Professor Oddo called the "true religious wound of Italy."

In 1865 the English Wesleyan missions in Italy made some progress, notwithstanding the unfavorable condition of the country religiously. Rev. H. J. Piggott reported fifty members in Milan, sixty communicants, and one hundred and fifty regular hearers at Caravaggio, a new station, and the organization of day and evening schools at these points. Among the preaching places were Intra, Varese, Asolo, Parma, Monza, and Florence. Mr. Piggott commenced the publication of the *Evangelical Gatherer*, a bi-monthly magazine, and issued one thousand copies every two weeks. He also established the first regular class-meeting, and was

encouraged by the liberality of the members, who, though poor, contributed cheerfully to the support of God's cause. Several native converts offered their services as exhorters, and six converted priests applied for admission into the Protestant ministry. Rev. T. W. S. Jones, who preached in Naples and at the outlying stations, Salerno, Foggio, Barletta, Bari, Messina, and Reggio, was greatly aided in his work by the publication of a bi-monthly paper called *Letture di Famiglia*. The Italian press generally favored the Protestant movement, and the intelligent middle class of people manifested some sympathy.

The political condition of Italy in 1865 was one of agitation, resulting from the conflict between the papacy and the government, which strongly developed itself in the month of January, when the papal encyclical of December 8, 1864, was issued. Not wishing to intensify the prevailing excitement, the government, on the 13th of February, authorized by a decree the circulation of the encyclical, its accompanying syllabus, and Cardinal Antonelli's circular—reserving, however, the rights of the state and crown, and without admitting the propositions contained in those documents which might be contrary to the institutions and legislation of the country. The proceedings of the parliament, which was in session on the opening of the year, did not present many points of interest. The bill introduced by the government for the suppression of religious corporations was withdrawn; but the ministry at the same time announced that the concession of the *circumscription* to ecclesiastical benefices would be suspended, and that the government would soon bring in another bill for the reform of the religious bodies.

On the 6th of March Pius IX addressed an autograph letter to Victor Emmanuel, requesting the latter's consideration of three points; namely, the return of the bishops to their sees, the nomination of other ecclesiastics to fill the vacant sees, and the admission of the titular ecclesiastics already appointed by the Holy See without the consent of the Italian government. In compliance with the pope's request, a layman, the Commander Xaverio Vegezzi, was sent to Rome, with the Cavalier Advocate Giovanni Maurizio as colleague, to confer upon the three points above mentioned, and to secure, if possible, an agreement. The negotiators arrived at Rome in April, and held several conferences with the papal government; but the latter raised various difficulties, and Vegezzi and Maurizio returned home to obtain new instructions. They again visited the papal capital in June, but were unsuccessful, and immediately resigned their mission. On the 8th of July the prime minister, La Marmora, pre-

sented to Victor Emmanuel the official report of the progress and failure of the proposed negotiations, predicting the early separation of Church and state.

A royal decree issued on the 7th of September dissolved the Italian parliament, ordered new elections to take place on the 29th of October, and convoked the Chambers for the 15th of November. The minister of the interior addressed a circular to the prefects, announcing that shortly after the assembling of parliament the ministry would bring forward a measure for the suppression of religious bodies and the readjustment of ecclesiastical property. A notable feature in the electoral campaign of 1865 was the active participation of the "Catholic Party," who were called by their opponents "Black Party," "Codini," and other names. They had generally abstained from voting at former elections, at least so far as the annexed countries were concerned. One section would not be reconciled to the existing order of things, while the other directed their efforts to the salvation of the papacy, its remaining fragment of temporal power, and to the cause generally of the Church in Italy. The advanced liberals, who were called "Party of Action," "Radicals," "Reds," etc., advocated the use of violent and immediate means for the completion of Italian unity and independence by the acquisition of Rome and Venice. This party was also divided into two elements. The extreme "Reds," the men of the "Unita Italiana," or the friends of Mazzini, abominated monarchy, and denied that the independence of Italy could be secured under the house of Savoy. While they abstained from voting, the other and more important section of the Left accepted the prevailing order of things, participated in the elections, and labored to secure a republic by peaceable means.

The government party, or "Moderate Liberals," contained a number of factions, distinguished by preferences for individual leaders, Ricasoli, Rattazzi, Minghetti, had, as might be expected, special friends and supporters. At the election the Catholic party was defeated, only about a dozen of their members being elected; but the radicals were eminently successful, having chosen one hundred and twenty members to the new parliament, or an increase of seventy. Garibaldi was elected in three places, Naples, Andria, and Corleto; and three of his officers, Generals Bixio and Fabrizzi and Colonel Cairoli, were also returned, each for three colleges. Nicotera, another of his followers, and his former dictators in Sicily, Crispi and Mordini, were elected for two districts each. Mazzini, notwithstand-



ing his avowed hostility to the monarchical principle, came near being elected in Genoa.

The session of the new parliament was opened on the 18th of November by King Victor Emmanuel in person, who delivered a patriotic address. On the 6th of December the Chamber of Deputies elected Signor Marini, the candidate of the government, to the office of president, by one hundred and forty-one votes out of two hundred and seventy-three members voting, after two ballots between him and Signor Mordini, the candidate of the Left. The ministry, finding that they could not control, in all important questions, a majority of the house of deputies, tendered their resignation, which was accepted by the king. On the 31st of December the following new cabinet was appointed: General Della Marmora, president and minister for foreign affairs; Signor Chiaves, minister of the interior; Signor Scialoja, minister of finance; Signor Defalco, minister of public worship and justice; Signor Jacini, minister of public works. The Chamber of Deputies consisted, in 1865, of four hundred and forty-three members. The Italian government, upon the withdrawal of the first of the French troops from Rome in November, declared its determination not to attack the papal territory, or suffer it to be invaded, because France was carrying out the September convention in evacuating the city.

---

### Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

---

## CHAPTER XXVI.

### *THE DEFEAT OF AUSTRIA—ITALY ANNEXES VENETIA.*

ON the 11th of January, 1866, a dispatch from General La Marmora to the Austrian government declared that the re-establishment of regular relations could not be admitted except as a starting-point toward the solution of the Venetian question. The complications between Austria and Prussia naturally led to negotiations by Italy with Prussia for the conclusion of a defensive and offensive alliance. On the 9th of March the Italian government gave to its representative in Berlin instructions to sign the alliance with Prussia; and on the 29th of April General La Marmora issued a circular dispatch stating that, while Italy was enjoying perfect quiet

and the army was on a peace footing, Austria had made threatening armaments in Italy, and had thereby compelled the government to make the necessary preparations for war. On the 30th of April the Chamber of Deputies, by an unanimous vote, save *one*, authorized the government, until the end of July, to meet all the expenses which were necessary for the defense of the country by extraordinary means. This was supplemented on the 9th of May by another resolution authorizing the government, until the end of July, to provide by royal decrees for the defense and safety of the state.

The government, besides putting the army on a regular war footing, authorized the enrollment of volunteers and the mobilization of the national guard. The volunteers were placed under the chief command of General Garibaldi, who in a letter written at Caprera, on the 11th of May, 1866, accepted the appointment: "I accept with true gratitude the dispositions which you have taken and his majesty has sanctioned relative to the volunteer corps. I am thankful to you for the trust you manifest in me in giving me the command, and you will be good enough to express to the king my sentiments. I hope soon to co-operate with our glorious army in accomplishing the destinies of the country. I thank you for your courtesy in making this communication to me."

Italy declared war against Austria on the 18th of June, 1866, and on the 20th Victor Emmanuel issued the following manifesto:

"Several years have already passed since Austria attacked my states because I had supported the common cause of the country in the councils of Europe. I took up the sword to defend my throne, the liberty of my people, the honor of the Italian name, and to fight for the rights of the nation. Victory was in favor of right. The valor of the army, the aid of the volunteers, the concord and wisdom of the people, and the assistance of a magnanimous ally, gained the almost complete independence and liberty of Italy. Supreme reasons we were obliged to respect prevented us at that time from accomplishing that just and glorious enterprise. One of the noblest provinces of Italy, united by the desires of the population to my crown, and which its heroic resistance and continual protest against foreign dominion rendered especially dear and sacred to us, remained in the hands of Austria. Though sorrowful at heart, I abstained from troubling Europe, which desired peace. My government occupied itself with improving the work of interior organization, opening sources of public prosperity, and fortifying the country by land and by sea, awaiting a favorable opportunity to accomplish the independence of Venetia.

"Although waiting was not without danger, nevertheless we understood how to keep shut within our hearts our feelings as Italians, and our just impatience; and thus were preserved intact the right of the nation, and the dignity of the crown and of parliament, in order that Europe might understand what was due to Italy. Austria, suddenly re-enforcing her troops upon our frontier, and provoking us by her hostile and threatening attitude, has come to disturb the pacific task of the reorganization of the kingdom. I have replied by again taking up arms, and you have afforded the world the grand sight of hastening with promptitude and enthusiasm into the army to enlist among the volunteers. Nevertheless, when friendly powers endeavored to settle the difficulties by a congress, I gave a last pledge of my feelings to Europe, and hastened to accept the proposal. Austria again refused, this time rejecting negotiations and all agreement, affording thus a fresh proof that if she confides in her strength she does not rely equally upon the goodness of her cause and of her right. You, also, Italians, may trust in your strength, looking with pride upon your valiant army and strong navy; but you may rely still more firmly upon the sacredness of your right, whose triumph is henceforth infallible. We are supported by the judgment of public opinion, and by the sympathy of Europe, which knows that Italy, independent and secure in her territory, will become a guaranty for peace and order. Italians, I hand over the government of the state to Prince Carignan, and again take up the eagles of Getta and Marengo, of Palestro and San Martino. I feel that I shall accomplish the vows made at the tomb of my high-minded father. I wish once more to be the first soldier of Italian independence."

The king also issued a proclamation to the national guard, saying: "I leave the regency of the kingdom to the prince of Carignan, to fight anew the final battles for the liberty and independence of Italy. While our forces by land and sea secure the rights of the nation against threats and provocations of Austria, you will keep the nation organized and arranged, in order that it may strengthen her liberties and secure respect for the laws, thus preparing itself worthy for the glorious future which awaits us. It is you who have constituted the nation by your will. Preserve it intact now by discipline and arms. Citizens,—I confidently intrust to you the guardianship of public security and order. I go where the voice of Italy calls."

At the commencement of the war, the following new Italian ministry, appointed on the 20th of June, was in power: Ricasoli, president of the ministry; Baron Bettino, interior; Emilio Visconti



Venosta, foreign affairs; Francesco Borgatti, worship and justice; war, Sciajola; public instruction, Domenico Berti; public works, Dr. Stefano Jacini; navy, Agostino Depretis; commerce, industry, and agriculture, Filippo Cordova. In August, Effusio Cujaia was appointed minister of finance. The Italians responded with enthusiasm to Victor Emmanuel's call for troops. The army of the king crossed the Mincio, and on the 24th of June was defeated by the Austrians; but the great victory of Prussia at Sadowa, on the 3d of July, reduced Austria to such extremities that she was compelled to concentrate all her energies for the defense of her home territory. Unable to hold Venetia, she relinquished it to the emperor of the French, by whom it was to be transferred to Italy. On the 20th of July, the Austrian fleet inflicted a terrible defeat upon the Italian fleet off Lissa. The war was brought to a close by the Peace of Nicholsburg, on the 30th of August. In spite of her reverses, Italy gained the objects for which she fought, thanks to the vigor and success with which Prussia fought.

In accordance with the treaty between Austria and Italy, a popular vote took place in Venetia in October, on the question of the annexation of the latter province to Italy. The result showed a remarkable unanimity; 641,755 votes being cast in favor of and only 69 against the proposition. On the 4th of November, the king, surrounded by the princes, the ministers, the dignitaries of the state, and the president of the Chamber of Deputies, received the Venetian deputation, which communicated to his majesty the result of the *plebiscitum*. After the ceremony the national guard, the troops and the various corporate bodies defiled before the king amid loud cheers from the assembled multitude. General Menabrea delivered a speech to his majesty in placing in his hands the iron crown of Lombardy. Upon receiving the result of the *plebiscitum* from the Venetian deputation, King Victor Emmanuel said: "This day is the proudest of my life. Eighteen years ago my father proclaimed from this city the war of independence, and to-day you bring to me the manifestations of the popular will in the Venetian province, which, united with Italy, declare my father's wish to be accomplished. You confirm by this solemn act what Venetia did up to 1848, and has maintained up to the present day with admirable constancy and abnegation. I therefore pay a grateful tribute to those generous patriots who upheld their faith in the destinies of the country by every kind of sacrifice and by their blood. To-day foreign domination ceases forever. Italy is constituted, if not

accomplished. Italians must now defend and make her great. The iron crown is also restored to Italy; but to that crown I prefer the one which is dearer to me, made by the love of my people."

A royal decree was issued on the 5th of November declaring that the provinces of Venetia shall henceforth form an integral part of the kingdom of Italy. The government also appointed sixteen senators for Venetia, and ordered the election of deputies. On the 15th of December the Italian parliament was opened by the king, who delivered the following address from the throne:

"Signors Senators, Signors Deputies,—Our country is henceforth free from all foreign domination. It is with profound joy that I declare this to the representatives of 25,000,000 Italians. The nation had faith in me and I in them. This great event, by crowning our common efforts, gives a fresh impulse to the work of civilization, and renders more stable the political equilibrium of Europe. By her promptitude in military organization, and by the rapid union of her people, Italy has acquired the credit which was necessary to enable her to attain independence by herself; and with the aid of efficacious alliances, Italy has found encouragement and support in this laborious work in the sympathy of civilized governments and peoples, and has been further sustained and strengthened by the courageous perseverance of the Venetian provinces in the common enterprise of national emancipation. The treaty of peace with the empire of Austria, which will be laid before you, will be followed by negotiations which will facilitate exchanges of prisoners between the two states. The French government, faithful to the obligations which it contracted by the September convention, has withdrawn its troops from Rome. On its side, the Italian government, observant of its engagements, has respected and will respect the pontifical territory. Our good understanding with the French emperor, to whom we are bound by friendship and gratitude, the moderation of the Romans, the wisdom of the pontiff, and the religious sentiment and right feeling of the Italian people, will aid us to distinguish and conciliate the Catholic interests; and national aspirations, which are interwoven and contending with each other in Rome, attach us to the religion of our ancestors, which is also that of the great majority of Italians.

"I nevertheless respect the principle of liberty which breathes through our institutions, and which, broadly and sincerely applied, will remove the causes of the old differences between Church and state. This disposition on our part, by reassuring Catholic con-

science, will accomplish, I hope, the wishes which I form that the sovereign pontiff may remain independent at Rome. Italy is secure, now that, besides the valor of her sons, which through all the changes of fortune has never belied itself, either by land or sea, nor in the ranks of the army, or the volunteers, she possesses as the ramparts of her independence the very bulwarks which served to oppress her. Italy can, therefore, and now ought, to turn her efforts to increasing her prosperity. As Italians have shown admirable concord in the affirmation of their independence, so now let all devote themselves with intelligence, ardor, and indomitable constancy to the development of the economic resources of the Peninsula. Several bills will be laid before you with this object. In the midst of the labors of peace, favored by a secure future, we shall not neglect following the lessons of experience, to perfect our military organization, in order that, with the least possible outlay, Italy may not be destitute of the forces necessary to maintain her in the place which belongs to her among great nations.

“The measures recently taken relative to the administration of the kingdom, and those which will be proposed to you, above all, respecting the collection of the taxes, and the accountability of the state, will contribute to ameliorate the management of public affairs. My government has provided in advance for the expenditure of the year about to open, and for extraordinary payments of every kind. They will ask of you the continuation in 1867 of the financial measures voted for in 1866. The legislative bodies will also maturely discuss the bills which will be laid before them to ameliorate the assessment of the taxes, and to equalize them among the different provinces of the kingdom. If, as I am fully confident, the people of Italy will not fail in that activity which created the wealth and power of our ancestors, it will not be long before the public exchequer will reach its definitive equilibrium. Italy is now rendered to herself. Her responsibility is equal to the power and the full liberty she enjoys in the use of her strength. The great things we have done in a short space of time increase our obligation not to fail in our task, which is to know how to govern ourselves with the vigor required by the social condition of the kingdom and the liberality demanded by our institutions. Liberty in our political institutions, authority in the government, activity in the citizens, and the empire of law upon all and over all, will carry Italy to the height of her destiny, and fulfill what the world expects from her.”

One of the main questions to be solved by parliament was the re-



lation of the state to the Church. The government, believing that their complete separation would remove the pending difficulties, resolved to propose such a measure. Before the meeting of parliament on the 22d of October, the prime minister, Ricasoli, addressed a circular to the prefects permitting the return of all the bishops to their sees, excluding those residing in Rome. This circular was followed by another dated November 15th, and likewise addressed to the prefects. The prime minister also wrote a letter to the exiled bishops living in Rome, in which he discussed the relations existing between Church and state, and the bishops replied to it. Ricasoli answered them on the 26th of November, directing their attention to the United States, where liberty is "professed and respected by all, in principle and in fact, in its amplest application to civil, political, and social life." After showing, at great length, the causes which produced the conflict between the ecclesiastical and civil power, he asked how this deplorable and perilous contest could be terminated, and then answered the question by saying: "Liberty can alone bring us to that happy state of things which your lordships consider so enviable in America. Let us 'render unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and unto God the things that are God's,' and peace between Church and state will be troubled no more."

The negotiations of the Italian government with the pope for obtaining a recognition of the annexation of the larger portion of the papal dominions to Italy, and a regulation of the Church affairs in the kingdom, were unsuccessful. Pius IX deemed it his duty to defend the integrity of the temporal possessions of the papacy. On the 30th of October, 1866, in the usual consistory of the cardinals, he gave a solemn utterance of his views in an allocution, which was in perfect harmony with his "Encyclical" of December 8, 1864. He denounced the Italian government for banishing bishops, imprisoning priests, closing diocesan schools, suppressing religious corporations, and establishing a law respecting civil marriage. The pope was also grieved by the departure from Rome on the 4th of December of one regiment of French troops in accordance with the treaty between Italy and France.

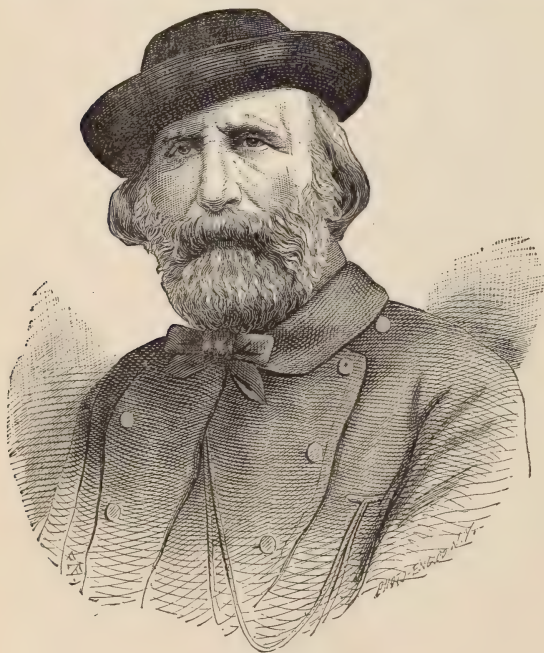
## Seventh Decade, Continued, 1860-1870.

## CHAPTER XXVII.

*THE ROMAN QUESTION—PROTESTANT MISSIONS.*

IN May, 1867, the financial situation had become so critical that King Victor Emmanuel, in a message to parliament, gave up his own share of the civil list, and proposed the sale of Church lands and the reduction of the public expenditure. A few days afterwards French capitalists advanced eighty-six millions of dollars, and in August a bill was passed legalizing the proposed sale. These and similar measures, inaugurated chiefly under the Lanza cabinet, helped to maintain the national credit; but the political situation consequent upon the presence of French troops and other foreign soldiers in Rome

continued to be more and more embarrassing. Garibaldi resolved to invade the pontifical territory, on the frontiers of which his volunteers, the "red shirts," gathered in September. While he was on his way to the city of Rome, on the 22d of the same month, he was arrested at Sinalunga. A slight revolution occurred, and the people endeavored to break open arsenals, armories, etc., to obtain arms for the purpose of rescuing Garibaldi, but, without a serious riot; he was



GARIBALDI.

taken by the government authorities and conveyed to his home at Caprera. In the mean time his volunteers crossed the Roman fron-

tier without being checked by the Italian government. Rattazzi, who had returned to office, secretly encouraged the movement, hoping to find in it a chance for winning Rome for Italy, without incurring the risk of a war with France. He managed the affair badly.

On the 14th of October Garibaldi was allowed to escape from Caprera and rejoin his forces. The sympathy of the Italian government was so open that he hoped to be supported by the royal troops. This open sympathy, however, had induced the Emperor Napoleon to inform the Italian government that he should regard any further action against the papal dominions as a declaration of war against France. The previous correspondence between the two powers concerning the Roman question is exhibited in the official "Green-book," which was distributed to the Italian Chamber of Deputies on the 10th of December, 1867. It contains twenty-seven documents exchanged between the governments, from the 2d of June, 1865, to the 7th of September, 1867; while the documents relating to the Roman question are sixty-six in number, their dates running from the 20th of December, 1866, to the 3d of December, 1867. In this collection is a dispatch dated the 8th of August, 1867, from the Italian chargé-d'affaires at Paris, communicating to his government a declaration of the French minister for foreign affairs that the Antibes Legion (the French volunteers in Rome) was independent of any foreign influence or control. Not only did the French government recognize this principle, but it was determined to conform thereto. With regard to the mission of General Dumont to Rome, who was reported to have addressed the Antibes Legion as forming a part of the French army, the French minister said: "I do not disavow, but deny it." In a note of the 2d of September the French government stated that the emperor, while reserving to himself the right of authorizing French officers to serve in the papal army, as in other foreign armies, intended that thenceforth the Antibes Legion should contain none but soldiers free from all obligations towards France. A telegram from the Italian government of the 5th of September expressed pleasure that every difficulty was removed that might disturb good relations between the two countries.

The communications relative to the Roman government commenced with a telegram from the Florence cabinet to the Chevalier Nigra, Italian minister at Paris, on the 30th of September, which said that, in the event of a revolution at Rome, the Italian government would necessarily be compelled to intervene in order to preserve public tranquillity and guard Italian institutions. The French



government replied, that in case of such events it would not act without previously communicating with the Italian government, and insisted upon the frontier being loyally watched. On the 14th of October the Italian government protested against the violation of the September convention by France, and declared that if the French troops marched towards Rome, it would be compelled to intervene and occupy pontifical territory without fail. Chevalier Nigra expressed his opinion that the Italian government might avert a French occupation by redoubled efforts to repress the Garibaldian invasion without occupying pontifical territory. A note from the Italian government, on the 17th of October, said: "That in the event of a revolution taking place in Rome, the only efficacious means was the intervention of Italy for the purpose of restoring order and protecting the person of the pontiff, leaving the question of sovereignty intact." On the same day the French government replied that it did not, in any case, admit Italian intervention at Rome, since a revolution in that city would be considered at Paris as the consequence of the invasion of pontifical territory.

In the mean time Garibaldi, having entered the Campagna, defeated the papal forces at Monte Rotundo on the 25th of October, marched upon Rome, and prepared to enter it. A note from the Marquis d' Azeglio, dated at London the 29th of October, stated that Lord Stanley had declared that England would exert her good offices to prevent the entry of the Italian troops being considered by France as a *casus belli*. The popular feeling in Italy was intensified when Garibaldi returned to the head of forces on the 14th of October. It appears, from a closely printed volume of official documents presented to the Chamber of Deputies on the 28th of December, that Rattazzi had, previous to the 14th of October, outwardly at least, endeavored to prevent the Garibaldian movement; but, finding that a large number of local officials of the grand proprietors and of the national guard did not conceal their sympathy with it, he yielded to the tide and declared the impossibility of successfully resisting the invasion. As serious complications had arisen with France, Rattazzi, on the 15th of October, tendered his resignation, which was accepted by the king, who intrusted General Menabrea with the formation of a new ministry. The latter, as constituted by him, and which was in power when Garibaldi was approaching Rome on the 25th of October, was as follows: President of the council of ministers, and minister of foreign affairs, Lieutenant-general Count Louis Fred Menabrea; minister of the interior, Marquis Gualterio; minister of grace, justice,

and worship, Adrian Mari; minister of war, Major-general Hector Maria Bertolé Viele; minister of finance, Count Cambray Digny; minister of public instruction, Emil Broglio; minister of public works, Count Cantelli; minister of the navy, Counter-admiral Provana.

On the 2d of November Chevalier Nigra wrote that the French government did not consider the entry of the Italian troops into the pontifical territory as a *casus belli*, and had ordered the French troops to avoid all collision with the Italian army. A dispatch from the Spanish minister for foreign affairs, on the 2d of November, stated that the sending of a Spanish frigate was in no way intended as a hostile step toward Italy, but had only been taken to offer a refuge to the Holy Father in case he might wish to leave his states. On the 9th of November Chevalier Nigra sent a dispatch announcing that the French government absolutely rejected the idea of the conference for settling the Roman question, which had been proposed by Italy, consisting only of Catholic powers. Baron Beust had stated to the Italian minister at Vienna that Austria declined to take part in a conference where none were present but Catholic powers, and in adhering to the proposal of a conference assumed no initiative. A note from General Menabrea, on the 14th of November, declared that Italy rejected the proposed conference if it consisted only of Catholic powers, and only consented that the representatives of the great powers should deliberate upon the Roman question, as in the case of other questions of general interest. The Italian government could not take part in any deliberation that might establish a still worse position of affairs between Italy and the "Holy See." In replying to the invitation to the conference Prince Gortschakoff said that it was not necessary to engage Italy to resist revolutionary movements, and that Russia could not accept a conference for the settlement of the Roman question without knowing its basis. A dispatch from General Menabrea on the 19th of November announced that the Italian government, while reserving the inalienable right of the independence and unity of the kingdom, did not hesitate to accept the conference in principle, certain that the powers would be favorable to Italy. He asked what would be the position of Italy in the conference, whether it was expected that she should attend only to declare her rights—a position suitable to a great state which submitted a great question to friendly governments—or whether the resolutions of the conference would have authority, or be confined to offering counsels? In the latter case, General Menabrea inquired whether the French government would insure their sanction. The

Italian government would not admit any retrospective consideration of the facts by which the kingdom had been constituted. The deliberations of the conference should be confined to removing the difficulties between Italy and the "Holy See."

The Italian parliament reassembled on the 5th of December, 1867. General Menabrea announced the composition of the new ministry, and explained its policy. After alluding to the difficulties which the new cabinet had encountered, he went on to maintain the right of Italy to intervene in the pontifical states when the intervention of France took place. He said: "It was the right and duty of the government to arrest Garibaldi, who had violated the laws of his country. The conduct of the ministry, in spontaneously withdrawing the troops of Italy when all danger had ceased, prevented the arrival of other foreign soldiers, and facilitated the departure of a portion of those who had entered the papal territory." After justifying the acts of repression which had been exercised during the recent state of things, General Menabrea stated that the king had resolved to grant amnesty to all persons compromised by the late events. With regard to the Roman question, he said that it required very little to thwart the diplomatic action of the government. Referring to the rights of Italy, General Menabrea maintained that Rome, being in an isolated position in the center of Italy, was an impediment to the freedom of communication between the provinces of the Italian kingdom. He said: "Supposing France had a foreign government at Paris, how could she exist? The Roman question is not to be solved by violence. The 'Holy See' will be respected; and the pope will find his strongest support in Italy, and not from abroad."

On the 6th of December the Chamber of Deputies elected Signor Lanza, the candidate of the government, president of the Chamber by one hundred and ninety-four votes against one hundred and fifty-four, which were given to Rattazzi. On the 22d of December Signor Bonfondini proposed an order of the day affirming Rome to be the capital of Italy, deprecating the attainment of that object by illegal means, and approving the conduct of the ministry. General Menabrea accepted the order of the day. The result of the vote was one hundred and ninety-nine in favor of the motion and two hundred and one against it, defeating the ministry by a majority of two.

During 1867 the Protestant missions in Italy were in a prosperous condition, estimating them not so much by the number of communicants as by their religious *status*. The Rev. W. G. Moorehead, in his report to the "American and Foreign Christian Union," stated



that the following laborers under his direction in Central Italy were supported by that society: *Evangelists*—S. Bernalto, G. Gallegari, E. Volpi, E. Zati, G. Martinelli, G. Rovillo, G. P. Luquet, B. Brachetto; *Colporteurs*—E. Rocca, G. P. Gardiol, G. Barsant; *Teachers*—B. Bernatto, Mrs. Rutigni, Mr. and Mrs. Suquet, C. Petrella, Miss Bonis; *Students*—Domenico Beisso, Adele Galazzo. The stations occupied were Torano, Carrara, Miseglia, Spezia, Casano, Sarzana, Foiano, Prato, Portoferraio, Longone, Terni, Bari, and Lecce. Mr. Moorehead visited the latter city, which is situated in the extreme south of Puglie, on the Adriatic side of the Apennines, and contained about thirty thousand inhabitants. He described it as being far in advance of the great majority of Neapolitan cities in general intelligence and refinement. In writing of the obstacles to be overcome there and elsewhere before missions can be successfully established, he expressed his belief in the ultimate triumph of truth. "Multitudes of famishing souls," he declared, "are earnestly seeking the bread of life. In every city, town, and village of the Italian Peninsula are some, few or many, who are longingly waiting for the true light to illumine their hearts. To carry the Gospel to such was the 'American and Foreign Christian Union' originally formed; to this end it labors to-day in Italy."

The intolerant spirit of the papacy was manifested in Rome toward the Rev. Mr. Lewis, an English Presbyterian minister, who, having been prohibited from holding religious meetings within the walls of the city, secured a room outside. In the Autumn of 1867 the priests labored hard to induce the proprietor to break his engagement, and thus prevent the Protestants from assembling on his premises; but they were unsuccessful. The hall was a dining-room of an old hotel, which was built for strangers, who, arriving after the gate was closed, spent the night there. It was difficult of access, but, despite the obstacles, the congregation steadily increased. The American residents, also, were compelled to worship outside the walls in the same building.

During 1867 Signor D. Bolognini, an evangelist of the Free Italian Church, visited many cities and villages, preaching the Gospel and organizing Sabbath-schools. The English Wesleyan missions passed through trials similar to those of the preceding year. Some stations were abandoned for want of support, and others were weakened by rival agencies. Yet five new colporteurs were appointed, and "Wesley's Sermons" extensively distributed. This aroused the opposition of a priest at Salerno, who gathered Methodist books and tracts, and burned them in his cathedral before a statue of the Virgin Mary!

## Seventh Decade Continued, 1860-1870.

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

*PROCEEDINGS IN PARLIAMENT—EVANGELICAL MISSIONS—PAPAL COUNCIL.*

ON the 5th of January, 1868, a new Italian cabinet was formed, consisting of General Menabrea, president and minister of foreign affairs; Senator Cadorna, minister of the interior; Count Cambray Digny, minister of finance; Major-general Bertole Viale, minister of war; Deputy De Filippo, minister of justice; Signor Broglio, minister of public instruction and commerce; Count Cantelli, minister of public works; and Admiral Ribotti, minister of marine. In September Count Cantelli was appointed to the ministry of the interior, and Signor Pasini in his place to the ministry of public works; and on the 9th of October Signor Vicenza received the appointment of minister of agriculture and commerce. The different financial measures proposed by Count Cambray Digny engaged the almost exclusive attention of parliament for more than six months, and that body adopted the plan of the government with but slight modifications. Among the various items of interest were the statements that the Garibaldian movement of the previous October had cost the state about eighteen millions of lire, and that the sale of ecclesiastical property realized over forty millions of lire.

The parliament reassembled after the Autumn vacation on the 24th of November, and on the following day Signor Mari was elected president of the Chamber of Deputies by one hundred and eighty-five votes against ninety-three given to Signor Crispi, the candidate of the Left. Signor Mordino, the candidate of the Right, was chosen vice-president. Signor Curti asked the government what course it intended to take after the fresh defiance by the papacy to Italy, given by the execution of Monti and Toguetti on the 24th of November. Menabrea, in reply, said that he did not disguise the political significance of the unjustifiable act of the pontifical government, and added, "The Italian government made every possible effort to avert it; but for the present I can not reply, or accept the discussion upon the question raised by Signor Curti." General Bixio said that one of the

condemned men was an Italian citizen, and that the execution should have been prevented at any cost. A vigorous and decided policy, he added, was necessary to restrain the papacy, and to compel France to cease imposing her dominion at Rome. General Menabrea, while sharing the general indignation felt by the country and the parliament, protested against the assertion that Italy suffered humiliation from any foreign power, and deprecated further discussion as inexpedient. A warm debate followed; and the speeches condemning the papacy and protesting against the French intervention at Rome were loudly applauded by the members of the Chamber and the public in the galleries. Signor Correnti proposed the following motion: "The Chamber, fully concurring in the censure passed by the government upon the acts of the papacy, passes to the order of the day." The first part of this motion was unanimously approved, and the Chamber then passed to the order of the day by one hundred and forty-seven votes to one hundred and nineteen.

During the year 1868 the Protestant mission work in Italy made considerable progress. Rev. W. G. Moorehead the efficient representative of the "American and Foreign Christian Union" at Carrara, in a letter, written on the 3d of February, to the official organ of the United Presbyterian Church of America, says: "Of course, as in all mission fields, there are here also many obstacles and difficulties which discourage and dishearten us; but there are times when our hearts are consoled and rejoiced. I have no doubt whatever as to the extent and depth of the evangelical movement in Italy; nor do I doubt the future results of faithful Gospel work in this land. Here and there little churches are springing up and throwing their light far into the surrounding darkness." Mr. Moorehead refers to the abandonment of Sarzana as a place of preaching. For almost three months a constant audience ranging from sixty to one hundred and twenty, assembled five times every week to hear the Gospel, but improper means employed by the Romanists enticed away all the people except two or three. The diocese of Sarzana had been vacant for fourteen years, but in June, 1867, the bishop previously appointed by the government took possession of his chair. This step filled the priests with fresh courage and zeal, and they privately visited those who had attended the Protestant meetings, and persuaded them, it is said, by the use of money to cease hearing the heretics, thus illustrating the proverbial conduct of the Pharisees—"They will neither go in themselves, nor suffer them that are entering to go in."



In letters written to the "American and Foreign Christian Union," in the early part of 1868, Mr. Moorehead gives some interesting facts concerning the work in that part of Italy which was under his personal supervision. About the beginning of the year religious services were commenced in Prato, a small city situated a half hour's ride on the railway from Florence. Signor Ferretti, the director of a large and important school in Florence, passed Prato every Sabbath on his way to Pistoia, where he ministered to a flourishing little Church. He concluded, therefore, to preach the Gospel in this new field. After much difficulty he secured a place of meeting, to which twenty-two persons came on the first Sabbath, and about forty on the second, several women being among the attendants. From time to time both men and women could not abstain from such exclamations as "Amen!" "Certainly!" "It is the truth indeed!" "What a difference between these meetings and the mass!" etc. Mr. Ferretti declared that his object was "not to make Protestants, but, with the blessing of God, sincere believers in Jesus Christ." Avoiding controversy, he followed the example of Paul, and preached Christ and him crucified. The priests denounced him from their pulpits, but he disregarded their diatribes. Mr. Moorehead reported the organization of a mission in Terni, a city of about fifteen thousand inhabitants. The evangelist and colporteur held private meetings, which were largely attended, and many persons purchased books and tracts. The inhabitants seemed exceedingly anxious to hear the truth, and four or five individuals were found who had possessed the Bible for years, and gave clear evidence of being real Christians. The intelligence from Carrara, Lecce, Bari, Foiano, and other places in Central Italy, was also encouraging.

Rev. W. Clark, who had charge of the missions in Northern Italy, sent earnest appeals to the "American and Foreign Christian Union" for the necessary means to extend the work of evangelization. In various places the Italian converts, having heard that there was a training school at Milan for evangelists, requested men to come and preach the Gospel. Since the organization of the theological class in 1866 more than sixty Italian young men applied to be received as pupils; and while, therefore, laborers could be obtained, the want of money prevented the opening of new stations. The reports from the Churches already established indicated prosperity. Signor Secundo Musso, who had recently returned from the United States, where he had conducted an Italian colony, was the evangelist at San Mauro, a town of two thousand inhabitants, one hour

distant from Turin and opposite Superga, where are the tombs of the Sardinian kings and of the members of the royal family. He first began to teach there in 1850, and in 1852 married the daughter of the mayor. She and her three brothers abandoned the papal Church, and the authorities, fearing the growth of the new religion, suspended Mr. Musso from his labors as teacher; but he opened a private school, which became a means of evangelization. In 1854 and 1855 he was accused of teaching things contrary to the religion of the state. As San Mauro could be supplied from Turin, he left there and went to the city of Asti, having organized a society of fourteen communicants, a small day-school of twelve, and a large and flourishing evening school. After an absence of many years, Mr. Musso returned to San Mauro and found eight of the original members of the Church, not one of whom had proved unfaithful. He was cordially welcomed and opened a place of worship in his own house.

At Caravaggio, Professor Peccenini, of the theological school in Milan, diligently labored among the people; but as the brethren desired an evangelist to reside in their midst, Signor Giovanni B. Zucchi was sent to them. He belonged to the theological class, and accomplished a good work in the field to which he was appointed. Encouraging reports were also received from the missionaries who had visited Bellaggio, Porlezza, Menaggio, and Lecco, all villages, situated on the lake of Como. In Venice the only evangelizing agency was the Waldensian mission. Signor Gavazzi, while in the city, awakened a deep religious interest by his eloquent sermons, which attracted large congregations, not less than seven hundred persons being present at each service.

The evangelical teacher at Favale, Signor Stephano Cereghini, reported that the friends of the Gospel continued steadfast in the faith. This village is situated about twenty miles from Genoa in the district Fontanabuano, and is shut in by mountain fastnesses. The people were ignorant and superstitious previous to 1852, when a Protestant mission was established, and had been taught by the priests that Protestants had the "very image and cloven foot of Satan." During the Summer the grassy hills yielded the inhabitants and their cattle a scanty subsistence, and when dreary Winter brought its days of gloominess and want, the young men with their violins and flutes made a musical tour over the land. One of these wandering Favale minstrels, Stephano Cereghini, bidding his family and friends farewell for the Winter, started with his violin under his arm for the thriving

districts of Piedmont. When he arrived at Pignerol, the entrance of the Waldensian valleys, and ascertained that the dreadful Protestants inhabited that region, he resolved to return home, but before leaving he expressed a desire to see one of the abominable heretics. An innkeeper pointed out to him one of the Vaudois, when Cereghini, raising both hands in astonishment, exclaimed, "He is a man, has no mark or sign of Satan about him." Now he determined to go forward and become better acquainted with these despised people.

On the following morning, with his violin as his companion, he proceeded to La Tour, and while passing along the street, beheld a benevolent-looking woman standing in the door of her cottage. He halted, tuned his violin, and soon the streets echoed with his songs, which attracted a large and delighted crowd. The woman invited him into the house to partake with them their evening meal, and he gladly accepted, but was filled with terror when he learned that she was a Protestant. Instead, however, of hearing impious and blasphemous words, he was surprised at the godly conversation of the devout lady, who asked him questions concerning his soul's salvation. His heart was moved, and he requested an introduction to the Waldensian evangelist in that vicinity. The result was that Cereghini entered into the light, and wrote to his parents, saying, "*I have found the Bible*, and when I return home I will read it to you." This intelligence stunned the family and friends, and prayer was offered three times a day that the young man might be rescued from destruction. When Spring opened, the converted minstrel hastened back to Favale; but instead of being welcomed with joy and gladness, he was shunned as though he had the plague. He gradually won their confidence by relating Biblical stories, and when they asked him where he had learned them, he replied that they were contained in a book which he owned. They were delighted, and continued to meet together from evening to evening, listening eagerly to Cereghini's Bible-readings.

In answer to the prayers of the faithful young Christian, his brothers and sisters, and several of his relatives, about twenty-five in all, were hopefully converted to the truth. The priests were terribly enraged, and from the pulpit, the altar, and the confessional denounced the heretics. On the 13th of November, 1852, ten officers of the government surrounded the house of the so-called Protestants, arrested three brothers and two sisters, and conducted them to the town of Chiavari, where they were imprisoned separately in miserable cells, and where they remained four months suf-



fering pains, physical and spiritual, hardly to be described. Finally, after three day's trial in court before thousands of persons, they were released. Joseph died soon after from injuries received in prison, and Agostine was seriously crippled. Stephano spent three years in the Protestant college at La Tour, and then returned to Favale to instruct the people. In 1862 the Protestants there had a small chapel, a membership of sixty persons, and an interesting school.

During the year 1869 the Protestant cause in Italy gradually advanced, and the laborers there were encouraged by evidences of spiritual prosperity. Rev. W. G. Moorhead, the "Missionary Director" of the American and Foreign Christian Union, resident at Florence, employed nine evangelists, and four teachers and colporteurs. The number of stations and out-stations occupied was fourteen. Rev. W. Clark, the "missionary director" of the same society, residing in Milan, employed thirteen evangelists, two Bible-women, and one teacher. There were fourteen stations and eleven out-stations. The Milan Theological school reported three professors and twenty-two students. This institution was organized in the Spring of 1866, and opened with thirteen students. It received liberal donations from several American philanthropists, and during the first two years the number of students ranged from thirteen to twenty. Professor Paulo Bergaglio, formerly professor of history and languages in the Cavour Institute in Turin, and afterwards in the Ambrosian College in Milan; Professor Francesco Gatti, formerly professor of philosophy in, and president of the Municipal College of Altamura; and Professor Melchior Peccenini, for several years an evangelist of the "American and Foreign Christian Union"—these able instructors had charge of the three prominent departments of the Milan school. Signor Francesco Lagomarsino, one of the first Italians converts, who, with Mazzarela and others, long fought and suffered even imprisonment for the truth, trained the pupils in the practical and critical study of the Bible.

On the 31st of December, 1869, Dr. Luigi De Sanctis, the distinguished Italian theologian, died in Florence, after a severe illness. He was born in Rome, December 31, 1808, and in early life felt that he was called to the priesthood. After completing his studies he was consecrated, and received the appointment of confessor from the bishop of Viterbo. He obtained several positions of professor of fine arts, belles-lettres, and philosophy, and was honored with the degree of professor of divinity by the University of Viterbo. In 1835, when the cholera desolated Genoa and swept away many



DE SANCTIS.

priests, young De Sanctis visited the hospital called *Lazzaretto*, and manifested truly a benevolent spirit during thirteen months of incessant labor in this work. His health becoming impaired, he received permission from Padre Togni, the head of the order, to return to Rome. In 1838, yielding to his religious impulses, he entered the ministry, and was fully authorized to preach. In 1839 he was appointed preacher of the "Convent of the Conception," and in the following year, on the 7th of February, by the special apostolic

letter of Gregory XVI, he was constituted curate of *Madelina alla Rotunda*. On the 15th of the same month the cardinal vicar confirmed the nomination, and De Sanctis became minister of *Polizzia*, such being the curate of Rome, a difficult and dangerous office, because a word from the curate could imprison any man.

In 1842 he was the preacher of *Santa Croce dei Lucchesi*, and during the following year held a similar position in *Santa Maria de Monti*. At this time he was accused of speaking disrespectfully of the pope, and was condemned by the Inquisition for disloyalty. In 1844 he was again appointed to officiate in the "Convent of the Conception" in Campo Martio, and was also chosen biographer of the order to which he belonged. In 1845 he preached to the convicts in the Castle of St. Angelo; and the next year proved to be the most memorable in his history. He received an unexpected visit from Rev. Mr. Lownes, pastor of the Scotch Church in Malta, who had come to see him in the name of his friend, Padre Achilli. The latter had informed him of the opinions of De Sanctis, and during the interview the dissatisfied priest expressed his feelings, but declared that he could not leave the Romish Church on account of family relations. In writing theses on various religious subjects, he was convinced of the errors and apostasy of the Church, and the conversation of Mr. Lownes rendered his convictions more intense. In September, 1847, he was again visited by this minister, whom he now recognized as his liberator. De Sanctis, having resolved to abandon the priesthood, would have hastened to Civita Vecchia, and sailed for Malta, but knowing that imprisonment for life was the penalty in case of arrest, he accepted Mr. Lownes's invitation to accompany him to Ancona, where he would find an opportunity to reach Corfu, Greece. He informed the superior of his order that he desired to make an excursion to Ancona, and probably to Venice. After considerable difficulty, he obtained a passport through the influence of Mr. Lownes, and having received from the superior testimonials of his standing in the priesthood, he proceeded to Ancona on the 11th of September. He remained there until the 20th, burdened with anxiety, because he feared arrest; but Mr. Lownes consoled him, and shortly before the sailing of the steamer, conducted him to the residence of the English consul, where he divested himself of his sacerdotal robes and hat, exchanging his short pants for long ones. Disguised in the dress of a citizen, De Sanctis seemed to be a different man, and when the vessel moved out of port he breathed more freely, while gratitude



to God filled his heart. Finding a rosary in his pocket, he desired to throw it into the sea, but Mr. Lownes asked him for it as a remembrance of his conversion to the Gospel.

From Corfu the refugee proceeded to Malta, where he resided two years. When Pius IX heard of his escape he was enraged, and Cardinal Ferretti dismissed the man who gave the passport, but afterwards restored him. De Sanctis found many friends in Malta, including Padre Achilli, who had left his order of monks, and had preached several years to the Italians on the island. In 1844 the ex-monk started a paper, called "*Indicatore*," to which De Sanctis contributed. The latter also wrote letters to Padre Togni and Cardinal Patrizzi, giving his reasons for leaving the Romish Church. He preached every Sabbath morning and evening in Padre Achilli's church, and lectured on the Epistles of St. Peter. Tuscany having granted religious liberty in 1848, De Sanctis proceeded to Italy, and proclaimed the Gospel in the Swiss church at Florence, the Scotch church in Leghorn, and elsewhere; but the priests appealed to the authorities to prevent his preaching in the Italian language. He returned to Malta, published the journal "*Indicatore*," and established another called "*Cattolica Christiana*," in which appeared his famous letter to Pius IX, which has reached twenty editions. The bishop of Malta condemned it, and anathematized its author. In June, 1849, De Sanctis was married to Miss Martha Sommerville, an English lady; and in March, 1850, arrived at Genoa, where he preached a few months. He then made a missionary tour among the Italians residing in Switzerland, and wrote a commentary on the Epistles of St. Peter. On September 1, 1852, the Waldensian Table invited him to come to Turin, and after spending almost a year there he was consecrated August 31, 1853. In April, 1854, he went to Geneva and other places, laboring for the Waldenses; but in 1855 he withdrew from that body on account of the difficulty concerning church property. He then devoted ten years of his life to the work of organizing "Free Churches" in Genoa, Turin, and elsewhere. In March, 1864, he published a "Confession of Faith," in which he rejected Plymouthism, and in 1865 issued his colossal work called "Roman Papale." Removing to Florence, he became editor of the *Amico di Casa*, and died on the anniversary of his birth, December 31, 1869. For five years he had been professor of theology in the Waldensian seminary in that city, and also devoted some time to writing and preaching. He passed away in the triumphs of faith, was buried

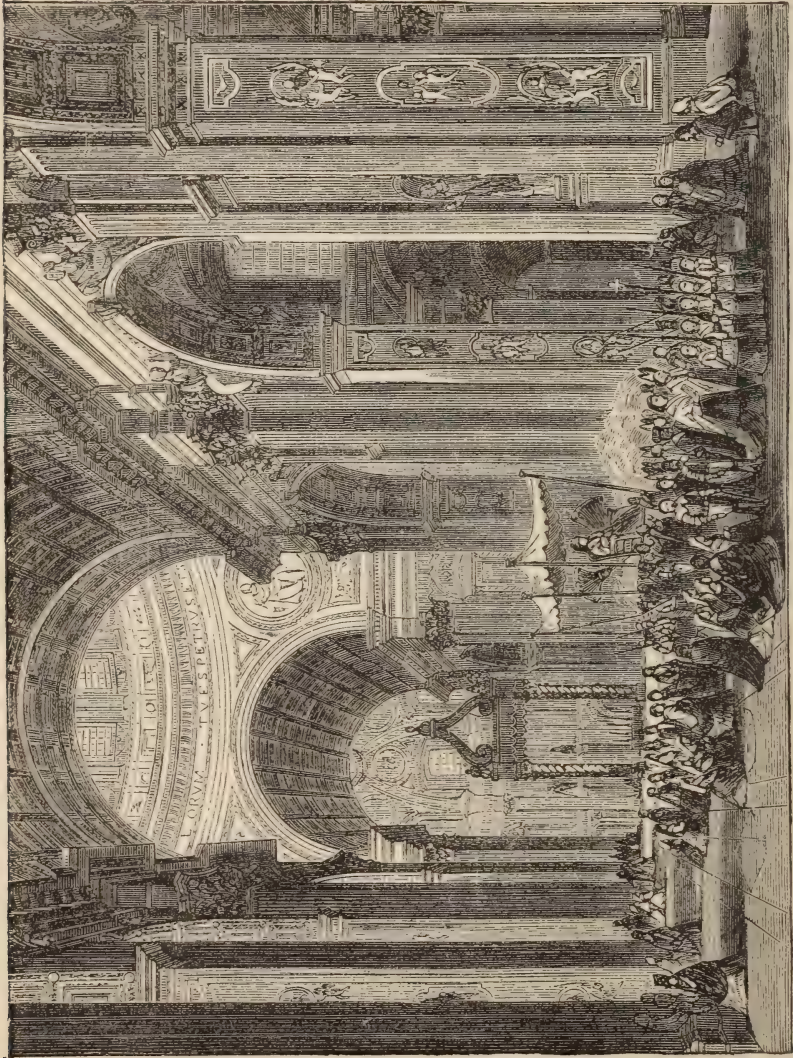
in the English cemetery, and left behind him as sincere mourners the Protestant Christians of Italy. In the following June a stone was placed over his grave bearing this inscription: "To the memory of Luigi De Sanctis, a herald of the Gospel, born in Rome, December 31, 1808; died in Florence, December 31, 1869. This monument was erected by all the evangelical Christians of Italy. 'I am the resurrection and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live' (John, xi, 25). 'And behold I come quickly, and my reward is with me to give every man according as his work shall be'—'Even so, come, Lord Jesus' (Rev. xxii, 12, 20)."

The political condition of Italy in 1869 was comparatively tranquil. On the 5th of May the ministry resigned, and Menabrea, the president, undertook to form a new cabinet, but soon retired in favor of Count Cambray Digny. The crisis ended on the 13th of May, and a new ministry constituted, as follows: General Menabrea, president of the council and minister of financial affairs; Signor Ferrari, minister of the interior; Signor A. Madani, minister of public works; Signor Bargoni, minister of public instruction; Signor Minghetti, minister of commerce and agriculture. The minister of finance, war, and marine remained the same. The administration of Victor Emmanuel was generally popular, and when he visited Venice in October, to welcome the Empress Eugenie, he was received with great enthusiasm. In November he was so ill that his death was expected, and the members of the royal family were summoned to Florence. He recovered, however, and met with a hearty reception from the people on his trip to Turin and on his return to the capital.

An interesting event in the ecclesiastical history of Italy was the assembling of the famous Œcumenical Council at Rome, on the 8th of December, the festival of the Immaculate Conception. The morning was ushered in by the booming of cannon, the ringing of bells, and stormy, unpropitious weather. Yet St. Peter's was crowded with more than a thousand cardinals, archbishops, and bishops, from every part of the world, and an audience of ninety thousand people. The chamber where the council held its sessions was in the north transept of St. Peter's, which was well adapted for scenic display, but not so well for speaking or hearing. At nine o'clock in the morning the pope, dressed in white satin, glittering with diamonds, and borne on men's shoulders, entered the council-chamber, preceded by cardinals, bishops, and ecclesiastics of every kind. A concealed choir sang the



"Veni Creator," and as the cardinals, patriarchs, abbes, archbishops, and bishops occupied their respective places, the pope led in the chant, the whole body of ecclesiastics uniting in the chorus. Then



PROCESSION IN ST. PETER'S.

followed the ceremony of kissing the pope's foot. The council consisted of seven hundred and sixty-four delegates, more than *one-third* of whom were from Italy alone, thus giving to the Italian Romanists and the Ultramontanes the control of the assembly.



## EIGHTH DECADE, 1870-1880.

## CHAPTER XXIX.

THE "FREE CHURCH"—THE KING IN ROME—PROTESTANT  
MISSIONS.

NO important event, religious or political, took place in Italy during the early part of 1870. On the 22d of June, however, an ecclesiastical body met in the city of Milan, whose deliberations were destined to exert a great influence upon the moral character of the nation. The representatives of the various Italian Free Churches, in obedience to the call of a "committee" previously appointed, assembled together for the purpose of securing unity of effort in the work of evangelization. The first formal attempt in 1865 having resulted in nothing practical, these scattered and isolated congregations resolved to make another trial, the Church in Milan taking the initiative, and sending forth an earnest appeal. After the meeting had been opened with prayer, the following delegates presented their credentials and were enrolled: *Florence*—Salvatore Ferrati, Alessandro Gavazzi, Angiolo Bagnoli. *Bologna*—Damiano Borgia. *Pisa*—De Michelis, Ranieri Ciesti. *Milan*—P. Rossi, F. Lagomarsino, G. Alborghetti. *Verona*—C. Canova. *Brescia*—A. Beria. *Udine*—A. Girola. *Treviso*—L. Signorelli, A. Peruzzi. *Terni*—G. Martinelli. *Carrara*—E. Volpi. *Spezzia and Arcola*—G. D. Dassio. *Como and Fara*—S. Contini. *Treviglio and Caravaggio*—G. B. Zucchi. *Bassignana*—G. Balossini. *Casale Monferrato*—C. Cocorda. *San Giovanni Pellice*—C. Cocorda, E. Jahier. *Graglia*—F. Lagomarsino. *Livorno, Vercellese, and San Mauro Torinese*—S. Musso.

The above twenty-three Churches were represented regularly by deputies. There were also present, from the Church of Genoa, D. Bolignini and S. Bernatto, without credentials, who were unanimously invited to take part in the proceedings of the assembly. Besides the Churches above mentioned, the following had also given in their adhesion to the appeal for the organization of the assembly; namely, Bari, Barletta, Lecce, Trani Novi-Ligure, Portoferraio, Tortonaio, and Forano. Thirty-three Churches, therefore, adhered to this assembly,

and several others were expected to join. The assembly proceeded to the election of officers; and S. Ferrati was chosen president; F. Lagomarsino and De Michelis, vice-presidents; and S. Bernatto and C. Cocorda, secretaries. After determining that there should be three sessions each day, the first session was closed with prayer.

At the second session the order of the day was the great question for which the assembly was convened—the union of the Italian Free Churches—which was freely and fraternally discussed. De Michelis, Bernatto, Lagomarsino, Gavazzi, Bolognini, Musso, Cocorda, Jahier, Zucchi, Rossi, Canova, Ferretti, and Volpi took part in this discussion. The necessity of such a union was universally recognized, and the propriety of establishing it upon a declaration of principles common to all the Free Churches, conformably to the appeal of the Church of Milan. At the third session, after the reading of the minutes of the previous session, a discussion followed upon the fundamental principles which should constitute the basis of union. The principal speakers were Gavazzi, Lagomarsino, Cocorda, Bernatto, Bolognini, and Jahier. As the result of this discussion, it was determined that a clear distinction must be made between the general interests of the evangelical work and the particular interests of individual congregations, and the following paper was therefore adopted: “The assembly, considering that the union of the Churches ought not to trespass upon the liberty of individual Churches and congregations, affirm that the declaration of principles to be proposed as a basis of union for the Churches be limited to the fundamental doctrines of faith.”

Formulas of such doctrines having been prepared by the Church of Florence and the commission of Milan, both were submitted to the assembly, and a committee was appointed to examine and report upon the two schemes—Bolognini, De Michelis, and Jahier being selected to perform this duty. After a discussion of various matters relating to the assembly of the Italian Churches held in Bologna in 1866, the assembly passed to the reading and examination of the letter of the brethren of the Church of Florence (Via Maggio). After a lengthy discussion upon the principles involved in said letter at variance with and opposed to consummation of the union of the Churches, a commission was appointed to reply to it in the spirit of Christian love and charity. Gavazzi, Rossi, and Cocorda were chosen to discharge this important duty. The sessions of the 23d and 24th of June were principally occupied in the discussion of the declaration of principles presented by the commission. The articles were taken

up one by one, and faithfully discussed; after which they were all unanimously adopted, as follows:

“I. God, the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, has manifested his will in revelation, which is the Bible, the only perfect and immutable rule of faith and conduct.

“II. God created man upright, in his own image and likeness; but Adam disobeyed the word of God, sinned; and so by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin. By which cause human nature in Adam and by Adam has become corrupt and sinful; and we all in Adam are born with an inclination to do evil, and an incapacity to do the good commanded by God. We are, therefore, by nature all sinners, and under condemnation.

“III. God wills not the death of the sinner, but that he should come to the knowledge of the truth and be saved.

“IV. Salvation comes from the free and eternal love of the Father, and is obtained by the expiatory sacrifice, by the resurrection, and by the intercession of the Son, who justifies us. It is communicated by the Holy Spirit, who, regenerating the sinner, unites him to Christ by faith, comes to dwell in him, produces peace in his heart, giving him the assurance of the remission of his sins, renders him free, guides and comforts him by the Word that he himself has given, seals and keeps him to the day of the appearing of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

“V. The Christian, redeemed at a great price, is bound to glorify God in his body, soul, and spirit, which belong to God, walking in holiness, without which no one can see the Lord. To do this he obtains strength from him who has said, ‘My grace is sufficient for thee.’

“VI. Believers regenerated in Christ form the Church, which can not perish or apostatize, it being the body of the Lord Jesus.

“VII. Besides the universal priesthood to which all believers appertain, God himself has established in the Church ministers for the perfecting of the saints and the edification of the body of Christ, which ministers ought to be recognized by the Church itself.

“VIII. The Lord Jesus Christ will come from heaven, and change our body of humiliation into a glorious body. In that day the dead in Christ will rise first, and the living found faithful will be transformed; and so all will be caught up in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air to be forever with him, and, after, all others will rise to be judged.

“The General Assembly of the Free Christian Church in Italy



considers these articles the expression of Biblical Christianity; not pretending, however, to say that there are not many other doctrines in the Bible necessary to be believed—such, for instance, as the Lord's-supper and Baptism. It lays no claim to infallibility. The Word of God is alone infallible. The declaration of principles in the Church is not the cause or the title of salvation, but the external bond of the unity of faith and the banner of the Church itself."

This "Declaration of Principles common to all the various congregations that compose the Free Christian Church in Italy" was then again read and voted by acclamation as a whole. The joy and gratitude of the entire assembly at the great step taken was expressed in a fervent prayer of thanksgiving by the evangelist Rossi.

At the ninth session, in view of the common declaration of faith and the unanimity with which it was voted, the assembly adopted a solemn declaration of the union of the Free Churches in Italy also, for the work of evangelization, as follows: "All the Churches represented in the General Assembly in Milan, already united in faith and love, do declare by their representatives that they are united in one body, and bound together in agreement or compact for the great work of the evangelization of Italy." And that this important act should not be misinterpreted nor attributed to the spirit of sect, it was voted that "the assembly declares itself to be united with all Churches and evangelical Christians throughout the world in the bonds of communion with our Lord Jesus." Then there followed a discussion in regard to the "General Assembly," its composition, powers, and convocation. Two projects or plans were presented, one by the Church of Florence, and the other by the commission of Milan. The latter, after a brief discussion, was adopted, embracing the following articles:

"1. The assembly is composed of all the deputies of the united Churches, and each Church shall have the privilege of sending from one to three deputies.

"2. It shall be held annually, and determine the time of each succeeding meeting.

"3. The powers of the assembly are the following: To establish some general plan for the work of evangelization; appoint its committee and examine the work of the same. It may modify, if necessary, the *declaration of principles* at the suggestion or counsel of the Churches; it may accept new Churches that desire to form part of this Union, and can judge in the last appeal controversies that may arise in the bosom of the Union itself.

"4. The assembly shall appoint its treasurer, independent of the committee, for keeping the funds of the Free Italian Church, which treasurer shall be authorized to receive donations and legacies in favor of said Church. He shall not be able, however, to make any payments except by order of the committee, which alone can establish all regulations in reference to said donations and legacies."

The assembly then proceeded to the discussion of the rules for the Committee of Evangelization, and, by a unanimous vote, adopted the following articles:

"1. The Committee of Evangelization shall consist of not less than five and not more than seven members, and elected annually by the assembly, and its members can be re-elected.

"2. The office of this committee shall be to superintend the work of evangelization, collect funds necessary for this work, and aid laborers in connection with it.

"3. This committee shall present an annual report of its work to the general assembly."

At the tenth and last session, after various matters relating to the interests of the Church were discussed, the assembly proceeded to the election of the Committee of Evangelization. There were elected for the Italian part of the committee: Gavazzi, Ferretti, and Lagomarsino. For the foreign element there were elected: Rev. W. Clark, Rev. A. R. Van Nest, D. D., and Rev. J. R. M'Dougall. Messrs. Eyre and Matteini, bankers, were elected financial agents of the assembly. All the minutes of the various sessions were then read and approved, and after a most affecting season of joyous interchange of thought and feeling at the glorious consummation of this important work, prayer was offered, and the president declared the present assembly closed.

While this small ecclesiastical body of plain, earnest Protestant ministers was proclaiming its faith in the pure doctrines of an apostolic Christianity, the Romish Œcumenical Council was denouncing the progress of civil and religious liberty. What a contrast between the assemblage at Milan and that at Rome! The latter with imposing pomp and ceremony conducted business in secret amid the grandeur of St. Peter's. Five hundred and thirty-three papal dignitaries, from various parts of the earth, clad in their magnificent robes, had been deliberating in solemn conclave since the 8th of December, 1869. It is now the 14th of July, 1870. The real purpose for which the council was called is about to be accomplished. For weeks a stormy

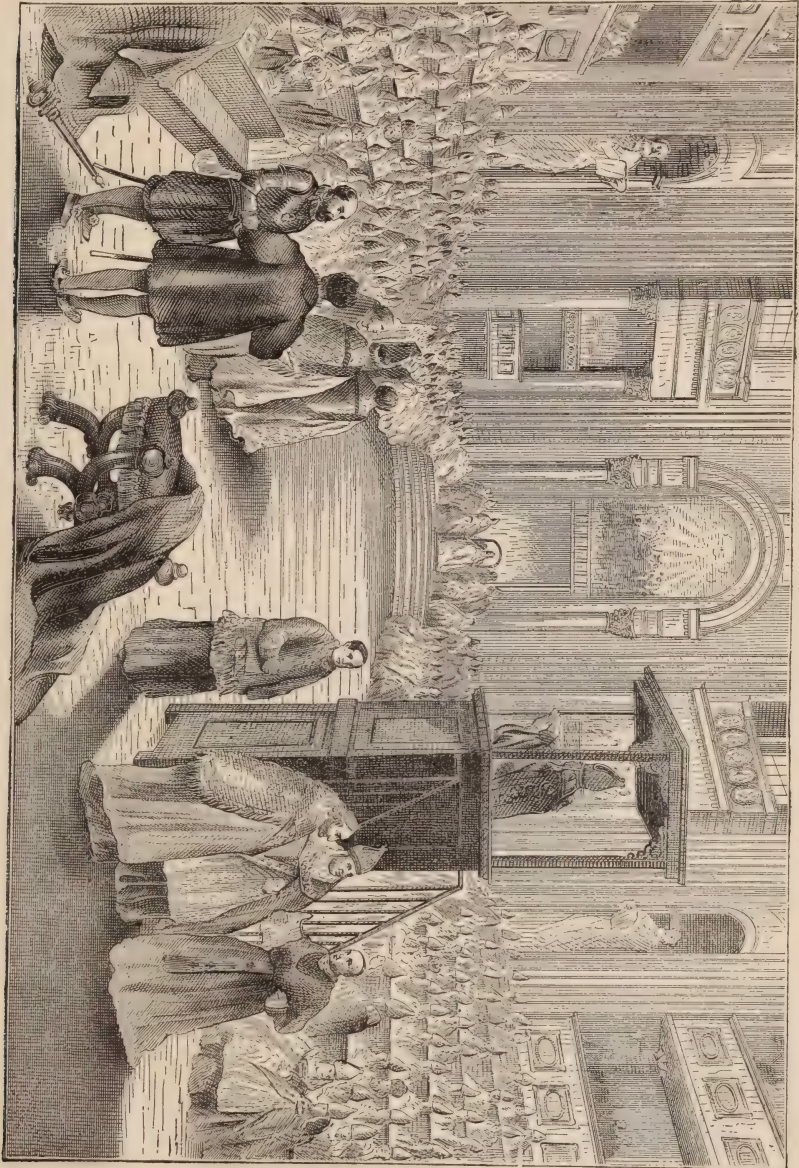
discussion had characterized the proceedings, but the few prelates who protested against the blasphemous dogma of infallibility lifted up their voices in vain. The vote is taken—four hundred and fifty responding *placet*, or yes; eighty-eight *non placet*, or no; and sixty-two *placet juxta modum*, or qualified approval.

Monday, the 18th of July, was selected for the promulgation of the decree of infallibility. It was apparent to the careful observer that the council did not close with the same pious enthusiasm which greeted its opening. The somber streets of Rome exhibited no elaborate decorations, and were not crowded with hurrying vehicles and throngs of pedestrians. The city, instead of wearing the habiliments of the carnival, appeared to be deserted, the heat of Summer having driven nearly all the strangers away. The devout Romans regarded the declarations of the council with cold indifference, and even the deification of one of their own number by the "Mother Church" failed to excite them. There was no solemn pageantry, no magnificent procession. The ecclesiastics came in one by one, or in little groups of two or three. When, at length, the pope arrived, the choir took up the opening chant, and the services commenced, but nearly a third of the seats in the council chamber were still vacant. The minority, after a dignified but unavailing remonstrance, had previously withdrawn from the council, so that of the august assemblage which kneeled reverentially before the pope on the 8th of December, 1869, five hundred and thirty-five remained—two for the purpose of recording their final *non placet* in the presence of the pope.

The decree of infallibility was read in a shrill penetrating voice by one of the secretaries of the council. As the reading proceeded a strange darkness settled over the scene, and appeared even to the stoutest and most skeptical hearts as almost supernatural. The very air became thick and murky. The roll-call commenced, and the ecclesiastics, rising in their places, responded with their assent to an act of blasphemy which has had no parallel since the declining days of the Roman Empire. Suddenly the long brooding storm broke over the Vatican, and the council chamber was illuminated with an unearthly glare by the sheeted lightning. The voices of the voting delegates were drowned by continuous peals of thunder, but amidst this scene of indescribable sublimity the vote continued to be taken. At length the pope arose to declare the result, and to assume the prerogative which, in the universal judgment of mankind, belongs to God alone. But the darkness was too great for the failing eyesight of the venerable pontiff, and he could not decipher the paper which



contained the memorable formula. Hence a servitor was summoned with a lighted taper, and the decree was announced. Thus closed the great council, but its efforts to maintain the temporal power of the



READING THE DOGMA IN COUNCIL.

papacy were in vain. Already the first step toward the overthrow of Babylon had been taken, though Napoleon III, the "Eldest Son of the Church," designed to protect the interests of the papal See

when he proclaimed, on the 15th of July, war against Germany, the only Protestant nation on the Continent.

The victories of the German army reduced France to such an extremity that she was compelled to withdraw her troops from Rome, and accordingly they evacuated the city on the 8th of August, 1870, embarking at Civita Vecchia for their own country. The Roman people were greatly excited because Mazzini threatened to take possession of the metropolis; but Victor Emmanuel would not permit him, as he considered himself still bound by the September convention with France, and Mazzini was therefore arrested to keep him quiet. On the 2d of September the Emperor Napoleon and the French army surrendered to the German forces at Sedan. This act was soon followed by the overthrow of the empire and the establishment of the French republic, which declared the September convention no longer binding upon France. Victor Emmanuel was now free from this alliance which so long restrained him, and he at once notified Pope Pius IX that he intended to preserve order in Italy—a plain intimation that he was determined to be master of Rome. The pontiff appealed to King William of Prussia to protect him, but that sovereign declined to interfere in Italian affairs. The Italian troops entered the papal territory, which readily submitted to the king, and in a few days took position before Rome. Pius IX refused to allow the city to be defended, but caused only sufficient resistance to be made to show that he yielded to force. A small breach was made in the wall near the Porta Pia, and through this the Italian troops entered Rome on the 20th of September.

On the 2d of October the Roman citizens, by the *plebiscite*, voted fifty thousand to fifty for the government of the king, and against that of the pope, and thus, by the decision of his own people, Pius IX, the *first* of infallible popes, became the last of the sovereign pontiffs. The revolution was accomplished peacefully. The Italian correspondent of an American journal, who visited the polling-places, declared that perfect order prevailed, the municipal council having adopted a fair plan, and every class voted except the priests and those associated with them. "I have seen," wrote the correspondent, "the carnival in its best days, but I never saw in Rome a scene of so wild hilarity and spontaneous joy." As the result of this change, the papal arms disappeared rapidly from the public buildings, the Jesuits began to leave the city, and new names were given to the streets. On the 31st of December, 1870, Victor Emmanuel entered Rome, and proclaimed it the capital of free and united Italy. The popular



sentiment was reflected in a speech delivered in the early part of the year by Gattini, a member of the Italian parliament. His subject was the "Papacy," and in the course of his remarks he said: "Civilization asks what share the papacy has taken in its work. Is it the press? Is it electricity? Is it steam? Is it chemical analysis? Is it free trade? Is it self-government? Is it the principle of nationality? Is it the proclamation of the rights of man? Of the liberty of conscience? Of all this the papacy is the negation. Its culminating points are Gregory I, who, like Omar, burnt libraries; Gregory VII, who destroyed a moiety of Rome and created the temporal sovereignty; Innocent III, who founded the Inquisition; Boniface IX, who destroyed the last remains of municipal liberty in Rome; Pius VII, who committed the same wrong in Bologna; Alexander VI, who established the censorship of books; Paul III, who published the bull for the establishment of the Jesuits; Pius V, who covered Europe with burning funeral piles; Urban VIII, who tortured Galileo; and Pius IX, who has given us the modern *Syllabus*." It is a significant fact that when Victor Emmanuel entered the "Eternal City" on the closing day of 1870, the tunnel through Mont Cenis was opened, the work having been completed on the 26th of December. Thus, when the brave king placed upon his head for the first time the crown of a united nation, he was enabled to add to it another star, prophetic of Italy's commercial greatness. The mighty barrier of the Alps was pierced, and direct and uninterrupted railroad communication with France and the rest of Europe secured just at the moment when Italy became free, and was prepared to enter upon a career of prosperity.

On the 24th of October, 1870, Rev. W. Clark, then in Milan, addressed a letter to the secretary of the "American and Foreign Christian Union," at New York, appealing for means to commence a mission in Rome, so providentially opened to evangelical agencies. He stated that many exiled Romans who had been for years scattered among the other cities of Italy were returning, some of them being members of evangelical Churches, and constituting a nucleus for a Church in that important center. Two evangelists from Milan, both Romans, already were at work in their native city, and one of them wrote to Mr. Clark, saying: "Thanks to God, there is every reason to hope, if I am not deceived in respect to the spirit and tendencies of this people, that very soon we shall see planted here a Church of Christ. We have great difficulty in finding just now a hall for worship. The smallest shops are renting at a thousand francs a year."



The evangelist was even asked to pay three thousand francs a year for an apartment of ten rooms on the first floor; but he was not discouraged, expecting that the Lord would send friends with the necessary funds. Mr. Clark declared his intention to remove the theological school from Milan to Rome whenever sufficient means were contributed for that purpose. Ten students had completed a three years' course, but the class was dismissed on account of inadequate support. These young men had ability and experience, and needed another year's training to make them efficient ministers of the Gospel. "The Catholics of the United States," wrote Mr. Clark, "last year contributed more than one hundred and seventy thousand dollars to the American Catholic College at Rome, and the city of New York itself forty-four thousand dollars, while all the Protestant Christians of America, for the work of evangelization throughout the whole of Italy, contributed only about fifteen thousand dollars. Now, when Rome is entirely opened to the truth, the time is most favorable and opportune to establish there a Protestant theological school, where pious Italian young men may be trained for the work of evangelizing Italy." As will be seen in a succeeding chapter, the Protestants of the United States donated in 1872 a large sum to the Free Italian Church for the establishment of such a school.

In the latter part of 1870 the Rev. Francesco Sciarelli, of the Wesleyan Methodist mission at Naples, commenced to hold religious services in Rome, preaching, like St. Paul of old, in his own "hired house." The report of Rev. H. J. Piggott for the entire year shows that the work throughout Italy made some advancement, though the opposition to it was very severe. The laborers were stationed as follows: *Northern Division*, Padua, Giacomo Roland; Vicenza, Alberigo Bossi; Parma, Bartolommeo Gaultieri; Mezzano, Giuseppe Moreno; Spezia, Ferdinando Bosio; Intra, Benedetto Lissolo; Cremona, Donato Patucelli; Pavia, Giovanni Annigoni; Florence, to be supplied; Asola, Gaetano Zocco. *Southern Division*, Naples, Thomas W. S. Jones; Francesco Sciarelli; Caserta, to be supplied; Capri, to be supplied; Salerno, Giuseppe Carile; Cosenza, Luigi Girone; Messina (Sicily), Giuseppe Spaziante.

In the early part of 1871 Signor Gavazzi preached in Rome with great success. Three halls were opened for religious worship, and Signor Lagomarsino and Professor Peccenini rendered valuable aid in ministering to the audiences, which constantly became larger. Serious obstacles were encountered, and the Italian government did not have the courage to fully protect the missionaries. It refused to give

permission that the Gospel should be *publicly* preached, though the sale of Bibles and tracts was tolerated. The Jesuits employed spies and secret agents, and both Gavazzi and Lagomarsino on a certain night narrowly escaped falling into the hands of these assassins.

On a beautiful Sabbath in May, 1871, the writer was in Rome, and beheld the effects of Jesuitical wrath. He received a cordial invitation from Signor Francesco Sciarelli, who had charge of the Wesleyan Italian mission in that city, to attend the evening communion service, but was prevented from enjoying the privilege by the state of his health. One of his traveling companions, however, the Rev. J. F. Hurst, D. D., now president of the Drew Theological Seminary, was present at the meeting and afterwards described the thrilling scene that he witnessed. About two hundred Italians, men and women, had assembled in their little place of Protestant worship in the very heart of Rome. At the conclusion of his sermon Signor Sciarelli administered the communion, and was offering prayer, when an explosion occurred in the vestibule, breaking the glass partition, extinguishing the lights, and filling the worshipers with terror. A thick glass bottle containing powder and slugs had been placed there, and the fuse ignited. For a time, all was confusion and distress; but wonderful to tell, though the frame-work around the doors and windows was shattered, no person was seriously injured. On the following morning the pastor sent a telegram to Naples in these words: "A bomb was exploded in our church last evening, but we are all safe." The friend to whom the telegram was addressed received the following: "A *paper* bomb was exploded in our Church last evening." Thus the demons who contrived this scheme of death, in some mysterious way managed also to manipulate the telegraphic wires and mutilate the message. The Italian government made every effort to discover the perpetrators of the malicious deed, and the papers severely denounced it.

In the Italian senate, the debate on the papal guarantee bill was closed on the 3d of May, and the measure was adopted by a vote of 105 to 20. It abolished the right of the pope to grant *exequaturs* to consuls of foreign powers, and was an important step towards the removal of the last vestige of the temporal power. The bill provided for the payment of the liabilities of the "Holy See," and was passed by the Chamber of Deputies on the 9th of May. The triumphal entry of Victor Emmanuel into Rome occurred on the 1st of July, and was an event of thrilling interest. Thousands of people, defying the rays of a scorching sun, stood along the thoroughfares, and

patiently awaited the arrival of the royal hero. About the middle of the day the thundering of the cannon announced his arrival at the railway station. The news flashed like lightning from one end to the other of the Eternal City. "From the *Piazza di Termini* to the *Piazza di Spagna* it seemed as though a general convulsion had taken possession of the thousands who crowded the streets. King Victor Emmanuel, who wore the uniform of a general, was received at the railway station by the Prince Pallavicini, the mayor of Rome; Prince Humbert; the Premier Lanza, and the rest of the ministers, the Commandatore Vigliani, the president of the senate; the Commandatore Bianchieri, president of the Chamber of Deputies; most of the mayors of the principal Italian towns, and by all the civil and military authorities. The royal party, consisting of Victor Emmanuel, Pallavicini, Lanza, and Prince Humbert, proceeded through the streets in an open carriage, all the other ministers and high authorities following in state carriages. The whole *cortège* was preceded by a squadron of mounted National Guards, and a numerous and brilliant staff came next in the procession. There were no official preparations, no arches of triumph, and no inscriptions, but flags were so abundant that the walls of the houses were hardly visible. The residences of the rich and poor were decorated with beautiful flowers, and in many places the busts or the pictures of Victor Emmanuel replaced the image of a saint or a Madonna. This ovation was a grand tribute to a noble ruler, and an appropriate recognition of the unity of a nation long dissevered and oppressed."

The occupation of Rome and the liberal policy of Victor Emmanuel encouraged the Protestant workers throughout Italy. A new agency also appeared in the field, and prepared to gather its part of the harvest. In November, 1870, the General Missionary Committee of the Methodist Episcopal Church in the United States resolved to establish a mission in the Peninsula. On the 14th of March, 1871, Rev. Leroy M. Vernon, D. D., of the St. Louis Conference, was appointed superintendent, and, with his family, sailed from New York in the latter part of June. He was instructed to go directly to the city of Genoa, and make his temporary headquarters there, and was advised to seek the counsel of Rev. O. M. Spencer, D. D., an able minister of the M. E. Church, and the consular representative of the United States. The committee also requested Dr. Vernon to visit the prominent places, and canvass each before selecting a permanent center of operations, "taking care not to encroach on the fields already occupied by other Protestant mis-



sionaries, especially those occupied by the Wesleyan Church." On the 2d of October the superintendent made his first report from Genoa, announcing his settlement there, and the valuable services rendered by Dr. Spencer. In a letter to the committee, written on the 28th of November, Dr. Vernon stated that he had visited Bologna, Leghorn, Pisa, Ferrara, Verona, and Padua, and at the latter place, then the headquarters of the Wesleyan missions, was cordially received by Rev. H. J. Piggott, the active and efficient superintendent. During this tour of observation important information was obtained, and the peculiar character of the difficulties to be overcome carefully noted.

In the Summer of 1870 the Southern Baptist Convention of the United States organized a mission in Italy under the direction of W. N. Cote, M. D., who inaugurated the work by distributing Bibles in Rome and the neighboring cities. At the close of 1871 Dr. Cote reported that sixty members belonged to his Church in the "Eternal City," and gave the following statement of the whole Italian mission: Civita Vecchia—Colporteur, Paolo Gardiol, twenty-two members; Bari—Evangelist, B. Montinari, seventy-five members; Bologna—Evangelist, G. Giannini, sixty members; Modena, twenty members; La Tour (Waldensian valleys)—Evangelist, Ferraris, thirty-four members. Dr. Cote held large meetings in the Trastevere, but, the room being too small for the congregation, an excellent hall was secured in Piazza Navona, in the center of Rome. This splendid square is always full of people, and not less than two hundred men and women attended the Protestant service. The priests were alarmed, and, by instigating the proprietors of the hall to prosecute the tenant who rented it, they succeeded in obtaining an injunction. While the formal proceedings of forcible occupation by the authorities were going on the multitude in the Piazza Navona loudly and unequivocally expressed their disapprobation.

## Eighth Decade, Continued, 1870-1880.

## CHAPTER XXX.

*THE GREAT DÉBATE—WALDENSIAN CONFERENCE—  
GENERAL ASSEMBLY.*

AN event of great significance occurred in the city of Rome on the evenings of February 9th and 10th, 1872. The distinguished Canon Fabiani and two priests Cipolla and Guidi, representing Romanism, and Sciarelli, a Wesleyan Methodist missionary, once a Franciscan monk, Ribetti a pastor of the Waldensian Church, and Gavazzi, the celebrated orator and pastor of the Italian Free Church, representing Protestantism, held a discussion in the hall of the *Pontifica Academia Tiberina*. The question was concerning the primacy of Peter, which involved the accuracy of tradition relative to the actual presence of the apostle in the "Eternal City." The meeting was presided over by Prince Chigi, of Campagnano, and De Dominicis Tosti, the advocate commendatore, both appointed by the Roman Catholic Church, and Rev. Henry J. Piggott, the superintendent of the Wesleyan missions in Italy, and Dr. Herman Phillip, representatives of the Protestant Church of Italy. Two sets of reporters were employed, those of the Œcumenical council for the Church, and those of the Italian parliament for the Protestants. The hall was crowded, and hundreds went away unable to get inside the door.

Sciarelli commenced the argument by showing from the Acts of the Apostles, the apostolic letters, and the Fathers of the age nearest the apostles, that St. Peter never was in Rome. Fabiani replied to Sciarelli by attempting to confuse the chronology that even his own Church had received by stating that Peter's apostolic mission was *general* as was that of all the apostles. He declared that Rome had been the great place of assembling, where the fathers and martyrs had congregated, and disputes with the heretics had occurred. Tradition transmitted to future ages what the Scriptures failed to give, and the Roman Catholic Church believed the statements concerning Peter which came through this channel. Sciarelli said that the Bablyon from which Peter wrote his epistles was Rome, and he would risk the prophetic term, "Bablyon the Great," as applied to the Holy

City. Ribetti, the Waldensian pastor was the next speaker, and in the beginning of his address he accused Fabiani of introducing insinuations and traditions, instead of facts. Taking up the argument of his opponent, that Rome was called Bablyon, he turned it against him in the most scathing manner, and concluded by saying that the religion of Christ is not local, but universal; that it had no capital or center here on earth as the Mosaic law and Jerusalem, but that it was like its founder, infinite, spiritual, and universal.

Cipolla followed Ribetti, endeavoring to strengthen the arguments of Fabiani and to refute those of Ribetti. The weakness of his voice prevented a large part of the audience from hearing the address, but it was given to the reporters. He showed the difference between *allusion* and *insinuation*, and considered the number and the nature of the testimonies adduced. The speaker defended Clement, Irenæus, and Papias, and affirmed that there was abundant time for the Apostle Peter to visit Rome and form the pontificate there, considering the time, the distance, and the modes of travel. At the close of Cipolla's argument Gavazzi proceeded to attack with great force, and in his own burning eloquence, the positions taken by the advocates of Romanism, and showed that the "Acts of the Apostles" contained a true, official, and authentic account of the life, labors, and teachings of the apostles. He declared, therefore, that if Peter had preached in Rome and founded a pontificate there Luke, the historian, would have recorded the fact; for he described Peter's labors at Jerusalem, Antioch, and Cæsarea, but not at Rome. Guidi replied to Gavazzi, reviewing the whole discussion, and commending the arguments of his colleagues, Fabiani and Cipolla. He asserted that the coming of Peter to Rome was "a fact, great, solemn, and universal," and that the life of the Church depended upon it; and in concluding this remarkable debate he referred to the testimony of the Fathers of the fifth and sixth centuries and the silence of heretics and schismatics in the early ages. [The opinion generally prevailed among the crowds that listened to the discussion that the Romish cause was damaged, and Pius IX virtually conceded it by prohibiting any further public controversies with Protestants. He also appointed a *triduum*, or office extending through three successive days, with a view to "offer reparation for the horrible blasphemies with which in these latter days infidels have denied the presence and death of St. Peter in Rome."

On the 4th of March the first anniversary of the Italian Bible Society was held in the saloon of the Argentina Theater, a building



in the very heart of Rome, a few hundred feet directly south of the Pantheon. Admiral Fishbourne presided, and there were several English speeches, which were interpreted in Italian. But the great feature of the evening was the delivery of eloquent addresses by Father Hyacinthe and Signor Gavazzi. The former affirmed that the Bible was the common ground of sympathy between him, as a liberal Roman Catholic, and the Protestants; while the latter speaker, in his usual fervent, dramatic, and fluent manner, declared that the historic Church of Rome had been founded by St. Paul, and should be restored to its true character. Ribetti, Sciarelli, and others, spoke with great force.

Signor Alessandro Gavazzi visited the United States in the Summer of 1872, to raise funds for the planting of a Biblical college in Rome. He reached New York on the 17th of April, accompanied by Rev. J. B. Thompson, D. D., an American clergyman, who had been in Italy, and was interested in the work of the Free Italian Church. This deputation was tendered a public reception by the "American and Foreign Christian Union," and on the 9th of May, at the twenty-third anniversary of that society, Gavazzi delivered a powerful address. By his earnest appeals before the General Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and other ecclesiastical bodies, he awakened a deep interest in behalf of the evangelization of Italy, and in a short time secured from the Protestant Churches a large sum for that purpose. (In 1852 he was an exile from his native land, and stirred the hearts of the American people by his matchless eloquence; in 1872 he came as a free citizen of a united Italy.

On the 10th of March, 1872, Joseph Mazzini, the Italian patriot, closed his remarkable career. Since the previous November he had resided in Pisa under an assumed name, seeking in the mild climate of his native land the restoration of his health, broken by study and fatigue after forty years of unwearied activity. He had been in exile for a long period, but lived pleasantly in a small house in West Brompton, a remote suburb of London, occasionally meeting his friends in the parlor of Madame Venturi, his steadfast friend and admirable translator. His arrival in Pisa was known only by his relatives and the authorities, and he occupied a few modest rooms in the *Via della Madalena*, dining in the evening with the Roselli family, who resided in the vicinity.

In February he was prostrated by a severe bronchial attack, from which he recovered; but on the 6th of March he was again troubled with an oppression of breath, which his physician, Rossini, attrib-

uted to the congestion of his lungs. He became worse, entirely lost his voice, and in a few days ceased to live. "He died," says one who was present, "in a room on the second floor, looking toward the south, over a little garden where are a few straggling, sickly plants. Extended on the bed of death, covered with a linen coverlet with alternate fine stripes of white and lilac, the waxen features retained the traces of the calm resignation which had never abandoned him in the days which preceded that of his death. He did not appear as if dead, but like a profound thinker who had fallen asleep after excessive intellectual fatigue. In the morning, before the news had spread throughout the city, came Corte, Bertani, Campanella, Saffi, and Quachio. I saw crossing the threshold of the little house the venerable Enrico Meyer, weeping as he went to give the last kiss to the friend of his distant youth."

The death of Mazzini awakened a feeling of sorrow in every patriotic heart, and the funeral honors paid to him were national. His devoted personal friends accompanied the bier to Genoa, and deputations from societies and towns followed, swelling into a vast procession of eighty thousand mourners. Commemorative services were also held in Rome, the whole length of the Corso being filled with sorrowing thousands, who beheld the bust of their departed champion, by whose side stood a colossal figure of Italy in the act of placing a laurel crown upon his head. The land which he had loved so passionately, from which he had been an exile, to which he had returned again and again when he saw an opportunity for her liberation, now so far on its road to liberty received back her great son and gave him burial. The ideas which crowned his life did not go down with him into the grave, but abide for the further emancipation of the nation which witnessed their birth and development, and the steadfast integrity of their great apostle.

The various Protestant agencies in Italy were rewarded with an encouraging measure of success. In April, 1872, the Waldenses held a missionary conference in Florence, which continued four days. None but mission stations were embraced, and the design was to discuss subjects in their interest. Thirty-seven posts were represented, and the number of working delegates was sixty-four. They presented a fine appearance, showed great zeal, and awakened hopes for the regeneration of Italy. Clergymen of the Free Churches of Scotland and Italy, and of other religious bodies, were also present. Interesting papers, relating to various departments of Church and Sabbath-school work, were read by Signori E. Comba, A. Revel,

A. Malan, B. Pons, A. Meille, and Ribetti. The discussions were able, and a delightful spirit of harmony prevailed.

The Fourth General Assembly of the Free Italian Church opened its sittings on Wednesday morning, December 4, 1872, at No. 9 Via Corallo, in the city of Rome. After praise and prayer the inaugural discourse was delivered by Signor Lagomarsino, the president of last year's assembly in Florence, and pastor of one of the largest Churches in Italy, that of Milan, containing about five hundred members in full communion. The text was Ephesians iv, 1-10, from which a most correct exhortation to Christian humility was addressed to the membership as well as the pastorate of the Church. The assembly was very strict in examining the credentials of the deputies, and twenty-nine were enrolled, representing twenty-eight Churches. The evangelist at Turin could not be present because a revival was prevailing in his Church, the meetings being crowded night after night with people eager to hear the Word of God. Professor de Michelis, of Pisa, was chosen president of the assembly; Signor Jahier, vice-president; and Signori Cocorda and Jahier, secretaries. No more fitting selection of men could have been made. Signor de Michelis is not only an able evangelist of the cross, and a man of great eloquence and deep spirituality of mind, but he has had the advantage of a legal education and long experience in presiding over large societies of artisans in Pisa, where flourishing schools attest his intelligent devotion to the cause of Christ. He presided with dignity, and by his promptness and genial spirit won the esteem of all.

A large number of foreigners attended the meetings, and addressed the assembly in words of kindly sympathy and encouragement. Among those who were introduced and made speeches, which were translated by Signor Gavazzi and others, were the Rev. Mr. Ashton, of the Evangelical Continental Society, of London; Rev. R. B. Campfield, of the American and Foreign Christian Union, of New York; Rev. Mr. Alexander, of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions; Rev. Dr. Waddington, of London; Rev. H. J. Piggott, of the Wesleyan missions in Italy; Rev. W. C. Van Meter, of Rome; Rev. Mr. Mourges, of the Central Protestant Society of France; Rev. E. H. Johnson, of the American Baptist Church, and others. The Rev. John Ker, D. D., and Mr. Donald Miller, of the Scotch Church in Rome, and the Rev. Mr. Waite, of the American Church in Rome, were also present on several occasions. A number of letters were read from other societies and gentlemen, expressing deep regret at their inability to be present at so



unique and historic a gathering, the first assembly of evangelical preachers in the "Eternal City" since the days of the apostles.

On Thursday, December 5th, a school festival was held—a large number of parents, members of assembly, and Christian strangers being present. The two hundred children connected with the Free Church schools were examined, prizes distributed, and religious services conducted. On the following Sabbath the Rev. A. R. Van Nest, D. D., and Signor Gavazzi preached in the American Church in Rome, and the Rev. J. R. M'Dougall occupied the pulpit of the Scotch Church.

After the adjournment of the assembly many of the deputies carried to their homes a photograph of Aonio Paleario, taken from an original painting which a photographer of Rome found in the Communal Library of Veroli.

---

### Eighth Decade, Continued, 1870-1880.

---

## CHAPTER XXXI.

### *VARIOUS RELIGIOUS AND POLITICAL EVENTS.*

WHILE serious obstacles continued to impede the progress of the Protestant cause in Italy, there were many promising indications of the future triumph of evangelical Christianity. Even in Rome, some who had been only soldiers of a temporal king enlisted under the banner of Christ. In the early part of 1873 Henry Day, Esq., an intelligent, philanthropic American, visited the "Eternal City," and attended a night service for soldiers, organized about the first of the previous October by Rev. Mr. Waite of the American Union Chapel. Soon after the commencement of the enterprise a young man, by the name of Luigi Capellini, who had once been a soldier and a Roman Catholic, was employed to conduct it. He had a fair education and some theological training, and found easy access to the soldiers in the barracks. By his daily visits, conversations, and distribution of tracts, he succeeded in attracting many of the young men to his class, which met every evening. After two months he had daily at his rooms from fifty to eighty persons.

Mr. Day, in an interesting letter to the *New York Observer*, de-

scribes the scene which he witnessed not far from the spot where tradition represents the "hired house" to have stood, in which Paul dwelt two whole years and received all that came in unto him, and where the very pillar is pointed out to which the aged apostle, they say, was chained. A short distance from this very house is a narrow street called *Via Gallinacia*. Accompanied by Rev. Mr. Waite, the American visitor "mounted a dark, dirty, winding stone stairway for three stories. They rang a bell, a soldier opened the door, and they were ushered into a dimly lighted, brick-paved room, about twenty feet square, filled with soldiers, all in clean uniforms of gray pantaloons and blue coats with brass buttons." About forty strong, honest, good, intelligent looking young men, all under twenty-five years of age, were assembled for the purpose of studying the Bible. Some were corporals and sergeants, with small side arms. Many were compelled to stand and others were seated on rude chairs. "There was a pine table at one end, and in front stood the colporteur. Each soldier had a Bible, and all were studying the lesson together, which was the first two of the Ten Commandments. The missionary first read the Ten Commandments, and then read from the New Testament our Savior's summary of them. In the course of the lesson he had occasion to mention the images of the saints and the Virgin Mary, so much venerated by the Catholics, and he gave them the views of the Protestants on that subject. After the lesson prayer was offered, and then came a free conversation with the soldiers. They were encouraged to ask questions about the Bible and the Protestants' views of it."

Opening his Bible, one of the soldiers desired to know how Protestants explained the saying of Christ contained in the sixteenth chapter of Matthew and eighteenth verse, "Thou art Peter and upon this rock I will build my church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it." The missionary was prepared to answer this question, which involves the great fundamental truth or error of Romanism. He requested the soldier to read in the sixteenth verse of the same chapter the declaration of Peter, "Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God." Then said he, when Christ is speaking in the eighteenth verse of a rock he refers not to Peter, but to Peter's confession in the sixteenth verse. "This confession that Christ is the Son of God," said he, "is the rock on which the church is built, and to which Christ referred." This was evidently a new idea to the young soldier. Through an interpreter Mr. Day addressed the audience, and told them that the Americans were deeply interested

in Italy, and desired its inhabitants to have the Bible, not caring what name they assumed if they read God's Word and obeyed its precepts. The speaker directed their attention to a card on the wall on which was printed the verse, "Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and thou shalt be saved," and stated that this was the whole of religion. The soldiers were pleased with the address, and in the most touching manner expressed their thanks when Mr. Day informed them that they should have a larger room. As they went out each one came up and, after saluting him, shook his hand heartily.

At another meeting on Sabbath, a Roman Catholic priest, in his black robe and wide-brimmed hat, came in and sat near the door. Mr. Day's interpreter, believing that he was a spy, informed him that he was not allowed there. He then retired to the hall, followed by Mr. Day, who invited him to remain at the service, saying that all were welcome. At the close of the exercises the priest was asked whether he had any objection to such a study of the Bible. He said to Mr. Day: "I am a Catholic priest; I have this morning officiated at the mass; but I have no objection to such a service as this. I am not in full sympathy with the Catholic Church, but I can not leave it; I have no other means of support." When asked whether he would leave the Church and engage in Protestant missionary work if he were supported, he said that he was almost prepared for even this step. Mr. Day expressed the opinion that other priests would become dissatisfied with the papal system.

In the Summer of 1873 the "American and Foreign Christian Union" ceased to make regular appropriations to the Free Italian Church, because the "American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions," having resolved to operate in Roman Catholic lands, desired to assume the support of that native organization in Italy. The report of the evangelization committee of the Free Italian Church for the year 1873 shows that about thirty thousand dollars were received and expended. The Rev. J. R. M'Dougall describes the general features of the mission work in the north of Italy, which he observed during a ten days' tour among some of the Churches. He was accompanied by four Protestant ministers, representing as many denominations—Established and United Presbyterian Churches of Scotland, the Irish Presbyterian Church, and the Congregational Union of America. Mr. M'Dougall, who belongs to the Free Church of Scotland, states that the minds of the Italian converts were profoundly impressed when they found this deputation "one in Christ and one in sympathy with them, and all speaking the same



language of Christian consolation and encouragement." The visitors witnessed various phases of Christian experience and every degree of Church progress, and were greatly encouraged. They were convinced of the necessity of having central, commodious, and comfortable places of worship in every community where services were held. The native brethren were annoyed by the landlords who, at the instigation of the priests, closed the rooms on some pretext. Many property-holders refused to rent their halls for religious purposes; and this was not strange, when it is remembered that so large a proportion of the real estate of the kingdom is in mortmain.

Mr. M'Dougall purchased a suppressed Roman Catholic church in Florence for ten thousand dollars, and converted it into a place of worship for the members of the Free Italian Church. The conventual buildings connected with it were transformed into a school-house for the use of the evangelical schools of Santa Croce. The evangelist of the Free Church in Rome, Ludovico Conti, reported progress in that city. Three stations were occupied, the first, or principal one, being in the *Via del Corallo*, situated between the Piazza Navona and the bridge of St. Angelo; the second in the *Rione Regola*, a little further south, close to the Farnese palace and the Compodi Fiore, where Aonio Paleario and so many other martyrs were burned at the stake; and the third in the *Rione Monti*, in the eastern part of the city, not far from the basilica of Santa Maria Maggiore. At the Corallo station thirty-six persons were added to the Church during 1873, making the total membership one hundred and six. On Sabbath morning the average attendance was from forty to sixty, and in the evening between one hundred and one hundred and fifty. About two hundred were present on every Wednesday evening to hear the public discussion, and when Gavazzi was expected to speak the numbers usually reached three hundred. The two Sabbath-schools contained about two hundred scholars, and the six day-schools more than three hundred children and adults. Among the many conversions were those of a very learned Roman Catholic priest, and of a preacher of the order of Conventual Friars, both of whom became valuable laborers in the Lord's vineyard.

The new college or theological seminary established in Rome, mainly by the efforts of Gavazzi, was opened under favorable auspices. At the end of two months nine students attended the recitations, receiving instruction from four teachers. In the early morning Beria taught the many branches of *Pedagogia* to enable the young evangelists to obtain their diplomas, so as to be the legal directors of their

schools in the kingdom of Italy. Borgia followed Beria, and alternately gave lessons in Greek and English. Then came the double course of lectures by Conti in dogmatic and polemic theology, together with an explanation of the fundamental principles of the Free Italian Church. Gavazzi closed the daily exercises with instructions in "Rational Theology" and "Homiletics." He was the controlling spirit of the "College," and soon after commencing his labors, said: "I can not but bless God for the resolution arrived at by our Italian committee not to lose any more time in opening such a training school for our future evangelists, seeing that the result has actually surpassed our most sanguine expectations. . . . One of the first fruits we have reaped is the weekly preaching of the students in our different places of worship in Rome—and, let me say, to the edification of the hearers."

A significant political event in Italy was the passage of the bill by both houses of the Italian Parliament abolishing religious corporations. On the 17th of June, 1873, in the senate, sixty-eight votes were cast in favor of it and twenty against it. The royal ministry struggled in vain to exempt the city of Rome from its operation. The majority in the Chambers determined to abolish even the great conventual establishments of the "Eternal City," in which the generals of the fifty-two religious orders were domiciled, and this determination was so clearly the reflection of the public sentiment of the nation that the conservative ministry yielded the point. The generals of the orders—always with the exception of the head of the order of Jesuits—were allowed to remain in their former houses, occupying so much of the edifices as was absolutely necessary, until death removed them. The rest of the property of the establishments was ordered to be sold and the avails secularized. The Italian government also prohibited the making of pilgrimages, alleging that there was danger of spreading disease during that season of the year when cholera usually prevailed; but the priestly party asserted that sanitary reasons were not those which weighed most in the minds of the Italian ministry. When the latter caused the prohibition to be issued, the faithful children of the Holy Father had already made extensive arrangements to visit the most celebrated of the shrines of the Virgin and the saints, throughout the Peninsula. The real object of these pilgrimages was a political one. Under the pilgrim's cloak the form of the conspirator against established order was plainly visible, and his staff might easily be laid down for a musket. The priests were enraged at the order of the government, and at first made a

slight effort to disregard it, but failed. The populace, smarting under the wrongs of centuries inflicted by the priesthood, could scarcely abstain from treating with personal violence the ignorant devotees who were lending all their influence to elevate the clerical party again to power. The patriotic Italians greeted the pilgrims with derisive laughter and coarse invective, while the king's *gens d'armes* arrested the deluded men and sent them back unharmed to their homes.

Among other interesting events in Italy during 1873 were the publication of an "Encyclical" by Pius IX, on the 21st of November, and the appointment of twelve new cardinals, among whom were the Jesuit Father Tarquini, and the Augustine Father Martinelli. On the 22d of December this important ceremony occurred in the hall of the Vatican, where the consistories are usually held. Death had reduced the number of cardinals from seventy to forty-two, and, notwithstanding his declaration that he would not confer the crimson on any new ecclesiastic until freed from his pretended "captivity," Pius was induced to fill a few of the vacancies.

In the early part of 1874 Signor Matteo Prochet visited Messina, in Sicily, and opened a new Waldensian church. It was a neat edifice, and was crowded every evening for a week by many who, though Roman Catholics, listened attentively to the proclamation of a free Gospel. On the 12th of May the first general conference of the Wesleyan Methodist Church of Italy was held in the city of Rome. As the congregations were widely scattered, there had not been any direct communion between those in the northern and the southern parts of the Peninsula. To come together required more time and expense than the poor Churches could well afford. This first ecclesiastical gathering was, therefore, an interesting epoch in their history. Rev. Francesco Sciarelli was elected secretary, the same person who challenged the Roman priesthood to discuss the question whether St. Peter was ever in Rome. Rev. L. Wiseman, M. A., ex-president of the British Wesleyan Conference, presided. The names of seventeen Italian ministers and three evangelists were on the roll. Six new persons were recommended as candidates for the ministry. The statistical reports showed a membership in the Italian Methodist Churches of one thousand and seven, besides one hundred and eleven catechumens—an increase of one hundred and thirty-seven communicants over the number reported the preceding year.

It is not surprising that so few embraced the Protestant faith, when it is remembered that an almost universal skepticism, resulting from the attempt to enforce incredible dogmas, prevailed in Italy. The



avarice, worldliness, and dissoluteness of the priests had inspired the people with a distrust for all religion; and hence, the Protestant ministers were also suspected of being influenced by interested motives. The skeptical journalists easily persuaded their readers that they were consulting their liberties in opposing the Gospel. The *Popolo Romano*, in speaking of the anniversary of the Bible Society, recently held in Rome, and of Signor Gavazzi's brilliant address on that occasion: "The Roman population, not unlike in this the populations of all Italy, makes no great distinction between Catholics and Protestants, knowing that they are all of the same nature (*d' una stessa farina*). The Protestants are not, it is true, in accord with the Vatican. But what of that? Is there any intelligent and disinterested person in Italy who is in good faith in accord with the Protestants? We think not, and the reason is clear. In Italy there is no religious sentiment; the papacy has accustomed us to get along without religion (*a fare a meno della religione*), and Protestantism finds among us only paid followers, like the actors of the theater." Artidoro Beria, replied to this article, saying: "That the Italian press should go down into the mire to collect the weapons of Jesuitism wherewith to strike Protestantism is a thing worthy of other times. Let the *Popolo Romano* know that Protestantism is too proud of itself to undertake making merchandise of souls and bodies. As to intelligent and disinterested persons in Italy who are in good faith in accord with Protestantism, *Popolo Romano*, we could name them to thee by hundreds. If thou pretendest to be truly the voice of the Roman people, become not the mouth-piece of a priestcraft which is the wound and cancer of our native land."

On the 17th of May, 1874, Rev. L. Wiseman, M. A., of London, assisted at the dedication of a New Wesleyan church in Naples, situated in the Largo S. Anna di Palazzo. He preached in English to a large congregation a solemn discourse on the words, "For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord." (2 Cor. iv, 5.) Exercises in Italian followed, with crowded audiences on this and the successive days. The services extended over a whole week. On the evening of the 21st a lecture was delivered by Rev. Mr. Ragghianti, of Viareggio, on the celebrated Arnaldo da Brescia. More than seven hundred respectful listeners heard it with evident satisfaction, and frequently interrupted the speaker with their lively applause. Professor di Sienna, Signori Sciarelli, Morano, Di Pretoro, and others, took part in the public exercises, and in the visitation of the interesting schools. The Protestant cause in Florence was

greatly promoted by the opening of "the old and historical parish church and cloisters of San Jacopo tra Fossi," whose purchase has already been mentioned. Rev. J. R. M'Dougall, in a letter published in the *Christian World* of June, 1874, says:

"One of the handsomest churches in Italy has been economically put in order for evangelical worship, and I am happy to say that it has been crowded at every diet of worship since it was opened, on the 1st of January last, proving how true it is that with respectable places of worship in the leading towns of Italy we may expect the Gospel more readily to reach the middle and upper classes of society. . . . The church occupies a large space in the annals of old Florence. It dates from the year 800. Dante refers to it, and the histories of the town give many interesting particulars.

"The church and the convent were once the abode of the fine arts; but all the valuable paintings are claimed by the government when selling such ecclesiastical property. There was but one large painting left in the center of the roof of the church, and great fear was entertained that the subject of it might be so pagan or popish that it would have to be removed before our dear Italian Christians, who have swung away to the other extreme from popery, as we ourselves did at the Reformation, would consent to worship or to preach in it. But, while removing the eight confessional boxes and the huge stone altar, the painting has been left, as it is found to a very fine representation of St. Augustine, open Bible in hand, confuting heresy, which is seen falling headlong into the abyss of perdition."

The cloisters were spacious enough to furnish eleven rooms on the first floor for the use of the evangelical schools under Signor Ferretti's charge, and twenty-eight on the second and third floors for the evangelists, teachers, and other Christian workers, and were in a desirable location, being distant from all other Protestant stations, and in the midst of a dense Italian population.

In the same letter Mr. M'Dougall says: "The great event of my life is accomplished, and I hasten to acquaint you and other Christian friends. I have just returned from Rome, where I have secured, through God's mercy, a central and commodious building, in a most populous neighborhood, for all the operations of our young evangelistic Free Italian Church. I rather needed rest after securing and refitting the old historic parish church and cloisters of San Jacopo here, and seeing them, to my immense satisfaction, full of Christian activity from one end to another, and free of debt. But the laborers

are so few, and the work to be done so great, that our only rest consists in a variation of toil. And I lately had this in an apostolic visit to the infant Churches in the North; in attendance on the annual assembly of evangelists in Pisa, where the presence of the great Master of Assemblies was sensibly felt; in sending out by post to all the evangelists and evangelical Churches in Italy detailed printed notices of the blessed work of grace in Newcastle and Edinburgh; and in visiting our three flourishing Churches and schools in Rome, conversing with the two Bible-women, and making the more intimate acquaintance of our eight students of theology. . . . The building I have secured at a public sale, and after brisk competition, belonged to the ecclesiastical property seized by the government, and is near the most prosperous of our three Churches and schools in Rome, so that we conserve the results of the last three years' labors. It is also distant from all other missionary brethren, who, like ourselves, are laboring to promote God's glory in Italy. It consists of five stories and one hundred and twenty rooms, looks on three streets, has two inner courts, plenty of light and fresh air, two good staircases, and a *superb situation, facing the bridge of St. Angelo, which leads to St. Peter's and the Vatican.* It will be admirably seen by priests and prelates, foreigners and common people, who come and go in throngs along this bridge-thoroughfare. It is our very fit, and will take in Church, depot, schools, medical mission, and even printing-office on the ground-floor and part of the first floor. Upstairs there is a hall for the Biblical college and library, and houses for four professors, three evangelists, five teachers, and a large number of students in the attics. Our two Bible-women, who work in the prisons, hospitals, and abodes of the people, will also find accommodation." The amount paid for this valuable property was about forty thousand dollars—not a large sum, considering its central location and the high price of buildings in Rome.

Rev. Luther H. Gulick, in the Summer of 1874, published in the *Evangelical Christendom*, of London, an interesting article describing the position of the various Protestant agencies in Italy. In North Italy (inclusive of Piedmont, the kingdom of Sardinia, and Liguria) there were, according to his report, twenty-four Churches of the Brethren, eighteen of the Waldensian, ten each of the Free Italian and Wesleyan Methodist bodies, two of American Baptist, and one each of the English Baptist and Methodist Episcopal denominations, making a total of sixty-six. In Central Italy (Emilia, Tuscany, the Marches, Umbria, and Comarca) there were thirteen of the Free



Italian, eight each of the Waldensian and the Brethren, seven of the American Methodist Episcopal, five of the Wesleyan Methodist, five of the American Baptist, and one of the English Baptist, making a total of forty-seven. In South Italy (the Neapolitan provinces and Sicily) there were twelve Wesleyan Methodist and ten Waldensian Churches, a total of twenty-three.

A closer examination of the field showed that one-half of the thirty-six Waldensian mission Churches were in North Italy, in the valley of the Po. In the same region two-thirds of the thirty-two Churches of the Brethren, and more than a third of twenty-seven Churches of the Wesleyan Methodists, were located. More than one-half of the Churches of the Free Italian, and all those of the American Methodist Episcopal denomination, with the exception of one in Venetia, were in Central Italy. Five of the eight American Baptist Churches were also in this part of the Peninsula. In South Italy the Waldensians and the Wesleyan Methodists of England, with the exception of one American Baptist Church at Bari, were the only workers in the field. It appears, therefore, that in 1874 Protestant services were held at one hundred and thirty-six stations and twenty-three out-stations in Italy. While fifty-six of these stations, occupied by the denominations already mentioned, were established in twenty-one communities, causing thereby clashing and competition, yet ten of the cities had a population of about one hundred thousand or over, three about two hundred thousand, and another, Naples, over four hundred thousand. Making the necessary deduction of thirty-five stations and out-stations that did not represent unoccupied places, there were still one hundred and twenty-four cities and villages where the Gospel was regularly preached. At least seven different denominations were at work in Rome, six in Milan, five in Florence and Bologna, three in Turin, and two in fifteen other cities. The Waldenses reported thirty-six pastors and evangelists; the Free Italian Church, twenty-six; the Wesleyan Methodist, twenty-four; the American Methodist Episcopal, eleven, and the American Baptist, seven,—making a total of one hundred and four. And by estimating one each for the thirty-two Churches of the Brethren the entire clerical Protestant *corps* amounted at that time to one hundred and thirty-four active men, or, on an average, one laborer for each station. In this description of Protestant missions the sixteen mother Churches of the Waldensian faith in the Piedmont “Valleys” and Turin have not been included, and only approximate figures were given to indicate the strength of the

Brethren, who are opposed, on principle, to statistics and reports in religious work.

While this body of earnest men devised the best methods to advance the true religion, the Romish Church resorted to various means to counteract these evangelical movements. The more intelligent and zealous members, and particularly the Jesuitical leaders, were conscious of the waning power of their cause, and endeavored to arrest the process of decay by infusing life, warmth, and activity into it. The prominent Roman Catholics of Italy, therefore, assembled in a "congress" at Venice, to consider what measures should be adopted. At the opening meeting, on the 12th of June, 1874, addresses were delivered by Cardinal Trevisanato, patriarch of Venice, Dr. John Baptist Acquiderni, and Duke Salviati, the president of the congress. The sessions were held in the Madonna dell'Orto, a very remote church, whose doors were carefully closed against every one who did not enjoy the confidence of the leaders, or, in other words, was not known to be a genuine clerical. The subjects to be considered were divided into four or five sections, and assigned to appropriate committees or commissions, who were to do their work at very secret meetings in the house of Dr. Castagna, and make their reports to the congress at its so-called public sessions. The reports of the various committees were adopted at these general meetings, after very little discussion, and with the slightest, if any, amendment—the latter being treated as rather out of order. Among the important subjects before the congress were, Religious Works, or Orders, Associations, Works of Charity, Education, and the Press. Action was taken in favor of establishing more branches of religious orders, and especially those of the "Sons" and the "Daughters of Mary," among students and youths belonging to the more wealthy classes of society, also in favor of employing more efficient means to promote pilgrimages to the Holy Land and various noted shrines in Italy.

The congress passed resolutions urging the more general and strict observance of the Church holidays, the more regular and productive contribution of "Peter's pence," the more liberal support of impoverished ecclesiastics, the finer ornamentation of their plainer churches, and the greater enlargement of their processions, especially that of *Corpus Domini*. The assembly earnestly recommended the establishment of a Roman Catholic university, and the organization of academies, seminaries, and colleges as preparatory schools. Resolutions were also adopted, strongly urging the laity to give a more

liberal and generous support to the clerical journals already existing, and favoring the publication of other religious papers for gratuitous distribution among the laboring classes and the poor. A special commission was appointed to prepare an address of congratulation and pledged fidelity to the pope, to be presented to him on the 21st of June, the twenty-eighth anniversary of his coronation. The congress adjourned on the 16th of June, to meet again in Florence in September, 1875.

At the close of 1874 Rev. L. M. Vernon, D. D., the superintendent of the Methodist Episcopal missions in Italy, made an encouraging report of the work under his care, saying: "From the vine-clad mountains and plains of Italy come grapes of a spiritual Eshcol. Laborious planting, watering, and pruning has been the work of the year, and God has given the increase. . . . In the stations already established our cause has become more firmly rooted, and in most cases encouraging progress has been made. Our mission has made its way to recognition as an institution of the country, and has acquired a consideration and influence not to be despised. Some are looking to it for consolation, for instruction as a spiritual home. Still others see in it a field of useful labor, more congenial and promising than they find elsewhere. Thus we are called both of the people and of providence to bravely maintain and prosecute our apostolate amid the tottering temples and waning ranks of the Roman apostasy."

At Brescello, a town on the banks of the Po, near Parma, a room was secured and religious services commenced by the missionary, B. Malan. But this movement alarmed the priests and the faithful, and they presented an address, numerously signed, to the syndic, or the mayor, asking him to forbid the entrance of the Protestants, and the erection of a "pulpit of pestilence." The official was willing, but the law restrained him. The populace became excited, called the proprietor of the hall hard names, threatened to mob him, to burn the house and the preacher, and to club all who attended the meetings. Despite the bitter opposition tracts and Bibles were distributed, many heard the Gospel, and a few were actually converted. The congregations were not large, but earnest. The missionary at Ravenna, D. Lantaret, reported a few hopeful believers in that place, and some hearers of the Word in Bagnacavallo and Lugo. At Faenza, a city of twenty-five thousand inhabitants, on the railroad between Bologna and Ancona, Dr. Vernon rented and repaired a small church, disused since the time of Napoleon I, who suppressed



it. The inhabitants were very bigoted and intolerant, but the government cheerfully protected the missionary, B. Godino. The latter also preached at Imola and Castle Bolognese, places not far distant.

In the early part of 1874 Julius C. Mill opened two preaching stations in the large and beautiful city of Milan. The first is in the *Via Pasquirolo*, in the center of the city, near the famous cathedral, and the second in the *Via Porta Ticinese*, a densely thronged thoroughfare, and near one of the city gates. The congregations were small, but composed of a good class of people. Mr. Mill, the earnest and laborious evangelist, was encouraged by various omens of good. Some interesting conversions occurred at Bologna, under the ministry of Enrico Borelli, "a man of years, of rich attainments, and a very instructive preacher." Among the converts was a major, who battled with Garibaldi through *all* his campaigns, and who, after a life of incredulity, became a devout Christian at sixty years of age. Another, of nearly seventy years, a doctor of laws, and well related, gave himself to God, and faithfully attended the Protestant services. Several entire families were received into the Church. In the suburbs of Florence, at *Le Cure*, the preacher, Signor Antonio Arrighi, proclaimed the Gospel to a fair audience; but, at the instigation of the priests, he was mobbed, and his service on one occasion broken up, with damage to the house and furniture. The next day six of the rioters went to jail, and he went on his way rejoicing. Mr. Arrighi formed a hopeful society of about thirty-five members, and, after the disturbance, selected a much better place of worship for them. Leaving them to the pastoral care of Signor Bassanelli, he obtained a suitable room in the *Via Giglio*, in the very heart of Florence, and, remote from all other evangelical congregations, inaugurated a new and separate movement. Dr. Vernon reported that Mr. Arrighi had "rapidly recovered his native tongue, and preaches with much spirit and fluency."

More than one hundred probationers were enrolled, and forty received into full membership in the Church of the Roman Forum at Rome, of which Teofilo Gay is pastor. The Military Church, to which Luigi Capellini and O. Ottonelli ministered, continued to prosper. Services were held daily in two different places, and more than a hundred soldiers listened to the preaching of the Gospel. Many of these young men were converted and a large number led to study the Bible. Two noble-looking members of the royal guard, who stand nearest to the king's person and at the doors of the royal palace, belonged to the Church. "Thus again," says Dr. Vernon,

"among the Roman Christians that salute 'Philippians,' Americans, and the Christian world, are chiefly they that are of 'Cæsar's household!" Efforts were made to find an eligible position for a preaching station in the vicinity of Piazza Trevi, a central and famous spot in the Eternal City. Dr. Alceste Lanna, the missionary, had been "Professor of Philosophy" in the *Vatican Seminary*, but renounced Romanism and became a "genuine, pronounced, and intelligent evangelical Christian." The evangelist, A. Guigon, who labored at Forlì and at Dovadola, eleven miles distant, was favored with some indications of prosperity.

During most of the year an industrious and faithful colporteur distributed Bibles and tracts in the Romagna and at the stations of Forlì, Ravenna, and Faenza. Another pious young man devoted himself to this work among the soldiers in Rome, in co-operation with the soldiers' Church. In August a small but able volume, written by Mr. Borelli, the pastor at Bologna, was published by Dr. Vernon. It was entitled "The Altar and the Throne (*L'Altare ed il Trono*): or, the Two Powers combined against the Liberty of Thought and Belief." Books, pamphlets, papers, and tracts were sold at a very low price, and when persons were not able to purchase them, donations were made. Four promising students prepared themselves for the ministry, three of whom attended the Waldensian Theological Seminary in Florence, at the same time aiding, as far as practicable, the Methodist missions there. One of these young men from the seminary was assigned to a station.

The "annual meeting" of all the laborers of the various stations was held on the 10th of September, 1874, at Bologna, under the presidency of Bishop Harris, with the Rev. Teofilo Gay as secretary. The Christian cordiality, frankness, and wise counsels of the bishop gave consolation to the brethren, and a new strength and impulse to the mission. Nine of the preachers had been recommended and received on trial in the Germany and Switzerland Conference at Schaffhausen, on the 2d of July, and two of these, Signor E. Borelli and Signor L. Capellini, there duly elected to deacon's and elder's orders under the missionary rule, were ordained by Bishop Harris at Bologna. Dr. Vernon describes the meeting as "an occasion of peculiar interest," and, in reviewing the year's work, said: "We now preach the Gospel regularly every week in *fourteen* different places; our working force consists of *twelve* Italian preachers, *five* of whom are ordained, *four* students, *one* colporteur, and the superintendent. Our members and probationers aggregate about *six hundred*. These

are trophies of grace, sheaves of God's own gathering; and by these first fruits we are stimulated to look forward by faith to the day when the entire whitening field will come bending to the sickles of eager reapers, and the whole harvest shall be shouted home to the garner of God."

The history of Protestant mission work in Rome would be incomplete without at least a brief sketch of the labors of Mrs. Emily B. Gould, a devoted American lady. Her husband, James B. Gould, M. D., had located in that city to practice among the American and other foreign residents. While he was engrossed with the duties of his profession, she ministered to the spiritual wants of the population, whose ignorance and degradation aroused her sympathies. This noble Christian woman soon discovered that Rome under the popes was as intolerant as Rome under the emperors. Every Protestant was closely observed and heretical teaching prohibited. Dr. Gould and his wife were frequently visited by the police, who not only searched their residence, but even brought them before the municipal authorities. Hence their efforts in behalf of the Roman people or their children were necessarily made secretly.

At this time the attention of Mrs. Gould was directed to Florence, and she soon commenced her work of teaching there. To use her own beautiful illustration, she cast her bread upon the waters of the Arno, hoping after many days to find it upon the Tiber. This desire was realized when Victor Emmanuel entered Rome and she was permitted to gather her school of girls in that city. Her first school, established in 1871, soon numbered one hundred and thirty scholars, who were taught the elements of arithmetic, natural philosophy, and history, and received daily instruction in the Bible. She introduced the *Kindergarten*, to the delight of the Italians, and while endeavoring to impart a thorough education in the day-school she sought to lead the children to Christ. The quarters where she first established her school being too small and unhealthy, she was compelled to seek better accommodations in another part of the city. In the Fall of 1872 she opened a new school in *Palazzo del Governo Vecchio*.

Mrs. Gould had considerable trouble before she obtained suitable rooms, being opposed by a secret society composed of all classes of men, women, and monks called the "Society for the Promotion of Catholic Interests," whose vigilant agents intimidated the landlords or paid higher rents. The Jesuits circulated the most outrageous slanders against her, which the Romish papers published



and countenanced ; but she compelled these papers, on penalty of suit, to insert in their columns her refutation. While opposed by these enemies, she received encouragement from many prominent Italians, who admired her benevolent work. The duke of Sermonetta, who was then second only to the king in rank, was one of her subscribers and earnest supporters. The minister of public instruction called on her to express his approbation of her course, and the Princess Margareta, wife of the crown prince, invited Mrs. Gould to visit her. The Roman municipality also subscribed to her school. Thus sustained by warm friends, including some liberal Roman Catholics, this brave and humane American woman prosecuted her noble work. Her labors and self-denial were remarkable, for, though in feeble health, she was in the schools every day, exhibiting the most indomitable energy and perseverance. But, in the Summer of 1875, she retired to the city of Perugia, among the Apennines, to avoid the debilitating atmosphere of Rome and to recruit her strength. It was too late, however, and on the 31st of August she passed away from earth to receive the rewards of a consecrated life.

---

### Eighth Decade, Continued, 1870-1880.

---

## CHAPTER XXXII.

### RELIGIOUS PROCESSIONS PROHIBITED—AMERICAN METHODIST MISSIONS.

ON the 18th of May, 1876, an interesting service was held in the city of Naples, in connection with the opening of a new chapel under the auspices of the Free Italian Church. The *locale* is in the Via dei Tribunali, one of the most central streets, and the building is one of the renowned palaces. Signor Ragghianti, pastor of the Wesleyan Methodist Church, Signor Ravi, of the Methodist Episcopal, and Signor Peter, of the French, were present, and the two former took part in the inaugural exercises. The address of Signor Ragghianti was published in *Il Piccolo Messaggiere* of the 25th of June, and its delivery is said to have made a deep and most favorable impression upon the audience. The speaker showed his fraternal spirit in "the kind and sympathetic words with reference to the

'Free Church,' which, he declared, now contains all that is necessary to develop into a free state." The services demonstrated in a practical and incontrovertible manner the unity of all true believers, and greatly promoted the interests of the Protestant cause in Naples. The pastor of the new Church was Signor F. Lagomarsino. He found a difficult field to cultivate, the populace being excitable, and under priestly control. When he heard that an attempt would probably be made to create disturbance in the neighborhood of the church, he informed the city authorities, who sent a sufficient number of guards to assure quiet. The same number of the *Messaggere*, already mentioned, contains an item which shows that the Italian government is determined to deal honorably and impartially with Protestants, and make religious liberty something more than a dead letter. In Verona a Protestant patient in the hospital was annoyed by nuns and priests, who sought to convert her to the Romish faith, almost by violent means. The Waldensian pastor had no sooner called attention to the matter in the public journals than the wrong was promptly redressed by the director of the institution.

The Italian government having issued a circular prohibiting all religious processions outside of the precincts of the churches, the Cardinal Vicar Patrizi published a notice, in which, after reciting the vain efforts of the ecclesiastical authorities to obtain the repeal of "these orders, infringing on their rights in the administration of sacred affairs," he enjoins on all the faithful, from that very day—the 17th of August, 1876—"to flock in greater numbers to accompany Jesus in the sacrament (*Gesu sacramentato*) when he is carried to the sick, thus demonstrating that faith is not at all diminished in the heart of the faithful." The Italian ministry excepted from the prohibition the carrying of the *Viaticum*, or the Host, when taken to the sick and dying, merely stipulating that it should be without sound of bell. The papal curia prudently submitted to the unwelcome mandate of the civil power, not daring to resist. These processions, previous to their suppression, had been employed for a distinct political purpose, and were annoying to Protestants, who, when passing the elevated cross, or Host, were required to show marks of respect to it.

In the Autumn of 1876 a committee of Roman ladies, among whom were the representatives of such noble families as Orsini, Altieri, and Massimo, issued a circular inviting the faithful throughout the world to celebrate the pope's "Golden Jubilee," or the fiftieth anniversary of his coronation as bishop, which would occur in the fol-

lowing year. Gifts of all kinds were solicited, and when received were to be on exhibition at the Vatican, while the papers containing the names of the donors were to be collected from all parts of the world and preserved in an illuminated album, nation by nation. Such was the proposition of the "elect ladies," who urged the attendance of large delegations from every country, "to flock to the feet of the great pontiff, Pius IX," and convey to him the respect of the whole Roman Catholic population of the globe. The following sentence in the "Circular of the Roman Committee" reveals the spirit of real man-worship which animated the authors: "Divine Providence seems to have averted the inexorable hand of Time from that *precious life which in this stormy era is, indeed, the beacon of salvation to the whole Catholic world.*"

Considerable excitement prevailed in Italy concerning the election of the clergy by the people. The liberal party favored the idea, and of course the papal party denounced it. In the few parishes where the laity selected their own *curés* the prelates resorted to legal measures to invalidate the elections and to eject the popular ecclesiastics. While the courts of law sustained the action of the people, the Italian government did not definitely accept the principle, but temporized with the religious question, disliking to stir up the papal curia and incur its deadly hatred by more decided and radical measures. The people, less influenced by motives of policy, formed a society in 1876 for the express purpose of agitating the propriety of electing not only the inferior clergy, but even the bishops and the pope himself, by popular vote. This association called itself the "Italian Catholic Society for the Revindication of the Rights of the Christian People." As might be expected, major excommunication was pronounced against all the members, adherents, and promoters of this organization. One of the royal ministers declared over his own signature that, the Italian Chambers having failed to pass the reformatory measures he had proposed to them, nothing remained but to create a sound public opinion.

The death of Cardinal Giacomo Antonelli, which occurred on the 6th of November, 1876, was greatly lamented by the Roman Catholic Church, in whose public service he had spent thirty years. His career marked a very distinct period in the history of the papacy, when the vexed question of the temporal power disturbed all the countries of Europe. As a diplomatist he had few equals; and, no doubt, it was his remarkable tact that prolonged the French occupation of Rome, and prevented Victor Emmanuel for many years from



making that city the capital of Italy. Antonelli understood the art of managing men and solving intricate political problems; and the direction he gave to the papal administration will long continue to be felt. The results of his statesmanship were discussed twenty years ago by M. About, the clever French author, in his "Roman Question." "A statesman," he observed, "should not be judged on the deposition of his enemies. The only proofs we should admit against him are his public acts; the only witnesses to be heard are the greatness and prosperity of the country he governs. But it is to be feared that such an inquest would be overwhelming to Antonelli. The nation reproaches him with all the evils which it has suffered for ten years. The public poverty and ignorance, the decline of all the arts, the violation of all rights, the oppression of all liberties, and the permanent scourge of foreign occupation fall on his head, since he alone is responsible for all. Has he, at least, served usefully the reactionists? I doubt it. What factions has he suppressed in the interior? It is under his reign that secret societies have multiplied in Rome. What complaints has he silenced without? Europe complains unanimously, and daily lifts her voice higher. He has not reconciled to the Holy Father one party or one power. In ten years of dictatorship he has gained neither the esteem of the foreigner nor the confidence of the Roman; he has gained time—and nothing more."

Towards the close of 1876 the Protestant cause in Naples was strengthened by the accession of several influential persons to the Wesleyan Methodist Church. Signor Delisa, after having for some time listened to the preaching of the Gospel, became a convert to the true faith. His wife, a Jewess, and their family then began to attend Protestant services. The reading of the Bible, under the gracious influences of the Holy Spirit, convinced her that Christ was the Messiah, and she soon desired to be baptized in his name. The ceremony, which was witnessed by members of both the Italian and English congregations, was solemn and impressive. The conversion of Signor Garcia, a stock-broker, also caused great excitement in Roman Catholic circles. He was prominent at the Borsa, or "on change," and was a thorough typical Neapolitan of the old school. All his relations were intimately connected with the papal Church and priesthood, one of his brothers being a priest of the curia of the archbishopric of Naples. A constant attendant on the Mass, regular in his practice of confession, no one was more scrupulously devoted to the saints and angels and Madonna. One of his children brought

home a copy of Diodati's translation of the Bible, which he beheld with horror; but, having been induced to examine it, he became interested in its teachings, and felt anxious about his soul's salvation. At length he visited the Wesleyan church, and was converted while listening to the sermon. He was at once received as a catechumen, and became a faithful follower of Christ. A storm of rage and persecution immediately fell upon him and his family, and the priests employed every means to win him back, but in vain. Another convert was Signor Tagliateta, a man of intellectual power, and the author of a work on the "Philosophy of Christianity." Though ordained to the priesthood, he could not accept the absurdities of Romanism, but finally withdrew from its ranks, sustaining himself by giving lectures on philosophy.

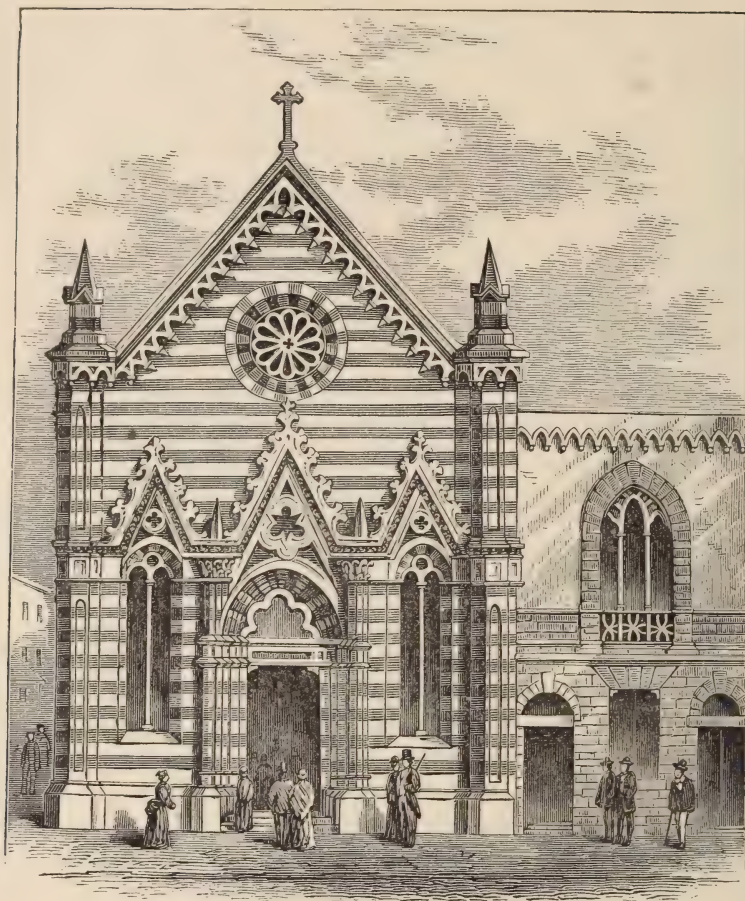
The power of the Gospel was manifested not only in the marked conversion of these distinguished persons, but also in the triumphant death of others, less prominent, though equally devoted. Among the latter was an aged saint, who had been led to Christ in a strange manner. His son, a house-painter, came to Naples several years previous to obtain work, and in a short time received from one of the evangelists a copy of the New Testament. After attending the Wesleyan church several weeks he professed faith in Christ and united with his people. The news of his apostasy soon reached his native place, Palma di Campania, and his family was overwhelmed with distress. The father of the young man hastened to Naples, to save, if possible, the wanderer; but entreaties and commands did not move him. To the astonishment of the father, the son appeared to be more religious than formerly, and this fact impressed him so deeply that he resolved to attend a Protestant meeting, where he heard with wonder a sermon telling of salvation through faith in Christ. He embraced the truth, experienced its power during the remainder of his life, and testified to its comforting influence in the dying hour.

Rev. L. M. Vernon, D. D., the superintendent of the Italian mission of the Methodist Episcopal Church, reported that during 1876 God had given the work under his care "general prosperity, with some achievements outstripping the ordinary laws of development." The fruit of the Military Church at Rome was seen in Grottote, a Neapolitan town of four thousand inhabitants. A converted soldier returned home, commenced to talk of Christ and his salvation, and scattered books and tracts among his neighbors. Though a humble shoemaker, God made his testimony a blessing to

others, and the result was a considerable number of conversions, and the formation of a Methodist society. The outlook at Terni was very promising. This enterprising city of thirty thousand inhabitants is near what Byron and many others call "the most beautiful waterfall in Europe," and in height surpassing Niagara. It is three hours by rail from Rome, and has large government manufactories. From three to five thousand soldiers were kept in this thrifty, growing city, and thither Dr. Vernon moved a class from a less hopeful place. To these few converts from abroad others were added. Perugia, a provincial capital of forty thousand inhabitants, midway between Florence and Rome, responded nobly to the labors of Dr. Caporali. There were many conversions and accessions, among them the most learned professor of the university, once himself the secretary of the cardinal president of the noted Roman missionary college—*Propaganda Fide*. "Perugino," wrote Dr. Vernon, "made the city famous for all time in art; may Caporali, under God, give it a more lasting immortality for faith and righteousness."

During the year religious services were inaugurated in Venice, "the Queen of the Adriatic," then containing a population of one hundred and thirty-five thousand souls. Next to Rome, no place in Italy is of more interest to an American than this gem of the sea. Its brilliant republican history thrills every patriotic heart; and its brave defense of the Reformation in the sixteenth century, and the names of its illustrious martyrs, will never be forgotten. The evangelist, Signor Francesco Cardin, opened a place for preaching near the Rialto bridge, in the midst of a dense population, and by his courage and abounding zeal accomplished much good. At the beginning of the year Signor Vincenzo Ravi went to Naples and preached in "his own hired house." In February a small theater in the center of this metropolis of seven hundred thousand inhabitants was rented and used for public worship. At the close of the year the pastor, "an impetuous, indefatigable worker, and a fruitful preacher," reported the organization of a society which embraced some persons of considerable intelligence and culture, and a few who were in comfortable circumstances. Besides caring for their poor, the members contributed to the payment of current expenses, a rare thing in Italy. On Christmas fifty were received into full connection with the Military Church at Rome; and the congregation at St. Paul's, in *Via Poli*, also manifested a steady growth. The death of Orismane Ottonelli occurred in September, and his brethren mourned his untimely departure. This young man was "talented,





ST. PAUL'S METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH, ROME.

fluent, studious, affable, and spiritual," and his death was "an open triumph, a joyful surrender of the cross for the crown." According to Dr. Vernon's annual report, all the stations enjoyed more or less prosperity. "The way," he declared, "brightens before us. New, hopeful fields invite us; favorable occasions offer; propitious opportunities recur; effective laborers appeal for enrollment under our banner; and our own courage and faith falter not. But we inherit Paul's bonds—changed, indeed, but potent in restraint. . . . Our Italian brethren have made another year of history, have confronted trials, gainsayings, persecutions, and perils."

## Eighth Decade, Continued, 1870-1880.

## CHAPTER XXXIII.

*VARIOUS EVANGELICAL MISSIONS—THE DECEASED KING AND POPE—CLOSING EVENTS OF THE DECADE.*

FROM the beginning of 1877 to the present time the various evangelical agencies in Italy have been making some progress, though the statistics do not indicate any marked results. It is impossible to tabulate the diffusive influence of the leaven of the Gospel; but there are other striking evidences of the power of the reform movement among the Italians. On the 5th of October, 1877, the report of the "Waldensian Church Missions" was issued at Genoa by the president, Signor Matteo Prochet. The latter was born on the 27th of September, 1836, at S. Giovanni-Pellice, and in his youth attended the college of Torre-Pellice. He served a year in the army during the war of 1859, and in 1861 completed his studies in Florence. After remaining a session in the Presbyterian College of Belfast, he was ordained in 1862, and settled as an evangelist in Lucca. In 1864 he went to Pisa, and in 1866 to Genoa, where he labored until 1869, when the Waldensian synod elected him a member of the board of evangelization. In 1871 he became president of it, and has occupied the responsible position for eight years. During this period Signor Prochet represented the Waldensian Church before the prominent ecclesiastical bodies of England, Scotland, Ireland, France, and the United States. He visited the latter country in 1873, and was the only Italian representative at the meeting of the Evangelical Alliance in New York.

According to the report for 1877, the Waldenses had stations at Courmayeur, Aosta, Viereng, Ivrea, Transella, Torrazza, Turin, Susa, Coazze, Pinerolo, Pietra Marazzi, Genoa, Oneglia, S. Pier d' Arena, Bordighera, and Favale, in the district of Piedmont and Liguria; Milan, Como, S. Fedele, Brescia, Castiglione, Verona, Venice, Treviso, and Guastalla, in the Lombardo-Venetian district; Florence, Lucca, Pisa, Leghorn, Portoferraio, and Rio Marina, in the district of Tuscany; Rome, Ancona, Naples, Lecce, and Reggio-Calabria, in the district of Rome and Naples; and Messina, Catania, Syracuse, Modica, Licata, Trabia, Palermo, and Trapani, in the district of Sicily.

In connection with these points religious services were held in numerous villages; and at Nice and Marseilles, in France, evangelists ministered to large congregations of Waldenses. At the "Annual Synod," which met in Torre-Pellice, in the beginning of September, 1877, encouraging news was received from the various stations. Forty-five ministers were present, and after the ordination of six candidates to the ministry, eloquent addresses were delivered by fifteen deputies of foreign Churches.

The report of the Free Italian Church for 1877 is an interesting statement of facts concerning the labors of earnest workers in Albano, Bari, Bassignana, Belluno, Bergamo, Bologna, Brescia, Castellamare, Desenzano, Edolo, Fara-Novarese, Florence, Grumo-Appula, Leghorn, Livorno-Vercellese, Milan, Mottola, Naples, Pietra Ligure, Pietrasanta, Pisa, Ghezzano, Pistoia, Poggio Mirteto, Prato, Rocca Imperiale, Rome, San Giovanni Pellice, Savona, Sondrio, Taranto, Treviglio, Treviso, Turin, Udine, and Verona. Rev. John R. M'Dougall, M. A., of the Scotch Church in Florence, who for many years has been the "treasurer and foreign secretary" of the Free Italian Church, issued his annual address to the friends of the evangelical cause in Italy, and gave the following statistical table: "10 ordained ministers, 12 evangelists, 39 elders, 55 deacons, 16 deaconesses, 1,649 communicants, 203 catechumens, 606 Sabbath-school children, 1,203 pupils in our day and night schools, 20 teachers in the day-schools, 1,450 regular hearers of the Gospel, 1,840 additional occasional hearers, 34 churches, large and small, and 32 out-stations, more or less frequently visited. The contributions of the Churches last year, for evangelization alone, amounted to francs 1,295.40, while for all objects the sum collected was francs 8,346.36."

The eighth general assembly of the Free Church was held in Florence, commencing on Tuesday, the 18th of December, 1877. Signor Gavazzi preached the opening sermon from 2 Corinthians iii, 17, "Where the spirit of the Lord is there is liberty," indicating eloquently the three kinds of liberty where there is not the "spirit of the Lord," and the three in which there is. Under the former head were the liberty of nihilism, brutism, and anarchy; and under the latter, the liberty of soul, ministry, and Church. Thirty-one deputies were present, many of whom narrated the progress of the good work in their districts. Signor de Michelis presided, Signor Jahier was vice-president, and Signori Beria and Mariani were secretaries. Signor Gavazzi spoke of the kind reception he met with in Great Britain and Ireland, when on the committee to collect funds



in those countries. Professor Henderson, of Scotland, who had recently resumed college work in Rome with eight students, addressed the assembly in correct and fluent Italian. An interesting speech was also delivered by Rev. Donald Fraser, D. D., of London, one of the three deputies to Italy from the Evangelical Alliance. The fraternal spirit of the assembly was indicated by the unanimous adoption of Signor Conti's proposal to establish an inter-missionary committee.

The visit of the "Evangelical Alliance Committee" in November and December was beneficial to the Protestant cause in Italy. The deputies, Dr. Fraser, Rev. William Arthur, M. A., and Mr. Bligh, made a thorough tour of the country, conversing with evangelists, and holding missionary conferences in Florence and Rome. They succeeded in harmonizing discordant elements and uniting the various Protestant forces more closely in sympathy and effort, thus rendering them more efficient. Mr. Arthur possessed eminent qualifications for the work assigned him, being one of the most prominent ministers of the English Wesleyan Church, and the author of "Italy in Transition" and other popular books. This able deputation published a full report of the condition of the Protestant congregations in the principal cities and towns.

On the 18th of November Signor Gavazzi celebrated the fiftieth anniversary of his entrance into the sacred ministry. The event occurred on the third Sabbath of the month, and was an occasion of deep interest. There was a great concourse of people, as usual, to hear him, and the chapel could hardly accommodate them. In the opening prayer, alluding to the anniversary, Gavazzi used these words: "I thank thee, my God, for having brought me back to Rome on this occasion! Fifty years ago I began here my career, a blind instrument of error, in a papist Rome. I rejoice that I can close it a free worker of the Free Italian Church in a free Rome!"

The American Methodist Mission in Italy exhibited evidences of growth during 1877. The "Military Church" in Rome was placed under the supervision of the English Wesleyans, because, having a more commodious building, they could conduct it more cheaply and efficiently. Dr. Vernon reported the organization of a promising station in the beautiful Tuscan town of Arezzo, and the selection of a more central and desirable place of worship in Venice. The annual meeting, on the 11th of March, under the superintendency of Bishop Andrews, was interesting and profitable, infusing new life into the noble band of workers. The following appointments were

made: *Rome*, Teofilo Gay, Alceste Lanna; *Naples* and *Soccavo*, Vincenzo Ravi; *Narni*, Crisanzio Bambini; *Terni*, Daniele Gay; *Perugia*, Enrico Caporali; *Arezzo*, Giovanni Gattuso; *Florence*, Antonio Arrighi, Eduardo Stasio; *Bologna* and *Modena*, Enrico Borelli; *Milan*, Julius C. Mill, Silvio Stazi; *Venice*, Francesco Cardin; *Forlì* and *Dovadola*, Amedeo Guigon. The three Bible-women, Amalia Conversi, Adele Gay, and Carolina Cardin, were selected to labor respectively in Rome, Terni, and Venice.

The *status* of the Roman See in its relations with modern civilization was indicated by certain events in 1877. On the 25th of January solemn services were held in the city of Rome in honor of Gregory VII, the hero of Canossa, and to commemorate, on the eight hundredth anniversary, his cruel treatment of Henry IV. Pius IX issued an allocution on the 12th of March, in which he threatened to call in the temporal assistance of such powers as could be induced to come to the rescue of the papacy, as against the kingdom of Victor Emmanuel. To give effect to the anniversary and the allocution at least seventeen thousand foreign pilgrims visited the "Eternal City" during the papal jubilee, and replenished the pontifical treasury with large sums of money. In July the pope issued a solemn decree conferring upon St. Francis de Sales the exalted rank of an "Œcumenical Doctor," and thus placing his teachings on a level with those of Athanasius, Basil, Chrysostom, and Augustine.

On the 9th of January, 1878, Victor Emmanuel, after a short illness, passed away from earth. In the morning he had been visited by Prince Humbert and the Princess Margherita, who held a long and affectionate conversation with him. The king received the sacrament from the hands of the Rev. Cavaliere Anzino, his private chaplain; but, though he did not send to the Vatican for a priest, Pius IX sent Monsignore Canni, his "domestic prelate," and Monsignore F. Marinelli, "Sacristan of the Apostolic Palaces," to absolve the dying monarch. It is said that the Holy Father declared that but for his infirmity he would have gone himself to render the last services of religion to the stricken king. The latter was not asked to retract any thing; but he volunteered the statement that he died a good Catholic, having endeavored conscientiously to discharge his duty. The final interview between him and the prince and princess was deeply affecting. Taking his son by the hand, Victor Emmanuel looked fondly at him, pronounced one word, "*Addio*," and followed him with his eyes as he went out crying bitterly. Shortly after the last agony commenced; and when the king

expired, at half past two o'clock in the afternoon, the Marquis Cocconito, Count Panissera, and Cavaliere Ansaldo were at his bedside. He died quietly, and in the full possession of his senses.

The news of his death spread rapidly over the whole city, and caused universal sadness. Every shop was closed, and insignia of mourning every-where appeared. The ministers assembled in a council of state at the Quirinal, and the minister of the interior issued a circular to the prefects throughout the kingdom, announcing the death of Victor Emmanuel, and stating that his majesty, King Humbert, having ascended the throne under the title of King Humbert IV, had confirmed the existing ministry in their posts. The new ruler issued an address to the nation, declaring his intention to "imitate his father's devotion to the country." While the body of the dead monarch lay in royal state the clergy uttered prayers for the repose of his soul, and extensive preparations for his burial were made. It was claimed by some that he should be interred in the old sepulchral vaults in the monastery church of La Superga, near Turin, where reposes the dust of many generations of the dukes and kings of the house of Savoy; but the Romans contended that the magnificent Pantheon was the most appropriate spot for the remains of the dead prince to occupy, because he was the first king of Italy and the founder of his line. The decision was finally reached that he should be buried in Rome.

The funeral convoy proceeded from the Quirinal through the various streets to the Pantheon, not less than one hundred and fifty thousand strangers and thirty thousand troops of all arms being present along the whole route. The sky was overcast and the weather damp and chilly, but there was no rain. The city was all hung with mourning-flags and draperies, and the procession, which occupied two hours in passing, moved through the streets in an imposing manner. The king's war-horse was in mourning trappings, and the iron crown of Italy from Monza Cathedral was borne on a velvet cushion. The Pantheon was ornamented with stately elegance inside and out. In the center, under the skylights, roofed with glass and iron, was the grand scaffold, with twenty-four candelabra and burning tapers on four great altars, and four colossal lions made from as many cannon trophies presented by the Duc Rochefoucault to the pope. The booming of the minute guns mingled with the lofty and impressive strains of a newly composed funeral march, altogether constituting a ceremony of more than usual solemnity.

Thus closed the remarkable career of a representative of the old-



est reigning family of Europe. One hundred and fifty-nine years ago, or on the 24th of August, A. D. 1720, Victor Amadeus II, duke of Savoy, having exchanged the sovereignty of the island of Sicily for that of Sardinia, assumed for the first time the title of "King of Sardinia." But even down to 1859 the slender extent of the Sardinian kingdom is indicated by the fact that its entire area, insular and continental, was only twenty-nine thousand two hundred and eighty-three square miles, or about two-thirds of the area of the state of New York, with a population not over five and a quarter millions of souls. Victor Emmanuel II was born on the 14th of March, 1820, and at an early age received a scientific and military education. In his twenty-second year he married the Archduchess Adelaide, of the house of Austria, and entered public life with the eventful campaign of 1848. In the battle of Goito he was wounded; and on the evening of the last battle of Novara he became king, through the abdication of his despairing father, Charles Albert of Sardinia. He was immediately involved in the most embarrassing relations. The people doubted him on account of his marriage with an Austrian princess; the monarchical states around him were suspicious because his family entertained liberal views; and, more than all, he was confronted by a victorious enemy. But, despite these difficulties, he succeeded in elevating the reputation and power of his country. In the campaign of 1859 he and Prince Humbert took part in person, and exhibited great courage. The prominent features of his official life have been given in previous chapters in connection with the history of Cavour; but it may be added that as king and the founder of Italian unity he was one of the most popular monarchs that ever reigned. He was not a man of great genius, but possessed to the highest degree the qualities of a perfect ruler—energy of action and wisdom in selecting men. His dress, diet, and habits of life were characterized by extreme simplicity; but his private life was not entirely free from irregularities. He was idolized by the army, and the title, "*Il Re Galantuomo*" (The Brave King), will ever attach to his illustrious name.

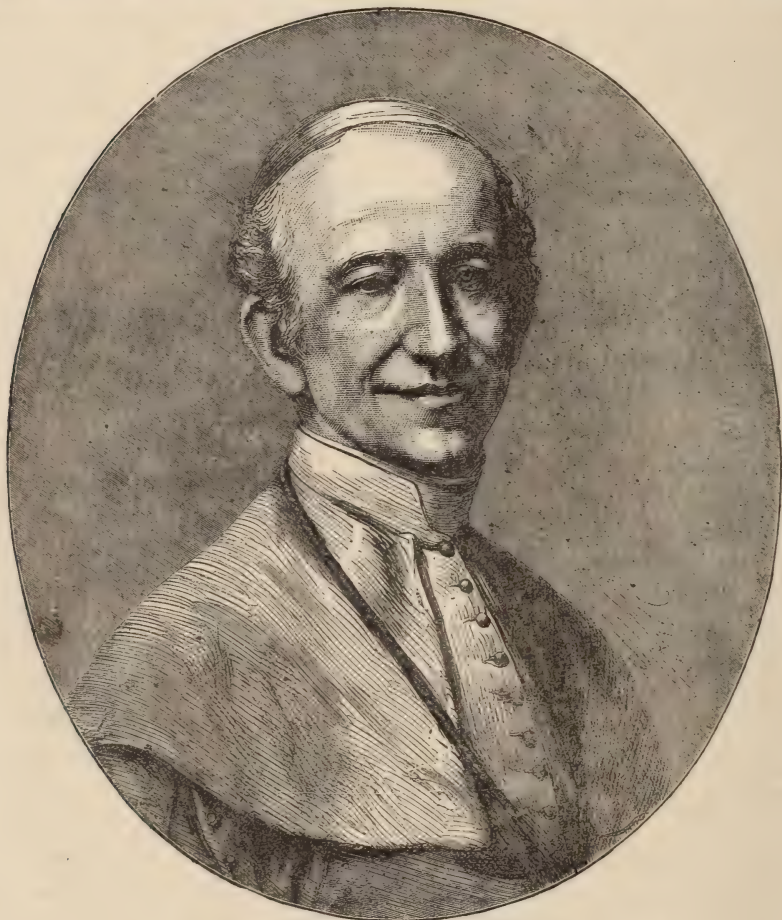
The people of Italy had not recovered from the shock produced by the death of Victor Emmanuel when they were startled by the announcement that Pius IX had ceased to live. At different periods he had been in a critical condition, and the news of his death was momentarily expected, but his remarkable physical constitution rallied and the excitement in Rome subsided. On the 7th of February, 1878, however, the "fatal archer hit the shining mark," and

the papal throne was vacant. Giovanni Maria Mastai Ferretti was born at Sinigaglia, in the Marches, on the 13th of May, 1792, and was therefore nearly fifty-four years of age when elevated to the pontifical chair on the 16th of June, 1846. He reigned almost thirty-two years, the longest administration in the records of the Roman Catholic Church, and also the most disastrous perhaps, not excepting that of Leo X, which witnessed the dawn of the Reformation. During the pontificate of Pius IX every Roman Catholic country made progress in enlightenment, in spite of the opposition of the papacy. The "Concordats," expressly framed to prevent the admission of the Gospel, were abrogated by all the secular potentates, and religious liberty practically tolerated. The entire reign of Pius IX was a bitter struggle against Italian unity and independence, and for the maintenance of the temporal power; but he was permitted to reach an advanced age in order that he might behold the overthrow of the secular papacy and the establishment of Victor Emmanuel's throne in Rome. Calling himself a "prisoner" in the narrow limits of the "Leonine" city, the venerable pontiff spent his last days in denouncing the "Sardinian usurper." While the Vatican palace was truly a delightful abode, yet how could he be happy when from its windows, looking across the "Bridge of St. Angelo," he could behold the humble but efficient Bible-depot, like Mordecai sitting at the king's gate?

The obsequies of Pius IX were celebrated on the 13th of February with the usual pomp and pageantry, and in all the cities of Italy tributes of respect were paid to his memory. As a man he possessed pure morals, noble impulses, and a kind heart; as a pope, controlled by Antonelli and the Jesuits, he fulminated the most tyrannical decrees. The conclave which was to choose his successor assembled in the Sistine Chapel, on Tuesday, the 19th of February, and the customary maneuvering commenced. Cardinals Monaco, Sacconi, and Simeoni intrigued for Billio, a fanatic monk, and editor of the "Syllabus," while Billio himself intrigued for Martinelli, a meek and pious monk, but a nonentity whom Billio had assisted in elevating to the cardinalate. There were several candidates, prominent among whom were Pecci and Franchi, and after taking one morning and one afternoon ballot each day, the conclave elected the former "by adoration." At half-past one o'clock on Wednesday afternoon, February 20th, Cardinal Caterini proclaimed from the outer balcony of St. Peter's the election of Cardinal Pecci, under the title of Leo XIII.

The election of Leo XIII created great enthusiasm among the lib-

eral Roman Catholics of Italy, and was a disappointment to the Jesuits. He was crowned in the Sistine Chapel on the 3d of March; but as the Ultramontanes threatened some disturbance, the services were private. Cardinal Joachim Pecci was born of a noble family, on the 2d of March, 1810, at Carpeneto, Italy, and at an early age gave promise of high qualifications for the ministry of the Church.



LEO XIII.

He was sent as a delegate by Gregory XVI to suppress brigandage in Spoleto and Perugia. Having accomplished his mission he was made archbishop of Perugia, and sent as nuncio to the king of the Belgians, where he became a great favorite. After his return to Rome he would have been made a cardinal, but Antonelli opposed him. Pius IX, however, appointed him *Camerlengo*, which office



controls the papacy between the death of one pontiff and the election of another.

The antecedents and the character of Leo XIII inspired a hope that the conflict between the papacy and the Italian government would cease; and the liberal European press predicted that he would correct the mistakes of Pius IX, and reconcile himself with the modern world. Franchi, the moderate, became cardinal secretary, and Simeoni, the bitter Ultramontane, retired. Among the promising features of the new *régime* were the reception of a deputation and an address in which no reference was made to the Virgin Mary, the direction to the Italian bishops to obtain the royal *exequatur*, and the "Allocution" of the 28th of March, 1878. Leo XIII also sent for Father Curci, a prominent Jesuit, who had been excommunicated because he advised Pius IX to renounce his pretensions to temporal authority. The expectations awakened by these measures were destroyed by the "Encyclical" of the 4th of April, and especially that of the 28th of December, which arraigned the Protestant Reformation as the cause of socialism. While the new pontiff practices the most rigid economy about the Vatican and cultivates his scholarly tastes, yet he has not taken the bold step to build up a spiritual edifice distinct from civil government, a movement which would make him the greatest of all popes.

During the years 1878-79 the various religious bodies in Italy continued to grow in membership and influence. In a letter published in the *Christian World*, of March, 1878, the Rev. S. Irenæus Prime, D. D., the distinguished American editor and friend of Italian evangelization, then at Rome, presents some interesting facts which he observed in Italy, and states that through the several missionary agencies the Gospel was regularly preached by Italian ministers in one hundred and fifty stations. "Since I have been abroad on this visit," he writes, "I have more than ever felt the importance of such an association as the 'American and Foreign Christian Union.'" At the ninth general assembly of the Free Italian Church, in December, 1878, the Rev. Robert Dey and Signor Antonio Arrighi were authorized to obtain aid for the cause abroad, the former in Scotland and the latter in the United States. Mr. Arrighi is a native of Florence, and when twelve years of age was a drummer-boy in Garibaldi's army. He was taken prisoner by the papal troops, but was released in 1855, and came to America. In 1857 he was converted from Romanism, and at the solicitation of the Rev. Charles Elliott, D. D., then the president of the Iowa Wesleyan University, young

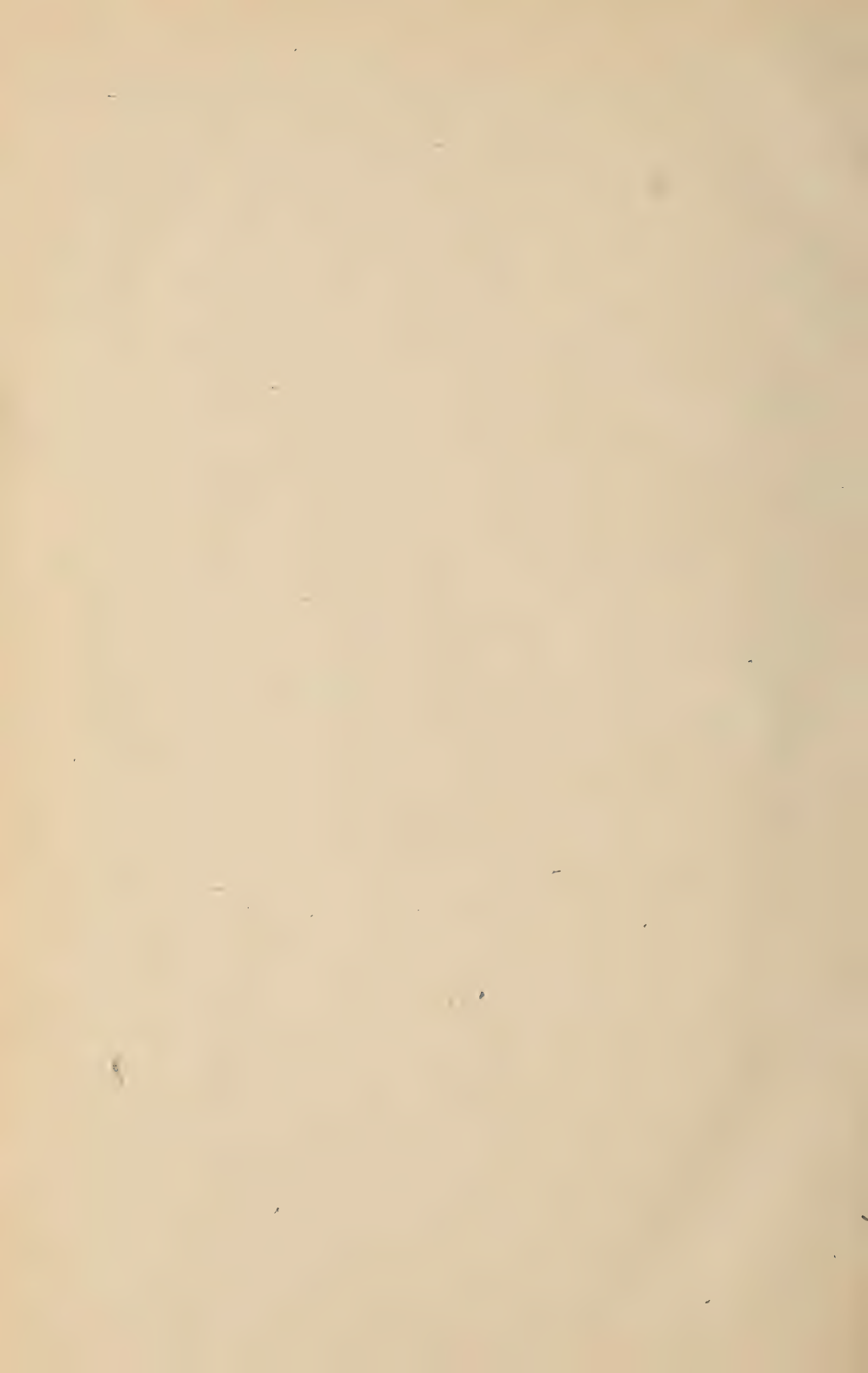
Arrighi entered that school to prepare himself for mission-work in Italy. After remaining there two years he attended the Ohio Wesleyan University, and finally graduated at the Boston Theological Seminary in 1869. In 1873 he went to Florence, and labored successfully for five years as the missionary of the American Methodist Episcopal Church, but consented to return to the United States in the interests of the Free Italian Church.

During 1879 Mr. Arrighi and Signor Turino, who represented the Waldensian Church, visited the principal American cities, addressed large audiences, and secured liberal donations for their respective agencies. The superintendent of the American Baptist mission in Italy, the Rev. G. B. Taylor, D. D., also appealed for help to erect a commodious chapel in Rome, and met with a favorable response. The Italian work under the direction of the Rev. L. M. Vernon, D. D., made considerable progress, and received an impetus by the conversion of some individuals of prominence in the papal Church. The English Baptist mission, with its prosperous stations, under the superintendency of the Rev. Mr. Wall, exerts a controlling influence, especially its beautiful chapel in Rome, in which many Italians assemble to hear the eloquent ex-priest Grassi.

The great event of 1879 to the people of Rome was the visit of the old hero, Garibaldi. In the early part of April he reached the "Eternal City," and was met at the depot by a vast multitude. Pale, emaciated, and feeble, he was carried on a litter through the streets to the residence of his son. It seemed that he had abandoned his island-home of Caprera to die in that city for whose deliverance he had fought. The crowd, restrained by the scene, did not shout, but welcomed the conqueror with silence and tears. The invincible leader, however, rallied, presided over a republican association, held a conference at the Quirinal with King Humbert, and not only proclaimed for universal suffrage, but urged his countrymen to annex the provinces of Istria, Trieste, and Trent. He has lived to behold the results of Italy's struggles during the centuries; and as she stands to-day, united and free in the family of nations, her sons reverence the name of her surviving hero.









# DATE DUE

~~JAN 3 1981~~

~~[REDACTED]~~

~~MAY 22 1981~~

~~JUN 1 1981~~

GAYLORD

PRINTED IN U S A







BW6405.F16  
Italy struggling into light:

Princeton Theological Seminary-Speer Library



1 1012 00018 4806